

THE EMPHATIC



NEW TESTAMENT

This book belongs to

Paul Lawrence Wilson

LIBRARY OF THE THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY

PRINCETON, N. J.

PRESENTED BY

Mr. Hoel Lawrence McQueen

Division..... 3327

Section.....

Handwritten scribbles and marks at the top left corner.

362
385

Robert Brindley
from his friend P.C.

November 1st 1865

nos 15-16-

THE

ACCORDING TO THE AUTHORISED VERSION.

12

The

EMPHATIC NEW TESTAMENT

Search the scriptures, for in them ye shall think ye have eternal life, and they are they that testify of me.

According to the authorized Version,
With the various readings in English of

The Vatican Manuscript,

by John Taylor,

LONDON:
Published in the Year of our Lord
1854.



THE

ACCORDING TO THE AUTHORISED VERSION,

WITH THE VARIOUS READINGS, IN ENGLISH, OF

“ILLE CELEBRATISSIMUS ATQUE VETUSTISSIMUS NOSTER B”
OF GRIESBACH.

BY JOHN TAYLOR,

AUTHOR OF “WHAT IS THE POWER OF THE GREEK ARTICLE?”

“WEALTH, THE NAME AND NUMBER OF THE BEAST,”

ETC.

“Search the SCRIPTURES: For in them ye think ye have eternal Life;
and they are THEY which TESTIFY of me.”—JOHN v. 39.



SAMUEL BAGSTER AND SONS,
15, PATERNOSTER ROW.

M.DCCC.LIV.

LONDON:
PRINTED BY WERTHEIMER AND CO
FINSBURY CIRCUS.

PREFACE.

THIS work is offered to the Christian world in the humble hope that it may prove satisfactory to the enquirer after Scriptural Truth. The Editor has found numerous doubts removed from his own mind by the restoration of the most ancient Text, and by observing the prominence given to those words in English which are the exponents of equally prominent words in Greek, when the latter are fully represented; and he trusts that the same means will be effectual in assisting every English reader to determine for himself what are the genuine words of Scripture, and what is that peculiar sense in which, as regards Emphasis, they ought to be understood.

The Editor's duty, in the execution of his task, has been a very simple one: it has consisted chiefly in the exercise of a scrupulous fidelity. Whenever the Text of the Vatican Manuscript was justified by two out of the three Collations which lay before him, he made reference to those two, not regarding the third: whenever only one Collation was in its favour, he gave that one as his authority. In like manner, when the rules for the conversion of Greek emphasis into English were ascertained, his only care was to apply them with un-deviating regularity. If at any time he has failed in this, it has been from inadvertency, and not from a desire to avoid an apparent difficulty. It may sometimes happen, in consequence of this rigid adherence to system, that the reader will think there was no need for a certain English word to be distinguished by *small capitals* or *black letter*; but as, in the majority of such cases, the rule is found to vindicate itself, it is enough. Perhaps a different Collation of the English words would shew in all cases, that a degree of preference, equal to that which is required, is justly due to the word in question over others in the same sentence.

Some persons may possibly object to have their attention so often drawn to the bottom of the page, to notice changes in the Text, which

appear to them to be sometimes unimportant; but they must reflect that the Editor had no choice: he was obliged to give every instance of variation, unless he had allowed himself to exercise a discretion, which he thought, for the reader's satisfaction, he ought to forego. Such persons, if they wish to escape the inconvenience of having their attention attracted to what they deem unimportant changes, can make a mark in the margin, to remind them that on a former reference they saw nothing in the note which required their particular attention.

By many, however, the interruptions here mentioned will not be esteemed a disadvantage. They have been so long accustomed to read the Scriptures with rapidity, that they will be inclined to regard as useful those delays which afford them an opportunity of considering more maturely the sense of the passage before them. Trivial words in Scripture, are sometimes fraught with unexpected meanings. When our Lord taught the Jews, that from the single word "*am*" in the Old Testament—"I *am* the God of Abraham," etc. (Matt. xxii. 32)—the doctrine of the Immortality of the Soul, and the Resurrection of the Body was to be inferred, he taught them a truth which they had never perceived before, though they were perfectly familiar with the words quoted, which had been read out of the Book of Exodus, to them and their forefathers, for fifteen hundred years.

The English reader is requested to peruse the following "Observations on Greek Emphasis," as well as those on "The Antiquity and Authority of the Vatican Manuscript," and not think because they contain quotations from the Greek Text, that they are less addressed to him than to those who are acquainted with the Greek language. Every peculiarity, it is hoped, is so fully expressed and explained in both tongues, that the English reader will be rendered perfectly conversant with the power of the Greek article and the emphatic pronouns in the English version, while the student of the Greek Text will perhaps find, in the new views opened out on these subjects, a light shed upon them, of the existence of which he was not previously aware.

JOHN TAYLOR.

30, Upper Gower-street, London,
March, 1852.

OBSERVATIONS
ON
GREEK EMPHASIS.

IN the EMPHATIC NEW TESTAMENT, an attempt is made to represent to the English Reader certain peculiarities of expression in the Greek Text, which are of too much importance to be left unnoticed, though the reason of their insertion may be the subject of some difference of opinion.

Of the propriety of distinguishing the EMPHATIC PRONOUNS, no kind of doubt can be entertained. They were designed to give prominence to the persons or things to which they relate. They add certainty and intensity to the passages in which they occur. They give earnestness and vivacity to the discourses in which they are found, and render the reader a hearer, so to speak, of those truths which flowed from the lips of Him who spake as never Man spake. Yet in the authorised English Version no particular notice is taken of these Pronouns, and the reader is left to form his own idea of their importance.

The use of the GREEK ARTICLE is a question of greater difficulty. That it has, on many occasions, a restrictive power like that of the English definite Article (*the*) no one attempts to deny. But it is certain, that even in connexion with Nouns Substantive this power cannot always be given to it; and, in almost all other instances of its occurrence, it exhibits no conformity with the English Article. The writer of the present work, in an Essay published on this subject in 1842, contended that it should be regarded chiefly as a SIGN OF EMPHASIS. Whether he was right or wrong may now be left to the

decision even of the English reader, who will see brought before him, in the following pages, all the evidence necessary to the formation of a right judgment on the subject.

In adapting the Typographic Signs (capitals, small capitals, and black letter) to the due development of the several peculiarities of the Greek Text, the Editor has been careful to preserve throughout an uniform System of Notation; so that when once the System is understood, it will be easy for any one, tolerably well acquainted with Greek, to render the English back again into that language, without any risk of offending against its idioms. Every instance of peculiarity will be observed to range itself under some one or other of the following heads, with their subdivisions; and while the various classes of peculiarities are thus provided for, it will be seen that there are few if any shades of meaning in the one language, which are not capable of a close and almost literal representation in the other.

The quotations from the Greek Testament in the following pages are made without accents. The chief argument in favour of accents is, that they sometimes help the Reader to discriminate between words which are alike in form but different in meaning. But as the earliest of all the manuscripts of the Greek Text is without accents, it seems more prudent to follow that ancient precedent and omit them, leaving the sense in doubtful cases to be determined by the context. If accents favour a particular sense, it may be an erroneous one, and then they are injurious; and if they do not favour any particular sense, they are unnecessary.

It is probable, that the following Rules for the Conversion of Greek Emphasis into English Equivalents would be of considerable service in giving greater precision to translations from the Greek Classics; and also that the preparation of English, by rendering it emphatic according to the following method of notation, would greatly facilitate the practice of Greek composition. But these are divisions of the subject into which it is not necessary to enter on the present occasion.

RULES FOR THE CONVERSION OF GREEK EMPHASIS
INTO ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS.

CLASS I.

WORDS OF POSITIVE EMPHASIS, ARISING FROM THEIR CONNEXION
WITH THE GREEK ARTICLE.

1. *The Greek Article, before a Substantive, requires the English Substantive to be put in Small Capitals.*

Matt. 1:18. *μνηστευθεισης γαρ της μητρος αυτου Μαρίας τῷ Ἰωσηφ—*
when as his MOTHER Mary was espoused to JOSEPH.

19. *Ἰωσηφ δε ὁ ἀνηρ αὐτης—*then Joseph her HUSBAND.

3: 1. *Ἐν δε ταῖς ἡμέραις ἐκεῖναις παραγίνεται Ἰωάννης ὁ βαπτιστής—*In those DAYS came John the BAPTIST.

2. *ἤγγικε γὰρ ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν—*for the KINGDOM of HEAVEN is at hand.

2. *The Article before a Substantive, and also before its Adjective, requires both the Adjective and Substantive to be in Small Capitals.*

Matt. 1:25. *τὸν υἱὸν αὐτῆς τὸν πρωτοτοκόν—*her FIRST-BORN SON.

3:17. *Οὗτος ἐστὶν ὁ υἱὸς μου ὁ ἀγαπητός—*This is my BELOVED SON.

5:19. *μῖαν τῶν ἐντολῶν τούτων τῶν ἐλαχίστων—*one of these LEAST COMMANDMENTS.

29. *εἰ δε ὁ ὀφθαλμὸς σου ὁ δεξιὸς σκανδαλίζει σε—*and if thy RIGHT EYE offend thee.

3. *The Article, before an Adjective which precedes its Substantive, requires the Adjective only to be put in Small Capitals.*

Matt. 4: 5. *τὴν ἁγίαν πόλιν—*the HOLY City.

5:16. *ὅπως ἴδωσιν ὑμῶν τὰ καλά ἔργα—*that they may see Your GOOD Works.

26. *ἕως ἀν ἀποδῶς τὸν ἐσχατὸν κοδραντὴν—*till thou hast paid the UTTERMOST Farthing.

39. *ὅστις σε ῥάπισει ἐπὶ τὴν δεξιὰν σου σιαγόνα—*whosoever shall smite thee on thy RIGHT Check.

4. *The Article, used as a Pronoun before a Participle, requires the English Participle and its Pronoun to be put in Small Capitals.*

Matt. 1:20. *το γαρ εν αυτη γεννηθεν*—for **THAT** which is **CONCEIVED** in her.

22. *ινα πληρωθη το ρηθεν*—that **THAT** might be fulfilled which was **SPOKEN**.

2:20. *τεθνηκασι γαρ οι ζητουντες*—for **THEY** are dead which **SOUGHT**.

3:11. *ο δε οπισω μου ερχομενος*—but **HE** that **COMETH** after me.

5. *The Article, before a Participle which precedes its Substantive, causes the Participle and Substantive to be put in Small Capitals.*

Matt. 3: 7. *φυγειν απο της μελλουσης οργης*—to flee from the **WRATH TO COME**.

27:52. *και πολλα σωματα των κεκοιμημενων αγιων ηγερθη*—and **Many Bodies of SAINTS** which **SLEPT** arose.

Mar. 1:38. *Αγωμεν εις τας εχομενας κωμοπολεις*—let us go into the **NEXT TOWNS**.

Lu. 1: 1. *διηγησιν περι των πεπληροφορημενων εν ημιν πραγματος*—a Declaration of the **THINGS** which are **MOST CERTAINLY BELIEVED** among us.

6. *The Article, before a Verb in the Infinitive Mood, causes the English Infinitive to be put in Small Capitals.*

Matt. 2:13. *του απολεσαι αυτο*—to **DESTROY** him.

5:28. *προς το επιθυμησαι αυτης*—to **LUST** after her.

6: 1. *προς το θεαθηναι αυτοις*—to be **SEEN** of them.

11: 1. *του διδασκειν και κηρυσσειν εν ταις πολεσιν αυτων*—to **TEACH** and to preach in their **CITIES**.

The Examples just enumerated may be likened to the Latin Gerunds in *dum*. The following belong to the class of Gerunds in *do*. They are translated as Gerunds of this kind in the following passages of the authorised Version.

Mar. 6:48. *Και ειδεν αυτους βασανιζομενους εν τω ελαυνειν*—And he saw them toiling in **ROWING**.

Acts 3:26. *εν τω αποστρεφειν εкаστον*—in **TURNING AWAY** every one of you.

4:30. *εν τω την χειρα σου εκτεινειν σε*—by **STRETCHING FORTH** thine **HAND**.

Ro. 15:13. *πασης χαρας και ειρηνης εν τω πιστευειν*—with All Joy and Peace in BELIEVING.

Heb. 3:12. *εν τω αποστηναι απο Θεου ζωντος*—in DEPARTING from the living God.

7. *The Article, before an Adverb, causes the English Adverb, or Adverbial Phrase, to be put in Small Capitals.*

Matt. 8:18. *απελθειν εις το περαν*—to depart unto the OTHER-SIDE.

Mar. 13:19. *εως του νυν*—until THIS-TIME.

Lu. 22: 2. *το πως ανελωσιν αυτον*—HOW they might kill him.

Joh. 10:40. *οπου ην Ιωαννης το πρωτον βαπτιζων*—where John AT THE FIRST baptized.

Acts 4:29. *και τα νυν, κυριε, επιδε*—and NOW, Lord, behold.

8. *Sometimes the Article precedes a Clause or Sentence used as a quotation; in which case the whole Clause or Sentence in English should be in Small Capitals.*

Matt. 19:18. *‘Ο δε Ιησους ειπε, Το ου φονευσεις· ου μοιχευσεις· ου κλεψεις·*—And JESUS said, THOU SHALT DO NO MURDER, THOU SHALT NOT COMMIT ADULTERY, THOU SHALT NOT STEAL,

Mar. 9:10. *προς εαυτους συζητουντες, τι εστι το εκ νεκρων αναστηναι*—questioning one with another, what THE RISING FROM THE DEAD should mean.

Lu. 22:37. *το Και μετα ανομων ελογισθη*—AND HE WAS RECKONED AMONG THE TRANSGRESSORS.

When the Greek Article is introductory to a Sentence, it may also be represented by putting the first word of the sentence, and no more, in small capitals: as, AND he was reckoned, etc.

9. *When the Article is used as a Pronoun, and is made the Nominative Case to a Verb, the English Pronoun is in Small Capitals.*

Matt. 2: 5. *οι δε ειπον αυτω*—and THEY said unto him.

21. *‘Ο δε εγερθεις παρελαβε*—And HE arose and took.

9:31. *Οι δε εξελθοντες διεφημισαν αυτον*—But THEY, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame.

14: 8. *‘Η δε προβιβασθεισα υπο της μητρος αυτης, Δος μοι, φησιν*—And SHE, being instructed before of her MOTHER, said, Give me here.

15:27. *‘Η δε ειπε, Ναι, κυριε*—And SHE said, Truth, Lord.

10. *When the Greek Article is prefixed both to a Substantive and its Participle (the latter either expressed or understood), the corresponding English Words are put in Small Capitals.*

Matt. 4:16. ὁ λαὸς ὁ καθήμενος ἐν σκοτει—THAT PEOPLE which SAT in Darkness.

5:12. τοὺς προφῆτας τοὺς πρὸ ὑμῶν—THOSE PROPHETS which were before you.

16. τὸν πατέρα ὑμῶν τὸν ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς—THAT FATHER of yours which is in HEAVEN.

6:23. εἰ οὖν τὸ φῶς τὸ ἐν σοὶ σκοτὸς ἐστὶ—if therefore THAT LIGHT that is in thee be Darkness.

7: 3. τὸ καρφὸς τὸ ἐν τῷ ὀφθαλμῷ τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ σου—THAT MOTE that is in the EYE of thy BROTHER.

This manner of expressing the Reduplicate Article was familiar to the Translators of the New Testament, as the following Examples, in addition to those already given, will shew.

John 6:58. οὗτος ἐστὶν ὁ ἄρτος ὁ ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ καταβας—This is THAT BREAD which CAME DOWN from HEAVEN.

20: 8. τότε οὖν εἰσηλθε καὶ ὁ ἄλλος μαθητῆς ὁ ἐλθὼν πρῶτος—then went in also THAT OTHER Disciple which CAME first.

Acts 7:37. Οὗτος ἐστὶν ὁ Μωϋσῆς ὁ εἰπων—This is THAT MOSES which SAID.

21:38. οὐκ ἀρα σὺ εἶ ὁ Αἰγυπτῖος ὁ πρὸ τούτων τῶν ἡμερῶν ἀναστατῶσας—Art not t̄j̄u THAT EGYPTIAN which before These DAYS MADEST AN UPROAR.

1Cor.15:37. οὐ τὸ σῶμα τὸ γενησομενον σπειρεις—thou sowest not THAT BODY that SHALL BE.

2Thes.2: 3. καὶ ἀποκαλυφθῆ ὁ ἄνθρωπος τῆς ἁμαρτίας, ὁ υἱὸς τῆς ἀπωλείας ὁ ἀντικείμενος — and the MAN of SIN be revealed, THAT SON of PERDITION who OPPOSETH.

James2: 7. οὐκ αὐτοὶ βλασφημοῦσι τὸ καλὸν ὄνομα τὸ ἐπικληθὲν ἐφ' ὑμᾶς—do not t̄h̄eη blaspheme THAT WORTHY Name which is CALLED UPON you.

Rev. 2:20. ὅτι εἶς τὴν γυναῖκα Ἰεζαβηλ τὴν λεγουσαν—Because thou sufferest THAT WOMAN Jezebel which CALLETH.

12: 9. ὁ ὄφις ὁ ἀρχαῖος ὁ καλουμενος Διαβολος—THAT OLD SERPENT that is CALLED the Devil.

17:18. ἡ πόλις ἡ μεγάλη ἡ ἐχουσα βασιλειαν—THAT GREAT CITY which REIGNETH.

11. *When the Reduplicate Article is accompanied by οὗτος, or εκεινος, the corresponding Pronoun in English may take the place of the first Article, being put in Small Capitals.*

Matt. 18: 6. ένα των μικρων τουτων των πιστευοντων—One of THESE LITTLE-ONES which BELIEVE.

Mar. 14:58. 'Οτι εγω καταλυσω τον ναον τουτον τον χειροποιητον—
That ƒ will destroy THIS TEMPLE that is MADE WITH
HANDS.

Lu. 15:30. οτε δε ο υιος σου ουτος ο καταφαγων σου τον βιον μετα
πορνων, ηλθεν—but as soon as THIS thy SON was come
which hath DEVOURED Thy LIVING with Harlots.

John 7:49. αλλ' ο οχλος ουτος ο μη γινωσκων τον νομον επικαταρατοι
εισι—but THIS PEOPLE who KNOWETH not the LAW
are cursed.

Lu. 14:24. οτι ουδεις των ανδρων εκεινων των κεκλημενων γευσεται—
That none of THOSE MEN that were BIDDEN shall
taste.

19:27. Πλην τους εχθρους μου εκεινους, τους μη θελησαντας με
βασιλευσαι επ' αυτους, αγαγετε ωδε — But THOSE ENEMIES of mine, which WOULD not that I should reign
over them, bring hither.

12. *When the Article, preceding a Participle, follows a Proper Name which
lias not the Article, the English Demonstrative Pronoun preceding
such Proper Name is in Small Capitals.*

Matt. 1:16. εξ ης εγεννηθη Ιησους ο λεγομενος Χριστος—of whom was
born THAT JESUS who is CALLED CHRIST.

4:21. Ιακωβον τον του Ζεβεδαιου—THAT JAMES who is *the son*
of ZEBEDEE.

10: 3. και Λεββαιος ο επικληθεις Θαδδαιος—and THAT LEBBAEUS
who was SURNAMED THADDAEUS.

11:14. αυτος εστιν 'Ηλιας ο μελλων ερχεσθαι—This is THAT
ELIAS which WAS for to come.

One Example from the Authorised Version will show that our
Translators were not unaware of this mode of representing the reflex
power of the Greek Article in the English Language:—

John 11: 2. ην δε *Μαρια* η αλειφασα—it was THAT MARIA which
ANOINTED.

But it is to be regretted that they did not more frequently employ it. Had they been fully sensible of the importance of this manner of expressing the Article, they could hardly have forborne making use of it in the following passage:—"Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's Elect? *It is THAT* God who JUSTIFIETH. Who is *HE* that CONDEMNETH? *It is THAT* Christ who DIED—*τις εγκαλεσαι κατα εκλεκτων Θεου; Θεος ὁ δικαιων. τις ὁ κατακρινων; Χριστος ὁ αποθανων* (Rom. 8:33, 34). Thus rendered, the passage is invaluable to the Christian, not only for the Truth which it contains, but also for the clearness and force with which that Truth is stated.

13. *The Rule is the same, with respect to the Demonstrative Pronoun, when the Article precedes a common Noun Substantive or Adjective.*

Lu. 5:36. *και τῷ παλαιῷ ου συμφωνει επιβλημα το απο του καινου*—and *THAT* Piece *that was taken* out of the *NEW* agreeth not with the *OLD*.

7:32. *ὅμοιοι εἰσι παιδιοις τοις εν αγορᾷ καθημενοις*—they are like unto *THOSE* Children that *SIT* in the Market-place.

13:4. *παρα παντας ανθρωπους τους κατοικουντας εν Ἱερουσαλημ*—above *ALL THOSE* Men that *DWELT* at Jerusalem.

23:49. *και γυναικες αὶ συνακολουθησασαι αυτῷ*—and *THOSE* Women that *FOLLOWED* him.

14. *When the Reflex Article is in connexion with πας, οὗτος, or τις, its English Equivalent is put in Small Capitals.*

Matt. 5:15. *και λαμπει πασι τοις εν τη οικια*—and it giveth light unto *ALL* that are in the *HOUSE*.

22. *ὅτι πας ὁ οργιζομενος*—That *WHOSOEVER* is *ANGRY*—or *EVERY-ONE* that is *ANGRY*.

Lu. 20:17. *Τι ουν εστι το γεγραμμενον τουτο*—What is *THIS* then that is *WRITTEN*.

22:37. *ὅτι ετι τουτο το γεγραμμενον δε τελεσθηναι*—That *THIS* that is *WRITTEN* must yet be accomplished.

Joh. 11:37. *Ουκ ηδυνατο οὗτος ὁ ανοιξας τους οφθαλμους του τυφλου*—Could not *THIS* man which *OPENED* the *EYES* of the *BLIND*.

Gal. 1:7. *ει μη τινες εἰσιν οἱ παρασσοντες ὑμας*—but there be *SOME* that *TROUBLE* you.

Lu. 18:9. *Εἶπε δε και προς τινας τους πεποιθотας*—And he spake unto *CERTAIN* which *TRUSTED*.

15. *When the Reflex Article, preceding a Participle, follows a Pronoun Substantive in the same case with that Participle, the Pronoun Substantive in English is put in Small Capitals.*

Lu. 1:36. *και ούτος μην έκτος εστιν αυτη τη καλουμενη στειρα*—and This is the sixth Month with HER who was CALLED barren.

1Thes.2:13. *ός και ενεργειται εν ύμιν τοις πιστευουσιν*—which effectually worketh in YOU that BELIEVE.

Matt.19:28. *ότι ύμεις οί ακολουθησαντες μοι*—That YE which have FOLLOWED me.

Mar. 4:11. *εκεινοις δε τοις εξω*—but unto THEM that are WITHOUT.

John 9:13. *Αγουσιν αυτον προς τους Φαρισαιους τον ποτε τυφλον*—They brought to the PHARISEES HIM that aforetime was BLIND.

16. *Inconvertible Propositions, one Term having the Greek Article prefixed, the other not, require to be so arranged in English, that the Term having the Article should take precedence.*

This Rule, however, is the less necessary to be observed in the Emphatic New Testament, since Small Capitals sufficiently distinguish the Subject from the Predicate.

John 1: 1. *και Θεος ην ό λογος*—and the WORD was God.

4:24. *πνευμα ό Θεος*—GOD is a Spirit.

1John1: 5. *ό Θεος φως εστι*—GOD is Light.

4:16. *ό Θεος αγαπη εστι*—GOD is Love.

1Tim.6: 5. *νομιζοντων πορισμον ειναι την ευσεβειαν*—supposing that GODLINESS is Gain.

17. *Convertible Propositions may be arranged either Way.*

1John5: 6. *το πνευμα εστιν ή αληθεια*—the SPIRIT is TRUTH.

2Cor.3:17. *Ό δε Κυριος το πνευμα εστιν*—Now the LORD is *that* SPIRIT.

Our Translators were at a loss in the last instance for a satisfactory rendering of the Article before *πνευμα*, when they translated it “that.” They wished, perhaps, to avoid the consequences which might seem to follow the assertion that the LORD and the SPIRIT are identical; and that what may be affirmed of the one may be equally affirmed of the other. But if the Article be considered a Sign of Emphasis, and the Proposition be regarded as affirming only that “the LORD is

a SPIRIT," no difficulty remains. This use of the Article is met with in 2 Cor. 12:18. *παρεκαλεσα Τιτον, και συναπεστειλα τον αδελφον.*—"I desired Titus, and with *him* I sent a BROTHER." It is found in Matt. 1:23. *Ιδου, η παρθενος εν γαστρι εξει*—"Behold a VIRGIN shall be with child:"—in John 5:35. *εκεινος ην ο λυχνος ο καιομενος και φαιων*—"He was a BURNING and a shining LIGHT:"—and in many other instances.—But the words may be rendered "The LORD is the SPIRIT," and the reference may be to the 6th Verse of the 3rd Chapter; in which case "the Spirit of the New Testament"—"the Spirit which giveth Life," is "the SPIRIT" which is identical with "the LORD."

18. *When a Greek Noun is used Collectively, followed by an Enumeration of all or any of the Particulars contained under that head, it is distinguished in Greek by having the Article prefixed to it, and in English by being expressed in Small Capitals:—while the Particulars which follow are not accompanied in Greek by the Article, nor in English by any Sign.*

Lu. 22:66. *Και ως εγενετο ημερα, συνηχθη το πρεσβυτεριον του λαου, αρχιερεις τε και γραμματεις*—And as soon as it was Day, the PRESBYTERY of the PEOPLE, the Chief-Priests as well as the Scribes, came together.

1Cor. 4: 9. *Δοκω γαρ οτι ο Θεος ημας τους αποστολους εσχατους απεδειξεν ως επιθανατιους, οτι θεατρον εγενηθημεν τω κοσμω και αγγελοις και ανθρωποις*—for I think, That GOD hath set forth us the APOSTLES last, as it were appointed to death: For we are made a Spectacle unto the WORLD, both to Angels and to Men.

Gal. 5: 19. *Φανερα δε εστι τα εργα της σαρκος· ατινα εστι μοιχεια, πορνεια, ακαθαρσια, ασελγεια, ειδωλολατρευια, φαρμακεια, εχθραι, ερεις, ζηλοι, θυμοι, εριθειαι, διχοστασιαι, αιρεσεις, φθονοι, φονοι, μεθαι, κωμοι, και τα ομοια τουτοις*—Now the WORKS of the FLESH are manifest, which are, Adultery, Fornication, Uncleanness, Lasciviousness, Idolatry, Witchcraft, Hatred, Variance, Emulations, Wrath, Strife, Seditions, Heresies, Envyings, Murders, Drunkenness, Revellings, and the LIKE to these.

Gal. 5 22. Ὁ δε καρπος του πνευματος εστιν αγαπη, χαρα, ειρηνη, μακροθυμια, χρηστοτης, αγαθωσυνη, πιστις, πραοτης, εγκρατεια· κατα των τοιουτων ουκ εστι νομος—But the FRUIT of the SPIRIT is, Love, Joy, Peace, Longsuffering, Gentleness, Goodness, Faith, Meekness, Temperance; against SUCH there is no Law.

Acts 2 7. Ουκ ιδου παντες ουτοι εισιν οι λαλουντες Γαλιλαιοι; και πως ημεις ακουομεν εкаστος τη ιδια διαλεκτω ημων εν η εγεννηθημεν, Παρθοι και Μηδοι και Ελαμιται, και οι κατοικουντες την Μεσοποταμιαν, Ιουδαιαν τε και Καππαδοκιαν, Ποντον, και την Ασιαν, Φρυγιαν τε και Παμφυλιαν, Αιγυπτον, και τα μερη της Λιβυης της κατα Κυρηνην, και οι επιδημουντες Ῥωμαιοι, Ιουδαιοι τε και προσηλυτοι, Κρητες, και Αραβες; ακουομεν λαλουντων αυτων ταις ημετεραις γλωσσαις τα μεγαλεια του Θεου—Behold, are not all THESE which SPEAK Galiliæans? and how hear we every one in our OWN Language wherein we were born?—Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites; and THEY who DWELL in MESOPOTAMIA, Judæan as well as Cappadocian; in Pontus; and in ASIA, Phrygian as well as Pamphylian; in Egypt; and in the PARTS of THAT LIBYA which is about Cyrene; and ROMAN RESIDENTS, Jews as well as Proselytes; Cretes; and Arabians;—we do hear them speak in OUR Tongues the WONDERFUL-WORKS of GOD.

In this passage, the Name MESOPOTAMIA is used as a Collective Term, including certain Districts, two of which are described as Judæan and Cappadocian, because they were inhabited by persons from Judæa and Cappadocia. So also ASIA stands for Asia Minor, which name included many countries, but of these the Phrygian and Pamphylian alone are specified. That these subordinate Titles are used adjectively, will appear probable from the same use being made, in other places, of similar Terms: viz.—Mark 1:5. *πασα η Ιουδαια χωρα*, “All the JUDÆAN Region:”—John 3:22. *εις την Ιουδαιαν γην*, “into the JUDÆAN Land:”—Acts 16:6. *Διελθοντες δε την Φρυγιαν και την Γαλατικην χωραν*—“Now when they had gone throughout the PHRYGIAN and GALATIAN Region:” Acts 18:23. *διερχομενος καθεξης την Γαλατικην χωραν και Φρυγιαν*, “going over all the GALATIAN and Phrygian Region in order.”

It will be readily admitted that a Colony of Jews might dwell in Mesopotamia, from whose residence there that District would be properly described as the Judæan. The Transplantation of the Jews to Babylon is too well known to make that necessary to be proved. But that a similar Removal took place of the Cappadocians will require some Authority to support it. In Strabo, however, we find the fact stated so expressly, as to be placed beyond doubt. Speaking of the people of Mazaca, a capital City of Cappadocia, he says:—*Διεθηκε δε φ αυλωσ αυτους Τιγρανης ο Αρμενιος, ήνικα την Καππαδοκιαν κατεδραμεν άπαντας γαρ αναστατους εποησαν εις Μεσοποταμιαν, και τα Τιγρανοκερτα εκ τουτων συνωκισε το πλεον· ύστερον δ' επανηλθον οί δυναμενοι μετα την των Τιγρανοκερτων άλωσιν—* “Moreover, Tigranes the ARMENIAN subjected them [the Mazaceni] to great hardship, when he overran CAPPADOCIA: for he transferred the whole population to Mesopotamia, and peopled TIGRANOCERTA, for the MOST-PART, from them. But afterwards, when TIGRANOCERTA was taken [by the Romans], THEY who HAD THE POWER returned to their own country.”

It may be observed, that these Cappadocians, before they were carried away to Mesopotamia, were probably Jews, who had been previously removed from Judæa, as had been the ancestors of those Parthians, Medes, and Elamites, who were now at Jerusalem with these Cappadocians and Jews of Mesopotamia. Their posterity remain to this day in all these countries, and they are probably some of the remains of the lost Tribes of Israel, as the late Dr. Asahel Grant suggests in his interesting work concerning them.

19. *When two or more Common Nouns, Class Names, Proper Names, or Titles, Verbs in the Infinitive Mood, or Participles, are joined by a Copulative, and the Article in Greek, or sign of Emphasis in English (viz., Small Capitals), distinguishes each Noun, each is to be regarded as presenting in itself a complete Idea. But when the Article, or Sign of Emphasis, distinguishes only the first Noun of the Series, the whole group is then to be regarded as presenting collectively only one complete Idea.*

Common Nouns.

Acts 2:13. *τη διδαχη των αποστολων, και τη κοινωνια*—in the DOCTRINE, and in the FELLOWSHIP, of the APOSTLES.

Phil. 1: 7. *τη απολογια και βεβαιωσει του ευαγγελιου*—for the DEFENCE and Confirmation of the GOSPEL.

Proper Names.

- Acts 13:46. Παρρησιασαμενοι δε ὁ Παυλος και ὁ Βαρναβας ειπον—
then PAUL, and BARNABAS, waxed bold and said.
4:19. Ὁ δε Πητρος και Ιωαννης αποκριθεντες—But PETER and
John answered.

Class Names.

- Matt. 23: 2. εκαθισαν οἱ γραμματεις και οἱ Φαρισαιοι—the SCRIBES,
and the PHARISEES, sit.
16: 1. Και προσελθοντες οἱ Φαρισαιοι και Σαδδουκαιοι—And
the PHARISEES and Sadducees came.

Titles.

- John 20:28. Ὁ Κυριος μου και ὁ Θεος μου—My LORD, and my GOD.
Titus 2:13. του μεγαλου Θεου και σωτηρος ἡμων Ιησου Χριστου—of
our GREAT God and Saviour Jesus Christ.

Verbs.

- Phil. 2:13. και το θελειν και το ενεργειν ὑπερ της ευδοκίας—both to
WILL, and to DO, of his Good-pleasure.
Matt. 20:19. Και παραδωσουσιν αυτον τοις εθνεσιν εις το εμπαιξαι και
μαστιγωσαι και σταυρωσαι—And they shall deliver him
to the GENTILES to MOCK and scourge and crucify.

Participles.

- John 4:36. ινα και ὁ σπειρων ὁμου χαιρη και ὁ θεριζων—that both HE
that SOWETH, and HE that REAPETH, may rejoice to-
gether.
14:21. ὁ εχων τας εντολας μου και τηρων αυτας—HE that HATH
my COMMANDMENTS and keepeth them.

20. *As a general Rule, the Sign of Emphasis will be found attached to those Nouns which make RENEWED MENTION of any Person or Thing, as well as to those which call PARTICULAR ATTENTION to any Person or Thing the FIRST TIME it is mentioned.*

- Matt. 2: 1. ιδου μαγοι απο ανατολων παρεγενοντο—behold, there
came Wise-men from the EAST. (*First mention.*)
7. τοτε Ἡρωδης λαθρα καλεσας τους μαγους—then Herod
when he had privily called the WISE-MEN. (*Renewed.*)
1:23. ιδου, ἡ παρθενος εν γαστρι ἐξει—behold, a VIRGIN shall
be with child. (*First mention.*)

RULES FOR THE CONVERSION, ETC.

CLASS II.

EMPHATIC PRONOUNS, AND OTHER WORDS OF COMPARATIVE
EMPHASIS, ARISING FROM POSITION.

1 *A Greek Pronoun, when it is the Nominative Case to a Verb, will have its corresponding English in Black Letter.*

Matt. 1:21. *αυτος γαρ σωσει*—for **he** shall save.

2: 6. *Και συ Βηθλεεμ γη Ιουδα ουδαμως ελαχιστη ει*—And **thou** Bethlehem in the Land of Judah art not the least.

2: 8. *οπως κ'αγω ελθων προσκυνησω αυτω*—that **I** also may come and worship him.

3:14. *Εγω χρειαν εχω υπο σου βαπτισθηναι, και συ ερχη προς με* — **I** have Need to be baptized of thee, and comest **thou** to me?

The English Reader may not be aware, that in general the Pronoun which is the Nominative Case to a Verb forms part of the Greek Verb itself, and that when the Pronoun is further expressed in Greek it becomes emphatical. This distinction is not made in the authorised English Version, but it is highly important to be observed, if we would thoroughly understand, and exactly appreciate, the full force of many of our Lord's discourses. For example—

“Neither pray I for these alone, but for **THEM** also which shall **BELIEVE** on me through their **WORD**; that they all may be one; as **thou**, Father, *art* in me, and **I** in thee, that **they** also may be one in us; that the **WORLD** may believe That **thou** hast sent me. And the **GLORY** which thou gavest me, **I** have given them; that they may be one, even as **we** are one: **I** in them, and **thou** in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the **WORLD** may know That **thou** hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. Father, I will that **they** also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where **I** am; that they may behold **MY GLORY**, which thou hast given me: For thou lovedst me before the Foundation of the World.

O righteous Father, the WORLD hath not known thee: but **ƒ** have known thee, and these have known That **thou** hast sent me. And I have declared unto them thy NAME, and will declare it: that the LOVE wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and **ƒ** in them." (John xvii. 20—26.)

2. *Adjectives, Pronouns Adjective, and Possessive Pronouns, when they PRECEDE Greek Substantives, obtain an emphasis by position, which is represented by means of an initial Capital.*

Matt. 3:4. *Αυτος δε ο Ιωαννης*—And the Same JOHN.

5. *πασα η Ιουδαια και πασα η περιχωρος του Ιορδανου*—All JUDEA and All the COUNTRY round about JORDAN.

5:30. *και μη ολον το σωμα σου*—and not that thy Whole BODY.

7:22. *πολλοι ερουσι μοι εν εκεινη τη ημερα*—Many will say unto me in That DAY.

12:43. *διερχεται δι' ανυδρων τοπων*—he walketh through Dry Places.

50. *αυτος μου αδελφος και αδελφη και μητηρ εστιν*—the same is My Brother, and Sister, and Mother.

13:27. *ουχι καλον σπερμα εσπειρας*;—didst thou not sow Good Seed?

20:26. *εστω υμων διακονος*—let him be Your Minister.

John 4:18. *και νυν ον εχεις ουκ εστι σου ανηρ*—and he whom thou now hast is not Thy Husband.

A better instance of the advantage of distinguishing by a capital letter the Possessive Pronoun, when it precedes a Noun which has not the Article, cannot, perhaps, be quoted, than that which is contained in the remarkable address of our Lord to the woman of Samaria referred to in the last example. "JESUS saith unto her, Go, call thy HUSBAND, and come hither. The WOMAN answered and said, I have no Husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no Husband; for thou hast had Five Husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not Thy Husband:" implying that she was living with another woman's Husband, and not simply with a man to whom she was not married.

3. *Greek Substantives which have not the Article, when they are in the Genitive Case, and PRECEDE Substantives, also anarthrous, with which they are in regimen, become emphatical by position. The*

same effect follows in English; and on such occasions, therefore, the same order of the words should be observed: for example—

1 Cor. 3: 9. Θεου γαρ εσμεν συνεργοι Θεου γεωργιον, Θεου οικοδομη εστε—for we are God's Fellow-Labourers: ye are God's Husbandry, *ye are* God's Building.

2 Cor. 3:18. καθαπερ απο κυριου πνευματος—even as by the Lord's Spirit.

Galat. 1:10. ει γαρ επι ανθρωποις ηρεσκον, Χριστου δουλος ουκ αν ημην —for if I yet pleased Men, I should not be Christ's Servant.

2:17. αρα Χριστος αμαρτιας διακονος—is Christ therefore Sin's Minister?

The perplexity in which our Translators seemed to be involved when they rendered 2 Cor. 3:17, “Now the LORD is *that* SPIRIT,” was probably the reason why they added to the interpretation of verse 18 (see the second of the last cited examples) the marginal gloss of “even as of the Lord the Spirit.” It is difficult to extract any meaning from this marginal reading:—all that it appears to imply is, that the Translators were not satisfied with the reading of the text, “even as by the Spirit of the Lord.” The whole passage would stand thus, according to the rules just quoted:—“Now the LORD is a SPIRIT: [or, “the SPIRIT”] and where the SPIRIT of the Lord *is*, there *is* Liberty. But all *we*, with open Face beholding as in a Glass the GLORY of the Lord, are changed into the SAME Image, from Glory to Glory, even as by the Lord's Spirit.”

4. *The causal Particle or Conjunction, ὅτι, is rendered in the authorised English Version of the New Testament by “That,” “For,” “Because,” or “How,” which words are often found commencing with a Capital. In the Emphatic New Testament these words are always headed by a Capital Letter. In this manner, the English Reader will be apprized of the difference between these words, when used as the representatives of ὅτι, and the same words when employed as the equivalents of other Greek words.*

Matt. 12:36. λεγω δε υμιν, ὅτι παν ῥημα αργον—But I say unto you, That Every idle Word.

13:11. ὁ δε αποκριθεις ειπεν αυτοις, ὅτι υμιν δεδοται γνωναι τα μυστηρια.—HE answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the MYSTERIES.

5. *All English Substantives, when they represent Greek Substantives, and all Adjectives, used substantively, are distinguished by commencing with a Capital Letter.*

Matt. 1:20. *αγγελος Κυριου*—the Angel of the Lord.

4:16. *εν χωρα και σκια θανατου*—in the Region and Shadow of Death.

7:15. *εν ενδυμασι προβατων*—in Sheep's Clothing.

10:15. *εν ημερα κρισεως*—in the Day of Judgment.

John 5: 3. *εν ταυταις κατεκειτο πληθος πολυ των ασθενουντων, τυφλων, χωλων, ξηρων*—in these lay a great Number of IMPOTENT folk, of Blind, Halt, Withered.

One good effect of marking with initial capitals those English words which represent Greek Substantives, and no other, is, that the English Substantives which are made use of in the translation of Greek verbs and adverbial phrases, being left undistinguished, have no undue importance attached to them:—as for instance—“not willing to make her a public example”—“bring me word again”—“he shall give charge”—“ye shall in no case enter into”—“be in danger of”—“after this manner” etc.—The custom of marking with capital letters all Substantives in English books, was in use till near the end of the last century, and its re-adoption at the present time would be of great service to foreigners, as well as to others who are not very familiar with our language when it is written or printed.

6. *When Substantives and Pronouns, in the Greek, PRECEDE the Verbs by which they are governed, they are more emphatic than those Verbs: in such cases, the English PRONOUNS, corresponding with those in Greek so preceding their Verbs, are distinguished by commencing with a Capital Letter: as—*

Matt. 19:17. *Τι με λεγεις αγαθον*—Why callest thou Me good?

Acts 26:28. *Εν ολιγω με πειθεις Χριστιανον γενεσθαι*—Almost thou persuadest Me to be a Christian.

The preceding Illustrations will be sufficient to convince the reader that there are peculiarities of expression in the Greek language which we have no power of representing in English, except by the use of typographic signs. In writing, we employ for this purpose accents, and words underscored: in printed books, accents, italics, small capitals,

and capital letters. With greater precision, the Greek language incorporates the Sign of Emphasis with the Words in such a manner, that the latter cannot be stated without conveying at the same time to an intelligent mind an idea of the intonation with which the sentence was spoken when it was first written down. We commonly content ourselves with being able to comprehend in any way the sense of the words of a book, and in all human compositions this is sufficient; the tone in which the words were really or in idea uttered, is left to the reader's imagination. But in the Truths made known to us by the Scriptures, especially those of the New Testament, where many different senses are sometimes be attributed to the same phrase, by laying the stress at each time on a different word, it is certainly of great importance that not the words only, but also the emphasis with which they were delivered should be made known to us; and that this was done to a wonderful extent the foregoing examples will prove.

THE EFFECT OF EMPHASIS ON CERTAIN TITLES.

THE Titles—" *Son of God*,"—" *Son of Man*," and "*Holy Spirit*," receive very important modifications of their meaning according as the Emphasis of the Greek Article is brought to bear on one or other, or on both, of the words of which each Title is composed.

Though the critical reader will not fail to make his own observation on the effect of each variety of form as it occurs; yet, as the classing of the several Examples together will give him some assistance, it may be desirable to devote a particular section to the consideration of the several senses in which each phrase is exhibited.

I. THE SON OF GOD.

1. In its simplest state, without the Article being prefixed to either of the two Nouns of which it is composed, this term, *υἱος Θεου*, "the Son of God," occurs in the New Testament eight times: as follows—

Matt. 5: 9. Blessed are the PEACEMAKERS: For they shall be called the Sons of God.

Mark 1: 1. The Beginning of the GOSPEL of Jesus Christ, the Son of God. (Vat. MS.)

Mark 15:39. And when THAT CENTURION, which STOOD over against him, saw

That he so cried out, and gave up the Ghost, he said, Truly this MAN was the Son of God.

Luke 1:35. The holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the Power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also the HOLY thing which shall be BORN of thee shall be called the Son of God.

20:36. Neither can they die any more; for they are equal unto the angels, and are the Sons of God, being the Sons of the RESURRECTION. (Vat. MS.)

Rom. 1: 4. Concerning THAT SON of his, Jesus Christ our LORD, who was DECLARED to be the Son of God with power, according to the Spirit of Holiness, by the Resurrection from the Dead.

8:14. For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the Sons of God.

9:26. And it shall come to pass, that in the PLACE where it was said unto them, Ye are not my People, there shall they be called the Sons of the living God.

Galat. 3:26. For ye are all the Sons of God by FAITH in Christ Jesus.

These are all the examples which occur in the New Testament of the phrase, "the Son of God," in which the sign of emphasis is not attached to either noun. But it does not follow that the phrase is, therefore, devoid of all emphasis. The context supersedes, in some degree, the necessity for a particular notation, by employing expressions calculated to draw attention to the words which follow, in a manner equivalent to putting them between inverted commas. Accordingly Dr. Middleton, in his Essay on the Greek Article, affirms it as a rule, that after verbs of *calling, appointing, choosing, creating*, etc., as well as after verbs *substantive* which simply *affirm* or *deny existence*, the noun which represents the person or thing so introduced, is without the article. This reason operates in most of the examples above mentioned, for instance:—"they shall be called 'the Sons of God.'" "This MAN was the Son of God.'" "DECLARED to be 'the Son of God.'" "they are 'the Sons of God.'" "There shall they be called 'the Sons of the living God,'" etc. The distinction thus conferred, arising out of the nature of the subject, requires no other sign than the introductory words themselves.

In all cases of this description, the absence of the Greek article before a noun substantive is supposed by some to imply, that the English definite article (*the*) may be dispensed with, or have its place supplied by the indefinite. But the English reader will perceive, from the preceding quotations, that *a* or *the* is to be supplied, as the context may require, according to the genius of the English language, and not of the Greek; and he will observe that in every instance quoted, the

judgment of our Translators has led them to insert the English definite article where the Greek text has none. But though they have done this, he will be at liberty to change that article into the indefinite, or to omit it altogether, if he thinks that by so doing he can bring out a better or more consistent sense. He may read if he chooses, "Truly this Man was a Son of God:" there is nothing to prevent him. His only guide on such occasions, if he is really perplexed to discover the truth, will be to try the question, in a candid and earnest spirit, by the rules of reason and common sense, by the ordinary usage of the English tongue on similar occasions, and by the collateral aid of similar or kindred passages in the New Testament, where no doubt is felt.

2. We come next to a small class of examples in which there is a decided, though not a strong preference of one of these nouns over the other. In the form of *Θεου υἱος*, "God's Son," no article is inserted, but a preponderance of emphasis is given to the *possessive* of the two nouns in regimen, by its precedence over the noun *possessed* in the order of the Greek words. This phrase, then, comes under Rule 4, Class II., of *Greek substantives rendered emphatical by their position*. The three following passages are all the instances in which the words in question are found in this order in the New Testament:

Matt. 14:33. Then THEY that were in the SHIP came, and worshipped him, saying,
Of a truth, thou art God's Son.

27:43. He trusted in GOD; let him deliver him now, if he will have him:
for he said, (—) I am God's Son.

54. Now when the CENTURION, and THEY that were with him WATCHING
JESUS, saw the EARTHQUAKE and *those* THINGS that were DONE, they
feared greatly, saying, Truly, this was God's Son.

According to Dr. Middleton's rule, no sign of emphasis was to be expected after verbs substantive which *simply affirm* or *deny existence*, but here we have a preference shewn of one of these nouns over the other, which is as naturally expressed by its position in the English language, as it is for the same cause in the Greek. We can scarcely read the phrase "God's Son," without being inclined to lay a greater stress on the former than on the latter word.

3. Our next class of examples is more numerous, and now the emphasis is of a more decided character. In the form of *υἱος του Θεου*, "the Son of GOD," the Greek article is prefixed to the word "God," as shewing that it was intended to be marked with an emphasis much beyond that of its correlative term "Son." The instances of this form of words are all found in the narratives of the Evangelists: viz.—

Matt. 4: 3. And when the TEMPTER came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of GOD, command that these STONES be made Bread.

6. If thou be the Son of GOD, cast thyself down.

8:29. What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of GOD?

27:40. If thou be the Son of GOD, come down from the CROSS.

Mark 5: 7. What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the MOST-HIGH GOD?

Luke 4: 3. And the DEVIL said unto him, If thou be the Son of GOD, command this STONE that it be made Bread.

8:28. What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of GOD MOST-HIGH?

John 10:36. Say ye of him, whom the FATHER hath sanctified, and sent unto the WORLD, Thou blasphemest, because I said I am the Son of GOD?

19: 7. The JEWS answered him, We have a Law, and by our LAW he ought to die, Because he made himself the Son of GOD.

The expression, "God's Son," in which a less emphasis is conferred on the word "God," than that which is exhibited in the last quoted examples, was the phrase made use of by the unconverted mariners of a vessel on the lake of Galilee; by the Roman Centurion, and other Roman soldiers, also unconverted people; and by those Jews who crucified our Lord. The two former classes of men meant nothing offensive by the use of the phrase, but the Jews did; they evidently spoke the words with a malicious feeling, caused by their hatred of Jesus for claiming to be "God's Son." In the present case of a more decided emphasis on the word "God," we see this feeling manifested with still greater intensity: 1st, by Satan himself; 2nd, by those Devils who were sent into the herd of swine, and by those whose name was Legion; 3rd, by those Jews who railed at our Lord when he was on the cross, and taunted him with contemptuous reproaches; as well as by those who pleaded against him the same form of words, when employed by himself, as a reason why he ought to be crucified. All these instances shew a bitter animosity against Jesus, in those who made use of the phrase, which would lead us to infer, that when the stress of the voice was laid on the last word of the phrase, "the Son of GOD," that animosity was called forth by their knowing that Jesus did not simply declare himself to be the "Son of God," but "the Son of GOD," in a more distinct and remarkable manner. We must suppose also, that this was the sense which our Lord intended to convey to their minds, when he spoke of himself as the Son of GOD; since it was that speech for which the Jews charged him with blasphemy. But unless we lay the emphasis on the word "GOD," in a particular manner, this meaning of the phrase could not be made apparent.

4. In our last-quoted examples, the emphasis is restricted to the noun in the possessive case. We have now to treat of the two nouns in connexion, when both have the sign of the Greek article, and both, therefore are to be understood as entitled to particular emphasis. The following instances are all those in which the two words are employed in combination with the Greek article in such a manner, as to demand the most emphatic sense of which each is capable:—

- Matt. 16:16. And Simon Peter answered and said, **Thou** art the **CHRIST**, the **SON** of the **LIVING** **GOD**.
- 26:63. And the **HIGH-PRIEST** answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the **LIVING** **GOD**, that thou tell us whether **thou** be the **CHRIST**, the **SON** of **GOD**.
- Mark 3:11. And **UNCLEAN SPIRITS**, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, **Thou** art the **SON** of **GOD**; and he straitly charged them that they should not make him known.
- 14:61. Again the **HIGH-PRIEST** asked him, and said unto him, Art **thou** the **CHRIST**, the **SON** of the **BLESSED**? And **JESUS** said, **I** am.
- Luke 4:41. And Devils also came out of many, crying out and saying, **Thou** art the **CHRIST**, the **SON** of **GOD**. And he, rebuking them, suffered them not to speak, For they knew that he was the **CHRIST**.
- 22:70. Then said they all, Art **thou** the **SON** of **GOD**? And **HE** said unto them, **Ye** say That **I** am.
- John 1:34. And **I** saw and bare record, That this is the **SON** of **GOD**.
50. Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, **thou** art the **SON** of **GOD**; **thou** art the **KING** of **ISRAEL**.
- 3:18. **HE** that **BELIEVETH** on him is not condemned; but **HE** that **BELIEVETH** not is condemned already, Because he hath not believed on the **NAME** of the **ONLY-BEGOTTEN** **Son** of **GOD**.
- 5:25. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The **Hour** is coming, and now is, when the **DEAD** shall hear the **VOICE** of the **SON** of **GOD**: and **THEY** that **HEAR** shall live.
- 6:68. Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast the **Words** of eternal **Life**. And **we** believe and are sure, That **thou** art the **CHRIST**, the **SON** of the **LIVING** **GOD**.
- 9:35. **JESUS** heard That they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost **thou** believe on the **SON** of **GOD**?
- 11: 4. When **JESUS** heard that, he said, This **SICKNESS** is not unto **Death**, but for the **GLORY** of **GOD**, that the **SON** of **GOD** might be glorified thereby.
27. She saith unto him, Yea, Lord, **I** believe That **thou** art the **CHRIST**, **THAT** **SON** of **GOD** that should **COME** into the **WORLD**.
- 20:31. But these are written, that ye might believe That **JESUS** is the **CHRIST**, the **SON** of **GOD**, and that believing ye might have **Life** through his **NAME**.
- Acts 8:37. And **PHILIP** said, If thou believest with all thine **HEART**, thou mayest.

And he answered and said, I believe that JESUS CHRIST is the SON of GOD.

- Acts 9:20. And straightway he preached CHRIST in the SYNAGOGUES, That he is the SON of GOD.
- Rom. 8:19. For the EARNEST-EXPECTATION of the CREATURE waiteth for the MANIFESTATION of the SONS of GOD.
- 2 Cor. 1:19. For the SON of GOD, THAT Jesus Christ, who was PREACHED among you by us, even by me, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in him was yea.
- Galat. 2:20. And the Life which I now live in the Flesh, I live by THAT Faith I have in THAT SON of GOD, who LOVED me and gave himself for me.
- Eph. 4:13. Till we ALL come in the UNITY of the FAITH, and of the KNOWLEDGE of the SON of GOD, unto a perfect Man, unto the Measure of the Stature of the FULNESS of CHRIST.
- Heb. 4:14. Seeing then that we have a great High-Priest that is passed into the HEAVENS, Jesus the SON of GOD, let us hold fast our PROFESSION.
- 6: 6. For it is impossible if they shall fall away, to renew them again unto Repentance ; seeing they crucify unto themselves the SON of GOD afresh, and put him to an open shame.
- 7: 3. For This MELCHISEDEC . . . without father, without mother, without descent, having neither Beginning of Days nor End of Life, but made like unto the SON of GOD, abideth a Priest CONTINUALLY.
- 10:29. Of how much Sorer Punishment, suppose ye, shall HE be thought worthy, who hath TRODDEN-UNDER-FOOT the SON of GOD.
- 1 Joh. 3: 8. For this purpose the SON of GOD was manifested, that he might destroy the WORKS of the DEVIL.
- 4:15. Whosoever shall confess That Jesus is the SON of GOD, GOD dwelleth in him, and he in GOD.
- 5: 5. Who is HE that OVERCOMETH the WORLD, but HE that BELIEVETH That Jesus is the SON of GOD ?
10. HE that BELIEVETH on the SON of GOD, hath the WITNESS in himself: HE that BELIEVETH not GOD, hath made him a Liar, Because he believeth not the RECORD which GOD gave of his SON.
12. HE that HATH the SON hath LIFE; and HE that HATH not the SON of GOD hath not LIFE.
13. These things have I written unto YOU that BELIEVE on the NAME of the SON of GOD: that ye may know That ye have eternal Life, and that he may believe on the NAME of the SON of GOD.
20. And we know That the SON of GOD is come, and hath given us an Understanding, that we may know HIM that is TRUE, and we are in HIM that is TRUE, even in his SON Jesus Christ. This is the TRUE God and eternal LIFE.
- Rev. 2:18. And unto the ANGEL of the CHURCH in Thyatira write: These THINGS saith THAT SON of GOD, who HATH his EYES like unto a Flame of Fire, and his FEET are like Fine-brass.

In this remarkable series of quotations respecting “ the SON OF GOD,”

we have, first, the explicit declaration of Peter, concerning which "Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon, Bar-jona: For Flesh and Blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but **THAT FATHER** of mine which is in **HEAVEN**." It is thus proved to be, in its fullest sense, the title conferred on Jesus, through the medium of one of his disciples, by inspiration from God himself. Secondly, the **HIGH-PRIEST**, in the presence of "the **CHIEF-PRIESTS**, and **ELDERS**, and the **SCRIBES**, even All the **COUNCIL**," called upon Jesus, by solemn adjuration of the **LIVING GOD**, to declare whether **he** were the **CHRIST**, the **SON** of **GOD**? or as another Evangelist says, "He asked him, Art **thou** the **CHRIST**, the **SON** of the **BLESSED**?" and on Jesus answering, "**I** am," they immediately charged him with blasphemy, and declared him guilty of death. We may obtain some, if not an adequate conception, of the full meaning of this form of words, "the **SON** of **GOD**," by observing the awful nature of the oath under which the High-Priest put the question, and elicited the answer; and from the punishment of death, by crucifixion, decreed to be the fitting consequence of that answer which his judges chose to deem our Lord's blasphemous reply. Thirdly, we see two striking instances of that kind of testimony which the Apostle James adverts to when he says (ii. 19), "**Thou** believest That there is one **GOD**; thou doest well: the **DEVILS** also believe and tremble." Here we find unclean Spirits, and Devils, which were cast out of many, loudly proclaiming the great Truth which was known to them, that Jesus was the **SON** of **GOD**. They did not then vent their rage against him, but willingly confessed what they knew, and were checked by our Lord himself, in their readiness to make that declaration which they could not help making. Fourthly, Jesus appropriates the title of "the **SON** of **GOD**" to himself, not in reply to any question put to him, but of his own accord, and in the most express terms (see John iii. 18; v. 25; and ix. 35). In this last instance, having healed the man that was born blind, Jesus asked him, "Dost **thou** believe on the **SON** of **GOD**?" **He** answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And **JESUS** said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is **HE** that **TALKETH** with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe, and he worshipped him;" shewing by that act, that he understood him to be the **SON** of **GOD**, in a sense which entitled him to divine honour. Our Lord again specially asserts his absolute right to this title in its fullest sense, when he remarks of the death of Lazarus, that it was an event by which

* The Vat. M.S. reads here "the **SON** of **MAN**."

himself, as the SON of GOD, should be glorified; and it was so: nothing disturbed and exasperated the Jews so much as the raising of Lazarus from the dead, on which account “the CHIEF-PRIESTS consulted that they might put LAZARUS also to death; Because that by reason of him many of the JEWS went away, and believed on JESUS” (John xii. 10). But it redounded to the glory of Christ also in the declaration made by Martha, the sister of the man that was dead. “Then said MARTHA unto JESUS, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my BROTHER had not died. But I know That even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of GOD, GOD will give it thee. JESUS saith unto her, thy BROTHER shall rise again. MARTHA saith unto him, I know That he shall rise again in the RESURRECTION at the LAST Day. JESUS said unto her, I am the RESURRECTION and the LIFE: HE that BELIEVETH in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: and WHOSOEVER LIVETH and believeth in me shall NEVER die. Believest thou this? She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe That thou art the CHRIST, THAT SON of GOD which should COME into the WORLD.” But though Martha’s faith was so clear and strong, it seems to have been obscured and weakened again, when Jesus actually prepared to carry into effect his miraculous design. “JESUS said, Take ye away the STONE. Martha, the SISTER of HIM that was DEAD, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been *dead* four days. JESUS saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, That if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldst see the GLORY of GOD?” Her sister Mary was not called upon to make profession of her faith on this occasion: it was probably unnecessary, as Jesus knew that she had chosen that good part which should not be taken from her. One remark of hers, however, may be supposed to have had a pathos singularly touching to the tender heart of Jesus, if we may infer such a circumstance from the effect of Emphasis: “When MARY was come where JESUS was and saw him, she fell down at his FEET, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here My Brother had not died.” This is the same remark which Martha made, but the stress of the voice is laid on the pronoun in this case, and not, as in the former, on the substantive. To effect this, the pronoun precedes the substantive in the Greek, as Mary uses it, but it follows as Martha employs it. The meaning of Mary’s remark is, therefore, different from that of her sister’s; it implies that if Jesus had been there, he would not have allowed her Brother to die, on account of the distress which so deep an affliction would bring upon herself, for whom he had a regard; for “Jesus loved

MARTHA, and her SISTER, and LAZARUS" (xi. 5). "When JESUS, therefore, saw her weeping, and the JEWS also weeping which CAME with her, he groaned in the SPIRIT and was troubled, and said, Where have ye laid him? They said unto him, Lord, come and see. JESUS wept" (xi. 33).

The remaining instances, with one exception, are attestations on the part of the Apostles and Evangelists, to the truth of this great Doctrine of the Gospel, that JESUS is the SON of GOD; the "SON of GOD" pre-eminently, and in the highest sense. The exception is in the quotation from Romans, viii. 19. "The EARNEST EXPECTATION of the CREATURE waiteth for the MANIFESTATION of the SONS of GOD." The phrase here is in a form as emphatic as any of the others, but the sense is different, since it affirms of many that which in the other examples is affirmed of Christ alone. The proper explication of this phrase in the plural is to be found in the first mention of these SONS of GOD. They will be seen described under our first head as "the Sons of God," without any emphasis on either word, in the quotation from the 14th verse of the same chapter: "For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, ~~they~~ are the Sons of God." It is the *renewed mention* of them in verse 19, which invests them with the Sign of Emphasis, in Greek by the use of the article, and in English by the use of small capitals, without altering their original and proper description, which was unemphatic. (*See Rule 7, page 19.*)

That Jesus was exclusively as well as emphatically the SON of GOD, the SON of the BLESSED, in a manner which could not be affirmed of any other person living, or any that ever had lived, was the Truth made known to the treasurer of Queen Candace, when Philip beginning at Isaiah "preached to him Jesus," and aroused in his breast the wish to be baptized. This was the great Truth taught by Paul in the synagogues at Damascus, immediately after his conversion; and preached by him, as well as by Silvanus and Timotheus, among the Corinthians. The inference drawn from this Truth, was Paul's most powerful argument for the recovery of his misled Galatian converts out of the snares of their Judaizing teachers; when he proved to them that "if Righteousness come by the Law then is Christ dead in vain" (ii. 21). It was for the purpose of teaching this Truth, as Paul tells the Ephesians, that Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors, and Teachers were appointed (iv. 11). In the Epistle to the Hebrews, this Truth is the subject everywhere treated of; and in the writings of the beloved disciple it is particularly insisted on. John closes his Gospel with the decla-

ration, that to set forth this Truth as the means of man's salvation, was the principal object of his writing that book. He introduces it in his first chapter twice; he repeats it in the 3rd, 5th, 6th, 9th, and in the 11th twice; and in his Epistles it is enforced again and again, in the most earnest and affectionate manner; nor does he quit the theme, till he has carried on his description of "the SON of GOD" into the Book of Revelation, where Jesus is represented to the Church of Thyatira as visibly glorified.

The phrase of which we are treating, is capable of one form of expression which has not yet been noticed—that of *ὁ υἱὸς Θεοῦ*, the SON of God; where the former noun possesses the sign of emphasis, the latter not. But it is needless to speculate on what might have been the meaning of such a phrase, if it were so marked out for a peculiar emphasis, since it is a form of expression, which, in relation to these two words in combination, is never met with: "*ὁ υἱὸς Θεοῦ*, (says Dr. Middleton), is never found, and it would scarcely have been Greek."* And again: "With respect to *Θεός*, there is, I believe, no instance in the New Testament, though the word occurs more than one thousand three hundred times, in which it does not conform to that law of regimen which forbids an anarthrous appellative to be governed by one having the article prefixed; and hence such a phrase as *ὁ υἱὸς Θεοῦ* is not to be found." †—The word *Κυριος*, Lord, he observes, "is not so strictly limited, since we find in Matt. i. 24, *ὁ αγγελος Κυριου*, the ANGEL of the Lord; Luke i. 38, *ἡ δουλη Κυριου*, the HAND-MAID of the Lord; Acts ii. 20, *την ἡμεραν Κυριου*, the DAY of the Lord; and James v. 11, *το τέλος Κυριου*, the END of the Lord." "Proper names also are very commonly anarthrous, though depending on appellatives which have the article." ‡ One exception *ὁ υἱὸς ειρηνης*, the SON of Peace (Luke x. 6) may be accounted for by its being an oriental figure of speech for "a man of a peaceful spirit."

We have seen four separate modifications of meaning attached, in the original, to the different forms of a phrase, which, in our English version, is made to present but one aspect; and each of these modifications of meaning may be shewn to be that which is most suitable to the circumstances under which it is used. All these distinctions are so well defined in the Greek text, that no one can object to receive them; nor can any doubt remain as to the propriety of their being equally distinguished in the English version. It is not probable that

* Middleton on the Greek Article, by Rose, p. 134.

† Ibid. p. 206.

‡ Ibid. p. 207.

many phrases, or sets of words, will furnish so interesting a subject of investigation as this phrase, "the Son of God;" but every word, and every combination of words, has a sphere of action peculiar to itself, in which its ramifications are to be traced; and by the aid of the various signs of emphasis, many will be found to repay enquiry into the extent of their application, and some will furnish materials for valuable results, contributing greatly to the development or the discovery of truth.

II. THE SON OF MAN.

THIS phrase, "the Son of Man," offers less variety of emphasis than that of "the Son of God," and affords less room for illustration; but it is still attended with some very important considerations. It is found only in two forms: viz., with the emphasis attached to both nouns, or to neither. In the former state it occurs eighty-four times in the course of the four Gospels; and on every one of these occasions, it is made use of by our Lord in speaking of himself. The following are the instances of its first occurrence in each of the Gospels.

Matt. 8:19. And a certain Scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. And JESUS saith unto him, The FOXES have holes, and the BIRDS of the AIR have nests, but the SON of MAN hath not where to lay his Head.

Mark 2:10. But that ye may know that the SON of MAN hath Power on EARTH to forgive Sins, (he saith unto the SICK-OF-THE-PALSY,) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy BED, and go thy way into thine HOUSE. And immediately he arose, took up the BED, and went forth before them all.

Luke 5:24. *The same incident is narrated, in nearly the same words.*

John 1:52. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see HEAVEN open, and the ANGELS of GOD ascending and descending upon the SON of MAN.

We cannot infer from these passages, that any of them was the first occasion on which our Lord spoke of himself as emphatically the SON of MAN. The phrase appears to have drawn forth on these occasions no remark from his Disciples. Even when he spoke to them more distinctly as to this point, "Whom do MEN say that I, the SON of MAN, am?" (Matt. xvi. 14), it elicited no other reply than, "SOME say that

thou art John the BAPTIST; some, Elias; and others, Jeremias, or one of the PROPHETS." The Disciples appear to have been satisfied that our Lord had good reasons for taking to himself this title, and they thought no further of it. But there were certain Greeks who came up to worship at the Feast (John xii. 21); and the same came therefore to Philip, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus; and Andrew and Philip tell Jesus. "And Jesus answered them, saying, The HOUR is come that the SON of MAN should be glorified . . . And **Æ**, if I be lifted up from the EARTH, will draw All Men unto me. This he said, signifying What Death he should die. The PEOPLE answered him, **U** We have heard out of the LAW, That CHRIST abideth for ever; and how sayest **thou**, The SON of MAN must be lifted up? Who is This SON of MAN?" (John xii. 23—34).

The answer to this question is not given by our Lord himself in the Gospel narrative, but it may be found in that passage of Isaiah, to which the Evangelist immediately afterwards directs our attention, by quoting the opening lines; and may we not suppose that with this view they were quoted? "Lord, who hath believed our REPORT? and to whom hath the ARM of the Lord been revealed?" To the question, "Who is This SON of MAN?" the whole of the Prophet's description contains an answer, and it is a very striking one. (Isaiah liii.), "Who hath believed our Report? and to whom is the Arm of the LORD revealed? For he shall grow up before him as a tender Plant, and as a Root out of a dry Ground: he hath no Form nor Comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no Beauty that we should desire him. He is despised and rejected of Men; a Man of Sorrows, and acquainted with Grief: and we hid as it were our Faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. Surely he hath borne our Grievs, and carried our Sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our Transgressions, he was bruised for our Iniquities: the Chastisement of our Peace was upon him; and with his Stripes we are healed. All we like Sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the Iniquity of us all. He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his Mouth: he is brought as a Lamb to the Slaughter, and as a Sheep before her Shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his Mouth. He was taken from Prison, and from Judgment: and who shall declare his Generation? for he was cut off out of the Land of the Living: for the Transgression of my People was he stricken. And he made his Grave with the Wicked, and with the

Rich in his Death; because he had done no Violence, neither was any Deceit in his Mouth. Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he hath put him to Grief: when thou shalt make his Soul an Offering for Sin, he shall see his Seed, he shall prolong his Days, and the Pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his Hand. He shall see of the Travail of his Soul, and shall be satisfied: by his Knowledge shall my righteous Servant justify many; for he shall bear their Iniquities. Therefore will I divide him a Portion with the Great, and he shall divide the Spoil with the Strong; because he hath poured out his Soul unto Death: and he was numbered with the Transgressors; and he bore the Sin of many, and made Intercession for the Transgressors."

It is scarcely possible that this wonderful passage should be touched upon by the Evangelist, without its being intended to open out the whole of it to the enquirer. The commencement is, indeed, three verses earlier: "Behold my Servant shall deal prudently, he shall be exalted and extolled, and be very high. As many were astonished at thee; his Visage was so marred more than any Man, and his Form more than the Sons of Men. So shall he sprinkle many Nations; the Kings shall shut their Mouths at him: for that which had not been told them shall they see: and that which they had not heard shall they consider" (Isaiah lii. 13, 16).

In the whole compass of this beautiful and affecting description, we have a full answer to the question, "Who is This SON of MAN?" This answer represents the SON of MAN *as he appeared in his humiliation*. There was another reference made at the same time (John xii. 39), which also contains an answer to the same question. This answer represents the SON of MAN *as he appeared in his glory* (Isaiah vi. 1). It commences as follows:—"In the year that the King Uzziah died, I saw also the Lord [Adonai] sitting upon a Throne, high and lifted up, and his Train filled the Temple. Above it stood the Seraphims: each one had six Wings; with twain he covered his Face, and with twain he covered his Feet, and with twain he did fly. And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of Hosts [Jehovah of Hosts]: the whole Earth is full of his Glory. And the Posts and Door moved at the Voice of him that cried, and the House was filled with Smoke. Then said I, Woe is me! for I am undone; because I am a Man of unclean Lips, and I dwell in the midst of a People of unclean Lips: for mine Eyes have seen the King, the LORD of Hosts [Jehovah of Hosts]. Then flew one of the Seraphims unto me, having a live Coal in his Hand, which he had

taken with the Tongs from off the Altar: and he laid it upon my Mouth, and said, Lo, this hath touched thy Lips; and thine Iniquity is taken away, and thy Sin is purged. Also I heard the Voice of the Lord [Adonai] saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, Here am I; send me. And he said, Go, and tell this People, Hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not. Make the Heart of this People fat, and make their Ears heavy, and shut their Eyes; lest they see with their Eyes, and hear with their Ears, and understand with their Heart, and convert, and be healed."

By quoting the opening verse of the former, and the concluding verse of the latter extract, John briefly recommends the entire of each passage to the consideration of those who are inclined, like the Berceans, to "search the SCRIPTURES," whether these things are so. We may be indifferent to his recommendation: we may neglect his references: we are not *forced* to believe. The same satisfactory kind of testimony is offered to the readers of the Scriptures in the present day, which was set before the Jews when our Lord was with them on the earth; but as the PHARISEES and LAWYERS then "rejected the COUNSEL of GOD against themselves" (Luke vii. 30), so may we; and then the concluding verse of John's quotation will be equally applicable to us:—"Therefore they could not believe, Because that Esaias said again, He hath blinded Their EYES, and hardened Their HEART; that they should not see with their EYES, nor understand with their HEART, and be converted, and I should heal them." But he adds, "These things said Esaias, when he saw his GLORY, and spake of him" (John xii. 41). Thus reference is made to the *beginning* of John's last quotation from Isaiah, as well as to its *close*; and we are expressly told by the Evangelist, that when Isaiah saw these things, "in the year that King Uzziah died," he saw the GLORY OF JESUS and SPAKE OF HIM.

That the Lord [Adonai] is Christ, Jesus himself has taught us in the question which he put to the Pharisees, (Matt. xxii. 42): "What think ye of CHRIST? Whose Son is he? They say unto him, DAVID'S. He saith unto them, How then doth David in Spirit call him Lord, saying, The LORD said unto my LORD, Sit thou on my right *hand*, till I make thine ENEMIES thy FOOTSTOOL. If David then call him Lord, how is he his Son?" The reference here made, is to the 110th Psalm:—"The LORD [Jehovah] said unto my Lord [Adonai], Sit thou on my right hand, until I make thine Enemies thy Footstool." We see, therefore, from these instances, that, according to the testimony of Jesus himself, the Lord [Adonai] is the CHRIST; that, according to

the reference made by John, the Lord [Adonai], as described in the sixth chapter of Isaiah, is the SON of MAN in his GLORY, and as described in the fifty-third chapter, is the SON of MAN in his HUMILIATION; and that the SON of MAN is also JESUS, who is the CHRIST, the SON of the LIVING GOD, we learn from the declaration of St. Peter, who was inspired with this knowledge by immediate revelation from GOD the FATHER.

By the phrase, *ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου*, which means “the SON of MAN,” in the most exclusive and emphatic sense of the words,—we learn that our Lord designed to denote himself as the *Representative* of *Mankind* in general—the *Embodiment* of *Humanity*—the *Son* of *Human Nature*, without its sins, by reason of his spiritual conception—the *second Adam* replacing the *first* as he stood before the fall; but so much more than the *first Adam*, as being *indefectible*. “For verily he took not on *him* the nature of Angels; but he took on *him* the Seed of Abraham” (Heb. ii. 16). “For what the LAW COULD not do in that it was weak through the FLESH, GOD, sending his OWN Son in the Likeness of sinful Flesh, and for Sin, condemned SIN in the FLESH, that the RIGHTEOUSNESS of the LAW might be fulfilled in US who WALK not after the Flesh but after the Spirit” (Rom. viii. 4). “For he hath made HIM, who KNEW no Sin, to be Sin for us; that ~~we~~ might be made the Righteousness of God in him” (2 Cor. v. 21).

The phrase, *υἱὸς ἀνθρώπου*, “the Son of Man,” in its unemphatic form, occurs only four times throughout the New Testament: as follows.

John 5:26. For as the FATHER hath Life in himself, so hath he given to the SON to have Life in himself; and hath given him Authority to execute Judgment also, Because he is the Son of Man.

Heb. 2: 6. But one in a certain place testified, saying, What is Man, That thou art mindful of him? or the Son of Man, That thou visitest him? Thou madest him a little lower than the Angels; thou crownedst him with Glory and Honour, and didst set him over the WORKS of thy HANDS; thou hast put all things in subjection under his FEET.

Rev. 1:12. And I turned to see the VOICE that spake with me. And being turned, I saw Seven golden Candlesticks; and in the Midst of the SEVEN Candlesticks, *one* like unto the Son of Man, clothed with a Garment down to the Foot.

14:14. And I looked, and behold a white Cloud, and upon the CLOUD one sat like unto the Son of Man, having on his HEAD a golden Crown, and in his HAND a sharp Sickle.

The words, “the Son of Man,” in their unemphatic form, are

commonly used among Oriental nations to express simply a *Man*. “The Syrians (says Michaelis) cannot express the word *Man* otherwise than by *Son of Man*.”* The reference, in John v. 26, is plainly to our Saviour, but he is not there emphatically mentioned as the SON of MAN. The reason is obvious: he is spoken of as the *Son of Man*, or a *Man*, in the ordinary sense of the words, because it is as a human being that he has authority given him “to execute Judgment.” “For in that he himself hath suffered being tempted, he is able to succour THEM that are TEMPTED” (Heb. ii. 18). “For we have not an High-priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our INFIRMITIES; but one who was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without Sin” (iv. 15).

The second example (Heb. ii. 6) is so well explained by Dr. Middleton, that it is unnecessary to do more than quote his words: “*Τίος ανθρώπου* is here no more than a common Hebraism, and cannot, as is plain from the context, be meant of the Messiah. ‘What is the the Messiah, that thou hast such regard unto him?’ is a question which the Psalmist would hardly ask. It signifies, therefore, no more than any Son of Man” (p. 402).

Our third example is from the Book of Revelation (i. 13), in which the Saviour is expressly alluded to, but it is in his glorified condition, and not as the Son of Man, in the ordinary and unemphatic form of that phrase. When, therefore, we read that “in the Midst of the SEVEN Candlesticks was one like unto the Son of Man,” we must understand the phrase to mean, like unto any Son of Man as he appears on earth; but when the description proceeds thus: “His HEAD and his HAIRS were white like Wool, as white as Snow; and his EYES were as a Flame of Fire; and his FEET like unto Fine-brass, as if they burned in a Furnace;” we see at once that this is the description of “the SON of GOD,” mentioned in ii. 18, who hath “his EYES like unto a Flame of Fire; and his FEET are like Fine-brass.”

The same remark applies to the fourth quotation (xiv. 14). He who sat upon the cloud was “like unto the Son of Man;” in figure, therefore, like a Man—a human being; but when he is described as “having on his HEAD a golden Crown, and in his HAND a sharp Sickle,” we recognise the SON of GOD in his state of glorification.

Paul says, in his Epistle to the Ephesians (iii. 3), that the MYSTERY of CHRIST was by the GRACE of GOD committed to him for dispensation among the Gentiles, “which in Other Ages was not made

* Middleton on the Greek Article, p. 246.

known unto the SONS of MEN, as it is now revealed unto his HOLY Apostles and Prophets by the Spirit."

The phrase, "the SONS of MEN," is here emphatical in both nouns, but it is evidently nothing more than the emphatic form of the Hebraism for "Man" already mentioned.

MAN as an abstract term, as representing MANKIND, or MAN emphatically, without reference to any particular person, is a word of common occurrence in the New Testament: as Matt. x. 36, "The Foes of a MAN shall be THEY of his HOUSEHOLD;" xiii. 25, "But while MEN SLEPT, His ENEMY came and sowed Tares;" Luke iv. 4, "It is written, that MAN shall not live by Bread alone;" John ii. 24, "But JESUS did not commit himself unto them, because he KNEW all *men*, and needed not that any should testify of MAN; for *he* knew what was in MAN."

The words, "SON of MAN," therefore, in their adoption by our Lord, as a title peculiar to himself, constitute a phrase full of the most important meanings, and one scarcely less necessary to be studied by us for the Truths which it involves, than is the phrase, "the SON of GOD." By the one title, Jesus is intimately and completely identified with MAN'S NATURE, and by the other with the GODHEAD.

III.—THE HOLY SPIRIT.

THE "Holy Spirit," *πνευμα ἅγιον*, in which form the article is not attached to either word in Greek, and no sign of emphasis attends it in English, appears to be the form more particularly applicable to the representation of the Holy Spirit, when his secret INFLUENCES, or less obvious OPERATIONS, are mentioned. It is generally in this unemphatic form that we find the phrase presented, when we read of persons "being baptized with the holy Spirit,"—"receiving the holy Spirit,"—"being filled with the holy Spirit,"—"the holy Spirit being upon them,"—"the holy Spirit being given to them,"—"being anointed with the holy Spirit,"—"sanctified by the holy Spirit,"—"made partakers of the holy Spirit,"—"moved by the holy Spirit."

The emphatic form, *το πνευμα το ἅγιον*, "the HOLY SPIRIT," is more particularly employed when the HOLY SPIRIT is spoken of as a PERSON, or as made manifest in some striking act. The following are all

the instances in which this form of expression occurs in the New Testament:—

- Matt. 12:32. But whosoever speaketh against the HOLY GHOST, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in This WORLD, neither in THAT which is to COME.
- Mark 3:29. But he that shall blaspheme against the HOLY GHOST hath NEVER Forgiveness, but is in danger of Eternal Damnation.
- 12:36. For David himself said by the HOLY GHOST, The LORD said to my LORD, Sit thou on my right *hand* till I make thine ENEMIES thy FOOTSTOOL.
- 13:11. But when they shall lead you and deliver you up, take no thought before-hand what yeshall speak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in That HOUR, THAT speak ye: for it is not YE that SPEAK, but the HOLY GHOST.
- Luke 2:26. And it was revealed unto him by the HOLY GHOST, that he should not see Death, before he had seen the Lord's CHRIST.
- 3:22. The HEAVEN was opened, and the HOLY GHOST descended in a Bodily Shape like a Dove upon him, and a Voice came from Heaven which said, *Thou* art my BELOVED SON; in thee I am well pleased.
- John 14:26. But the COMFORTER, which is the HOLY GHOST, whom the FATHER shall send in my NAME, *he* shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever things I have said unto you.
- Acts 1:16. Men and Brethren, this SCRIPTURE must needs have been fulfilled, which the HOLY GHOST by the Mouth of David spake before concerning THAT Judas which WAS Guide.
- 5: 3. But Peter said, Ananias, why hath SATAN filled thine HEART to lie to the HOLY GHOST, and to keep back part of the PRICE of the LAND ?
32. And *we* are His Witnesses of these THINGS; and so is also the HOLY GHOST, whom GOD hath given to THEM that OBEY him.
- 7:51 Ye stiffnecked and uncircumcised in HEART and EARS, *ye* do always resist the HOLY GHOST: as your FATHERS did, so do *ye*.
- 10:44. While PETER yet spake these WORDS, the HOLY GHOST fell on All THEM which HEARD the WORD.
47. Can any man forbid WATER, that these should not be BAPTIZED, which have received the HOLY GHOST as well as *we* ?
- 11:15. And as I BEGAN to speak, the HOLY GHOST fell on them, as on us at the Beginning.
- 13: 2. As they ministered to the LORD and fasted, the HOLY GHOST said, Separate me BARNABAS and SAUL for the WORK whereunto I have called them.
4. So *they*, being sent forth by the HOLY GHOST, departed unto SELEUCIA.
- 15: 8. And GOD which KNOWETH-THE-HEARTS, bare them witness, giving them the HOLY GHOST, even as he did unto us.

- Acts 19: 6. And when PAUL had laid his HANDS upon them, the HOLY GHOST came on them ; and they spake with Tongues and prophesied.
- 20:23. Save That the HOLY GHOST witnesseth in every City, saying, That Bonds and Afflictions abide me.
28. Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to All the FLOCK over the which the HOLY GHOST hath made you Overseers, to feed the CHURCH of GOD, which he hath purchased with his OWN Blood.
- 21:11. Thus saith the HOLY GHOST, So shall the JEWS at Jerusalem bind the MAN that owneth this GIRDLE, and shall deliver him into the Hands of the Gentiles.
- 28:25. Well spake the HOLY GHOST by Esaias the PROPHET unto our FATHERS, saying, Go unto this PEOPLE, and say, Hearing, ye shall hear and shall not understand ; and seeing, ye shall see and not perceive.
- Eph. 4:30. And grieve not the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, whereby ye are sealed unto the Day of Redemption.
- Heb. 3: 7. Wherefore as the HOLY GHOST saith, To-day if ye will hear his VOICE, harden not your HEARTS.
- 9: 8. The HOLY GHOST this signifying, that the WAY into the HOLIEST of ALL was not yet made manifest, while as the FIRST Tabernacle was yet standing.
- 10:15. Whereof the HOLY GHOST also is a witness to us : for after that he had SAID-BEFORE, This is the COVENANT that I will make with them, "After those DAYS, saith the Lord, I will put my Laws into their Hearts, and on their MINDS will I write them."

Another form of the emphatic phrase requires the greater stress of the voice to be laid on the word "Holy," as, *το ἅγιον πνεῦμα*, "the HOLY Spirit." The following quotations contain all the instances of the use of this phrase:—

- Matt. 28:19. Go ye therefore, and teach All NATIONS, baptizing them in the NAME of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY Ghost.
- Luke 12:10. But unto HIM that BLASPHEMETH against the HOLY Ghost, it shall not be forgiven.
12. For the HOLY Ghost shall teach you in the Same HOUR what ye ought to say.
- Acts 1: 8. But ye shall receive Power, after that the HOLY Ghost is come upon you.
- 2:33. Therefore being by the RIGHT-HAND of GOD exalted, and having received of the FATHER the Promise of the HOLY Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear.
- 2:38. Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the NAME of Jesus Christ for the Remission of Sins, and ye shall receive the GIFT of the HOLY Ghost.
- 9:31. Then had the CHURCHES Rest throughout All JUDÆA and Samaria; and were edified; and walking in the FEAR of the LORD, and in the COMFORT of the HOLY Ghost, were multiplied.

Acts 10:45. And THEY of the Circumcision which BELIEVED were astonished, as many as came with PETER, Because that on the GENTILES also was poured out the GIFT of the HOLY Ghost. For they heard them speak with Tongues and magnify GOD.

15:28. For it seemed good to the HOLY Ghost, and to us, to lay upon you no Greater Burthen than these NECESSARY things.

16: 6. Now when they had gone throughout PHRYGIA and the Region of GALATIA, and were forbidden of the HOLY Ghost to preach the WORD in ASIA.

2Cor.13:14. The GRACE of the LORD Jesus Christ, and the LOVE of GOD, and the COMMUNION of the HOLY Ghost be with you all.

1Joh. 5: 7. For there are THREE that BEAR-RECORD in HEAVEN, the FATHER, the WORD, and the HOLY Ghost: and these THREE are one.

The principal difference between these two forms of the emphatic phrase appears to consist in this, that the latter is particularly made use of when "the HOLY Ghost" is mentioned as united with "the FATHER and the SON" in the NAME of the GODHEAD.

IV.—THE TITLES OF THE GODHEAD.

THE Translators of our English Bible, had recourse to a system of emphatic signs in the Old Testament, to represent certain differences in the meaning of those words which they employed to indicate the various Titles of the Godhead: they represented

Adonai	.	by	.	Lord.
Jehovah	.	„	.	LORD.
Elohim	.	„	.	God.
Adonai Jehovah	.	„	.	Lord GOD.
Jehovah Elohim	.	„	.	LORD God.

By *Adonai* is meant a *Ruler or Judge*.

„ *Jehovah* „ *the eternal self-existent One*.

„ *Elohim* „ *the Creator and Governor of the world*.

In the Septuagint, *Jehovah* is always rendered by *ὁ Κύριος*, the LORD, a name expressive of *dominion* or *property*. The Greek Translators used this word in deference to the scruples of the Jews, who always read the word *Adonai* wherever *Jehovah* occurs.

The name, *Elohim*, "God," commences with the 1st verse of the first chapter of Genesis. That of *Jehovah Elohim*, "LORD God," commences with the 4th verse of the second chapter. That of *Jehovah*, "LORD," commences with the 1st verse of the fourth chapter. That of *Adonai*

Jehovah, "Lord GOD," commences with the 2nd verse of the fifteenth chapter. That of *Adonai*, "Lord," commences with the 3rd verse of the eighteenth chapter. "God" is the title given during the work of creation. "LORD God," is the title from the completion of the creation, till the fall of man and his expulsion from Eden. "LORD," is the more general title after that period. "Lord GOD," is the title by which Abraham first addresses the LORD, when the promise is made to him that his seed should be as the stars of heaven in number. "Lord," is first used, when Abraham addresses as, "My Lord," the three angels who appeared to him as men, when he sat at his tent-door in the Plains of Mamre.*

Another name is mentioned in the 1st verse of the seventeenth chapter, *El Shaddai*, "Almighty God." "When Abram was ninety years old, the LORD appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me, and be thou perfect." It is to this title, given on this occasion, that the LORD refers, when he says unto Moses (Exodus vi. 3). "I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the Name of God Almighty, but by my Name JEHOVAH was I not known to them."

One more title is mentioned in the 14th verse of the third chapter of Exodus; it is that by which God commanded Moses to make him known to the Children of Israel: "And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the Children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you." The Septuagint translation renders this phrase by *εγω ειμι ο ων*, "I am HE that IS;" and "HE that IS hath sent me unto you;" a form of expression which accords with one of the titles of God, in the Book of Revelation: *ο ων, και ο ην, και ο ερχομενος*, "HE that IS, and HE that WAS, and HE that is to COME." It is a title to the same purport as the name JEHOVAH.

Under the Gospel dispensation, a great change took place. God was then pleased to reveal himself to mankind as the GOD and Father of the LORD Jesus Christ; and not only so, but as the GOD and

* In verse 5 chapter vi. of the Book of Genesis, our Translators have rendered the name *Jehovah* by the word "GOD," in small capitals. There appears to be no reason why they should have thus departed from their usual practice of expressing it by "LORD." The emphatic form "GOD," as a single word, might have been introduced with great propriety in the fifth chapter, where *Elohim* is first found with the Hebrew article prefixed (*Ha-Elohim*), as in verses 22 and 24, "And Enoch walked with GOD;" verse 9, chapter vi. "Noah walked with GOD;" verse 11, "The Earth also was corrupt before GOD;" and verses 2, 4, chapter vi., "The Sons of GOD," in comparison with "the Daughters of MEN."

Father of all THOSE who should BELIEVE in THAT SON of GOD who LOVED us and gave himself for us (Galat. ii. 20). That SON of GOD taught us to pray, saying, "Our Father, THOU which art in HEAVEN;" and his last comfortable assurance to one of his most devoted followers was, "Go to my BRETHREN, and say unto them, I ascend unto my FATHER and your Father and my God and your God" (John xx. 17). By this encouraging title, therefore, "the GOD and Father of our LORD Jesus Christ;" and by the still more gracious title of "our GOD and Father," we are now permitted to address that awful and inscrutable Being, who revealed himself to faithful Abraham only as "GOD ALMIGHTY," and to the Children of Israel only as "JEHOVAH."

The name of "God" in Greek, Θεός, means the same as the Hebrew *Elohim*, except that the latter is a noun in the plural number. Our English word "God," is the Anglo-Saxon *Gode, good*; and means "the good Being." This is a term equally applicable to God with that of Θεός, as the well-known remark of our Lord Jesus shews (Matt. xix. 17), "Why callest thou Me good? There is none good but one, that is GOD." It is, moreover, a very proper title for us to use, since by it we are continually reminded of the MERCY of God in restoring us to life, when we were dead in trespasses and sins. For "GOD commendeth HIS Love toward us, in That, while we were yet Sinners, Christ died for us" (Rom. v. 8).

The union of two titles by a copulative, when the sign of emphasis is attached only to the first of the two is, according to the 19th of the preceding Rules of the First Class, a reason why those united titles should be regarded as representing only one idea. We must understand, therefore, the terms "the GOD and Father," as blended together, and forming one complete sense; the idea of "the God" being intended in this case to be inseparable from that of "the Father," and that of "the Father," inseparable from that of "the God." The titles, thus united, occur in the following instances:—Rom. xv. 6; 1 Cor. xv. 24; 2 Cor. i. 3; Galat. i. 4, Eph. i. 3; v. 20; Phil. iv. 20; Col. i. 3; iii. 17; 1 Thes. i. 3; iii. 11, 13; 2 Thes. ii. 16; James i. 27; iii. 9; Rev. i. 6. To these may be added the following instances in the Vatican Manuscript, where the second title is in apposition with the first: viz., "GOD the Father;" Col. i. 3, and iii. 17.

By the same Rule (19), we are required to regard as blended together, so as to form one complete idea, the titles of "the GOD and Saviour,"—"the GOD and Lord,"—"the CHRIST and God,"—"the GOD and Christ,"—"the LORD and Saviour."

Examples of these titles occur in the following instances:—

- 1.—Our GOD and Saviour Jesus Christ.—2 Peter i. 1.
Our GREAT God and Saviour Jesus Christ.—Titus ii. 13.
- 2.—Our GOD and Lord Jesus Christ.—2 Thes. i. 12.
The GOD and Lord Jesus Christ.—1 Tim. v. 21.
Our ONLY Absolute-ruler, the God and Lord Jesus Christ.—Jude 4.
Our ONLY Absolute-ruler, the Lord Jesus Christ.—Jude 4 (Vat. MS.).
- 3.—Of THAT GOD and Christ who LOVED me.—Galat. ii. 20 (Vat. MS.).
Of the GOD and Christ Jesus.—1 Tim. v. 21 (Alex. MS.); 2 Tim. iv. 1 (Alex. MS.).
Of the CHRIST and God.—Eph. v. 5.
- 4.—Of our LORD and Saviour Jesus Christ.—2 Peter i. 11, and iii. 18.
Of the GOD Christ.—Col. ii. 2 (Vat. MS.).

To which may be added the same titles in apposition:—

- Our ONLY WISE God the Saviour.—Jude 25.
- Our ONLY God the Saviour.—Jude 25 (Vat. MS.).
- Our SAVIOUR God.—1 Tim. ii. 3; Titus iii. 4.

Examples of a similar nature are found in the following instances: “The HOLY one and Just” (Acts iii. 14); “The SHEPHERD and Bishop of your SOULS” (1 Peter ii. 25); “The APOSTLE and High-priest of our PROFESSION, Christ Jesus” (Heb. iii. 1); “The AUTHOR and Finisher of *our* FAITH, Jesus” (Heb. xii. 2). The sign of emphasis is, in all these cases, attached to the first title only.

We will now select a few instances where each title is intended to form a complete idea, and the sign of emphasis is, consequently, attached to both. When Thomas, in a transport of wonder, gratitude, and joy, exclaims, “My LORD and my GOD!” (John xx. 28), he makes a distinct avowal of his conviction that Jesus was not his LORD only, for this he might have made before, but his GOD also.

Paul says to Timothy, with a double emphasis, which makes GOD and LORD distinct ideas: “I charge thee therefore before GOD, and THAT LORD Jesus Christ who SHALL judge the Quick and the Dead.” *Διαμαρτυρομαι ουν εγω ενωπιον του Θεου και του Κυριου Ιησου Χριστου του μελλοντος κρινειν ζωντας και νεκρους* (2 Tim. iv. 1). But we cannot learn this from the Authorised Version; nor can we tell, from the Authorised Version, whether “the Master and Owner of the ship” in which Paul was sailing (Acts xxvii. 11), were one and the same, or two different persons; but when the Greek text informs us, by the double article, that “the CENTURION believed *τω κυβερνητη και τω ναυκληρω*, the MASTER and the OWNER-OF-THE-SHIP,

more than those THINGS which were SPOKEN by PAUL;" we then see by the above Rule (19), that they were separate persons, and that each title was intended to form a complete idea.

But with respect to the passage just quoted from 2 Tim. iv. 1, it is to be observed that there is a difference between the reading of the *Received Text*, and that of the *Alexandrian Manuscript*. The latter blends together the two titles of *God* and *Christ*, forming of these one complete idea: *Διαμαρτυρομαι ενωπιον του Θεου και Χριστου Ιησου του μελλοντος κρινειν ζωντας και νεκρους*—"I charge thee before that GOD and Christ Jesus, who SHALL judge the Quick and the Dead." What can have caused this difference between the most ancient and the later copies of the sacred text? It cannot be attributed to any error in the most ancient manuscript, for we find the same form of expression in the parallel passage of 1 Tim. v. 21, in the same MS.: *Διαμαρτυρομαι ενωπιον του Θεου και Χριστου Ιησου και των εκλεκτων αγγελων*—"I charge thee before the GOD and Christ Jesus, and the ELECT Angels;" where the reading of the *Received Text* is in accordance with that of the *Alexandrian Manuscript*, though it differs from it in the terms made use of; *Lord* being put for *Christ*: *Διαμαρτυρομαι ενωπιον του Θεου και Κυριου Ιησου Χριστου και των εκλεκτων αγγελων*—"I charge thee before the GOD and Lord Jesus Christ, and the ELECT Angels." The error, therefore, must be that of the later copyists; unless we impute the alteration not to inadvertency but to design, and look on this change as evidence of an intention on the part of some persons in an age when Arianism prevailed, to weaken the authority of Scripture respecting the Divinity of our Lord Jesus Christ.

The same design may have caused that great difference which is observable between the *Vatican Manuscript* and the *Received Text* in the following passages:—

GALATIANS II. 20.

Vatican MS. "Of THAT GOD and Christ who LOVED me"—του Θεου και Χριστου του αγαπησαντος με.

Received Text. "Of THAT SON of GOD who LOVED me"—του υιου του Θεου του αγαπησαντος με.

COLOSSIANS II. 2.

Vatican MS. "Of the GOD Christ"—του Θεου Χριστου.

Received Text. "Of GOD and of the Father and of CHRIST"—του Θεου και πατρος και του Χριστου.

The Rule (No. 19) laid down at page 14 of these "Observations," requires two titles when they are preceded by one article in Greek, to be considered as forming only one complete idea. But the word GOD is sometimes employed as a *name*, and sometimes as a *title*: hence it will follow that it may be taken either way, according to the context. In connexion with a proper name, it is to be regarded as a proper name; in connexion with a title, it becomes a title. We have examples of both uses of the word in 2 Peter i. 1—2: "TO THEM who have OBTAINED Like precious Faith with us through the Righteousness of our GOD and Saviour Jesus Christ: Grace and Peace be multiplied unto you through the Knowledge of GOD and of Jesus our LORD"—*τοις ισοτιμον ἡμιν λαχουσι πιστιν εν δικαιοσυνη, η του Θεου ἡμων και σωτηρος Ιησου Χαριστου· χαρις ὑμιν και ειρηνη πληθυνθειη εν επιγνωσει, του Θεου, και Ιησου του Κυριου ἡμων.* We have preserved the right distinction in this translation, but when we read in the authorised version, "through the Righteousness of GOD and our Saviour Jesus Christ," we are made to lose sight of the truth, and are led to suppose that the *God* and *Saviour* are not two titles of the same person, forming one idea, but the titles of two different persons, forming two distinct ideas.

The Rule which has been illustrated by these quotations, is a consequence of the doctrine laid down in these pages, that the Greek article is a sign of emphasis. From not perceiving this, our translators have become confused in their notions of the way in which they ought to represent such titles. In one place (Eph. i. 3), they give the correct rendering: "The GOD and Father." But in four other places (Rom. xv. 6; 1 Cor. xv. 24; 2 Cor. i. 3; James iii. 9) they translate the same words into "GOD even the Father"; and in four others (Eph. v. 20; Col. i. 3; Col. iii. 17; James i. 27) into "GOD and the Father." On four occasions they convert the form of "Our GOD and Father," into "GOD and our Father" (Gal. i. 4; Phil. iv. 20; 1 Thes. i. 3; 1 Thes. iii. 11); and twice into "GOD even our Father" (1 Thes. iii. 13; 2 Thes. ii. 16). That which should be "His GOD and Father," they make "GOD and his Father" (Rev. i. 6). Instead of "Our GREAT God and Saviour Jesus Christ," they give us "The GREAT God and our Saviour Jesus Christ" (Titus ii. 13). Instead of "Our ONLY Absolute-Ruler the God and Lord Jesus Christ," they present us with, "The ONLY Lord God and our Lord Jesus Christ"

(Jude 4); of which passage the Vatican Text exhibits, as we have before observed, this reading, “ Our ONLY Absolute-Ruler and Lord Jesus Christ.”

It would be uncharitable to attribute to the learned and pious men who translated the authorised English Testament, a wish in any degree to detract from the testimony of the Scripture to the Divinity of our Lord. If they failed to state the doctrine in its fullest extent on these occasions, it was from a conscientious fear of being thought to press it too far. Besides, they knew that other passages of Scripture attest this great truth with sufficient explicitness, and therefore they might forbear to bring forward instances with which they were not completely satisfied. But the regret remains that they did not uniformly act up to the light they had, and that out of so many examples of the use of the combined expressions, “ GOD and Father,” only one is found in which the two words are rightly joined together.

Before we quit this subject, it may be proper to remark, that where there is no article, there is no difficulty in the case: as in *απο Θεου πατρος ημων και Κυριου Ιησου Χριστου* (see Rom. i. 7; 1 Cor. i. 3; 2 Cor. i. 2; Gal. i. 3, etc. etc.). In all these instances, the words are rightly translated, “ From God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.” The ideas here are distinct, as much so as they would be if each title had the article prefixed,—*απο Θεου του πατρος ημων και του Κυριου Ιησου Χριστου*—“ From God our FATHER and the LORD Jesus Christ,” except that in this latter case, both titles would thereby become emphatic.

From the preceding representations, in some parts of which it was necessary to give all the examples, for the purpose of furnishing the reader with a complete view of the subject, it will be sufficiently evident that the sign of emphasis in English, being the exponent of the article in Greek, exercises a most important influence on the meaning of words, and establishes points of doctrine of the highest interest. The writers of the New Testament were, in the opinion of many persons, guided by divine inspiration in the choice of their words: and in the employment of the Greek article, there was clearly a remarkable discretion displayed: it will not be too much, therefore, to assume, that if the Authorised Version of the New Testament can be made to convey an accurate notion of the various uses of the Greek Article, it will greatly

add to the utility and satisfactoriness of that translation, and render it more nearly equal to its divine original; and this, we submit, is shewn to be an advantage capable of being obtained for it through the medium of the **EMPHATIC NEW TESTAMENT**.

ON THE ANTIQUITY AND AUTHORITY OF THE VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.

A FAC-SIMILE of this celebrated MS. (No. 1209 in the Vatican Library), engraven on copper-plates, is preparing for publication at the expense of the Propaganda Society, by whom it will be presented to the several libraries of chief importance in every country of Christendom. In the meantime, the well-known Collations of this MS. undertaken at different periods by Dr. Richard Bentley of Cambridge, and Dr. Andrew Birch of Copenhagen, and published towards the end of the last century, with an occasional reference to the Collation of Bartolocci * in the National Library at Paris, furnish the sources from which are derived the various readings exhibited in the EMPHATIC NEW TESTAMENT. Hug, who has given a minute account of the Vatican MS., supposes it to have been written in the earlier part of the fourth century, or about 300 years after the death of our Lord. It is unquestionably the oldest, and happily the most perfect, of all those copies of the Greek Text which have come down to our times.

The ENGLISH READER will be interested in seeing under what aspect, as to difference of Text, a faithful copy of one single MS., and that the most ancient of any extant, presents itself. In comparison with the Received Text, which is made up from several MSS., but none of equal authority with this, he will be gratified to perceive how few and unimportant in general are the differences. If, on some occasions, his confidence in a particular passage may be abated, so that he will not be inclined to lay so much stress upon it as he otherwise might have done, he will feel, on the other hand, that he gains immeasurably more in the boldness with which he is now enabled to adhere, in thousands of instances, to the letter of the text thus strongly corroborated.

* From a copy made with great care by Dr. Tregelles. The Collation by Bartolocci is less complete than either of the others; but it is serviceable where they differ, as often corroborating one of them.

Not the least important part of the Vatican MS. is its division into Sections by means of the Greek numerals inserted in the margin. It has been doubted whether these Numerals are as ancient as the Text, because of their being written in a somewhat smaller character; but it is undeniable, that they are of a much earlier date than any other divisions of a similar kind. What, however, recommends them most of all is their evident propriety. They are invaluable for the testimony they bear to what would appear to have been the original construction of the several paragraphs; and if regarded in no other light than as accessories towards a better arrangement than that which is given in our modern Chapters, Paragraphs, and Verses, they will serve a very useful purpose.

A remarkable fact, bearing on the question whether St. Paul wrote the Epistle to the Hebrews, is connected with these sectional numbers. They run through the Epistles of St. Paul in a continuous series, from 1 to 93, taking the Books in the following order: viz. Romans, § 1 to 21; I. Corinthians, § 22 to 42; II. Corinthians, § 43 to 53; Galatians, § 54 to 58; Hebrews, § 59 to 69; Ephesians, § 70 to 75; Philippians, § 76 to 79; Colossians, § 80 to 85; I. Thessalonians, § 86 to 89; II. Thessalonians, § 90 to 93. But this, which was the original order, has been changed, and by a subsequent arrangement of the MS., as it at present stands, the Epistle to the Hebrews has been placed last. There is now, therefore, a chasm in the numbers between Galatians and Ephesians, which the Epistle to the Hebrews is required to fill up.

The Gospel of St. Matthew is divided into 170 sections, Mark into 61, Luke into 152, John into 80, and the Acts of the Apostles into 69. The Epistles of James, of Peter I. and II., and of John I. II. and III., contain in all 34 sections; but each Epistle is numbered separately. By being placed last in the present order of the MS., the Epistle to the Hebrews has suffered much,—all from the middle of the ninth chapter having been taken away; and with it probably perished the Epistles to Timothy, Titus, and Philemon, and the Book of Revelation, which are now missing. In the EMPHATIC NEW TESTAMENT the various readings of these deficient portions are supplied from the Alexandrian MS. in the British Museum, the next completest, oldest, and most valuable Manuscript of the New Testament in existence.

The Vatican Text proves its comparative antiquity by a very simple and satisfactory test: it is always *more brief* than the Received Text, suggesting the obvious conclusion, that the words supplied, wherein it

seems to be deficient, were added afterwards to clear up supposed obscurities; though, in general, it will be found that these added words are pure redundancies, the sense being complete without them. As an instance of this, may be quoted the following verses from the Parable of the Talents; the words in Brackets being those which are found in the Text of the Authorised Version, and not in the Vatican Text. “For *the kingdom of Heaven* is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his OWN Servants, and delivered unto them his GOODS. And unto ONE he gave Five Talents, to ANOTHER Two, and to ANOTHER One; to every man according to his SEVERAL Ability; and straightway took his journey. [Then] HE that had RECEIVED the FIVE Talents went and traded with the same, and made them Other FIVE [Talents]. And likewise HE that *had received* the TWO [~~he~~ also] gained Other Two. But HE that had RECEIVED the ONE went and digged [in] the EARTH, and hid his LORD’S MONEY. After a long Time the LORD of those SERVANTS cometh, and reckoneth with them. And so HE that had RECEIVED the FIVE Talents came, and brought Other Five Talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me Five Talents: behold, I have gained [beside them] Five Talents more. His LORD said unto him,—Well done, *thou* good and faithful Servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee Ruler over many things: enter thou into the JOY of thy LORD. HE also that had RECEIVED the TWO Talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me Two Talents; behold, I have gained Two Other Talents [beside them],” etc. (Matthew, 25:14—22.)

A further argument of the early period at which the Vatican MS. was written, may be found in the brevity and simplicity of the Titles and Subscriptions to the several Books of the New Testament. The Titles are as follows:—“According to Matthew”—“According to Mark”—“According to Luke”—“According to John”—“The Acts of the Apostles”—“To the Romans”—“The First to the Corinthians”—“The Second to the Corinthians”—“To the Galatians”—“To the Ephesians”—“To the Philippians”—“To the Colossians”—“The First to the Thessalonians”—“The Second to the Thessalonians”—“To the Hebrews”—The Epistle of James—“The First of Peter”—“The Second of Peter”—“The First of John”—“The Second of John”—“The Third of John”—“Of Jude.”

The Subscriptions are the same as the Titles, till we come to the Epistles, when they stand as follows:—“To the Romans, written from Corinth”—“The First to the Corinthians, written from Ephesus”

—“The Second to the Corinthians, written from Philippi”—“To the Galatians, written from Rome”—“To the Ephesians, written from Rome”—“To the Philippians, written from Rome”—“To the Colossians, written from Rome”—“The First to the Thessalonians written from Athens”—“The Second to the Thessalonians, written from Athens”—(Hebrews is defective in its Subscription, wanting the last Five Chapters)—“Of James”—“The First of Peter”—“The Second of Peter”—“The First of John”—“The Second of John”—“The Third of John”—“Of Jude.”—It is worthy of remark, that in none of these Titles or Subscriptions is the word “Saint” found in connexion with the Name of any of the Writers.

The preceding characteristics of the Vatican Text offer strong presumptive proof of its comparative antiquity and purity; but the following evidence is still more decisive. In the Authorised English Version, at the 9th Chapter of Hebrews, verses 1—5, we read:—“Then, verily, the *FIRST Covenant* had also Ordinances of Divine-Service, and a Worldly SANCTUARY. For there was a Tabernacle made; the *FIRST*, wherein was the *CANDLESTICK* and the *TABLE*, and the *SHEWBREAD*; which is called the Sanctuary. And after the *SECOND Veil*, *THAT TABERNACLE* which is *CALLED* the Holiest of all; which had the Golden Censer, and the *ARK* of the *COVENANT* overlaid round about with Gold, wherein was the golden Pot that had *MANNA*, and Aaron’s *ROD* that *BUDED*, and the *TABLES* of the *COVENANT*; and over it the Cherubims of Glory shadowing the *MERCY-SEAT*.”—Now it is well known that this description cannot be correct, since in Exodus 30:1—10, where the “Altar to burn Incense upon” is more particularly mentioned, the Lord says to Moses (verse 6), “Thou shalt put it before the Veil that *is* by the Ark of the Testimony, before the Mercy-seat that *is* over the Testimony, where I will meet with thee. And Aaron shall burn thereon sweet Incense every Morning,” etc. The “Altar of Incense,” therefore (which is erroneously rendered the “Censer”), could not have been placed “after the *SECOND Veil*” in “*THAT TABERNACLE* which is *CALLED* the Holiest of all,” though it is here said to have been so placed: it must have formed part of the furniture of the First Tabernacle, “wherein was the *CANDLESTICK*, and the *TABLE*, and the *SHEWBREAD*.” And here we find it placed according to the Vatican Text, which reads as follows:—“Then verily the *FIRST Covenant* had [also] Ordinances of Divine-Service, and a Worldly SANCTUARY. For there was a Tabernacle made; the *FIRST*, wherein was the *CANDLESTICK*,

and the TABLE, and the SHEWBREAD, and the GOLDEN Altar of Incense; which is called the Sanctuary. And after the SECOND Veil, THAT TABERNACLE which is CALLED the Holiest of all; which had the ARK of the COVENANT overlaid round about with Gold, wherein was the golden Pot that had MANNA, and THAT ROD of Aaron's that BUDDED, and the TABLES of the COVENANT; and over it the Cherubims of Glory shadowing the MERCY-SEAT."—But even this does not constitute the strongest part of our case. Not only does the Received Text, from which the English Version is taken, exhibit this remarkable discrepancy between the Mosaic account and that in the Book of the Hebrews, but every other Text and Version, among the Hundreds of MSS. which have been collated or compared, contains the same erroneous statement; and the Vatican MS. is the only one known to be in existence, which represents the position of the Altar of Incense correctly, according to the accounts given of it in the Old Testament.

The learned Grotius was much perplexed with this error of all the copies then known of the Greek New Testament. "This is a place (he says) which has caused the Epistle to the Hebrews to be regarded with suspicion by many learned men; nay, it has greatly tormented others also I, who hold this Epistle in the highest estimation, can never be persuaded to give up its authority; and I think, therefore, that the objections made to it may be best answered in this way."* He then supposes that instead of the tabular *altar of incense*, a portable *censer* was meant, which was to be placed upon the altar; such a censer as is mentioned in Lev. xvi. 12, of which it appears that every sacrificing priest had one; and that Aaron's censer was deposited by him inside the veil, where he could lay hold of it again by putting his arm within the veil, and thus withdraw it without going himself personally within the veil, as he was forbidden to do, except once for all, on the great day of the annual atonement. This explanation has been adopted by Macknight and others. Indeed something of the kind appears to have been the means resorted to for explaining the passage from very early times, since the Vulgate translation employs a word here (*Thuribulum*), which means a censer, instead of the altar of incense. Happily the difficulty, which has so much perplexed many learned and pious men for so many ages, is now cleared up, without the necessity of supposing a degree of contrivance to be made use of, which is wholly inconsistent with the simplicity of the operations of the Spirit.

But if the preceding instance exhibits a striking example of the

* Grotii Annot. Tom. II. vol. ii. p. 1039.

value of the Vatican Manuscript, in regard to one important passage, the following series of passages in which the Vatican Text is compared with the improved readings deduced by Griesbach and Scholz from the many hundreds of manuscripts which they have examined, is a still more remarkable evidence of the fidelity with which the original text has been preserved by the Vatican Manuscript. Dr. Gaussen, of Geneva, in a work which he has written on the "*Plenary Inspiration of the Scriptures*," says, "It is reckoned that of the 7959 verses of the New Testament, there hardly exist ten or twelve in which the corrections that have been introduced by the new readings of Griesbach and Scholz, as the result of their immense researches, have any weight at all."* And he adds, "The twelve or thirteen following have usually been regarded as the most important:—

"1st. (Acts xx. 28). Instead of, 'To feed the CHURCH of GOD which he hath purchased with HIS-OWN Blood,' the text of Griesbach bears, 'To feed the CHURCH of the LORD which he hath purchased with HIS-OWN BLOOD.' Scholz preserves the old text."

This supposed emendation of Griesbach's is not, however, supported by the Vatican Manuscript, which reads: "To feed the CHURCH of GOD, which he hath purchased with HIS-OWN BLOOD." The word BLOOD is required to be put in small capitals by the Vatican Manuscript, and is also demanded by Griesbach's reading: but here the resemblance ceases.

"2nd. (1 Tim. iii. 16). Instead of, 'Without controversy great is the MYSTERY of GODLINESS: God was manifest in the Flesh, justified in the Spirit,' some manuscripts read, 'Without controversy great is the MYSTERY of GODLINESS, which was manifest in the Flesh, justified in the Spirit.' But some other manuscripts adopted by Griesbach bear, 'Great is the MYSTERY of GODLINESS; he who was manifest in the Flesh was justified in the Spirit.' . . . Scholz has not adopted Griesbach's correction. Almost all the Greek manuscripts, he says, bear Θεος (God). He assures us he has found it in eighty-six manuscripts, examined by himself."

Unfortunately the Vatican manuscript is in this part defective, wanting the Epistles to Timothy, Titus, and Philemon, and the Book of Revelation. We must, therefore, have recourse for comparison to the Alexandrian Manuscript; and in that Manuscript this text has been so tampered with, since the book was placed in the British Museum, that it fails to render us any very important assistance. It shews,

* *Theopneustia*, 12mo, Edinburgh, p. 19.

however, that *OC* (ὄς), not *O* (ὀ), was the original word, though it does not make it plain that the *OC* was $\overline{\Theta C}$ (God).

The old brown ink in which these two letters are written, is strongly contrasted by that new and blacker ink in which the mark in the centre of the Θ and the line over $\overline{\Theta C}$ are now distinguished; which newer marks so completely cover the former, that whatever they were when visible, every trace of them is now hid. But the obliteration of the ancient marks, whatever they were, or the insertion of these newer marks for the first time, if that was done when these blacker marks were recently made, is of little consequence, when it is considered that if the word were *OC* (ὄς), it has no other proper antecedent than *Θεου ζωντος* (*the living God*). Had it been *ὀ*, the effect would have been the same: *ὀ εφανερωθη*—HE was manifest. The question is, *Who?* The answer again carries us back to *the living God*. As for the rendering in Dr. Gaussen's work, "HE that was MANIFEST," this would have required *ὀ φανερωθεις*, instead of *ὀ εφανερωθη*, a much greater change.

"3rd. (Jude 4). Instead of, 'Who deny our ONLY Ruler, God, and Lord, Jesus Christ,' the text of Griesbach and of Scholz bears, 'Who deny our ONLY Ruler, and Lord, Jesus Christ.'"

The Vatican Manuscript also reads: "Who deny our ONLY Ruler, and Lord, Jesus Christ."

"4th. (1 John v. 7, 8). Instead of, 'There are THREE that BEAR-WITNESS in HEAVEN, the FATHER the WORD, and the HOLY Ghost: and These THREE are ONE. And there are THREE that BEAR-WITNESS in EARTH, the SPIRIT, and the WATER, and the BLOOD: and these THREE agree in ONE,' Griesbach's text bears, 'There are THREE that BEAR-WITNESS, the SPIRIT, and the WATER, and the BLOOD: and the THREE agree in ONE.'

"Scholz, like Griesbach," says Dr. Gaussen, "has taken away the three heavenly witnesses."

But the Vatican Manuscript, in like manner, reads: "There are THREE that BEAR-WITNESS, the SPIRIT, and the WATER, and the BLOOD: and the THREE agree in ONE."

"5th. (Apoc. viii. 13). Instead of, 'And I beheld, and heard an Angel flying,' Griesbach's text and that of Scholz bear, 'And I beheld, and heard an Eagle flying.'"

So the Alexandrian Manuscript reads, "And I beheld, and heard an Eagle flying."

"6th. (James ii. 18). Instead of, 'Shew me thy FAITH by thy

WORKS' [as it is in Mill's text], Griesbach's text and that of Scholz bear, 'Shew me thy FAITH without WORKS.'

This is also the reading of the Vatican Manuscript: 'Shew me thy FAITH without WORKS;' the remainder of the verse being, "and **I** will shew Thee My FAITH by WORKS."

"7th. (Acts xvi. 7). Instead of, 'But the SPIRIT suffered them not,' Griesbach's text and that of Scholz bear, 'But the SPIRIT of Jesus suffere ! them not.'

The Vatican Manuscript also reads: "But the SPIRIT of Jesus suffered them not."

"8th. (Eph. v. 21). Instead of, "Submitting yourselves one to another in the Fear of God,' Griesbach's text and that of Scholz bear, 'Submitting yourselves one to another in the Fear of Christ.'

The Vatican Manuscript also reads: "Submitting yourselves one to another in the Fear of Christ."

"9th. (Apoc. i. 11). Instead of, 'I am ALPHA and OMEGA, the FIRST and the LAST,' the text of Griesbach suppresses these words; which it has retained, however, at the eighth verse, as well as at chap. xxii. 13. Scholz has made the same correction."

The Alexandrian Manuscript, in like manner, omits these words in the eleventh verse, but inserts them in the eighth verse, and also in chap. xxii. 13.

"10th. (Matt. xix. 17). Instead of, 'Why callest thou Me good?' Griesbach's text bears, 'Why askest thou Me about the GOOD?' But Scholz does not admit this correction, and retains the old text."

The Vatican Manuscript confirms Griesbach, by reading, "Why askest thou Me about the GOOD?"

"11th. (Phil. iv. 13). Instead of, 'I can do all things through CHRIST who STRENGTHENETH me,' Griesbach's text and that of Scholz bear 'I can do all things through HIM who STRENGTHENETH me.'

The Vatican Manuscript reads, "I can do all things through HIM who STRENGTHENETH me."

"12th. Finally (Acts viii. 37; ix. 5—6; x. 6), Griesbach's text and that of Scholz suppress the thirty-seventh verse, and these words: 'It is hard for thee to kick against the Pricks; and he trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do?' and '**We** shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do.'

The Vatican Manuscript omits the 37th verse of chapter viii.:

“ And PHILIP said, If thou believest with All thine HEART, thou mayest. And he answereth and said, I believe that JESUS Christ is the SON of GOD.” It omits also the above passages in chapters ix. and x.

Let us now consider what we have gained from the researches and critical acumen of those learned men, Griesbach and Scholz, which we should not have obtained, had we placed implicit confidence at once on the earliest manuscript.

The 3rd, 4th, 5th, 6th, 7th, 8th, 9th, 10th, 11th, and 12th examples of the emendations proposed by Griesbach, are every one of them identical with the readings of the earliest manuscript of the New Testament.

The 2nd example restores a sense, which by Griesbach’s supposed emendation was obscured; proving that whether *Θεος* be the word, or *ὁς*, it is equally “ GOD ” who is declared to be “ manifest in the Flesh.”

The 1st example no less clearly asserts the Godhead of Christ in a passage of which the timidity of Griesbach had led him to doubt the authenticity. He was alarmed at the boldness of the expression, “ the Blood of God,” as applied to the sacrifice of the Saviour on the cross; but we now see that in the Vatican Manuscript, written, as is supposed, about three hundred years after our Lord’s crucifixion, this was the expression made use of, and this was the truth which the Christians of that time were taught to believe.

We have great reason to be thankful that learned men, like Griesbach, have been found, who were so well able to restore the readings which in later ages had become corrupted or obscured; but we have still greater reason to be thankful to God, for having preserved to our own days that early manuscript, which renders us independent of human aid, —“ that our FAITH should not stand in the Wisdom of Men, but in the Power of God” (1 Cor. ii. 5). At the present time especially, when the teachers of religion are so lamentably divided in opinion among themselves, it is a matter of the highest importance, that all classes should be able to lay their hand on a book which states the Word of God in greater purity and force, than any commentators can exhibit it. As our Lord triumphantly repelled all the arts of the Devil in his temptation, by quoting a text of Scripture applicable to each case of emergency as it arose, saying, “ IT IS WRITTEN,” so has he left us “ an example that we should follow his steps.” When the enemy of our souls, therefore, assails us, and we are sorely tempted to

distrust God's Providence, or to presume upon His favour, or to seek our happiness in temporal enjoyments, so worshipping the God of this world, let us remember that our answer must ever be—not that *it has been handed down to us by tradition*—not that *it has been the opinion of the Church at all times, and in all places*—not that *it has been decreed by Popes and Councils*—not that *it has been declared by learned men of great critical sagacity*: but that **IT HAS BEEN WRITTEN**—written in a book which conveys to us the genuine words of Scripture, according to the earliest and best authority;* a book which arms us with that “**SHIELD of FAITH** wherewith we shall be able to quench All the fiery **DARTS** of the **WICKED one**”—that “**SWORD** of the **SPIRIT**, which is the Word of God” (Eph. vi. 16).

Some persons suppose that every individual is not entitled to read and interpret Scripture for himself; and they attempt to support this notion, which is of Romish origin, by the following text: “Knowing this first, that no Prophecy of the Scripture is of any Private Interpretation” (2 Peter i. 20); as if by these words St. Peter meant to say, “That No Prophecy of the Scripture is of any Private Man's Interpretation”: but to imagine this, would be to fall into a grievous error. The literal meaning is, “That No Prophecy of Scripture is of Peculiar Interpretation,” that is, *peculiar* interpretation *separate* or *apart* from that of other passages of Scripture: all must be consistent; and no text of Scripture, rightly understood, can be at variance with any other text of Scripture. Peter assigns the true reason for this, when he says in the next verse: “For the Prophecy came not in old time by the Will of Man, but Men from God spake as they were moved by the holy Spirit.” We see, therefore, that no private man is forbidden by St. Peter from judging for himself the sense in which any text of Scripture ought to be taken. All that is required of him is, to take care that he puts no interpretation upon any text, which is not warranted by other texts treating of the same subject, the production of which texts as collateral evidence, when needed, constitutes one of the most valuable exercises in which the reader of the Scriptures can be employed.

The ground-work of our faith, is an early, pure, and incontestable copy of the Sacred Scriptures, which we now possess. Without it, we

* It does not militate against the general accuracy of the Vatican Manuscript, that we should find in it a few mistakes in proper names, as *Bethany* for *Bethabara* (John i. 28); *Bethsaida* for *Bethesda* (John v. 2), and *Melotus* for *Miletus* (2 Tim. iv. 20).

should be in danger of reasoning from false premises, which might lead us to erroneous conclusions. Almost all the heresies that have afflicted the Church of Christ, from the time of the Apostles to the present day, have had their origin in incorrect representations or interpretations of the words of Scripture. Hence arose the false teachings of Hymenæus and Philetus, in the time of St. Paul; “who concerning the TRUTH have erred, saying that the RESURRECTION is past already; and overthrow the FAITH of some” (2 Tim. ii. 18). And of others St. John says: “Many Deceivers are entered into the WORLD; THEY who CONFESS not that Jesus Christ is come in the Flesh. This is a DECEIVER and an ANTICHRIST” (2 John 7). In our own time, an error has been extensively embraced by pious persons, which could scarcely have had the countenance it met with, had the readers of the English Scriptures been aware that those verses in the sixteenth chapter of Mark’s Gospel, on which the notion of the present possession or miraculous gifts was founded, were not in the Vatican copy of the New Testament.

So long as we have the pure text of the Word of God to refer to, we have nothing to fear from the opinions of those who “teach for Doctrines the Commandments of Men.”—“Beloved,” says St. John, “believe not Every Spirit, but try the SPIRITS, whether they are of GOD: Because Many False-prophets are gone out into the WORLD” (1 John iv. 1). And St. Paul, in his second Epistle to Timothy, after describing the last days when “perilous Times shall come,” and “Evil Men and Seducers shall wax WORSE-AND-WORSE, deceiving and being deceived,” says: “But continue **thou** in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of what persons thou hast learned *them*; [alluding probably to his grandmother Lois and his mother Eunice, as well as to St. Paul himself] and That from a Child thou hast known THOSE HOLY Scriptures, which are ABLE to make Thee wise unto Salvation, through THAT Faith which is in Christ Jesus. All Scripture *is* given by inspiration of God, and *is* profitable for Doctrine, for Reproof, for Correction, for THAT Instruction which is Righteousness: That the MAN of GOD may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto every good Work” (2 Tim. iii. 14).

When St. John says, “Try the SPIRITS,” he means, Try the DOCTRINES. “*Spirits*,” says Bishop Newton, “seem to be much the same in sense as *Doctrines*, as Mr. Mede and other divines have observed the same word to be used by St. John: ‘Beloved, believe not

every spirit,' that is, every doctrine, 'but try the spirits,' that is, the doctrines, 'whether they are of God; because many false prophets are gone out into the world.' *Spirits* and *doctrines*, therefore, may be considered, the latter word as explanatory of the former."* Now if we are to try the SPIRITS, by what can we try them, but by the WORD of GOD? and how necessary for this purpose is it, that we should possess that Word in its purest state, enforced with every aid of emphasis contained in the original text!

* *Newton on the Prophecies: Dissertation xxiii.*

THE
EMPHATIC NEW TESTAMENT,
WITH
THE VARIOUS READINGS
OF THE
VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.

THE FOUR GOSPELS.



THE SIGNS OF EMPHASIS BRIEFLY EXPLAINED.

IN this Edition of the Authorised Version of the New Testament, different kinds of type are introduced to represent certain peculiarities in which the English Version, as it has been hitherto printed, fails to give the Reader a full conception of the meaning designed to be conveyed by the Greek original. That meaning falls short, in regard, 1. to those Words which are connected with the Greek Article; 2. to those Pronouns Substantive which are intended to carry in themselves a peculiar emphasis; and 3. to those Adjectives and Pronouns which obtain a comparative importance, by reason of the position which they occupy in the Greek Text, with reference to some other words.

To remedy these deficiencies in the English Authorised Version, the following System of Notation is employed in the EMPHATIC NEW TESTAMENT:—

1. Those words which, in the original, are rendered *positively* emphatic by the presence of the *Greek Article*, are in the English Translation printed in small Capitals: as, “JOSEPH, the HUSBAND of Mary.”

2. Those Pronouns Substantive which, in the Greek, are intended to be *positively* emphatic, are printed in the English in Black Letter: as, “**He** are the SALT of the EARTH.”

3. Those Adjectives and Pronouns, which in the Greek are *comparatively* emphatic, such quality being indicated by their *position* in respect to some other words in the same clause or sentence, are printed with an initial Capital Letter: as, “thy Whole BODY”—“For we *being* MANY, are One Bread, *and* One Body”—“For who maketh Thee to differ?”

4. All Greek Substantives, as being of more importance than other words, are also commenced with a Capital Letter. Those Substantives which are not so distinguished, are found only in the English Version, and are introduced there to complete the sense of Greek Verbs, Participles, Adverbs, etc.

But it is not necessary that these particulars should be borne in mind by the English Reader. All that is required of him is, that he should give the several words, so marked by a peculiar typographic sign, that preference in his estimation over other words in the same clause or sentence, which he would have given them, without any notice, had he met with them in a common English book; as for example, in the following quotation from Lord Lyttelton's "Observations on the Conversion and Apostleship of St. Paul."

"But because of these Difficulties, or any other that may occur in the System of Deism, no wise Man will deny the BEING of God, or his INFINITE WISDOM, GOODNESS and POWER, which are proved by such Evidence, as carries the clearest and strongest Conviction, and cannot be refused without involving the Mind in FAR GREATER DIFFICULTIES, even in downright ABSURDITIES and IMPOSSIBILITIES. The only Part, therefore, that can be taken, is to account in the best Manner, that our weak Reason is able to do, for such seeming Objections; and where THAT fails, to acknowledge its Weakness, and to acquiesce under the Certainty, that our very imperfect Knowledge or Judgment cannot be the Measure of the Divine Wisdom, or the universal Standard of Truth. So likewise it is with respect to the CHRISTIAN RELIGION. Some DIFFICULTIES occur in that Revelation which human Reason can hardly clear; but as the Truth of it stands upon Evidence so strong and convincing, that it cannot be denied without much GREATER DIFFICULTIES than those that attend the Belief of it, as I have before endeavoured to prove, we ought not to reject it upon such Objections, however mortifying they may be to our Pride. THAT indeed would have all things made plain to us, but God has thought proper to proportion our Knowledge to our WANTS, not our PRIDE. All that concerns our DUTY is clear; and as to other points either of natural or revealed Religion, if he has left some Obscurities in them, is that any reasonable Cause of Complaint? Not to rejoice in the Benefit of what he has graciously allowed us to know, from a presumptuous Disgust at our Incapacity of knowing more, is as absurd as it would be to refuse to WALK, because we cannot fly."

This Extract is taken from the Edition published by Dodsley in 1763. It is copied literally as to the Capitals; but SMALL CAPITALS are substituted for *Italics*, which change was necessary to bring the illustration to bear more closely on the example in the EMPHATIC NEW TESTAMENT. In the English Scriptures, *Italic* letters, it is well known, have a meaning the reverse of emphatic; they mark those words

which are of *less* value; such as are necessary to complete the English sense, but are not found in the original Greek; and this well-known use of Italics forbids our having recourse to them in the English Version for the same purpose to which Lord Lyttelton employs them. Thus we are constrained to make use of the next order of emphatic signs, namely, that of SMALL CAPITALS. The Reader will please to understand, therefore, that wherever SMALL CAPITALS appear in the preceding Extract, *Italics* are found in the Edition published by Dodsley. Making this allowance, the parallel between the emphatic signs of the quotation, and those of the New Testament which it is brought to exemplify, is remarkably perfect, with the omission of the Black Letter Pronouns.

If any one were known to be in possession of a copy of the Greek Testament so marked by its inspired writers as they would wish to have it read—and if the system of notation, when applied to the English Translation, were found to be equally efficacious in conferring distinction on the corresponding words in that language—should we not deem it a great treasure, and be eager to obtain a MARKED COPY, esteeming it next to hearing the words in the tone in which they were spoken by our Lord and His Apostles? Yet something of this kind is offered to our notice in the present work:—without altering the expression, it often makes the meaning clearer; it adds certainty to many readings which before could only be founded on conjecture; and it may altogether be considered as a kind of running commentary of no less authority than the original text.

THE VARIOUS READINGS.

THE Various Readings of the most ancient Greek Manuscript are all represented either by *words* or *signs* in the following pages. Those which are represented by *signs*, such as *small capitals*, *black letter*, etc., may sometimes appear to be of trivial import to the English reader, but he must not hastily pass them by on that account. A change of type from small capitals to common letters, or from common letters to small capitals, is sometimes an alteration full of meaning.

When we read in the common editions of the New Testament that "God is a Spirit," "God is Light," "God is Love," "the Word was God," "the Spirit is Truth," "Godliness is Gain," we learn very imperfectly what the original Scriptures by these words were designed to teach us. Each of these Propositions may, for aught we know, be composed of terms, of which one, and we cannot tell which, is intended to be more emphatic than the other; or of terms, both of which are emphatic. The Greek Text solves the question for us in each case, by the use of the Greek Article. Thus it declares that "the SPIRIT is TRUTH"; but if we should presume from this example to think that "GOD is a SPIRIT," "GOD is LOVE," we should commit a great error. The Greek Article here tells us that there is a difference in the stress to be laid on these terms: that "GOD is a Spirit," "GOD is Love," "GOD is Light," but that the *converse* of these Propositions is not true, and therefore the latter term in each Proposition is unemphatic. Were it otherwise—could we say, for instance, "that GODLINESS is GAIN," then it would follow that "GAIN is GODLINESS," which few would venture to assert, though many act as though they thought it true. St. John says, in the first verse of his Gospel, "the WORD was God." He does not say the "WORD was GOD," because both terms are not equally emphatic. "If we had read \acute{o} Θεός" (GOD), says Dr. Middleton, "the Proposition would have assumed the *convertible* form, and the meaning would have been, that *whatever may be affirmed or*

denied of God the Father may also be affirmed or denied of the Logos; a position which would accord as little with the Trinitarian as with the Socinian hypothesis” (p. 240).

If these several Propositions concerning “GOD” were stated *convertibly*, then would each of the several *attributes* of God be equal to GOD himself: whereas we know, from reason, that if all the *attributes* of the Deity, which could be conceived by man, were collected under one term, they would fall infinitely short of those which are comprehended under the name of “GOD.”

The Scriptures in fact teach us, by the use of the Greek Article, and the corresponding employment of small capitals, that *nothing can be placed in comparison with GOD*, by showing that *all the Propositions in which THAT NAME is introduced are INCONVERTIBLE Propositions*.

But though we may not say that “GOD is a SPIRIT,” we have authority to say that “the LORD is a SPIRIT.” This is stated as a convertible Proposition in 2 Cor. iii. 17; from which we might infer, in the language of Dr. Middleton, that “*whatever may be affirmed or denied of a Spirit may be affirmed or denied of the Lord.*” But it is sufficient for our purpose if we regard the two terms as merely *emphatical*, and leave the sense to make itself understood by the stress laid on the words printed in small capitals. This emphasis brings out the entire passage in the following characters: “Now the LORD is a SPIRIT; and where the SPIRIT of the Lord is, there is Liberty. And all we, with Open Face, beholding as in a glass the GLORY of the Lord, are changed into the SAME Image, from Glory to Glory, even as by the Lord’s Spirit.” The various emphases here employed convey a meaning which may perhaps be understood without the aid of the emphatic signs; but it cannot, without their aid, be so distinctly and certainly expressed. We perceive at a glance, that “the SPIRIT of the Lord” is a phrase of equal energy with that of “the GLORY of the Lord;” and that both require a very different utterance from that sustained tone with which we should speak of “the Lord’s Spirit.” Let any plain English reader in this way give due prominence to those emphatic words which are marked for him in the following pages, and *dwell* upon them rather than try to express them with any great effort of the voice, and he will not greatly err in his understanding of the Scriptures. He will have the satisfaction moreover of knowing, *for a certainty*, that the meaning which is brought out by the power of these emphatic signs in the English Version, is the very same as that which is enforced in the original Scriptures.

In the following sentence, the words have no particular emphasis attached to them, either in the Greek Text or the English Version: "A good Tree cannot bring forth evil Fruit, neither can a corrupt Tree bring forth good Fruit"—ου δυναται δενδρον αγαθον καρπους πονηρους ποιειν, ουδε δενδρον σαπρον καρπους καλους ποιειν (Matt. vii. 18).

In the following sentence, the *Substantives* are all emphatic, both in Greek and English: "Either make the TREE good and his FRUIT good; or else make the TREE corrupt, and his FRUIT corrupt: for the TREE is known by his FRUIT"—Η ποιησατε το δενδρον καλον, και τον καρπον αυτου καλον, η ποιησατη το δενδρον σαπρον, και τον καρπον αυτου σαπρον· εκ γαρ του καρπου το δενδρον γινωσκεται (Matt. xii. 33).

In the next sentence, the opposition lies chiefly in the *Adjectives*, which are made emphatic in both languages: "A GOOD Man out of the GOOD Treasure of the HEART bringeth forth good things: and an EVIL Man out of the EVIL Treasure bringeth forth evil things"—ο αγαθος ανθρωπος εκ του αγαθου θησαυρου της καρδιας εκβαλλει αγαθα· και ο πονηρος ανθρωπος εκ του πονηρου θησαυρου εκβαλλει πονηρα (Matt. xii. 35).

In general the *Noun* is more emphatic than its *Pronoun* possessive: as, "When his MOTHER Mary was espoused to JOSEPH" (Matt. i. 18). But sometimes the *Pronoun possessive* is more emphatic than its *Noun*; and then the sentence appears in this form: "I beseech thee for MY Son, Onesimus" (Philemon, 10)—"Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in THY Name? and in THY Name have cast out Devils? and in THY Name done many Wonderful-works?" (Matt. vii. 22).

The *Various Readings* sometimes change the Emphasis of the *Received Text* and *Authorised Version*, and generally with sufficient reason. A few examples from the first two chapters of St. Matthew may be cited in proof of this.

Chap. i. 18. The *Received Text* reads: "Now the BIRTH of JESUS Christ."—The *Vatican Manuscript*: "Now the BIRTH of the CHRIST Jesus." It is undoubtedly more correct to make the *Title* (CHRIST) emphatic, than the *Name* (JESUS), when the two are thus brought together.

Ver. 22. *Received Text*: "Which was SPOKEN of the LORD by the PROPHET."—*Vatican Manuscript*: "Which was SPOKEN of the Lord by the PROPHET." By making LORD emphatic, the *Received Text* creates an impression that the LORD Jesus Christ is meant, whereas it

is the Lord Jehovah. The literal translation is: "THAT which was SPOKEN by the Lord through the PROPHET."

Ver. 23. *Received Text*: "GOD with us."—*Vatican Manuscript*: "God with us." The latter is correct. It was not emphatically "GOD" who was with Mankind under the name of Emmanuel; but "God," in the same sense in which it is said "The WORD was God." (See Bishop Middleton's opinion, already quoted).

Ver. 25. *Received Text*: "HER FIRST-BORN SON."—*Vatican Manuscript*: "a Son." By the expression in the *Received Text*, we are informed that Mary had more than one Son; but this, though it may have been true, was not true at that time, nor likely to have been taught on this occasion, if it were necessary to have been taught at all. By saying emphatically a "SON," is implied that it was not a "DAUGHTER." All these additions to the single unemphatic sense of "a Son," as it is in the *Vatican Manuscript*, are manifestly improper.

Chap. ii. 2. *Received Text*. "His STAR in the EAST." The more correct translation would be, "His STAR at its RISING." The same correction is necessary again at ver. 9. The *Vatican Manuscript*, No. 1160, referred to for the Various Readings of the *Book of Revelation*, enables us to make this emendation. When the Greek word for "Rising" (*ανατολη*) is in the *plural* number, it means "the East"—when it is in the *singular*, it means "the Rising." Dr. Hammond, who made this remark, found an apparent exception to the rule in the *Received Text*, Rev. xxi. 13, *απ' ανατολης πυλῶνες τρεις*—"on the East three Gates," which led him to abandon his position, and give up the advantages which he had derived from it. But the *Vatican Manuscript*, No. 1160, and the *Basil Manuscript* (B), both incidentally establish the truth of the remark; for in that same Text, both these authorities have the word in the *plural* number, *απ' ανατολων*. The following, therefore, will be the proper translation of the 1st, 2nd, and 9th verses, as Dr. Hammond had suggested: "Now when JESUS was born in Bethlehem of JUDÆA, in the Days of Herod the KING, behold, there came Wise-men from the East (*απ' ανατολων*), saying, Where is HE that is BORN KING of the JEWS? for we have seen His STAR at its RISING (*εν τη ανατολη*), and are come to worship him. . . . 9. And THEY, when they had heard the KING, departed; and lo, the STAR which they had seen at its RISING (*εν τη ανατολη*) went before them, till it came and stood over where the YOUNG-CHILD was. And when they saw the STAR, they rejoiced with exceeding great JOY."

Ver. 16. Another emendation may be noticed here. "Then Herod,

when he saw That he was mocked of the WISE-MEN, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth and slew All THOSE CHILDREN which were in Bethlehem, and in All the COASTS thereof, from Two-years old and under, according to the TIME which he had diligently enquired of the WISE-MEN." From these words it might be supposed that Herod had given an order to slay all the Children of *both sexes* from Two-years old and under, but the Greek Text does not allow this supposition to be entertained. By the use of the *masculine* Article—*παντας τους παιδας τους εν Βηθλεεμ*—it restricts the slaughter to the "MALE-CHILDREN."

Ver. 15. *Received Text* : "Which was SPOKEN of the LORD by the PROPHET."—*Vatican Manuscript* : "Which was SPOKEN of the Lord by the PROPHET." Here again the unemphatic word "Lord" is the more proper, as the reference is to the Lord Jehovah, and not to the LORD Jesus Christ. The literal rendering is the same as before: "Which was SPOKEN by the Lord through the PROPHET."

Ver. 19. "An Angel of the Lord." Wherever this phrase occurs, it means "an Angel of the Lord Jehovah," and the word "Lord" is therefore unemphatic. (See Matt. i. 20, 24; ii. 13, 19; xxviii. 2; Luke i. 11; ii. 9; Acts v. 19; vii. 30; viii. 26; xii. 7, 23).

In this manner we might go through every chapter of the New Testament, and show the use and advantage, in almost every instance, of the *Various Readings* over the *Received Text*; but these examples are sufficient to enable the English reader to discover how much important information is contained in such minute particulars as these, and to apply it to its proper object—the elucidation of the Truth.

The Various Readings of the VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1209 in the Vatican Library, which is the most ancient of any MS. of the New Testament, are referred to in the following Books:—

Matthew	Corinthians, 1 and 2	Hebrews to ix. 14
Mark	Galatians	James
Luke	Ephesians	Peter, 1 and 2
John	Philippians	John, 1, 2 and 3
Acts	Colossians	Jude
Romans	Thessalonians, 1 & 2	

(a) denotes *Dr. Bentley's* Collation; (b) *Dr. Birch's*; (c) *Bartolocci's*; and (d) shews when *Bartolocci's* Collation of *Luke* and *John* confirms that of *Dr. Bentley*.

The Various Readings of the ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT, as being the next earliest, are made use of for the following Books:—

Hebrews ix. 14 to the end	Titus
Timothy, 1 and 2	Philemon.

(A) is the sign of reference to the Alexandrian Manuscript.

The Various Readings of the *Book of Revelation* are taken from the VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160, which is attributed by Dr. Birch to the eleventh century, and is a Text which he commends for its abundance of good Readings. It is confirmed (except in those instances which are pointed out) by one or two of the three earliest MSS. of this Book, viz., the *Alexandrian*, the *Basilian*, and the *Paris MS.* or *Ephrem Rescript*, which are referred to respectively by the letters A, B, C. The Alexandrian Manuscript and Ephrem Rescript (A and C) are usually assigned to the fifth or sixth century: the *Basilian* (B) to the eighth century. The Vatican Manuscript, No. 1160, though so much later than these, exhibits a more complete Text than any of them; and being corroborated (in general) by one or other of these earlier MSS., it presents, in the Editor's opinion, not only a more perfect copy of the entire Book than can be found in any other MS., but one more satisfactory, as being a genuine Text, than could be made up from several sources by the judgment of the most learned men. It realises the object which the Editor had in view throughout this publication, that of exhibiting the Text as it appears in some ONE of the earliest and best copies; while at the same time we perceive which of its Various Readings are those of the greatest antiquity.

N.B. The Reader is requested to observe, that those words in the following pages which are contained in *brackets* [thus], are authorised by the Received Greek Text, but are not found in the Text of the EARLIEST GREEK MANUSCRIPT.

† THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. MATTHEW.

CHAPTER I.

SECTION I.

1 The Book of the Generation of Jesus Christ, the Son of David, the Son of Abraham.

2 Abraham begat ISAAC ; and Isaac begat JACOB ; and Jacob begat JUDAS and his BRETHREN ;

3 And Judas begat PHARES and ZARA of THAMAR ; and Phares begat ESROM ; and Esrom begat ARAM ;

4 And Aram begat AMINADAB ; and Aminadab begat NAASSON ; and Naasson begat SALMON ;

5 And Salmon begat BOOZ of RACHAB ; and Booz begat OBED of RUTH ; and Obed begat JESSE ;

§ II.

6 And Jesse begat DAVID the KING ; and David [the KING] begat SOLOMON of HER *that had been the wife* of URIAS ;

7 And Solomon begat ROBOAM ; and Roboam begat ABIA ; and Abia begat ASA ;

8 And Asa begat JOSAPHAT ; and Josaphat begat JORAM ; and Joram begat OZIAS ;

9 And Ozias begat JOATHAM ; and Joatham begat ACHAZ ; and Achaz begat EZEKIAS ;

10 And Ezekias begat MANAS-

SES ; and Manasses begat AMON ; and Amon begat JOSIAS ;

11 And Josias begat JECHONIAS and his BRETHREN, about the Time *they were carried away to Babylon :

§ III.

12 And after *they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias † begat SALATHIEL ; and Salathiel † begat ZOROBABEL ;

13 And Zorobabel † begat ABIUD ; and Abiud † begat ELIAKIM ; and Eliakim † begat AZOR ;

14 And AZOR begat SADOC ; and Sadoc begat ACHIM ; and Achim begat ELIUD ;

15 And Eliud begat ELEAZAR ; and Eleazar begat MATTHAN ; and Matthan begat JACOB ;

16 And Jacob begat JOSEPH the HUSBAND of Mary, of whom was born *Jesus, who is CALLED Christ.

§ IV.

17 So All the GENERATIONS from Abraham to David *are* fourteen Generations ; and from David until the CARRYING-AWAY into Babylon *are* fourteen Generations ; and from the CARRYING-AWAY into Babylon unto CHRIST *are* fourteen Generations.

☞ The Various Readings of the Vatican MS. subjoined have all of them Two Collations, if not Three, in their favour, except in those few instances in which a single authority is named. Divisions into *Chapters* and *Verses* were not introduced till the middle of the 16th century. The SECTIONAL DIVISIONS alone are those of the Vatican MS. Sometimes the place where the Section commences is not indicated in the Collation: in that case the numerals are put between parentheses, as implying uncertainty. A small italic letter (*a*) represents *Bentley's* Collation, (*b*) *Birch's*, and (*c*) that of *Bartolucci*.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—11. of the CARRYING-AWAY to Babylon. 12. the CARRYING-AWAY to Babylon. 16. THAT Jesus who.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*. ACCORDING TO MATTHEW. 12. begets (twice). 13. begets (thrice). See 6.

§ v.

18 Now the BIRTH of † JESUS Christ was on this wise: When [as] his MOTHER Mary was espoused to JOSEPH, before they came together, she was found with child of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Joseph her HUSBAND, being a just *man*, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily.

20 But while he thought on these things, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a Dream, saying, Joseph, thou Son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy WIFE: for THAT which is CONCEIVED in her is of the holy Ghost.

21 And she shall bring forth a Son, and thou shalt call his NAME Jesus: for *he* shall save his PEOPLE from their SINS.

22 Now all this was done, that IT might be fulfilled which was SPOKEN of the † LORD by the PROPHET, saying,

23 “ Behold a VIRGIN shall be with child, and shall bring forth a Son, and they shall call his NAME Emmanuel,” † which being interpreted is, † GOD with us.

(§ VI.)

24 Then JOSEPH being raised from SLEEP did as the ANGEL of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his WIFE:

25 And knew her not till she had brought forth † her FIRSTBORN SON: and he called his NAME Jesus.

CHAPTER II.

§ VII.

1 Now when JESUS was born in Bethlehem of JUDÆA, in the Days of Herod the KING, behold, there came Wise-men from the East to Jerusalem,

2 Saying, Where is * HE that is BORN KING of the JEWS? for we have seen His STAR in the EAST, and are come to worship him.

3 When † Herod the KING had heard *these things*, he was troubled, and All Jerusalem with him.

4 And when he had gathered All the CHIEF-PRIESTS and Scribes of the PEOPLE together, he demanded of them where CHRIST should be born.

5 And THEY said unto him, In Bethlehem of JUDÆA: for thus it is written by the PROPHET,

6 “ And *thou* Bethlehem, *in* the Land of JUDA, art not the least among the PRINCES of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my PEOPLE ISRAEL.” †

§ VIII.

7 Then Herod, when he had privily called the WISE-MEN, enquired of them diligently, what TIME the STAR APPEARED.

8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the YOUNG-CHILD; and when ye have found *him*, bring me Word again, that I may come and worship him also.

9 * When they had heard the KING, THEY departed; and, lo,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. the KING of the JEWS that is BORN? when they had heard the KING, departed.

9. And THEY,

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT—18. the CHRIST Jesus. 22. Lord. 23. God. 25. a Son. 3. the KING Herod. See 18.

23. Isaiah vii. 14. † 6. Mic. v. 2.

the STAR, which they saw in the EAST, went before them, till it came and stood over where the YOUNG-CHILD was.

10 When they saw the STAR, they rejoiced with exceeding great Joy.

11 And when they were come into the HOUSE, they saw the YOUNG-CHILD with Mary his MOTHER, and fell down and worshipped him: and when they had opened their TREASURES, they presented unto him Gifts; Gold, and Frankincense and Myrrh.

12 And being warned of God in a Dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their *own* COUNTRY Another Way.

§ IX.

13 And when they were † departed, behold, the Angel of the Lord † appeareth to JOSEPH in a Dream, saying, Arise and take the YOUNG-CHILD and his MOTHER, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee Word: for Herod will seek the YOUNG-CHILD to DESTROY him.

14 * When he arose, HE took the YOUNG-CHILD and his MOTHER by night, and departed into Egypt:

15 And was there until the Death of Herod: that IT might be fulfilled which was SPOKEN of the † LORD by the PROPHET, saying, "Out of Egypt have I called my SON." ‡

§ X.

16 Then Herod, when he saw That he was mocked of the

WISE-MEN, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew All *the CHILDREN that were in Bethlehem, and in All the COASTS thereof, from Two-years old and under, according to the TIME which he had diligently enquired of the WISE-MEN.

17 Then was fulfilled THAT which was SPOKEN by Jeremy the PROPHET, saying,

18 "In Rama was there a Voice heard, [Lamentation, and] Weeping, and great Mourning, Rachel weeping *for* her CHILDREN, and would not be comforted, Because they are not." ‡

§ XI.

19 But when HEROD was dead, behold, an Angel of the Lord appeareth in a Dream to JOSEPH in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the YOUNG-CHILD and his MOTHER, and go into the Land of Israel: for THEY are dead which SOUGHT the YOUNG-CHILD'S LIFE.

21 * And HE arose, and took the YOUNG-CHILD and his MOTHER, and † came into the Land of Israel.

22 But when he heard That Archelaus did reign in JUDEÆA, in the room of his FATHER Herod he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a Dream, he turned aside into the PARTS of GALILEE:

23 And he came and dwelt in a City called Nazareth: that IT might be fulfilled which was SPOKEN by the PROPHETS, "He shall be called a Nazarene." ‡

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14 and 21. And HE, when he arose, took. 16. THOSE CHILDREN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—13. departed into their *own* COUNTRY. 13. appeared. 15. Lord. 21. entered into. See 18.

‡ 15. Hos. xi. 1. † 18. Jer. xxxi. 15. † 23. Jud. xiii. 5; 1 Sam. i. 11.

CHAPTER III.

§ XII.

1 In those DAYS came John the BAPTIST, preaching in the WILDERNESS of JUDÆA,

2 [And] saying, Repent ye: for the KINGDOM of HEAVEN is at Hand.

3 For this is HE that was SPOKEN OF by * the PROPHEET Esaias, saying, "The Voice of one crying in the WILDERNESS, Prepare ye the WAY of the Lord, make his PATHS straight." †

§ XIII.

4 And the Same JOHN had his RAIMENT of Camel's Hair, and a leathern Girdle about his LOINS; and his MEAT was Locusts and wild Honey.

5 Then went out to him Jerusalem, and All JUDÆA, and All the REGION round about JORDAN.

6 And were baptized of him in † JORDAN, confessing their SINS.

(§ XIV.)

7 But when he saw many of the PHARISEES and Sadducees come to † his BAPTISM, he said unto them, O Generation of Vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the WRATH to COME?

8 Bring forth therefore † Fruits meet for REPENTANCE:

9 And think not to say within yourselves, We have ABRAHAM to our Father: for I say unto you That GOD is able of these STONES to raise up Children unto ABRAHAM.

10 And now [also] the AX is laid unto the ROOT of the TREES:

therefore Every Tree which bringeth not forth good Fruit is hewn down, and cast into the Fire.

11 ¶ indeed baptize you with Water unto Repentance: but HE that COMETH after me is mightier than I, Whose SHOES I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost and *with* Fire.

12 Whose FAN is in his HAND, and he will thoroughly purge his FLOOR, and gather his WHEAT into † the GARNER; but he will burn up the CHAFF with unquenchable Fire.

(§ XV.)

13 Then cometh JESUS from GALILEE to JORDAN unto JOHN, to be BAPTIZED of him.

14 But † JOHN forbad him, saying, ¶ have Need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

15 And JESUS answering said unto him, Suffer *it to be so* now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil All Righteousness. Then he suffered him.

16 And JESUS, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the WATER: and, lo, the HEAVENS were opened [unto him,] and he saw † the SPIRIT of GOD descending like a Dove, [and] lighting upon him:

17 And lo, a Voice from HEAVEN, saying, This is my BELOVED SON, in whom I am well pleased.

CHAPTER IV.

§ XVI.

1 Then was JESUS led up of

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. Esaias the PROPHEET.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—6. the River JORDAN. 7. the BAPTISM. 8. Fruit. 12. his GARNER. 14. HE forbad. 16. the Spirit of God. See 2, 10, 16 (twice).

‡ 3. Isaiah xl. 3.

the SPIRIT into the WILDERNESS to be tempted of the DEVIL.

2 And when he had fasted forty Days and forty Nights, he was afterward an hungred.

3 And † when the TEMPTER came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of GOD, command that these STONES be made Bread.

4 But HE answered and said, It is written, † “Man shall not live by Bread alone, but by Every Word that proceedeth out of the Mouth of God.” †

§ XVII.

5 Then the DEVIL taketh him up into the HOLY City, and setteth him on a PINNACLE of the TEMPLE,

6 And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of GOD, cast thyself down: for it is written, “He shall give his ANGELS charge concerning thee: and in *their* Hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy FOOT against a Stone.” †

7 JESUS said unto him, It is written again, “Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy GOD.” †

§ XVIII.

8 Again, the DEVIL taketh him up into an exceeding high Mountain, and sheweth him All the KINGDOMS of the WORLD, and the GLORY of them;

9 And † saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

10 Then saith JESUS unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is

written, “Thou shalt worship the Lord thy GOD, and him only shalt thou serve.” †

11 Then the DEVIL leaveth him, and, behold, Angels came and ministered unto him.

§ XIX.

12 Now when JESUS had heard That John was cast into prison, he departed into GALILEE;

13 And leaving NAZARETH, he came and dwelt in * Caper-naum, which is upon the sea-coast, in the Borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim:

14 That IT might be fulfilled which was SPOKEN by Esaias the PROPHET, saying,

15 “The Land of Zabulon, and the Land of Nephthalim, *by* the Way of the Sea, beyond JORDAN, Galilee of the GENTILES;

16 * The PEOPLE which SAT in Darkness saw great Light; and to THEM which SAT in the Region and Shadow of Death, Light is sprung up.” †

17 From that time JESUS began to preach, and say, Repent: for the KINGDOM of HEAVEN is at hand.

§ XX.

18 And † JESUS, walking by the SEA of GALILEE, saw Two Brethren, * Simon CALLED Peter, and Andrew his BROTHER, casting a Net into the SEA: for they were Fishers.

19 And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you Fishers of Men.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—13. THAT Capernaum which. 16. THAT PEOPLE. 18. THAT Simon who is CALLED.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. the TEMPTER came, and said unto him. 4. MAN. (a) 9. said. 12. he had heard. 18. when he was walking by the SEA of GALILEE he saw.

‡ 4. Deut. viii. 3. † 6. Psa. xci. 11, 12. † 7. Deut. vi. 16. † 10. vi. 13. † 16. Isaiah ix. 1, 2.

20 And **THEY** straightway left *their* **NETS**, and followed him.

21 And going on from thence, he saw **Other Two Brethren**, * *James the son of ZEBEDEE*, and **John his BROTHER**, in a **SHIP** with **Zebedee their FATHER**, mending their **NETS**; and he called them.

22 And **THEY** immediately left the **SHIP** and their **FATHER**, and followed him.

§ XXI.

23 And † **JESUS** went about **All GALILEE**, teaching in their **SYNAGOGUES**, and preaching the **GOSPEL** of the **KINGDOM**, and healing **All manner of Sickness** and **All manner of Disease** among the **PEOPLE**.

§ XXII.

24 And his **FAME** went through-out **All SYRIA**: and they brought unto him **All SICK** people that were taken with **Divers Diseases** and **Torments**, [and] those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsy; and he healed them.

25 And there followed him great **Multitudes** of people from **GALILEE**, and *from Decapolis*, and *from Jerusalem*, and *from Judæa*, and *from beyond JORDAN*.

CHAPTER V.

§ XXIII.

1 And seeing the **MULTITUDES**, he went up into a **MOUNTAIN**: and when he was set, his **DISCIPLES** † came [unto him]:

2 And he opened his **MOUTH**, and taught them, saying,

3 Blessed *are* the **POOR** in **SPIRIT**: For their's is the **KINGDOM** of **HEAVEN**.

4 Blessed *are* **THEY** that **MOURN**: For *they* shall be comforted.

5 Blessed *are* the **MEEK**: For *they* shall inherit the **EARTH**.

6 Blessed *are* **THEY** which do **HUNGER** and thirst after **RIGHT-EOUSNESS**: For *they* shall be filled.

7 Blessed *are* the **MERCIFUL**: For *they* shall obtain mercy.

§ XXIV.

8 Blessed *are* the **PURE** in **HEART**: For *they* shall see **GOD**.

9 Blessed *are* the **PEACE-MAKERS**: For *they* shall be called the **Children of God**.

10 Blessed *are* **THEY** which are **PERSECUTED** for **Righteousness'** sake: For their's is the **KINGDOM** of **HEAVEN**.

11 Blessed are ye, when *men* shall revile you, and persecute *you*, and shall say **All manner of Evil** against you falsely, for my sake.

12 Rejoice and be exceeding glad: For great *is* your **REWARD** in **HEAVEN**: for so persecuted *they* * the **PROPHETS** which were before you.

13 **Ye** are the **SALT** of the **EARTH**: but if the **SALT** have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of **MEN**.

§ XXV.

14 **Ye** are the **LIGHT** of the **WORLD**. A **City** that is set on an **Hill** cannot be hid.

15 Neither do men light a **Candle**, and put it under a **BUSHEL**, but on a **CANDLESTICK**; and it

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—21. THAT James who is *the son*. 12. THOSE PROPHETS.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. he went about throughout **All GALILEE**. 1. came up. See 24, 1.

giveth light unto ALL that are in the HOUSE.

16 Let your LIGHT so shine before MEN, that they may see your GOOD Works, and glorify* your FATHER which is in HEAVEN.

§ XXVI.

17 Think not That I am come to destroy the LAW, or the PROPHETS: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.

18 For verily I say unto you, Till HEAVEN and EARTH pass, one Jot or One Tittle shall in no wise pass from the LAW till all be fulfilled.

19 Whosoever therefore shall break one of these LEAST COMMANDMENTS, and shall teach MEN so, he shall be called the least in the KINGDOM of HEAVEN: but whosoever shall do and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the KINGDOM of HEAVEN.

20 For I say unto you, That except your RIGHTEOUSNESS shall exceed the *righteousness* of the SCRIBES and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the KINGDOM of HEAVEN.

§ XXVII.

21 Ye have heard That it was said by THEM of OLD time, "Thou shalt not kill"; † and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the JUDGMENT:

22 But ‡ say unto you, That WHOSOEVER is ANGRY with his BROTHER [without a cause] shall be in danger of the JUDGMENT: and whosoever shall say to his BROTHER, Raca, shall be in danger of the COUNCIL: but

whosoever shall say, *Thou Fool*, shall be in danger of HELL FIRE.

23 Therefore if thou bring thy GIFT to the ALTAR, and there rememberest That thy BROTHER hath ought against thee;

24 Leave there thy GIFT before the ALTAR, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy BROTHER, and then come and offer thy GIFT.

25 Agree with thine ADVERSARY quickly, whiles thou art in the WAY with him; lest at any time the ADVERSARY deliver thee to the JUDGE, and the JUDGE [deliver thee] to the OFFICER, and thou be cast into Prison.

26 Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the UTTERMOST Farthing.

§ XXVIII.

27 Ye have heard That it was said [by THEM of OLD time], "Thou shalt not commit adultery." †

28 But ‡ say unto you, That WHOSOEVER LOOKETH on a Woman to LUST after her hath committed adultery with her already in his HEART.

29 And if thy RIGHT EYE offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy MEMBERS should perish, and not *that* thy Whole BODY should be cast into Hell.

30 And if thy RIGHT Hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast *it* from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy MEMBERS should

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—16. THAT FATHER of yours which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT. See 22, 25, 27.

‡ 21. Exod xx. 13. † 27. xx. 14.

perish, and not *that* thy Whole BODY should †be cast into Hell.

§ XXIX.

31 It hath been said, “Whosoever shall put away his WIFE, let him give her a Writing-of-divorcement:” †

32 But **Ɔ** say unto you, That †whosoever shall put away his WIFE, saving for the Cause of Fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and †whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery.

§ XXX.

33 Again, ye have heard That it hath been said by THEM of OLD time, “Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the LORD thine OATHS:” †

34 But **Ɔ** say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by HEAVEN; For it is GOD’S Throne:

35 Nor by the EARTH; For it is his FOOTSTOOL: neither by Jerusalem; For it is the City of the GREAT King.

36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy HEAD, Because thou canst not make One Hair white or black.

37 But let your COMMUNICATION be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is MORE than these cometh of EVIL.

§ XXXI.

38 Ye have heard That it hath been said, “An Eye for an Eye, and a Tooth for a Tooth:” †

39 But **Ɔ** say unto you, That ye resist not EVIL: but whosoever

shall smite thee on thy RIGHT Cheek, turn to him the OTHER also.

40 And if ANY man WILL sue thee at the law, and take away thy COAT, let him have *thy* CLOKE also.

41 And whosoever shall compel thee to go a Mile, go with him twain.

42 Give to HIM that ASKETH thee, and from HIM that WOULD borrow of thee turn not thou away.

§ XXXII.

43 Ye have heard That it hath been said, “Thou shalt love thy NEIGHBOUR, and hate thine ENEMY.” †

44 But **Ɔ** say unto you, Love your ENEMIES, [bless THEM that CURSE you, do good to THEM that HATE you,] and pray for THEM which †DESPITEFULLY-USE you, and persecute you;

45 That ye may be the Children of * your FATHER which is in HEAVEN: For he maketh his SUN to rise on the Evil and on the Good, and sendeth rain on the Just and on the Unjust.

46 For if ye love THEM which LOVE you, What Reward have ye? do not even the PUBLICANS the SAME?

47 And if ye salute your BRETHREN only, what do ye more *than others*? do not even the †PUBLICANS so?

48 Be **ye** therefore perfect, even as * †your FATHER which is in HEAVEN is perfect.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—45, and 48. THAT FATHER of yours which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—30. go away. 32. EVERY-ONE that PUTTETH-AWAY. 32. HE that MARRIETH. 44. PERSECUTE you. 47. HEATHENS the SAME. 48. your HEAVENLY FATHER is perfect. See 44.

† 31. Deut. xxiv. 1. † 33. Num. xxx. 2. † 38. Exod. xxi. 24. † 43. Lev. xix. 18; Deut. xxiii. 6.

CHAPTER VI.

§ XXXIII.

1 Take heed that ye do not your †ALMS before MEN, to be SEEN of them: otherwise ye have no Reward of * your FATHER which is in HEAVEN.

2 Therefore when thou doest *thine* Alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the HYPOCRITES do in the SYNAGOGUES and in the STREETS, that they may have glory of MEN. Verily I say unto you, They have their REWARD.

3 But when thou doest Alms, let not thy LEFT hand know what thy RIGHT hand doeth:

4 That Thine ALMS may be in SECRET: and * thy FATHER which SEETH in SECRET [himself] shall reward thee [OPENLY.]

§ XXXIV.

5 And when † thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the HYPOCRITES *are*: For they love to pray standing in the SYNAGOGUES and in the CORNERS of the STREETS, that they may be seen of MEN. Verily I say unto you, They have their REWARD.

6 But *thou*, when thou prayest, enter into thy CLOSET, and when thou hast shut thy DOOR, pray to * thy FATHER which is in SECRET: and * thy FATHER which SEETH in SECRET shall reward thee [OPENLY.]

7 But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the † HEATHEN

do: For they think that they shall be heard for their MUCH-SPEAKING.

8 Be not ye therefore like unto them: for † your FATHER knoweth what things ye have Need of, before ye ASK him.

9 After this manner therefore pray *ye*: Our Father, * which art in HEAVEN, Hallowed be thy NAME.

10 Thy KINGDOM come. Thy WILL be done in EARTH, as *it is* in Heaven.

11 Give us This-day our DAILY BREAD.

12 And forgive us our DEBTS, as † *we* forgive our DEBTORS.

13 And lead us not into Temptation, but deliver us from EVIL: [For thine is the KINGDOM, and the POWER, and the GLORY for EVER. Amen.]

14 For if ye forgive MEN their TRESPASSES, your HEAVENLY FATHER will also forgive you:

15 But if ye forgive not MEN their TRESPASSES, neither will your FATHER forgive your TRESPASSES.

§ XXXV.

16 Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the HYPOCRITES, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their FACES, that they may appear unto MEN to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their REWARD.

17 But *thou*, when thou fastest, anoint Thine HEAD, and wash thy FACE;

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THAT FATHER of yours which is. 4. THAT FATHER of thine which SEETH. 6. THAT FATHER of thine which is. 6. THAT FATHER of thine which SEETH. 9. THOU which art.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—RIGHTEOUSNESS. 5. ye pray, ye shall not be. 7. HYPOCRITES. 8. GOD your FATHER. 12. *we* have forgiven. See 4 (twice), 6, 13.

18 That thou appear not unto MEN to fast, but unto * thy FATHER which is in SECRET: and * thy FATHER which SEETH in SECRET, shall reward thee [OPENLY.]

§ XXXVI.

19 Lay not up for yourselves Treasures upon EARTH, where Moth and Rust doth corrupt, and where Thieves break through and steal:

20 But lay up for yourselves Treasures in Heaven, where neither Moth nor Rust doth corrupt, and where Thieves do not break through nor steal:

21 For where † your TREASURE is, there will † your HEART be also.

§ XXXVII.

22 The LIGHT of the BODY is † the EYE: if therefore thine EYE be single, thy Whole BODY shall be full of light.

23 But if thine EYE be evil, thy Whole BODY shall be full of darkness. If therefore * the LIGHT that is in thee be Darkness, how great is that DARKNESS!

§ XXXVIII.

24 No man can serve Two Masters: for either he will hate the ONE, and love the OTHER; or else he will hold to the One, and despise the OTHER. Ye cannot serve God and Mammon.

25 Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your LIFE, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your BODY,

what ye shall put on. Is not the LIFE more than MEAT, and the BODY than RAIMENT?

26 Behold the FOWLS of the AIR: For they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into Barns; yet your HEAVENLY FATHER feedeth them. Are not ye much better than they?

27 Which of you by taking thought can add one Cubit unto his STATURE?

28 And why take ye thought for Raiment? Consider the LILIES of the FIELD, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin:

29 And yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in All his GLORY was not arrayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore, if GOD so clothe the GRASS of the FIELD, which To-day is, and To-morrow is cast into the Oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Where-withal shall we be clothed?

32 (For after all these things do the GENTILES seek:) for your HEAVENLY FATHER knoweth That ye have need of all these things.

33 But seek ye first † the KINGDOM of GOD, and his RIGHTEOUSNESS; and all these things shall be added unto you.

34 Take therefore no thought for the MORROW: for the MORROW

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—18. THAT FATHER of thine which is. 18. THAT FATHER of thine which SEETH. 23. THAT LIGHT.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—21. thy TREASURE. 21. thy HEART. 22. thine EYE. 33. his RIGHTEOUSNESS and KINGDOM. See 18, 34.

shall take thought for [the THINGS of] itself. Sufficient unto the DAY is the EVIL thereof.

CHAPTER VII.

§ XXXIX.

1 Judge not, that ye be not judged.

2 For with What Judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with What Measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

3 And why beholdest thou *the MOTE that is in thy BROTHER'S EYE, but considerest not the BEAM that is in THINE-OWN Eye?

4 Or how wilt thou say to thy BROTHER, Let me pull out the MOTE out of thine EYE; and, behold, a BEAM is in thine-own EYE?

5 *Thou* Hypocrite, first cast out the BEAM out of thine-own EYE; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the MOTE out of thy BROTHER'S EYE.

§ XL.

6 Give not THAT which is HOLY unto the DOGS, neither cast ye your PEARLS before SWINE, lest they trample them under their FEET, and turn again and rend you.

§ XLI.

7 Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you:

8 For EVERY-ONE that ASKETH receiveth; and HE that SEEKETH findeth; and to HIM that KNOCKETH it † shall be opened.

9 Or What Man [is there] of you, whom if his SON ask Bread, will [he] give him a Stone?

10 Or if he ask a Fish, will [he] give him a Serpent?

11 If *ye* then, being evil, know how to give good Gifts unto your CHILDREN, how much more shall * your FATHER which is in HEAVEN give Good things to THEM that ASK him?

12 Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that MEN should do to you, do *ye* even so to them: for this is the LAW and the PROPHETS.

§ XLII.

13 Enter ye in at the STRAIT Gate: For wide is the GATE, and broad is *the WAY, that LEADETH to DESTRUCTION, and MANY there be which GO-IN thereat:

14 Because strait is the GATE, and narrow is *the WAY, which LEADETH unto LIFE, and FEW there be that FIND it.

§ XLIII.

15 Beware of FALSE-PROPHETS, which come to you in Sheep's Clothing, but inwardly they are ravening Wolves.

16 Ye shall know them by their FRUITS. Do men gather Grapes of Thorns, or Figs of Thistles?

17 Even so Every good Tree bringeth forth good Fruit; but a CORRUPT Tree bringeth forth evil Fruit.

18 A good Tree cannot bring forth evil Fruit, neither *can* a corrupt Tree bring forth good Fruit.

19 Every Tree that bringeth not forth good Fruit is hewn down, and cast into the Fire.

20 Wherefore by their FRUITS ye shall know them.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. THAT MOTE that is.
13. THAT WAY which.

11. THAT FATHER of yours which is.

14. THAT WAY which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. is opened. Sec 9 (twice), 10.

§ XLIV.

21 Not EVERY-ONE that SAITH unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the KINGDOM of HEAVEN; but HE that DOETH the WILL of * my FATHER which is in † Heaven.

22 Many will say to me in That DAY, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in THY Name? and in THY Name have cast out Devils? and in THY Name done many Wonderful-works?

23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, YE that WORK INIQUITY.

§ XLV.

24 Therefore whosoever heareth these SAYINGS of Mine, and doeth them, † I will liken him unto a wise Man, which built † his HOUSE upon a ROCK:

25 And the RAIN descended, and the FLOODS came, and the WINDS blew, and beat upon that HOUSE; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a ROCK.

§ XLVI.

26 And EVERY-ONE that HEARETH these SAYINGS of Mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish Man, which built † his HOUSE upon the SAND:

27 And the RAIN descended, and the FLOODS came, and the WINDS blew, and beat upon that HOUSE; and it fell: and great was the FALL of it.

§ XLVII.

28 And it came to pass, when JESUS had ended these SAYINGS, the PEOPLE were astonished at his DOCTRINE:

29 For he taught them as *one* having Authority, and not as † the SCRIBES.

CHAPTER VIII.

§ XLVIII.

1 When he was come down from the MOUNTAIN, great Multitudes followed him.

2 And, behold, there came a Leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

3 And † JESUS put forth *his* HAND, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And immediately His LEPROSY was cleansed.

4 And JESUS saith unto him, See thou tell no man; but go thy way, shew thyself to the PRIEST, and offer the GIFT that Moses commanded, for a Testimony unto them.

§ XLIX.

5 And when † JESUS was entered into Capernaum, there came unto him a Centurion, beseeching him,

6 And saying, Lord, my SERVANT lieth at HOME sick of the palsy, grievously tormented.

7 † And JESUS saith unto him, **Æ** will come and heal him.

8 † The CENTURION answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under My ROOF: but speak † the Word only, and my SERVANT shall be healed.

9 For **Æ** am a Man † under Authority, having Soldiers under me: and I say to this *man*, Go,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—21. THAT FATHER of mine which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—21. HEAVEN. 24. he shall be likened. 24. HIS House. (a). 26. HIS House. (a). 29. their SCRIBES. 3. he put forth. 5 he was 7. He saith. 8. And the CENTURION. 8. by a Word. 9. appointed under.

and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my SERVANT, Do this, and he doeth *it*.

10 When JESUS heard *it*, he marvelled, and said to THEM that FOLLOWED, Verily I say unto you, I have not found So-great Faith, †no, not in ISRAEL.

11 And I say unto you, That many shall come from the East and West, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the KINGDOM of HEAVEN.

12 But the CHILDREN of the KINGDOM shall be cast out into OUTER DARKNESS: there shall be WEEPING and GNASHING of TEETH.

13 And JESUS said unto the CENTURION, Go thy way; [and] as thou hast believed, *so* be it done unto thee. And †his SERVANT was healed in the selfsame HOUR.

§ L.

14 And when JESUS was come into Peter's HOUSE, he saw his WIFE'S-MOTHER laid, and sick of a fever.

15 And he touched her HAND, and the FEVER left her: and she arose, and ministered unto †them.

16 When the Even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the SPIRITS with *his* Word, and healed ALL that were SICK:

17 That IT might be fulfilled which was SPOKEN by Esaias the PROPHET, saying, "Himself took our INFIRMITIES, and bare *our* SICKNESSES." †

§ LI.

18 Now when JESUS saw †Great

Multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the OTHER-SIDE.

19 And a Certain Scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

20 And JESUS saith unto him, The FOXES have Holes, and the BIRDS of the AIR have nests; but the SON of MAN hath not where to lay *his* HEAD.

21 And another of †his DISCIPLES said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my FATHER.

22 But JESUS †said unto him, Follow me; and let the DEAD bury THEIR Dead.

§ LII.

23 And when he was entered into †a SHIP, his DISCIPLES followed him.

24 And, behold, there arose a great Tempest in the SEA, inso-much that the SHIP was covered with the WAVES: but *he* was asleep.

25 And †his DISCIPLES came to *him*, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save [us]: we perish.

26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the WINDS and the SEA; and there was a great Calm.

27 But the MEN marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the WINDS and the SEA obey him!

§ LIII.

28 And when he was come to the OTHER-SIDE into the COUNTRY of the †GERGASENES, there

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—10. among any in. 13. the SERVANT. 15. him. 18. a Multitude. 21. the DISCIPLES. 22. saith. 23. a Ship. 25. they came. 28. GADARENES. See 13, 25.

‡ 17. Isaiah liii. 4.

met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the TOMBS, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that WAY.

29 And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, [Jesus,] thou Son of GOD? art thou come hither to torment us before the Time?

30 And there was a good way off from them an Herd of many Swine feeding.

31 So the DEVILS besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, † suffer us to go away into the HERD of SWINE.

32 And he said unto them, Go. And *when they were come out, they went into the [HERD of] SWINE: and, behold, the Whole HERD [of SWINE] ran violently down a STEEP-PLACE into the SEA, and perished in the WATERS.

33 And THEY that KEPT them fled, and went their ways into the CITY, and told every thing, and WHAT *was befallen* to the POSSESSED-OF-THE-DEVILS.

34 And, behold, the Whole CITY came out to meet JESUS: and when they saw him, they besought *him* that he would depart out of their COASTS.

CHAPTER IX.

§ LIV.

I And he entered into † a SHIP, and passed over, and came into his OWN City.

2 And, behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a Bed: and JESUS seeing their FAITH said unto the SICK-

OF-THE-PALSY; Son, be of good cheer; † thy SINS be forgiven [thee].

3 And, behold, certain of the SCRIBES said within themselves, This *man* blasphemeth.

4 And JESUS knowing their THOUGHTS said, Wherefore think † ye evil in your HEARTS?

5 For whether is easier, to say, † *Thy* SINS be forgiven [thee]; or to say, Arise, and walk?

6 But that ye may know That the SON of MAN hath Power on EARTH to forgive Sins (then saith he to the SICK-OF-THE-PALSY), Arise, take up Thy BED, and go unto thine HOUSE.

7 And he arose, and departed to his HOUSE.

8 But when the MULTITUDES saw *it*, they † marvelled, and glorified *GOD, which had GIVEN such Power unto MEN.

§ LV.

9 And as JESUS passed forth from thence, he saw a Man, named Matthew, sitting at the RECEIPT-OF-CUSTOM: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

10 And it came to pass, as JESUS sat at meat in the HOUSE, behold, Many Publicans and Sinners came and sat down with him and his DISCIPLES.

11 And when the PHARISEES saw *it*, they said unto his DISCIPLES, Why eateth your MASTER with PUBLICANS and Sinners?

12 But when † JESUS heard *that*, he said [unto them], THEY that be WHOLE need not a Physician, but THEY that are SICK.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—32. THEY, when they were come out, went. 8. THAT GOD which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—31. send us away. 1. a Ship. 2 and 5. Thy SINS. 4. ye. 8. feared. 12. HE heard. See 29, 32 (twice), 2, 5, 12.

13 But go ye and learn what *that* meaneth, "I will have Mercy, and not Sacrifice": † for I am not come to call the Righteous, but Sinners [to Repentance].

§ LVI.

14 Then came to him the DISCIPLES of John, saying, Why do *we* and the PHARISEES fast [oft], but thy DISCIPLES fast not?

15 And JESUS said unto them, Can the CHILDREN of the BRIDE-CHAMBER mourn, as long as the BRIDEGROOM is with them? but the Days will come, when the BRIDEGROOM shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

16 No man putteth a Piece of new Cloth unto an old Garment, for THAT which is PUT-IN to fill it up taketh from the GARMENT, and the Rent is made worse.

17 Neither do men put new Wine into old Bottles: else the BOTTLES break, and the WINE runneth out, and the BOTTLES perish: but they put new Wine into new Bottles, and both are preserved.

§ LVII.

18 While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came a certain Ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My DAUGHTER is even now dead: but come and lay thy HAND upon her, and she shall live.

19 And JESUS arose, and followed him, and *so did* his DISCIPLES.

20 And, behold, a Woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood Twelve Years, came behind *him*, and touched the HEM of his GARMENT:

21 For she said within herself, If I may but touch his GARMENT, I shall be whole.

22 But JESUS turned [him about], and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy FAITH hath made thee whole. And the WOMAN was made whole from that HOUR.

23 And when JESUS came into the RULER'S HOUSE, and saw the MINSTRELS and the PEOPLE making a noise,

24 He said [unto them], Give place: for the MAID is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.

25 But when the PEOPLE were put forth, he went in, and took her by the HAND, and the MAID arose.

26 And the FAME hereof went abroad into All that LAND.

§ LVIII.

27 And when JESUS departed thence, Two Blind men followed [him], crying, and saying, *Thou* Son of David, have mercy on us.

28 And when he was come into the HOUSE, the BLIND men came to him: and JESUS saith unto them, Believe ye That I am able to do this? They said unto him—Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their EYES, saying, According to your FAITH be it unto you.

30 And Their EYES were opened; and JESUS straitly charged them, saying, See *that* no man know *it*.

31 But THEY, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in All that COUNTRY.

32 As they went out, behold, they brought to him a Dumb † Man possessed with a devil.

33 And when the DEVIL was cast out, the DUMB spake: and the

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT—32. man. See 13, 14, 22, 24, 27.

‡ 13. Hosea vi. 6.

MULTITUDES marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in ISRAEL.

34 But the PHARISEES said, He casteth out DEVILS through the PRINCE of the DEVILS.

§ LIX.

35 And JESUS went about all the CITIES and VILLAGES, teaching in their SYNAGOGUES, and preaching the GOSPEL of the KINGDOM, and healing Every Sickness and Every Disease [among the PEOPLE].

§ LX.

36 But when he saw the MULTITUDES, he was moved with compassion on them, Because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as Sheep having no Shepherd.

37 Then saith he unto his DISCIPLES, The HARVEST truly is plenteous, but the LABOURERS are few;

38 Pray ye therefore the LORD of the HARVEST, that he will send forth Labourers into his HARVEST.

CHAPTER X.

1 And when he had called unto *him* his TWELVE Disciples, he gave them Power *against* unclean Spirits, to cast them out, and to heal All manner of Sickness and All manner of Disease.

§ LXI.

2 Now the NAMES of the TWELVE Apostles are these; The first *Simon, who is CALLED Peter, and Andrew his BROTHER; *James *the son* of ZEBEDEE, and John his BROTHER;

3 Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the PUBLICAN; *James *the son* of ALPHÆUS, and

*[Lebbæus, whose surname was] Thaddæus;

4 Simon the Canaanite, and *Judas Iscariot, who also BETRAYED him.

§ LXII.

5 These TWELVE JESUS sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the Way of the Gentiles, and into *any* City of the Samaritans enter ye not:

6 But go rather to the LOST SHEEP of the House of Israel.

7 And as ye go, preach, saying, The KINGDOM of HEAVEN is at hand.

8 Heal the Sick, †cleanse the Lepers, raise the Dead, cast out Devils: freely ye have received, freely give.

§ LXIII.

9 Provide neither Gold, nor Silver, nor Brass in your PURSES,

10 Nor Scrip for *your* Journey, neither Two Coats, neither Shoes, nor yet Staves: for the WORKMAN if worthy of his MEAT.

11 And into Whatsoever City or Town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy; and there abide till ye go thence.

12 And when ye come into an HOUSE, salute it.

13 And if the HOUSE be worthy, let your PEACE come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your PEACE return † to you.

14 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your WORDS, when ye depart out of that HOUSE or CITY, shake off the DUST of your FEET.

15 Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the Land

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. THAT Simon who. 2. THAT James who is *the son*. 3. THAT James who is *the son*. 3. THAT Lebbæus who was SURNAMED. 4. THAT Judas Iscariot who.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. raise the Dead, cleanse the Lepers. 13. upon you. See 35, 3.

of Sodom and Gomorrha in the Day of Judgment, than for that CITY.

16 Behold, **I** send you forth as Sheep †in the Midst of Wolves: be ye therefore wise as SERPENTS, and harmless as DOVES.

§ LXIV.

17 But beware of MEN: for they will deliver you up to the Councils, and they will scourge you in their SYNAGOGUES;

18 And ye shall be brought before Governors and Kings for my sake, for a Testimony against them and the GENTILES.

19 But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in That same HOUR what ye shall speak.

20 For it is not **ye** that SPEAK, but the SPIRIT of your FATHER *which SPEAKETH in you.

21 And the Brother shall deliver up the Brother to Death, and the Father the Child: and the Children shall rise up against *their* Parents, and cause them to be put to death.

22 And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my NAME'S sake: but HE that ENDURETH to the End shall be saved.

§ LXV.

23 But when they persecute you in this CITY, flee ye into ANOTHER: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the CITIES of †ISRAEL, till the SON of MAN be come.

24 The Disciple is not above *his*

MASTER, nor the Servant above his LORD.

25 It is enough for the DISCIPLE that he be as his MASTER, and the SERVANT as his LORD. If they have called the MASTER-OF-THE-HOUSE Beelzebub, how much more *shall they call THEM* of his HOUSE-HOLD?

26 Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known.

27 What I tell you in DARKNESS, *that* speak ye in LIGHT: and what ye hear in the EAR, *that* preach ye upon the HOUSE-TOPS.

28 And fear not THEM which KILL the BODY, but are not able to kill the SOUL: but rather fear HIM which is ABLE to destroy both Soul and Body in Hell.

29 Are not Two Sparrows sold for a Farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the GROUND without your FATHER.

30 But the very HAIRS of Your HEAD are all numbered.

31 Fear ye not therefore, **ye** are of more value than Many Sparrows.

§ LXVI.

32 Whosoever therefore shall confess me before MEN, him will **I** confess also before *my FATHER which is in †Heaven.

33 But whosoever shall deny me before MEN, him will **I** also deny before *my FATHER which is in †Heaven.

§ LXVII.

34 Think not That I am come to

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—20. IS THAT which SPEAKETH in you. mine which is. 33. THAT FATHER of mine which is.

32. THAT FATHER OF

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. into.

23. Israel.

32. HEAVEN. a.

33. HEAVEN.

send Peace on EARTH: I came not to send Peace, but a Sword.

35 For I am come to set a Man at variance against his FATHER, and the Daughter against her MOTHER, and the Daughter-in-law against her MOTHER-IN-LAW.

36 And a MAN'S Foes *shall be* THEY of his own HOUSEHOLD.

§ LXVIII.

37 HE that LOVETH Father or Mother more than me is not worthy of me: and HE that LOVETH Son or Daughter more than me is not worthy of me.

38 And he that taketh not his CROSS, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

39 HE that FINDETH his LIFE shall lose it: and HE that LOSETH his LIFE for my sake shall find it.

§ LXIX.

40 HE that RECEIVETH you receiveth me, and HE that RECEIVETH me receiveth HIM that SENT me.

41 HE that RECEIVETH a Prophet in the Name of a Prophet shall receive a Prophet's Reward; and HE that RECEIVETH a Righteous man in the Name of a Righteous man shall receive a Righteous man's Reward.

42 And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these LITTLE-ONES a Cup of Cold *water* only in the Name of a Disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his REWARD.

CHAPTER XI.

§ LXX.

1 And it came to pass, when

JESUS had made an end of commanding his TWELVE Disciples, he departed thence to TEACH and to Preach in their CITIES.

2 Now when JOHN had heard in the PRISON the WORKS of CHRIST, he sent † two of his DISCIPLES,

3 And said unto him, Art *thou* HE that should COME, or do we look for another?

4 JESUS answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see:

5 The Blind receive their sight, and the Lame walk; the Lepers are cleansed, and the Deaf hear; the Dead are raised up, and the Poor have the gospel preached to them.

6 And blessed is *he*, whosoever shall not be offended in me.

§ LXXI.

7 And as *they* departed, JESUS began to say unto the MULTITUDES concerning John, † What went ye out into the WILDERNESS to see? A Reed shaken with the Wind?

8 † But what went ye out for to see? A Man clothed in Soft Raiment? behold, THEY that WEAR SOFT *clothing* are in KING'S HOUSES.

9 † But what went ye out for to see? A Prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more than a Prophet.

10 [For] this is *he*, of whom it is written, "Behold, **¶** send my MESSENGER before thy Face, which shall prepare thy WAY before thee." †

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—2. by his DISCIPLES. 7. Why went ye out into the WILDERNESS? To see a Reed shaken with the Wind? 8. But why went ye out? To see a Man, etc. 9. But why went ye out? To see a Prophet? See 10.

† 10. Malachi iii. 1.

11 Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of Women there hath not risen a greater than John the BAPTIST: notwithstanding HE that is LEAST in the KINGDOM of HEAVEN is greater than he.

12 And from the DAYS of John the BAPTIST until now the KINGDOM of HEAVEN suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

13 For All the PROPHETS and the LAW prophesied until John.

14 And if ye will receive *it*, this is *Elias, which WAS for to come.

15 HE that HATH Ears [to hear], let him hear.

§ LXXII.

16 But whereunto shall I liken this GENERATION? It is like unto Children sitting in the Markets, and calling unto †their FELLOWS,

17 [And] saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented.

18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a Devil.

19 The SON of MAN came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a Man gluttonous, and a Winebibber, a Friend of Publicans and Sinners. But WISDOM is justified of her CHILDREN.

§ LXXIII.

20 Then began he to upbraid the CITIES wherein MOST of his MIGHTY-WORKS were done, Because they repented not:

21 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! For if *the MIGHTY-WORKS, which were

DONE in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in Sackcloth and Ashes.

22 But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the Day of Judgment, than for you.

23 And *thou*, Capernaum *which art EXALTED unto HEAVEN, shalt be brought down to Hell: For if *the MIGHTY-WORKS, which have been DONE in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until THIS-DAY.

24 But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the Land of Sodom in the Day of Judgment, than for thee.

§ LXXIV.

25 At That TIME JESUS answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of HEAVEN and EARTH, Because thou hast hid these things from the Wise and Prudent, and hast revealed them unto Babes.

26 Even so, FATHER: For so it seemed good in thy sight.

27 All things are delivered unto me of my FATHER: and no man knoweth the SON, but the FATHER; neither knoweth any man the FATHER, save the SON, and *he* to whomsoever the SON will reveal *him*.

§ LXXV.

28 Come unto me, All YE that LABOUR and are heavy-laden, and I will give you rest.

29 Take my YOKE upon you, and learn of me; For I am meek and lowly in HEART: and ye shall find Rest unto your SOULS.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14. THAT Elias which. 21. THOSE MIGHTY-WORKS which.
23. THOU which art. 23. THOSE MIGHTY-WORKS which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. OTHERS. See 15, 17.

30 For my YOKE *is* easy, and my BURDEN is light.

CHAPTER XII.

§ LXXVI.

1 At That TIME JESUS went on the SABBATH day through the CORN; and his DISCIPLES were an hungred, and began to pluck the Ears-of-corn, and to eat.

2 But when the PHARISEES saw *it*, they said unto him, Behold, thy DISCIPLES do that which is not lawful to do upon the Sabbath day.

3 But HE said unto them, Have ye not read what David did, when †*he* was an hungred, and THEY that were with him;

4 How he entered into the HOUSE of GOD, and did eat the SHEWBREAD, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for THEM which were with him, but only for the PRIESTS?

5 Or have ye not read in the LAW, How that on the SABBATH days the PRIESTS in the TEMPLE profane the SABBATH, and are blameless?

6 But I say unto you, That in this place is *one* greater than the TEMPLE.

7 But if ye had known what *this* meaneth, "I will have Mercy, and not Sacrifice," † ye would not have condemned the GUILTLESS.

8 For the SON of MAN is Lord [even] of the SABBATH day.

§ LXXVII.

9 And when he was departed thence, he went into their SYNA-GOGUE:

10 And, behold, there was a Man

which had †*his* HAND withered. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the SABBATH days? that they might accuse him.

11 And HE said unto them, What Man shall there be among you, that shall have one Sheep, and if *it* fall into a Pit on the SABBATH day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift *it* out?

12 How much then is a Man better than a Sheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the SABBATH days.

13 Then saith he to the MAN, Stretch forth † thine HAND. And he stretched *it* forth; and it was restored whole, like as the OTHER.

§ LXXVIII.

14 Then the PHARISEES went out, and held Council against him, how they might destroy him.

15 But when JESUS knew *it*, he withdrew himself from thence: and † great Multitudes followed him, and he healed them all;

16 And charged them that they should not make him known:

17 That IT might be fulfilled which was SPOKEN by Esaias the PROPHET, saying,

18 "Behold my SERVANT, whom I have chosen; my BELOVED, in whom my SOUL is well pleased: I will put my SPIRIT upon him, and he shall shew Judgment to the GENTILES.

19 He shall not strive, nor cry; neither shall any man hear his VOICE in the STREETS.

20 A bruised Reed shall he not break, and smoking Flax shall he not quench, till he send forth JUDGMENT unto Victory.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. he was.
15. many followed. See 8.

† 7. Hosea vi. 6.

10. a Hand withered.

13. Thine HAND.

21 And in his NAME shall the Gentiles trust." †

§ LXXIX.

22 Then † was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that † the BLIND and Dumb both spake and saw.

23 And All the PEOPLE were amazed, and said, Is not this the SON of David?

24 But when the PHARISEES heard *it*, they said, This *fellow* doth not cast out DEVILS, but by BEELZEBUB the Prince of the DEVILS.

25 And † JESUS knew their THOUGHTS, and said unto them, Every Kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and Every City or House divided against itself shall not stand:

26 And if SATAN cast out SATAN, he is divided against himself; how shall then his KINGDOM stand?

27 And if **Æ** by Beelzebub cast out DEVILS, by whom do your CHILDREN cast *them* out? therefore *they* shall be Your Judges.

28 But if **Æ** cast out Devils by the Spirit of God, then the KINGDOM of GOD is come unto you.

29 Or else how can one enter into a STRONG man's HOUSE, and spoil his GOODS, except he first bind the STRONG man? and then he will spoil his HOUSE.

30 HE that is not with me is against me; and HE that GATHERETH not with me scattereth abroad.

31 Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of Sin and Blasphemy shall be forgiven † unto MEN: but

the BLASPHEMY *against* the Holy GHOST shall not be forgiven [unto MEN].

32 And whosoever speaketh a Word against the SON of MAN, it shall † be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the HOLY GHOST, it shall † not be forgiven him, neither in This WORLD, neither in the *world* to COME.

33 Either make the TREE good, and his FRUIT good; or else make the TREE corrupt, and his FRUIT corrupt: for the TREE is known by *his* FRUIT.

34 O Generation of Vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the ABUNDANCE of the HEART the MOUTH speaketh.

35 A GOOD Man out of the GOOD Treasure [of the HEART] bringeth forth † GOOD things: and an EVIL Man out of the EVIL Treasure bringeth forth evil things.

36 But I say unto you, That Every idle Word that MEN shall speak, they shall give Account thereof in the Day of Judgment.

37 For by thy WORDS thou shalt be justified, and by thy WORDS thou shalt be condemned.

§ LXXX.

38 Then certain of the SCRIBES [and of the Pharisees] † answered, saying, Master, we would see a Sign from thee.

39 But HE answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous Generation seeketh after a Sign; and there shall no Sign be given to it, but the SIGN of *the PROPHET Jonas:

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—39. Jonas the PROPHET.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—22. they brought. 22. the DUMB man spake and saw.
25. he knew. 31. unto YOU MEN. 32. not be forgiven him. 32. in no wise
be forgiven him. 35. good things. 38. answered him, saying. See 31, 35, 38.

† 21. Isaiah xlii. 1—4.

40 For as Jonas was Three Days and Three Nights in the WHALE'S BELLY; so shall the SON of MAN be Three Days and Three Nights in the HEART of the EARTH.

41 The Men of Nineveh shall rise in JUDGMENT with this GENERATION, and shall condemn it: Because they repented at the PREACHING of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here.

42 The Queen of the South shall rise up in the JUDGMENT with this GENERATION, and shall condemn it: For she came from the UTMOST-PARTS of the EARTH to hear the WISDOM of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here.

43 When the UNCLEAN Spirit is gone out of a MAN, he walketh through Dry Places, seeking Rest, and findeth none.

44 Then he saith, I will return into my HOUSE from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth *it* empty, swept, and garnished.

45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself Seven Other Spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the LAST *state* of that MAN is worse than the FIRST. Even so shall it be also unto this WICKED GENERATION.

§ LXXXI.

46 While he yet talked to the PEOPLE, behold, *his* MOTHER and his BRETHREN stood without, desiring to speak with him.

47 [Then one said unto him, Behold, thy MOTHER and thy

BRETHREN stand without, desiring to speak with thee.]

48 But HE answered and said unto HIM that TOLD him, Who is my MOTHER? and who are my BRETHREN?

49 And he stretched forth his HAND toward his DISCIPLES, and said, Behold my MOTHER and my BRETHREN!

50 For whosoever shall do the WILL of † my FATHER which is in HEAVEN, the same is My Brother, and Sister, and Mother.

CHAPTER XIII.

§ LXXXII.

1 The same DAY went JESUS out of the HOUSE, and sat by the SEA-SIDE.

2 And great Multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into † a SHIP, and sat; and the Whole MULTITUDE stood on the SHORE.

3 And he spake many things unto them in Parables, saying, Behold, a SOWER went forth to SOW;

4 And when he SOWED, some *seeds* fell by the WAY-SIDE, and the FOWLS came and devoured them up:

5 Some fell upon STONY-PLACES, where they had not much Earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they HAD no Deepness of † Earth:

6 And when the Sun was up, they were scorched; and because they HAD no Root, they withered away.

7 And some fell among THORNS; and the THORNS sprung up, and choked them:

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—50. THAT FATHER of mine which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—2. a Ship. 5. EARTH. See 47.

8 But other fell into GOOD GROUND, and brought forth Fruit, SOME an hundredfold, SOME sixtyfold, SOME thirtyfold.

9 * Who HATH Ears to hear, let him hear.

§ LXXXIII.

10 And the DISCIPLES came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in Parables?

11 HE answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto You to know the MYSTERIES of the KINGDOM of HEAVEN, but to *them* it is not given.

12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath.

13 Therefore speak I to them in Parables: Because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.

14 And in them is fulfilled * the PROPHECY of Esaias, which SAITH, "By Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive:

15 For this PEOPLE'S HEART is waxed gross, and *their* EARS are dull of hearing, and their EYES they have closed; lest at any time they should see with *their* EYES, and hear with *their* EARS, and should understand with *their* HEART, and should be converted, and I should heal them." †

16 But blessed *are* Your EYES, For they see: and [your] EARS, For they hear.

17 For verily I say unto you,

That Many Prophets and Righteous men have desired to see *those things* which ye see, and have not seen *them*; and to hear *those things* which ye hear, and have not heard *them*.

§ LXXXIV.

18 Hear ye therefore the PARABLE of the SOWER.

19 When any one heareth the WORD of the KINGDOM, and understandeth *it* not, then cometh the WICKED *one*, and catcheth away THAT which was SOWN in his HEART. This is HE which RECEIVED-SEED by the WAY-SIDE.

20 But HE that RECEIVED-THE-SEED into STONY-PLACES, the same is HE that HEARETH the WORD, and anon with Joy receiveth it;

21 Yet hath he not Root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when Tribulation or Persecution ariseth because of the WORD, by and by he is offended.

22 HE also that RECEIVED-SEED among the THORNS is HE that HEARETH the WORD; and the CARE of †this WORLD, and the DECEITFULNESS of RICHES, choke the WORD, and he becometh unfruitful.

23 But HE that RECEIVED-SEED into the GOOD GROUND is HE that HEARETH the WORD, and understandeth *it*; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, SOME an hundredfold, SOME sixty, SOME thirty.

§ LXXXV.

24 Another Parable put he forth

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—9. HE that HATH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—22. the WORLD.

‡ 15. Isaiah vi. 9.

14. THAT PROPHECY of Esaias which.

See 16.

unto them, saying, The KINGDOM of HEAVEN is likened unto a Man which sowed Good Seed in his FIELD:

25 But while MEN SLEPT, His ENEMY came and sowed Tares among the WHEAT, and went his way.

26 But when the BLADE was sprung up, and brought forth Fruit, then appeared the TARES also.

27 So the SERVANTS of the HOUSEHOLDER came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow Good Seed in THY Field? from whence then hath it TARES?

28 HE said unto them, An Enemy hath done this. † The SERVANTS said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

29 But HE said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the TARES, ye root up also the WHEAT with them.

30 Let both grow together until the HARVEST: and in the TIME of HARVEST I will say to the REAPERS, Gather ye together first the TARES, and bind them in Bundles to BURN them: but gather the WHEAT into my BARN.

§ LXXXVI.

31. Another Parable put he forth unto them, saying, The KINGDOM of HEAVEN is like to a Grain of Mustard-seed, which a Man took, and sowed in his FIELD:

32 Which indeed is the least of All SEEDS: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among HERBS, and becometh a Tree, so that the

BIRDS of the AIR come and lodge in the BRANCHES thereof.

§ LXXXVII.

33 Another Parable spake he unto them; The KINGDOM of HEAVEN is like unto Leaven, which a Woman took, and hid in three Measures of Meal, till the whole was leavened.

34 All these things spake JESUS unto the MULTITUDE in Parables; and without a Parable spake he not unto them:

35 That IT might be fulfilled which was SPOKEN by the PROPHET, saying, "I will open my MOUTH in Parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the Foundation [of the World]."

§ LXXXVIII.

36 Then † JESUS sent the MULTITUDE away, and went into the HOUSE: and his DISCIPLES came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the PARABLE of the TARES of the FIELD.

37 HE answered and said [unto them], HE that SOWETH the GOOD Seed is the SON of MAN;

38 The FIELD is the WORLD; the GOOD Seed are the CHILDREN of the KINGDOM; but the TARES are the CHILDREN of the WICKED one;

39 *The ENEMY that SOWED them is the DEVIL; the HARVEST is the End of the †WORLD; and the REAPERS are the Angels.

40 As therefore the TARES are gathered and burned in the Fire; so shall it be in the END of †this WORLD.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—39. THAT ENEMY that.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—28. And THEY say unto him. 36. he sent. 39. World. 40. the WORLD. See 35, 37.

41 The SON of MAN shall send forth his ANGELS, and they shall gather out of his KINGDOM All THINGS that OFFEND, and THEM which DO INIQUITY;

42 And shall cast them into a FURNACE of FIRE: there shall be WAILING and GNASHING of TEETH.

43 Then shall the RIGHTEOUS shine forth as the SUN in the KINGDOM of their FATHER. *Who HATH ears [to hear], let him hear.

§ LXXXIX.

44 [Again,] the KINGDOM of HEAVEN is like unto Treasure hid in a FIELD; the which when a Man hath found, he hideth, and for JOY thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that FIELD.

§ XC.

45 Again, the KINGDOM of HEAVEN is like unto a Merchant [Man], seeking Goodly Pearls:

46 Who, when he had found One Pearl of Great-price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

§ XCI.

47 Again, the KINGDOM of HEAVEN is like unto a Net, that was cast into the SEA, and gathered of Every Kind:

48 Which, when it was full, they drew to SHORE, and sat down, and gathered the GOOD into vessels, but cast the BAD away.

49 So shall it be at the END of the WORLD: the ANGELS shall come forth, and sever the WICKED from among the JUST,

50 And shall cast them into the FURNACE of FIRE: there shall be WAILING and GNASHING of TEETH.

51 [JESUS saith unto them,] Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea, [Lord].

52 Then said HE unto them, Therefore Every Scribe *which is* instructed †unto the KINGDOM of HEAVEN is like unto a Man *that is* an Householder, which bringeth forth out of his TREASURE *things* new and old.

§ XCH.

53 And it came to pass, *that* when JESUS had finished these PARABLES, he departed thence.

54 And when he was come into his OWN-COUNTRY, he taught them in their SYNAGOGUE, inso-much that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this *man* this WISDOM, and *these* MIGHTY-WORKS?

55 Is not this the CARPENTER'S SON? is not his MOTHER called Mary? and his BRETHERN, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?

56 And his SISTERS, are they not all with us? Whence then hath this *man* all these things?

57 And they were offended in him. But JESUS said unto them, A Prophet is not without honour, save in †his OWN-COUNTRY, and in his own HOUSE.

58 And he did not many Mighty-works there because of their UNBELIEF.

CHAPTER XIV.

§ XCIII.

1 At That TIME Herod the TETRARCH heard of the FAME of Jesus,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—43. HE that HATH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—52. in. 57. *his.* See 43, 44, 45, 51 (twice).

2 And said unto his SERVANTS, This is John the BAPTIST; *he* is risen from the DEAD; and therefore MIGHTY-WORKS do shew forth themselves in him.

3 For HEROD †had laid hold on JOHN, and bound him, and put *him* in †prison for Herodias' sake, his BROTHER Philip's WIFE.

4 For JOHN said unto him, It is not lawful for thee to have her.

5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the MULTITUDE, Because they counted him as a Prophet.

6 But when HEROD's Birth-day was kept, the DAUGHTER of HERODIAS danced before them, and pleased HEROD.

7 Whereupon he promised with an Oath to give her whatsoever she would ask.

8 And SHE, being before instructed of her MOTHER, said, Give me here John BAPTIST'S HEAD in a Charger.

9 And the †KING was sorry: nevertheless for the OATH'S sake, and THEM which SAT-AT-MEAT with him, he commanded *it* to be given *her*.

10 And he sent, and beheaded JOHN in the PRISON.

11 And his HEAD was brought in a Charger, and given to the DAMSEL: and she brought *it* to her MOTHER.

12 And his DISCIPLES came, and took up †the BODY, and buried it, and went and told JESUS.

§ XCIV.

13 When JESUS heard *of it*, he

departed thence by Ship into a Desert Place apart: and when the PEOPLE had heard *thereof*, they followed him on Foot out of the CITIES.

14 And †JESUS went forth, and saw a Great Multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their SICK.

§ XCV.

15 And when it was Evening, †his DISCIPLES came to him, saying, *This is a Desert PLACE, and the TIME is now past; send the MULTITUDE away, that they may go into the VILLAGES, and buy themselves Victuals.

16 But JESUS said unto them, They need not depart; give *ye* them to eat.

17 And THEY say unto him, We have here but Five Loaves, and Two Fishes.

18 HE said, Bring them hither to me.

19 And he commanded the MULTITUDE to sit down on the GRASS, and took the FIVE Loaves, and the TWO Fishes, and looking up to HEAVEN, he blessed, and brake, and gave the LOAVES to *his* DISCIPLES, and the DISCIPLES to the MULTITUDE.

20 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the FRAGMENTS that REMAINED Twelve Baskets full.

21 And THEY that had EATEN were about five-thousand Men, besides Women and Children.

§ XCVI.

22 And straightway †JESUS con-

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—15. The PLACE is a Desert, and.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. then had. 3. PRISON. 9.KING, being sorry for the OATH'S sake, and THEM which SAT-AT-MEAT with him, commanded. 12. the DEAD-BODY. 14. he went. 15. the DISCIPLES. 22. he constrained.

strained his DISCIPLES to get into † a SHIP, and to go before him unto the OTHER-SIDE, while he sent the MULTITUDES away.

23 And when he had sent the MULTITUDES away, he went up into a MOUNTAIN apart to pray: and when the Evening was come, he was there alone.

24 But the SHIP was now † in the midst of the SEA, tossed with WAVES: for the WIND was contrary.

25 And in the Fourth Watch of the NIGHT † JESUS went unto them, walking on the SEA.

26 And when the DISCIPLES saw him walking on the SEA, they were troubled, saying, It is a Spirit; and they cried out for FEAR.

27 But straightway JESUS spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.

28 And PETER answered him and said, Lord, if it be **thou**, bid me come unto thee on the WATER.

29 And HE said, Come. And when † PETER was come down out of the SHIP, he walked on the WATER, † to go to JESUS.

30 But when he saw the WIND boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me.

31 And immediately JESUS stretched forth *his* HAND, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were † come into the SHIP, the WIND ceased.

33 Then THEY that were in the

SHIP [came and] worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

§ XCVII.

34 And when they were gone over, they came † into the LAND of Gennesaret.

25 And when the MEN of that PLACE had knowledge of him, they sent out into All that COUNTRY round about, and brought unto him ALL that were DISEASED;

36 And besought him that they might only touch the HEM of his GARMENT: and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.

CHAPTER XV.

§ XCVIII.

1 Then came to JESUS † SCRIBES and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying,

2 Why do thy DISCIPLES transgress the TRADITION of the ELDERS? for they wash not † their HANDS when they eat Bread.

3 But HE answered and said unto them, Why do **ye** also transgress the COMMANDMENT of GOD by your TRADITION?

4 For GOD † commanded saying, "Honour thy FATHER and MOTHER:" † and, "HE that CURSETH Father or Mother, let him die the Death." †

5 But **ye** say, Whosoever shall say to *his* FATHER or *his* MOTHER, *It is* a Gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me;

6 † And honour not his FATHER [or his MOTHER], *he shall be free.* Thus have ye made the † COM-

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—22. a Ship. 24. many Furlongs away from the LAND, tossed. 25. he came unto. 29. Peter. 29. and came to. 32. gone up into. 34. to LAND at Gennesaret. 1. Pharisees and Scribes from Jerusalem. 2. the HANDS. 4. said, "Honour *thy* FATHER. 6. He shall in no wise honour his FATHER. Thus. 6. WORD. See 33, 6.

‡ 4. Exod. xx. 12. ‡ 4. Exod. xxi. 17.

MANDMENT of GOD of none effect by your TRADITION.

7 *Ye* Hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying,

8 "This PEOPLE [draweth nigh unto me with their MOUTH, and] honoureth Me with *their* LIPS; but their HEART is far from me.

9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching *for* Doctrines the Commandments of Men." †

10 And he called the MULTITUDE, and said unto them, Hear, and understand:

11 Not THAT which † GOETH INTO the MOUTH defileth a MAN; but THAT which COMETH-OUT of the MOUTH, this defileth a MAN.

12 Then † came his DISCIPLES, and said unto him, Knowest thou That the PHARISEES were offended, after they heard this SAYING?

13 But HE answered and said, Every Plant which my HEAVENLY FATHER hath not planted, shall be rooted up.

14 Let them alone: they be blind Leaders [of the Blind]. And if the Blind lead the Blind, both shall fall into the Ditch.

15 Then answered PETER and said unto him, Declare unto us † this PARABLE.

16 And † JESUS said, Are ye also yet without understanding?

17 Do not ye [yet] understand, That WHATSOEVER ENTERETH-IN at the MOUTH goeth into the BELLY, and is cast out into the Draught?

18 But *those* THINGS which PRO-

CEED-OUT of the MOUTH come forth from the HEART; and *they* defile the MAN.

19 For out of the HEART proceed evil Thoughts, Murders, Adulteries, Fornications, Thefts, False-witness, Blasphemies:

20 These are the THINGS which DEFILE a MAN: but to EAT with Unwashed Hands defileth not a MAN.

§ XCIX.

21 Then JESUS went thence, and departed into the COASTS of Tyre and Sidon.

22 And, behold, a Woman of Canaan came out of the same COASTS, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, *thou* Son of David; my DAUGHTER is grievously vexed with a devil.

23 But HE answered her not a Word. And his DISCIPLES came and besought him, saying, Send her away; For she crieth after us.

24 But HE answered and said, I am not sent but unto the LOST SHEEP of the House of Israel.

25 Then came SHE and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.

26 But HE answered and said, It is not meet to take the CHILDREN'S BREAD, and to cast *it* to DOGS.

27 And SHE said, Truth, Lord: yet the DOGS eat of * the CRUMBS which FALL from their MASTERS' TABLE.

28 Then JESUS answered and said unto her, O Woman, great *is* Thy FAITH: be it unto thee even

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—27. THOSE CRUMBS which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—11. COMETH into. 15. the PARABLE. 16. HE said. See 8, 14, 17.

‡ 9. Isaiiah xxix. 13.

12. come the DISCIPLES and say.

as thou wilt. And her DAUGHTER was made whole from that very HOUR.

§ C.

29 And JESUS departed from thence, and came nigh unto the SEA of GALILEE; and went up into a MOUNTAIN, and sat down there.

30 And great Multitudes came unto him, having with them *those that were* lame, †blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at †JESUS' FEET; and he healed them:

31 Insomuch that the MULTITUDE wondered, when they saw the Dumb to †speak, the Maimed to be whole, †the Lame to walk, and the Blind to see: and they glorified the GOD of Israel.

32 Then JESUS called his DISCIPLES *unto him*, and said, I have compassion on the MULTITUDE, Because they continue with me [now] three Days, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the WAY.

33 And his DISCIPLES say unto him, Whence should we have so much Bread in the Wilderness, as to fill so great a Multitude?

34 And JESUS saith unto them, How-many Loaves have ye? And THEY said, Seven, and a Few Little-fishes.

35 And he commanded the MULTITUDE to sit down on the GROUND.

36 And he took the SEVEN Loaves and the FISHES, and gave

thanks, and brake *them*, and gave to his DISCIPLES, and the DISCIPLES to the MULTITUDE.

37 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the BROKEN-MEAT that was LEFT Seven Baskets full.

38 And THEY that did EAT †were Four-thousand Men, beside Women and Children.

§ CI.

39 And he sent away the MULTITUDE, and took SHIP, and came into the COASTS of †Magdala.

CHAPTER XVI.

1 The PHARISEES also with the Sadducees came, and tempting desired him that he would shew them a Sign from HEAVEN.

2 HE answered and said unto them, [When it is Evening, ye say, *It will be* Fair-weather: for the SKY is red.

3 And in the Morning, *It will be* Foul-weather To-day: for the SKY is red and lowring. *O ye* Hypocrites, ye can discern the FACE of the SKY; but can ye not *discern* the SIGNS of the TIMES?]

4 A wicked and adulterous Generation seeketh [after] a Sign; and there shall no Sign be given unto it, but the SIGN of * [the PROPHET] Jonas. And he left them, and departed.

5 And when †his DISCIPLES were come to the OTHER-SIDE, they had forgotten to take Bread.

6 Then JESUS said unto them, Take heed and beware of the LEAVEN of the PHARISEES and of the Sadducees.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—4. Jonas the PROPHET.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—30. maimed, blind, dumb, and. 30. his FEET. 31. hear. 31. and the Lame. 38 were about. 39. Magadan. 5. the DISCIPLES. See 32, 2—3, 4 (twice).

7 And **THEY** reasoned among themselves, saying, *It is* Because we have taken no Bread.

8 *Which* when **JESUS** perceived, he said unto them, *O* ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, Because ye have [brought] no Bread?

9 Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the **FIVE** Loaves of the **FIVE-THOUSAND**, and How-many Baskets ye took up?

10 Neither the **SEVEN** Loaves of the **FOUR-THOUSAND**, and How-many Baskets ye took up?

11 How is it that ye do not understand, That I spake *it* not to you concerning Bread, †that ye should beware of the **LEAVEN** of the **PHARISEES** and of the **Sadducees**?

12 Then understood they *how* That he bade *them* not beware of the **LEAVEN** of **BREAD**, but of the **DOCTRINE** of the †**PHARISEES** and of the **Sadducees**.

§ CII.

13 When **JESUS** came into the **COASTS** of **Cæsarea PHILIPPI**, he asked his **DISCIPLES**, saying, Whom do **MEN** say that †**I** the **SON** of **MAN** am?

14 And **THEY** said, **SOME** say *that thou art* John the **BAPTIST**: †some, **Elias**; and others, **Jeremias**, or one of the **PROPHETS**.

15 He saith unto them, But whom say *ye* that I am?

16 And **Simon Peter** answered and said, **Thou** art the **CHRIST**, the **SON** of the **LIVING GOD**.

17 And **JESUS** answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou,

Simon Bar-jona: For **Flesh** and **Blood** hath not revealed *it* unto thee, but *my **FATHER** which is in †**HEAVEN**.

18 And **Ē** say also unto thee, That **thou** art **Peter**, and upon **This** **ROCK** I will build **My CHURCH**; and the **Gates** of **Hell** shall not prevail against it.

19 And I will give unto thee the **KEYS** of the **KINGDOM** of **HEAVEN**: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on **EARTH** shall be bound in **HEAVEN**: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on **EARTH** shall be loosed in **HEAVEN**.

20 Then charged he †his **DISCIPLES** that they should tell no man That **he** was [**Jesus**] the **CHRIST**.

§ CIII.

21 From that time forth began **JESUS** to shew unto his **DISCIPLES**, *how* That he must go unto **Jerusalem**, and suffer many things of the **ELDERS** and **Chief-priests** and **Scribes**, and be killed, and be raised again the **THIRD** Day.

22 Then **PETER** took him, and †began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, **Lord**: this shall not be unto thee.

23 But **HE** turned, and said unto **PETER**, Get thee behind me, **Satan**: thou art an **Offence** unto me: For thou savourest not the **THINGS** that be of **GOD**, but **THOSE** that be of **MEN**.

24 Then said **JESUS** unto his **DISCIPLES**, If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his **CROSS**, and follow me.

25 For whosoever will save his

* **EMPHATIC TEXT**.—17. THAT **FATHER** of mine which is.

† **VATICAN MANUSCRIPT**.—11. but beware ye of. 12. **SADDUCEES** and **Pharisees**. 13. the **SON** of **MAN** is? 14. **SOME**. 17. **Heaven**. 20. the **DISCIPLES**. 22. rebuking him, saith. See 8, 20.

LIFE shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his LIFE for my sake shall find it.

26 For what is a Man profited, if he shall gain the whole WORLD, and lose his own SOUL? or what shall a Man give in Exchange for his SOUL?

27 For the SON of MAN shall come in the GLORY of his FATHER with his ANGELS; and then he shall reward every man according to his WORKS.

§ CIV.

28 Verily I say unto you, † There be SOME STANDING here, which shall not taste of Death, till they see the SON of MAN coming in his KINGDOM.

CHAPTER XVII.

1 And after six Days JESUS taketh PETER, James, and John his BROTHER, and bringeth them up into an high Mountain apart,

2 And was transfigured before them: and his FACE did shine as the SUN, and his RAIMENT was white as the LIGHT.

3 And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias, talking with him.

4 Then answered PETER, and said unto JESUS, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, † let us make here Three Tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright Cloud overshadowed them: and behold a Voice out of the CLOUD, which said, This is my BELOVED SON, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him.

6 And when the DISCIPLES heard *it*, they fell on their Face, and were sore afraid.

7 And JESUS came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they had lifted up their EYES, they saw no man, save JESUS only.

9 And as they came down from the MOUNTAIN, JESUS charged them, saying, Tell the VISION to no man, until the SON of MAN be risen again from the Dead.

(§ CV.)

10 And his DISCIPLES asked him, saying, Why then say the SCRIBES That Elias must first come?

11 And † JESUS answered and said [unto them], Elias truly † shall first come, and restore all things.

12 But I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the SON of MAN suffer of them.

13 Then the DISCIPLES understood That he spake unto them of John the BAPTIST.

§ CVI.

14 And when they were come to the MULTITUDE, there came to him a *certain* Man, kneeling down to him, and saying,

15 Lord, have mercy on My SON: For he is lunatick, and † sore vexed: for oftentimes he falleth into the FIRE, and oft into the WATER.

16 And I brought him to thy DISCIPLES, and they could not cure Him.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—28. That there be. 4. I will make here three Tabernacles.
11. HE answered. 11. cometh, and shall restore. 15. sickly. See 11.

17 Then JESUS answered and said, O faithless and perverse Generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And JESUS rebuked the DEVIL; and he departed out of him: and the CHILD was cured from that very HOUR.

19 Then came the DISCIPLES to JESUS apart, and said, Why could not ~~we~~ cast him out?

20 And † JESUS said unto them, Because of † your UNBELIEF: for verily I say unto you, If ye have Faith as a Grain of Mustard-seed, ye shall say unto this MOUNTAIN, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

21 [Howbeit This KIND goeth not out but by Prayer and Fasting.] (§ CVII.)

22 And while they abode in GALILEE, JESUS said unto them, The SON of MAN shall be betrayed into the Hands of Men:

23 And they shall kill him, and the THIRD Day he shall † be raised again. And they were exceeding sorry.

(§ CVIII.)

24 And when they were come to Capernaum, THEY that RECEIVED TRIBUTE *money* came to PETER, and said, Doth not your MASTER pay TRIBUTE?

25 He saith, Yes. And when † he was come into the HOUSE, JESUS prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the KINGS of the EARTH take Custom or Tribute? of their own CHILDREN, or of STRANGERS?

26 † PETER saith unto him, Of STRANGERS. JESUS saith unto him, Then are the CHILDREN free.

27 Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the SEA, and cast an Hook, and take up the FISII that first COMETH-UP; and when thou hast opened his MOUTH, thou shalt find a Piece-of-money: That take, and give unto them for me and thee.

CHAPTER XVIII.

§ CIX.

1 † At the Same TIME came the DISCIPLES unto JESUS, saying, Who is the greatest in the KINGDOM of HEAVEN?

2 And † JESUS called a Little-child unto him, and set him in the Midst of them,

3 And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as LITTLE-CHILDREN, ye shall not enter into the KINGDOM of HEAVEN.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this LITTLE-CHILD, the same is GREATEST in the KINGDOM of HEAVEN.

5 And whoso shall receive one such Little-child in my NAME receiveth Me.

6 But whoso shall offend one of THESE LITTLE-ONES which BELIEVE in me, it were better for him that a Millstone were hanged about his NECK, and *that* he were drowned in the DEPTH of the SEA.

§ CX.

7 Woe unto the WORLD because of OFFENCES! for it must needs be that OFFENCES come;

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—20. HE saith. 20. LITTLE-FAITH. 23. rise again. 25. they were come. 26. And when he said, Of STRANGERS, Jesus saith. 1. And at. 2. he called. See 21.

but woe to that MAN by whom the OFFENCE cometh!

8 Wherefore if thy HAND or thy FOOT offend thee, cut them off, and cast *them* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into LIFE †halt or maimed, rather than having Two Hands or Two Feet to be cast into EVERLASTING FIRE.

9 And if thine EYE offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into LIFE with one eye, rather than having Two Eyes to be cast into HELL FIRE.

10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these LITTLE-ONES; for I say unto you, That in †Heaven their ANGELS do always behold the FACE of *my FATHER which is in Heaven.

11 [For the SON of MAN is come to save THAT which was LOST.]

12 How think ye? if a Man have an Hundred Sheep, and one of them be gone astray, †doth he not leave the NINETY-AND-NINE, and goeth into the MOUNTAINS, and seeketh THAT which is GONE-ASTRAY?

13 And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that *sheep*, than of *the NINETY-AND-NINE which WENT-NOT-ASTRAY.

14 Even so it is not the Will †of *your FATHER which is in Heaven, that one of these LITTLE-ONES should perish.

15 Moreover if thy BROTHER shall trespass [against thee], go and tell him his fault between

thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy BROTHER.

16 But if he will not hear *thee*, *then* take with thee one or two more, that in the Mouth of Two or three Witnesses Every Word may be established.

17 And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell *it* unto the CHURCH: but if he neglect to hear the CHURCH, let him be unto thee as an HEATHEN man and a PUBLICAN.

18 Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on EARTH shall be bound in †HEAVEN: and whatsoever ye shall loose on EARTH shall be loosed in †HEAVEN.

§ CXI.

19 †Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on EARTH as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of *my FATHER which is in Heaven.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in MY Name, there am I in the Midst of them.

21 Then came PETER †to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my BROTHER sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times?

22 JESUS saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.

23 Therefore is the KINGDOM of HEAVEN likened unto a certain King, which would take Account of his SERVANTS.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—10. THAT FATHER of mine which is. 13. THOSE NINETY-AND-NINE which. 14. THAT FATHER of yours which is. 19. THAT FATHER of mine which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. maimed or halt. 10. HEAVEN. 12. will he not leave the NINETY-AND-NINE Sheep on the MOUNTAINS, and go and seek. 14. of THAT FATHER of mine which is. 18. Heaven. 18. Heaven. 19. Again verily I say. 21. and said unto him, Lord. See 11, 15.

him, which owed him Ten-thousand Talents.

25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, †his LORD commanded him to be sold, and his WIFE, and CHILDREN, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The SERVANT therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, [Lord,] have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then the LORD of †that SERVANT was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the DEBT.

28 But the [same] SERVANT went out, and found one of his FELLOWSERVANTS, which owed him an Hundred Pence: and he laid hands on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying, Pay †me that thou owest.

29 And his FELLOWSERVANT fell down at his FEET, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee [all].

30 And HE would not: but went and cast him into Prison, till he should pay the DEBT.

31 †So when his FELLOWSERVANTS saw WHAT was DONE, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their LORD ALL that was DONE.

32 Then his LORD, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked Servant, I forgave thee All that DEBT, because thou desiredst me:

33 Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy FELLOWSERVANT, even as I had pity on thee?

34 And his LORD was wroth: and delivered him to the TORMENTORS, till he should pay ALL that was DUE [unto him].

35 So likewise shall my HEAVENLY FATHER do also unto you, if ye from your HEARTS forgive not every one his BROTHER [their TRESPASSES].

CHAPTER XIX.

§ CXII.

1 And it came to pass, *that* when JESUS had finished these SAYINGS, he departed from GALILEE, and came into the COASTS of JUDEA beyond JORDAN;

2 And great Multitudes followed him; and he healed them there.

§ CXIII.

3 The †PHARISEES also came unto him, tempting him, and saying [unto him], Is it lawful for a †Man to put away his WIFE for Every Cause?

4 And HE answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, That HE which †MADE *them* at the Beginning made them Male and Female,

5 And said, “For this cause shall a man leave FATHER and MOTHER, and shall cleave to his WIFE: and they TWAIN shall be one Flesh?” †

6 Wherefore they are no more Twain, but one Flesh. What therefore GOD hath joined together, let not Man put asunder.

7 They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a Writing of Divorcement, and to put her away?

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—25. the LORD. 27. the SERVANT. 28. whatever thou owest. 31. When therefore His FELLOWSERVANTS. 3. Pharisees. 3. man.
4. CREATED. See 26, 28, 29, 34, 35, 3.

† 5. Genesis ii. 24.

8 He saith unto them, Moses because of the **HARDNESS** of your **HEARTS** suffered you to put away your **WIVES**: but from the Beginning it was not so.

9 And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his **WIFE**, except † *it be* for Fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and **WHOSO MARRIETH** her which is put away doth commit adultery.

10 † His **DISCIPLES** say unto him, If the **CASE** of the **MAN** be so with *his WIFE*, it is not good to marry.

11 But **HE** said unto them, All *men* cannot receive † this **SAYING**, save *they* to whom it is given.

12 For there are some Eunuchs, which were so born from *their* Mother's Womb: and there are some Eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of **MEN**: and there be Eunuchs, which have made themselves Eunuchs for the **KINGDOM** of **HEAVEN'S** sake. **HE** that is **ABLE** to receive *it*, let him receive *it*.

§ CXIV.

13 Then were there brought unto him Little-children, that he should put *his HANDS* on them, and pray: and the **DISCIPLES** rebuked them.

14 But **JESUS** said, Suffer **LITTLE-CHILDREN**, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of **SUCH** is the **KINGDOM** of **HEAVEN**.

15 And he laid *his HANDS* on them, and departed thence.

§ CXV.

16 And, behold, one came † and

said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal Life?

17 And **HE** said unto him, † Why callest thou me good? *there is none good but one, that is GOD*: but if thou wilt enter into **LIFE**, keep the **COMMANDMENTS**.

18 He saith unto him, Which? **JESUS** said, "**THOU** shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness,

19 Honour thy **FATHER** and *thy MOTHER*:" † and, "Thou shalt love thy **NEIGHBOUR** as thyself." †

20 The **YOUNG-MAN** saith unto him, All these things have I kept [from my Youth up]: what lack I yet?

21 **JESUS** said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go *and* sell **THAT** thou **HAST**, and give to the † **Poor**, and thou shalt have **Treasure** in **Heaven**: and come *and* follow me.

22 But when the **YOUNG-MAN** heard † *that SAYING*, he went away sorrowful: for he had great † **Possessions**.

23 Then said **JESUS** unto his **DISCIPLES**, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the **KINGDOM** of **HEAVEN**.

24 And again I say unto you, It is easier for a Camel to go through the Eye of a Needle, than for a rich man to enter into the **KINGDOM** of **GOD**.

25 When † his **DISCIPLES** heard *it*, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

† **VATICAN MANUSCRIPT**.—9. on Account of Fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and **WHOSO MARRIETH**. 10. The **DISCIPLES**. 11. the **SAYING**. 16. unto him and said, Master. 17. Why askest thou Me concerning **THAT** which is **GOOD**? One is the **GOOD**: but if thou wilt. 21. **POOR**. 22. this **SAYING**. 22. Riches. 25. the **DISCIPLES**. See 20.

† 19. Exod. xx. 13. † 19. Lev. xix. 18.

26 But JESUS beheld *them*, and said unto them, With Men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.

§ CXVI.

27 Then answered PETER and said unto him, Behold, *we* have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall *we* have therefore?

28 And Jesus SAID unto them, Verily I say unto you, That YE which have FOLLOWED me, in the REGENERATION when the SON of MAN shall sit in the Throne of his Glory, *ye* also shall sit upon Twelve Thrones, judging the TWELVE Tribes of ISRAEL.

29 And every one †that hath forsaken Houses, or Brethren, or Sisters, or Father, or Mother, [or Wife], or Children, or Lands, †for my NAME'S sake, shall receive †an Hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting Life.

§ CXVII.

30 But many *that are* first shall be last; and the last *shall be* first.

CHAPTER XX.

1 For the KINGDOM of HEAVEN is like unto a Man *that is* an Householder, which went out early in the Morning to hire Labourers into his VINEYARD.

2 And when he had agreed with the LABOURERS for a Penny a DAY, he sent them into his VINEYARD.

3 And he went out about the †THIRD Hour, and saw others standing idle in the MARKET-PLACE,

4 And said unto *them*; Go

ye also into the VINEYARD, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And THEY went their way.

5 Again he went out about the Sixth and Ninth Hour, and did likewise.

6 And about the ELEVENTH [Hour] he went out, and found others standing [idle], and saith unto them, Why stand ye here All the DAY idle?

7 They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go *ye* also into the VINEYARD; [and whatsoever is right, *that shall ye receive.*]

8 So when Even was come, the LORD of the VINEYARD saith unto his STEWARD, Call the LABOURERS, and give them *their* HIRE, beginning from the LAST unto the FIRST.

9 And when THEY came *that were hired* about the ELEVENTH Hour, they received every man a Penny.

10 †But when the FIRST came, they supposed That they should have received more; and *they* likewise received every man a Penny.

11 And when they had received *it*, they murmured against the GOODMAN-OF-THE-HOUSE,

12 Saying, These LAST have wrought *but* One Hour, and thou hast made them equal unto US which have BORNE the BURDEN and HEAT of the DAY.

13 But HE answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a Penny?

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—29. soever that hath. 29. for MY Name's sake.
29. manyfold. 3. Third Hour. 10. And when. See 29, 6 (twice), 7.

14 Take **that* THINE is, and go thy way: †I will give unto This LAST, even as unto thee.

15 Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with MINE-OWN? Is thine EYE evil, Because I am good?

16 So the LAST shall be first, and the FIRST last: [for many be called, but few chosen.]

§ CXVIII.

17 And †JESUS going up to Jerusalem took the TWELVE Disciples apart †in the WAY, and said unto them,

18 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the SON of MAN shall be betrayed unto the CHIEF-PRIESTS and unto the Scribes, and they shall condemn him [to Death],

19 And shall deliver him to the GENTILES to MOCK, and to scourge, and crucify *him*: and the THIRD Day he shall rise again.

§ CXIX.

20 Then came to him the MOTHER of Zebedee's CHILDREN with her SONS, worshipping *him*, and desiring a certain thing of him.

21 And HE said unto her, What wilt thou? †She saith [unto him], Grant that These my TWO Sons may sit, the one on thy Right *hand*, and the other on †the Left, in thy KINGDOM.

22 But JESUS answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the CUP that I shall drink of, [and to be baptized with the BAPTISM that I am bap-

tized with]? They say unto him, We are able.

23 [And] he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my CUP, [and be baptized with the BAPTISM that I am baptized with]: but to SIT on my Right *hand*, and on †my Left, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared of my FATHER.

24 And when the TEN heard *it*, they were moved with indignation against the TWO Brethren.

25 But JESUS called them *unto him*, and said, Ye know That the PRINCES of the GENTILES exercise dominion over them, and THEY that are GREAT exercise authority upon them.

26 But it †shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be Your Minister;

27 And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be Your Servant:

28 Even as the SON of MAN came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his LIFE a Ransom for many.

§ CXX.

29 And as they departed from Jericho, a great Multitude followed him.

30 And, behold, Two blind men sitting by the WAY-SIDE, when they heard That Jesus passed by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, *thou* Son of David.

31 And the MULTITUDE rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but THEY cried the

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14. THAT which is THINE.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. I will. 17. when Jesus was about to go up to Jerusalem, he took. 17. and said to them in the WAY. 21. And SHE said. 21. thy Left. 23. the Left. 26. is not so. See 16, 18, 21, 22, 23 (twice).

more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, *thou* Son of David.

32 And JESUS stood still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I shall do unto you?

33 They say unto him, Lord, that † Our EYES may be opened.

34 So Jesus had compassion *on them*, and touched † their EYES: and immediately † Their EYES received sight, and they followed him.

CHAPTER XXI.

§ CXXI.

1 And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the MOUNT of OLIVES, then sent JESUS Two Disciples,

2 Saying unto them, Go into * the VILLAGE OVER-AGAINST you, and straightway ye shall find an Ass tied, and a Colt with her: loose *them*, and bring *them* unto me.

3 And if any *man* say ought unto you, ye shall say, The LORD hath Need of them; and straightway he will send them.

4 All this was done, that IT might be fulfilled which was SPOKEN by the PROPHET, saying,

5 "Tell ye the DAUGHTER of Sion, Behold, thy KING cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an Ass, and † a Colt the Foal of an Ass." †

6 And the DISCIPLES went, and did as JESUS commanded them,

7 And brought the ASS, and the COLT, and put on them their CLOTHES, and they set *him* thereon.

8 And a very GREAT Multitude spread † Their GARMENTS in the WAY; others cut down Branches from the TREES, and strawed *them* in the WAY.

9 And * the MULTITUDES that † WENT-BEFORE, and that FOLLOVED, cried, saying, Hosanna to the SON of David: "Blessed is HE that COMETH in the Name of the Lord"; † Hosanna in the HIGHEST.

10 And when he was come into Jerusalem, All the CITY was moved, saying, Who is this?

11 And the MULTITUDE said, This is Jesus * the PROPHET of Nazareth of GALILEE.

12 And JESUS went into the TEMPLE [of GOD], and cast out All THEM that SOLD and bought in the TEMPLE, and overthrew the TABLES of the MONEYCHANGERS, and the SEATS of THEM that SOLD DOVES,

13 And said unto them, It is written, "My HOUSE shall be called the House of Prayer"; † but *ye* † have made it a Den of Thieves.

14 And the Blind and the Lame came to him in the TEMPLE, and he healed them.

15 And when the CHIEF-PRIESTS and SCRIBES saw the WONDERFUL-THINGS that he did, and † the CHILDREN crying in the TEMPLE, and saying, Hosanna

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. THAT VILLAGE which is OVER-AGAINST. 9. THOSE MULTITUDES that WENT-BEFORE, and THOSE that FOLLOVED. 11. THAT PROPHET that is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—33. OUR EYES. 34. THEIR EYES. 34. they received sight. 5. upon a Colt. 8. Their-own GARMENTS. 9. WENT-BEFORE him, and. 13. make it. 15. THOSE CHILDREN that were CRYING. See 12.

† 5. Zech. ix. 9. † 9. Psa. cxviii. 26. † 13. Isaiah lvi. 7, 8.

to the SON of David; they were sore displeased,

16 And said unto him, Hearest thou what these say? And JESUS saith unto them, Yea; have ye never read, "Out of the Mouth of Babes and Sucklings thou hast perfected Praise?" †

17 And he left them, and went out of the CITY into Bethany; and he lodged there.

§ CXXII.

18 Now in the Morning as he returned into the CITY, he hungered.

19 And when he saw a Fig-tree in the WAY, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but Leaves only, and said unto it, Let no Fruit grow on thee henceforward for EVER. And presently the FIG-TREE withered away.

20 And when the DISCIPLES saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the FIG-TREE withered away!

21 JESUS answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have Faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do THIS *which is done* to the FIG-TREE, but also if ye shall say unto this MOUNTAIN, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the SEA; it shall be done.

22 And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in PRAYER, believing, ye shall receive.

§ CXXIII.

23 And when he was come into the TEMPLE, the CHIEF-PRIESTS and the ELDERS of the PEOPLE came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By What

Authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this AUTHORITY?

24 And JESUS answered and said unto them, ¶ also will ask you one Thing, which if ye tell me, ¶ in like wise will tell you by What Authority I do these things.

25 † The BAPTISM of John, whence was it? from Heaven, or of Men? And THEY reasoned † with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From Heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him?

26 But if we shall say, Of Men; we fear the PEOPLE; for all hold JOHN as a Prophet.

27 And they answered JESUS, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell ¶ you by What Authority I do these things.

28 But what think ye? A *certain* Man had † two Sons; and he came to the FIRST, and said, Son, go work To-day in my VINEYARD.

29 HE answered and said, † I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.

30 And he came to the SECOND, and said likewise. And HE answered and said, ¶ go, sir: and went not.

31 Whether of them TWAIN did the WILL of *his* FATHER? They say [unto him], The † FIRST. JESUS saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That the PUBLICANS and the HARLOTS go into the KINGDOM of GOD before you.

32 For John came unto you in the Way of Righteousness, and ye

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—25. THAT BAPTISM which was of John. 25. among themselves. 28. Two Sons. 29. ¶ go sir: and went not. And he came to the SECOND, and said likewise. And HE answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went (b). 31. LATTER See 31.

† 16. Psalms viii. 2.

believed him not: but the PUBLICANS and the HARLOTS believed him: and *ye*, when ye had seen *it*, repented not afterward, that ye might BELIEVE him.

§ CXXIV.

33 Hear Another Parable: There was a [certain] Householder, which planted a Vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a Winepress in it, and built a Tower, and let it out to Husbandmen, and went into a far country:

34 And when the TIME of the FRUIT drew near, he sent his SERVANTS to the HUSBANDMEN, that they might receive the FRUITS of it.

35 And the HUSBANDMEN took his SERVANTS, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Again, he sent Other Servants more than the FIRST: and they did unto them likewise.

37 But last of all he sent unto them his SON, saying, They will reverence my SON.

38 But when the HUSBANDMEN saw the SON, they said among themselves, This is the HEIR; come, let us kill him, and let us seize [on] his INHERITANCE.

39 And they caught him, and cast *him* out of the VINEYARD, and slew *him*.

40 When the LORD therefore of the VINEYARD cometh, what will he do unto those HUSBANDMEN?

41 They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out *his* VINEYARD unto Other Husbandmen, which shall render him the FRUITS in their SEASONS.

42 JESUS saith unto them, Did ye never read in the SCRIPTURES, "The Stone which the BUILDERS rejected, the same is become the Head of the Corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our Eyes?" †

43 Therefore say I unto you, The KINGDOM of GOD shall be taken from you, and given to a Nation bringing forth the FRUITS thereof.

44 And WHOSOEVER shall FALL on this STONE shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

§ CXXV.

45 And when the CHIEF-PRIESTS and PHARISEES had heard his PARABLES, they perceived that he spake of them.

46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the MULTITUDE, because they took him for a Prophet.

CHAPTER XXII.

1 And JESUS answered and spake unto them again by Parables, and said,

2 The KINGDOM of HEAVEN is like unto a certain King, which made a Mariage for his SON,

3 And sent forth his SERVANTS to call THEM that were BIDDEN to the WEDDING: and they would not come.

4 Again, he sent forth Other Servants, saying, Tell THEM which are BIDDEN, Behold, I have prepared my DINNER: my OXEN and *my* FATLINGS *are* killed, and all things *are* ready: come unto the MARRIAGE.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—See 33, 38.

‡ 42. Psalms cxviii. 22.

5 But **THEY** made light of *it*, and went their ways, **ONE** to *his **FARM**, **ANOTHER** to his **MERCHANDISE**:

6 And the **REMNANT** took his **SERVANTS**, and entreated *them* spitefully, and slew *them*.

7 † But when the **KING** heard *thereof*, he was wroth: and he sent forth his **ARMIES**, and destroyed those **MURDERERS**, and burned up their **CITY**.

8 Then saith he to his **SERVANTS**, The **WEDDING** is ready, but **THEY** which were **BIDDEN** were not worthy.

9 Go ye therefore into the **HIGHWAYS**, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the **MARRIAGE**.

10 So those **SERVANTS** went out into the **HIGHWAYS**, and gathered together all as many as they found, both Bad and Good: and the **WEDDING** was furnished with guests.

11 And when the **KING** came in to see the **GUESTS**, he saw there a Man which had not on a **Wedding Garment**:

12 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a **Wedding Garment**? And **HE** was speechless.

13 Then said the **KING** to the **SERVANTS**, Bind him Hand and Foot, and take him away, and cast † *him* into **OUTER DARKNESS**; there shall be **WEEPING** and **GNASHING OF TEETH**.

14 For Many are called, but Few *are* chosen.

§ CXXVI.

15 Then went the **PHARISEES**, and took Council how they might entangle him in *his* Talk.

16 And they sent out unto him their **DISCIPLES** with the **HERODIANS**, saying, Master, we know That thou art true, and teachest the **WAY** of **GOD** in Truth, neither carest thou for any *man*: for thou regardest not the Person of Men.

17 Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give **Tribute** unto **Cæsar**, or not?

18 But **JESUS** perceived their **WICKEDNESS**, and said, Why tempt ye me, *ye* Hypocrites?

19 Shew me the **TRIBUTE MONEY**. And **THEY** brought unto him a **Penny**.

20 And he saith unto them, Whose *is* this **IMAGE** and **SUPERSCRIPTION**?

21 They say [unto him], **Cæsar's**. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto **Cæsar** the **THINGS** which are **Cæsar's**; and unto **GOD** the **THINGS** that are **GOD's**.

22 When they had heard *these words*, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

§ CXXVII.

23 The Same **DAY** came to him * the † **Sadducees**, which **SAY** that there is no **Resurrection**, and asked him,

24 Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no Children, his **BROTHERS** shall marry his **WIFE**, and raise up **Seed** unto his **BROTHER**.

25 Now there were with us **Seven Brethren**: and the **FIRST**, when he had married a **Wife**, deceased, and, having no **Issue**, left his **WIFE** unto his **BROTHER**:

26 Likewise the **SECOND** also, and the **THIRD**, unto the **SEVENTH**.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—5. his OWN Farm.

23. THOSE Sadducees which SAY.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—7. And the KING was wroth. 13. him. 23. Sadducees, which say. See 21.

27 And last of all the WOMAN died also.

28 Therefore in the RESURRECTION Whose WIFE shall she be of the SEVEN? for they all had her.

29 JESUS answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the SCRIPTURES, nor the POWER of GOD.

30 For in the RESURRECTION they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the ANGELS [of GOD] in † Heaven.

31 But as touching the RESURRECTION of the DEAD, have ye not read THAT which was SPOKEN unto you by GOD, saying,

32 “I am the GOD of Abraham, and the GOD of Isaac, and the GOD of Jacob”? † † GOD is not the God of the Dead, but of the Living.

33 And when the MULTITUDE heard *this*, they were astonished at his DOCTRINE.

§ CXXVIII.

34 But when the PHARISEES had heard That he had put the SADDUCEES to silence, they were gathered together.

35 Then one of them, *which was* a Lawyer, asked *him a question*, tempting him, [and saying,]

36 Master, which *is* the great Commandment in the LAW?

37 † JESUS said unto him, “Thou shalt love the Lord thy GOD with All thy HEART, and with All thy SOUL, and with All thy MIND.” †

38 This is † the First and Great Commandment.

39 † And the Second *is* like unto it, “Thou shalt love thy NEIGHBOUR as thyself.” †

40 On These TWO Commandments † hang All the LAW and the PROPHETS.

§ CXXIX.

41 While the PHARISEES were gathered together, JESUS asked them,

42 Saying, What think ye of CHRIST? Whose Son is he? They say unto him, *The son* of DAVID.

43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in Spirit call him Lord, saying,

44 “The LORD said unto my LORD, Sit thou on my Right *hand*, till I † make thine ENEMIES thy FOOTSTOOL”? †

45 If David then call him Lord, how is he his Son?

46 And no man was able to answer him a Word, neither durst any *man* from That DAY *forth* ask him any more *questions*.

CHAPTER XXIII.

§ CXXX.

1 Then spake JESUS to the MULTITUDE, and to his DISCIPLES,

2 Saying, The SCRIBES and the PHARISEES sit in MOSES’ seat:

3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you [observe], *that* † observe and do; but do not ye after their WORKS: for they say, and do not.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—30. HEAVEN. 32 He is not the GOD (*b*). 37. And he said. 38. the GREAT and First Commandment. 39. The Second *is* likewise: “Thou. 40. hangs. 44. put thine ENEMIES underneath thy FEET. 3. do ye, and observe; but. See 30, 35, 3.

† 32. Exod. iii. 6. † 37. Deut. vi. 4, 5. † 39. Lev. xix. 18. † 44. Psa. cx. 1.

4 †For they bind heavy Burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay *them* on MEN'S SHOULDERS; but †they *themselves* will not move them with one of their FINGERS.

5 But all their WORKS they do for to be SEEN of MEN: †they make broad their PHYLACTERIES, and enlarge the BORDERS [of their GARMENTS],

6 And love the UPPERMOST-ROOMS at FEASTS, and the CHIEF-SEATS in the SYNAGOGUES.

7 And GREETINGS in the MARKETS, and to be called of MEN, Rabbi, [Rabbi.]

8 But be not *ye* called Rabbi: for one is Your †MASTER, [*even* CHRIST:] and all *ye* are Brethren.

9 And call no *man* your Father upon the EARTH: for one †is *your FATHER, which is in HEAVEN.

10 Neither be ye called Masters: for one is Your MASTER, *even* CHRIST.

11 But HE that is GREATEST among you shall be Your Servant.

12 And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.

13 [But woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites! For ye shut up the KINGDOM of HEAVEN against MEN: for *ye* neither go in *yourselves*, neither suffer ye THEM that are ENTERING to go in.]

§ CXXXI.

14 Woe unto you, Scribes and

Pharisees, Hypocrites! For ye devour WIDOWS' HOUSES, and for a Pretence make long Prayer: therefore ye shall receive the Greater Damnation.

15 Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites! For ye compass SEA and LAND to make One Proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the Child of Hell than yourselves.

16 Woe unto you, *ye* blind Guides, *which SAY, Whosoever shall swear by the TEMPLE, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the GOLD of the TEMPLE, he is a debtor!

17 Ye Fools and Blind: for whether is greater, the GOLD, or *the TEMPLE †that SANCTIFIETH the GOLD?

18 And, Whosoever shall swear by the ALTAR, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by *the GIFT that is upon it, he is guilty.

19 Ye Fools and Blind: for whether is greater, the GIFT, or *the ALTAR that SANCTIFIETH the GIFT?

20 WHOSO therefore shall SWEAR by the ALTAR, sweareth by it, and by ALL things thereon.

21 And WHOSO shall SWEAR by the TEMPLE, sweareth by it, and by HIM that DWELLETH therein.

22 And HE that shall SWEAR by HEAVEN, sweareth by the THRONE of GOD, and by HIM that SITTETH thereon.

§ CXXXII.

23 Woe unto you, Scribes and

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—9. THAT FATHER of yours which is. 16. YE which SAY.
17. THAT TEMPLE which SANCTIFIETH. 18. THAT GIFT which is. 19. THAT ALTAR which SANCTIFIETH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—4. And they. 4. they will not move them with their FINGER. 5. for they. 8. TEACHER. 9. is YOUR HEAVENLY FATHER. Neither. 17 which SANCTIFIED. See 5, 7 (b), 8, 13.

Pharisees, Hypocrites! For ye pay tithe of MINT and ANISE and CUMMIN, and have omitted the WEIGHTIER *matters* of the LAW, JUDGMENT, MERCY, and FAITH: †these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

24 Ye blind †Guides, * which STRAIN at a GNAT, and swallow a CAMEL.

§ CXXXIII.

25 Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites! For ye make clean the OUTSIDE of the CUP and of the PLATTER, but within they are full of Extortion and Excess.

26 Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first THAT *which is* WITHIN the CUP and PLATTER, that the OUTSIDE of them may be clean also.

§ CXXXIV.

27 Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites! For ye are like unto whited Sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of *Dead *men's* Bones, and of All Uncleanness.

28 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto MEN, but within ye are full of Hypocrisy and Iniquity.

§ CXXXV.

29 Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites! Because ye build the TOMBS of the PROPHETS, and garnish the SEPULCHRES of the RIGHTEOUS,

30 And say, If we had been in the DAYS of our FATHERS, we would not have been Partakers

with them in the BLOOD of the PROPHETS

31 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, That ye are the Children of THEM which KILLED the PROPHETS.

32 Fill ye up then the MEASURE of your FATHERS.

33 Ye Serpents, ye Generation of Vipers, how can ye escape the DAMNATION of HELL?

34 Wherefore, behold, I send unto you Prophets, and Wise men, and Scribes: and *some* of them ye shall kill and crucify; and *some* of them shall ye scourge in your SYNAGOGUES, and persecute *them* from City to City:

35 That upon you may come All the righteous Blood shed upon the EARTH, from the BLOOD of *RIGHTEOUS Abel unto the BLOOD of Zacharias Son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the TEMPLE and the ALTAR.

36 Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this GENERATION.

37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, THOU that KILLEST the PROPHETS, and stonest THEM which are SENT unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy CHILDREN together, even as a Hen gathereth her CHICKENS under *her* WINGS, and ye would not!

38 Behold, your HOUSE is left unto you [desolate].

39 For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, "Blessed *is* HE that COMETH in the Name of the Lord." †

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—24. YE which STRAIN.
35. Abel the RIGHTEOUS.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. but these things.
24. Guides, straining at a GNAT, and swallowing a CAMEL. See 38.

‡ 39. Psalms cxviii. 26.

27. the Bones of the Dead, and.

24. Guides, straining at a

CHAPTER XXIV.

§ CXXXVI.

1 And JESUS went out, and departed from the TEMPLE: and his DISCIPLES came to *him* for to shew him the BUILDINGS of the TEMPLE.

2 And †JESUS said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one Stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

§ CXXXVII.

3 And as he sat upon the MOUNT of OLIVES, the DISCIPLES came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the SIGN of THY coming, and of the END of the WORLD?

4 And JESUS answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

5 For many shall come in my NAME, saying, I am CHRIST; and shall deceive many.

6 And ye shall hear of Wars and Rumours of Wars: see that ye be not troubled: for [all] *these things* must come to pass, but the END is not yet.

7 For Nation shall rise against Nation, and Kingdom against Kingdom: and there shall be Famines, [and Pestilences,] and Earthquakes, in divers Places.

8 All these *are* the Beginning of Sorrows.

9 Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill

you: and ye shall be hated of All NATIONS for my NAME'S sake.

10 And then shall Many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And Many False-prophets shall rise, and shall deceive Many.

12 And because INIQUITY shall ABOUND, the LOVE of MANY shall wax cold.

13 But HE that shall ENDURE unto the End, the same shall be saved.

14 And This GOSPEL of the KINGDOM shall be preached in All the WORLD for a Witness unto All NATIONS; and then shall the END come.

15 When ye therefore shall see *the ABOMINATION of DESOLATION, SPOKEN-OF by Daniel the PROPHET, stand in the holy Place, —WHOSO READETH, let him understand:—

16 Then let THEM which be in JUDEA flee †into the MOUNTAINS:

17 Let HIM which is on the HOUSETOP not come down to take any thing out of his HOUSE:

18 Neither let HIM which is in the FIELD return back to take his †CLOTHES.

19 And woe unto THEM that ARE-WITH-CHILD, and to THEM that GIVE-SUCK in Those DAYS!

20 But pray ye that your FLIGHT be not in the Winter, neither on the Sabbath day:

21 For then shall be great Tribulation, such as was not since

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—15. THAT ABOMINATION of DESOLATION which is SPOKEN-OF by Daniel the PROPHET standing in.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—2. HE answered and said. 16. unto. 18. CLOAK. See 7.

the Beginning of the World to THIS-TIME, no, nor ever shall be.

22 And except those DAYS should be shortened, there should No Flesh be saved: but for the ELECT'S sake those DAYS shall be shortened.

23 Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here *is* CHRIST, or there; believe *it* not.

24 For there shall arise False-Christ, and False-prophets, and shall shew great Signs and Wonders; insomuch that, if *it were* possible, they shall deceive the very ELECT.

25 Behold, I have told you before.

26 Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the DESERT; go not forth: behold, *he is* in the SECRET-CHAMBERS; believe *it* not.

27 For as the LIGHTNING cometh out of the East, and shineth even unto the West; so shall also the COMING of the SON of MAN be.

28 [For] wheresoever the CARCASE is, there will the EAGLES be gathered together.

29 Immediately after the TRIBULATION of those DAYS shall the SUN be darkened, and the MOON shall not give her LIGHT, and the STARS shall fall from HEAVEN, and the POWERS of the HEAVENS shall be shaken:

30 And then shall appear the SIGN of the SON of MAN in †HEAVEN: and then shall All the TRIBES of the EARTH mourn, and they shall see the SON of MAN coming in the CLOUDS of HEAVEN with Power and great Glory.

31 And he shall send his ANGELS with a great Sound of a Trumpet, and they shall gather together his ELECT from the FOUR Winds, from one End of Heaven to the other.

32 Now learn a PARABLE of the FIG-TREE; When his BRANCH is yet tender, and putteth forth LEAVES, ye know That SUMMER is nigh:

33 So likewise *ye*, when ye shall see All these things, know That it is near, *even* at the Doors.

34 Verily I say unto you, †This GENERATION shall not pass, till All these things be fulfilled.

35 HEAVEN and EARTH shall pass away, but my WORDS shall not pass away.

§ CXXXVIII.

36 But of that DAY and †HOUR knoweth no *man*, no, not the ANGELS of HEAVEN, †but my FATHER only.

37 †But as the DAYS of NOE *were*, so shall [also] the COMING of the SON of MAN be.

38 For as †in the DAYS that were before the FLOOD they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the Day that Noe entered into the ARK,

39 And knew not until the FLOOD came, and took them all away; so shall [also] the COMING of the SON of MAN be.

40 Then shall two be in the FIELD; the †ONE shall be taken, and the †OTHER left.

41 Two *women shall be* grinding at the MILL; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—30. Heaven. 34. That this. 36. Hour. 36. neither the SON, but the FATHER only. 37. For as. 38. in those DAYS, THOSE that were. 40. one. 40. other. See 28, 37, 39.

42 Watch therefore: For ye know not What † Hour your LORD doth come.

43 But know this, That if the GOODMAN-OF-THE-HOUSE had known in What Watch the THIEF would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his HOUSE to be broken up.

44 Therefore be ye also ready: For in Such an Hour as ye think not the SON of MAN cometh.

§ CXXXIX.

45 Who then is a FAITHFUL and wise Servant, whom his LORD hath made ruler over his HOUSEHOLD, to GIVE them MEAT in due Season?

46 Blessed is that SERVANT, whom his LORD when he cometh shall find so doing.

47 Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over All his GOODS.

48 But and if that EVIL Servant shall say in his HEART, My LORD delayeth [his coming];

49 And shall begin to smite † his FELLOWSERVANTS, and † to eat and drink with the DRUNKEN;

50 The LORD of that SERVANT shall come in a Day when he looketh not for *him*, and in an Hour that he is not aware of,

51 And shall cut him asunder, and appoint *him* his PORTION with the HYPOCRITES: there shall be WEEPING and GNASHING of TEETH.

CHAPTER XXV.

§ CXL.

1 Then shall the KINGDOM of

HEAVEN be likened unto Ten Virgins, which took their LAMPS, and went forth to meet the BRIDEGROOM.

2 And five of them were † wise, and FIVE were foolish.

3 † THEY that were FOOLISH took their LAMPS, and took no Oil with them:

4 But the WISE took Oil in [their] VESSELS with † their LAMPS.

5 While the BRIDEGROOM tarried, they all slumbered and slept.

6 And at Midnight there was a Cry made, Behold, the BRIDEGROOM [cometh]; go ye out † to meet him.

7 Then All those VIRGINS arose, and trimmed their LAMPS.

8 And the FOOLISH said unto the WISE, Give us of your OIL; For our LAMPS are gone out.

9 But the WISE answered, saying, *Not so*; lest there be not enough for us and you: [but] go ye rather to THEM that SELL, and buy for yourselves.

10 And while they went to buy, the BRIDEGROOM came; and THEY that were READY went in with him to the MARRIAGE: and the DOOR was shut.

11 Afterward came also the OTHER Virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.

12 But HE answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not.

13 Watch therefore, for ye know neither the DAY nor the HOUR [wherein the SON of MAN cometh].

14 For *the kingdom of heaven* is as a Man travelling into a

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—42. Day. eat. 2. foolish, and five were wise (*b*). 6. unto the Meeting. See 48, 4, 6, 9, 13.

49. his FELLOWSERVANTS.

49. should

3. For the FOOLISH.

4. their own.

far country, *who* called his OWN Servants, and delivered unto them his GOODS.

15 And unto ONE he gave Five Talents, to ANOTHER two, and to ANOTHER one; to every man according to his SEVERAL Ability; and straightway took his journey.

16 [Then] HE that had RECEIVED the FIVE Talents went and traded with the same, and †made *them* Other Five [Talents].

17 And likewise HE that *had received* TWO, [he also] gained Other two.

18 But HE that had RECEIVED ONE went and digged [in] the EARTH, and hid his LORD'S MONEY.

19 After a long Time the LORD of those SERVANTS cometh, and reckoneth with them.

20 And so HE that had RECEIVED FIVE Talents came and brought Other Five Talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me Five Talents: behold, I have gained [beside them] Five Talents more.

21 His LORD said unto him, Well done, *thou* good and faithful Servant: thou hast been faithful over a Few things, I will make thee ruler over Many things: enter thou into the JOY of thy LORD.

22 HE also that had [RECEIVED] TWO Talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me Two Talents: behold, I have gained Two Other Talents [beside them].

23 His LORD said unto him, Well done, good and faithful Servant; thou hast been faithful over a Few things, I will make

thee ruler over Many things: enter thou into the JOY of thy LORD.

24 Then HE which had RECEIVED the ONE Talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee That thou art an Hard Man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy TALENT in the EARTH: lo, *there* thou hast *that is* THINE.

26 His LORD answered and said unto him, *Thou* Wicked and slothful Servant, thou knewest That I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed:

27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my MONEY to the EXCHANGERS, and *then* at my coming I should have received mine OWN with Usury.

28 Take therefore the TALENT from him, and give *it* unto HIM which HATH TEN Talents.

29 For unto EVERY-ONE that HATH shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from HIM that HATH not shall be taken away even that which he hath.

30 And cast ye the UNPROFITABLE Servant into OUTER DARKNESS: there shall be WEEPING and GNASHING of TEETH.

§ CXXI.

31 When the SON of MAN shall come in his GLORY, and All †the HOLY Angels with him, then shall he sit upon the Throne of his Glory:

32 And before him shall be gathered All NATIONS: and he shall separate them one from another, as a SHEPHERD divideth *his* SHEEP from the GOATS:

33 And he shall set the SHEEP

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. gained Other five. (twice), 17, 18, 20, 22 (twice).

31. the ANGELS. See 16

on his Right *hand*, but the GOATS on the Left.

34 Then shall the KING say unto THEM on his Right *hand*, Come, ye BLESSED of my FATHER, inherit the KINGDOM prepared for you from the Foundation of the World:

35 For I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a Stranger, and ye took me in:

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in Prison, and ye came unto me.

37 Then shall the RIGHTEOUS answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink?

38 When saw we thee a Stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee?

39 Or when saw we thee sick, or in Prison, and came unto thee?

40 And the KING shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done *it* unto one of the LEAST of These my BRETHREN, ye have done *it* unto me.

§ CXLII.

41 Then shall he say also unto THEM on the Left *hand*, Depart from me, ye CURSED, into *EVERLASTING FIRE, PREPARED for the DEVIL and his ANGELS:

42 For I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink:

43 I was a Stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in Prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall **they** also answer [him], saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, or athirst, or a Stranger, or naked, or sick, or in Prison, and did not minister unto thee?

45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did *it* not to one of the LEAST of These, ye did *it* not to me.

46 And these shall go away into everlasting Punishment: but the RIGHTEOUS into Life eternal.

CHAPTER XXVI.

§ CXLIII.

1 And it came to pass, when JESUS had finished All these SAYINGS, he said unto his DISCIPLES,

2 Ye know That after Two Days is *the feast of* the PASSOVER, and the SON of MAN is betrayed to be CRUCIFIED.

3 Then assembled together the CHIEF-PRIESTS, and the SCRIBES, and the ELDERS of the PEOPLE, unto the PALACE of *the HIGH-PRIEST, who was CALLED Caiaphas,

4 And consulted that they might take JESUS by Subtilty and kill *him*.

5 But they said, Not on the FEAST *day*, lest there be an Up-roar among the PEOPLE.

§ CXLIV.

6 Now when JESUS was in Bethany, in the House of Simon the LEPER,

7 There came unto him a Woman having an Alabaster-box of very precious Ointment, and

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—41. THAT EVERLASTING FIRE which is PREPARED. 3. THAT HIGH-PRIEST who.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—See 44.

poured it on his HEAD, as he sat at meat.

8 But when †his DISCIPLES saw *it*, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose *is* this WASTE?

9 For This [OINTMENT] might have been sold for much, and given to the POOR.

10 When JESUS understood *it*, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the WOMAN? for she hath wrought a good Work upon me.

11 For ye have the POOR always with you; but Me ye have not always.

12 For in that she hath poured this OINTMENT on my BODY, SHE did *it* for my BURIAL.

13 Verily I say unto you, Where-soever this GOSPEL shall be preached in the Whole WORLD, *there* shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a Memorial of her.

§ CXLV.

14 Then *one of the TWELVE, CALLED Judas Iscariot, went unto the CHIEF-PRIESTS,

15 And said *unto them*, What will ye give me, and £ will deliver him unto you? And THEY covenanted with him for Thirty Pieces-of-silver.

16 And from that time he sought Opportunity to betray him.

§ CXLVI.

17 Now the FIRST *day* of the *feast* of UNLEAVENED-BREAD the DISCIPLES came to JESUS, saying [unto him], Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the PASSOVER?

18 And HE said, Go into the CITY to SUCH a man, and say unto him, The MASTER saith, My TIME is at hand; I will keep the PASS-OVER at thy house with my DISCIPLES.

19 And the DISCIPLES did as JESUS had appointed them; and they made ready the PASS-OVER.

§ CXLVII.

20 Now when the Even was come, he sat down with the TWELVE.

21 And as they did eat, he said, Verily I say unto you, That one of you shall betray me.

22 And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one [of them] to say unto him, Lord, is it £?

23 And HE answered and said, HE that DIPPETH *his* HAND with me in the DISH, the same shall betray me.

24 The SON of MAN goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that MAN by whom the SON of MAN is betrayed! it had been good for that MAN if he had not been born.

25 Then *Judas, which BETRAYED him, answered and said, Master, is it £? He said unto him, **Thou** hast said.

§ CXLVIII.

26 And as they were eating, JESUS took †BREAD, and blessed *it*, and brake *it*, and gave *it* to the DISCIPLES, and said, Take, eat; this is my BODY.

27 And he took the †CUP, and gave thanks, and gave *it* to them, saying, Drink *ye all of it;

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14. THAT one of the TWELVE who was CALLED. 25. THAT Judas which. 27. all ye of it.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. the DISCIPLES. 26. Bread. 27. Cup See 9, 17, 22.

28 For †this is *my BLOOD of the NEW Testament, which is SHED for Many for the Remission of Sins.

29 But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of This FRUIT of the VINE, until that DAY when I drink it new with you in my FATHER'S KINGDOM.

30 And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the MOUNT of OLIVES.

§ CXLIX.

31 Then saith JESUS unto them, All *ye* shall be offended because of me this NIGHT: for it is written, "I will smite the SHEPHERD, and the SHEEP of the FLOCK shall be scattered abroad." ‡

32 But after I am RISEN-AGAIN, I will go before you into GALILEE.

33 PETER answered and said unto him, Though all *men* shall be offended because of thee, *yet* will I never be offended.

34 JESUS said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That This NIGHT, before the Cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.

35 PETER said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny Thee. Likewise also said All the DISCIPLES.

36 Then cometh JESUS with them unto a Place called Gethsemane, and saith unto the DISCIPLES, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder.

37 And he took with him PETER and the TWO Sons of Zebedee,

and began to be sorrowful and very heavy.

38 Then saith he unto them, My SOUL is exceeding sorrowful, even unto Death: tarry ye here, and watch with me.

39 And he went a little farther, and fell on his Face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this CUP pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as *thou wilt*.

40 And he cometh unto the DISCIPLES, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto PETER, What, could ye not watch with me One Hour?

41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into Temptation: the SPIRIT indeed *is* willing, but the FLESH *is* weak.

§ CL.

42 He went away again the second time, and prayed, [saying,] O my Father, if This [CUP] may not pass away [from me], except I drink it, thy WILL be done.

43 And he came and found them asleep again: for Their EYES were heavy.

44 And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying †the SAME Words.

45 Then cometh he to †his DISCIPLES, and saith unto them, Sleep on NOW, and take *your* rest: †behold, the HOUR is at hand, and the SON of MAN is betrayed into the Hands of Sinners.

46 Rise, let us be going: behold,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—28. THAT BLOOD of mine which is of the NEW Testament, THAT which is SHED.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—28. this is my BLOOD of the TESTAMENT, THAT which is SHED. 44. again the SAME Words. 45. the DISCIPLES. 45. for behold. See 42 (thrice).

‡ 31. Zechariah xiii. 7.

HE is at hand that doth BETRAY me.

§ CLI.

47 And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the TWELVE, came, and with him a great Multitude with Swords and Staves, from the CHIEF-PRIESTS and Elders of the PEOPLE.

48 Now HE that BETRAYED him gave them a Sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he: hold him fast.

49 And forthwith he came to JESUS, and said, Hail, Master; and kissed him.

50 And JESUS said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and laid HANDS on JESUS, and took him.

51 And, behold, one of THEM which were with † Jesus stretched out *his* HAND, and drew his SWORD, and struck a SERVANT of the HIGH-PRIEST'S, and smote off His EAR.

52 Then said JESUS unto him, Put up again Thy SWORD into his PLACE: for ALL THEY that TAKE the Sword shall perish with the Sword.

53 Thinkest thou That I cannot [now] pray to my FATHER, and he shall presently give me more than Twelve Legions of Angels?

54 But how then shall the SCRIPTURES be fulfilled, That thus it must be?

§ CLII.

55 In That *same* HOUR said JESUS to the MULTITUDES, Are ye come out as against a Thief with Swords and Staves, for to take me? I sat daily [with you] teaching in the TEMPLE, and ye laid no hold on me.

56 But all this was done, that the SCRIPTURES of the PROPHETS might be fulfilled. Then all † the DISCIPLES forsook him, and fled.

57 And THEY that had LAID-HOLD on JESUS led *him* away to Caiaphas the HIGH-PRIEST, where the SCRIBES and the ELDERS were assembled.

58 But PETER followed him afar off unto the HIGH-PRIEST'S PALACE, and went in, and sat with the SERVANTS, to see the END.

§ CLIII.

59 Now the CHIEF-PRIESTS, [and ELDERS], and all the COUNCIL, sought False-witness against JESUS, to put him to death;

60 But found none: [yea,] though Many False-witnesses came, [yet found they none]. At the last came Two [False-witnesses],

61 And said, This *fellow* said, I am able to destroy the TEMPLE of GOD, and to build it in Three Days.

62 And the HIGH-PRIEST arose, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing? what *is it which* these witness against thee?

63 But JESUS held his peace. And the HIGH-PRIEST [answered and] said unto him, I adjure thee by the LIVING GOD, that thou tell us whether *thou* be the CHRIST, the SON of GOD.

64 JESUS saith unto him, *Thou* hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the SON of MAN sitting on the Right *hand* of POWER, and coming in the CLOUDS of HEAVEN.

65 Then the HIGH-PRIEST rent his CLOTHES, saying, He hath

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.— 51. him stretched out.
See 53, 55, 59, 60 (thrice), 63.

56. his DISCIPLES forsook.

spoken blasphemy; what further Need have we of Witnesses? behold, now ye have heard † his **BLASPHEMY**.

66 What think ye? **THEY** answered and said, He is guilty of Death.

67 Then did they spit in his **FACE** and buffeted him; and **OTHERS** smote *him* with the palms of their hands,

68 Saying, Prophecy unto us, thou Christ, Who is **HE** that **SMOTE** thee?

§ CLIV.

69 Now **PETER** sat without in the **PALACE**: and a Damsel came unto him, saying, **Thou** also wast with Jesus of **GALILEE**.

70 But **HE** denied before *them* all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.

71 And when he was gone out into the **PORCH**, another *maid* saw him, and said unto **THEM** that were there, This *fellow* was also with Jesus of **NAZARETH**.

72 And again he denied with an Oath, I do not know the **MAN**.

73 And after a while came unto *him* **THEY** that **STOOD-BY**, and said to **PETER**, Surely **thou** also art *one* of them; for thy **SPEECH** bewrayeth Thee.

74 Then began he to curse and to swear, *saying*, I know not the **MAN**. And immediately the Cock crew.

75 And **PETER** remembered the **WORD** of **JESUS**, which said [unto him], Before the Cock crew, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAPTER XXVII.

§ CLV.

1 When the Morning was come, All the **CHIEF-PRIESTS** and **ELDERS** of the **PEOPLE** took Counsel against **JESUS** to put him to death:

2 And when they had bound him, they led *him* away, and delivered †him to [**Pontius**] **Pilate** the **GOVERNOR**.

§ CLVI.

3 Then ***Judas**, which had **BETRAYED** him, when he saw That he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the **THIRTY** Pieces-of-silver to the **CHIEF-PRIESTS** and **ELDERS**,

4 Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent Blood. And **THEY** said, What is *that* to us? see **thou** to *that*.

5 And he cast down the **PIECES-OF-SILVER** in the **TEMPLE**, and departed, and went and hanged himself.

6 And the **CHIEF-PRIESTS** took the **SILVER-PIECES**, and said, It is not lawful for to put them into the **TREASURY**, because it is the Price of Blood.

7 And they took Counsel, and bought with them the **POTTER'S FIELD**, to bury **STRANGERS** in.

8 Wherefore that **FIELD** was called, The Field of Blood, unto **THIS-DAY**.

9 Then was fulfilled **THAT** which was **SPOKEN** by **Jeremy** the **PROPHET**, saying, "And they took the **THIRTY** Pieces-of-silver, the **PRICE** of **HIM** that was **VALUED**,

* **EMPHATIC TEXT.**—3, THAT Judas which.

† **VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.**—65. the **BLASPHEMY**. 2. *him*. See 75, 2.

whom they of the Children of Israel did value;

10 And gave them for the POTTER'S FIELD, as the Lord appointed me." †

§ CLVII.

11 And JESUS stood before the GOVERNOR: and the GOVERNOR asked him, saying, Art *thou* the KING of the JEWS? and JESUS said unto him, *Thou* sayest.

12 And when he was ACCUSED of the CHIEF-PRIESTS and ELDERS, he answered nothing.

13 Then said PILATE unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against Thee?

14 And he answered him to Never a Word; insomuch that the GOVERNOR marvelled greatly.

§ CLVIII.

15 Now at *that* Feast the GOVERNOR was wont to release unto the PEOPLE a Prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable Prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered together, PILATE said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or *Jesus which is CALLED Christ?

18 For he knew That for Envy they had delivered him.

19 When he was set down on the JUDGMENT-SEAT, his WIFE sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that JUST man: for I have suffered many things this-day in a Dream because of him.

20 But the CHIEF-PRIESTS and ELDERS persuaded the MULTI-

TUDE that they should ask BARABBAS, and destroy JESUS.

21 The GOVERNOR answered and said unto them, Whether of the TWAIN will ye that I release unto you? THEY said, † Barabbas.

22 PILATE saith unto them, What shall I do then with *Jesus which is CALLED Christ? They all say [unto him], Let him be crucified.

23 And † the GOVERNOR said, Why, What Evil hath he done? But THEY cried out the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

§ CLIX.

24 When PILATE saw That he could prevail nothing, but *that* rather a Tumult was made, he took Water, and washed *his* HANDS before the MULTITUDE, saying, I am innocent of † the BLOOD of this [JUST] person: see *per to it*.

25 Then answered All the PEOPLE, and said, His BLOOD *be* on us, and on our CHILDREN.

26 Then released he BARABBAS unto them: and when he had scourged JESUS, he delivered *him* to be crucified.

§ CLX.

27 Then the SOLDIERS of the GOVERNOR took JESUS into the COMMON-HALL, and gathered unto him the Whole BAND of *soldiers*.

28 And † they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet Robe.

29 And when they had platted a Crown of Thorns, they put *it* upon his HEAD, and a Reed in his RIGHT hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, † KING of the JEWS!

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. THAT Jesus which. 22. THAT Jesus which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—21. BARABBAS. 23. HE said. 24. this BLOOD: see *per* 28. clothing him, they put on him. 29. King of the JEWS. See 22, 24.

‡ 10. Zechariah xi. 12, 13.

30 And they spit upon him, and took the REED, and smote him on the HEAD.

31 And after that they had mocked him, they took the ROBE off from him, and put his own RAIMENT on him, and led him away to crucify *him*.

32 And as they came out, they found a Man of Cyrene, Simon by Name: *him* they compelled to bear his CROSS.

33 And when they were come unto a Place called Golgotha, that is to say, a Place of a Skull,

34 They gave him † Vinegar to drink mingled with Gall: and when he had tasted *thereof* he would not drink.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his GARMENTS, casting Lots: [that IT might be fulfilled which was SPOKEN by the PROPHET, "They parted my GARMENTS among them, and upon my VESTURE did they cast Lots." †]

36 And sitting down they watched him there;

37 And set up over his HEAD his ACCUSATION written, This is Jesus the KING of the JEWS.

§ CLXI.

38 Then were there Two Thieves crucified with him, one on the Right *hand*, and another on the Left.

39 And THEY that PASSED-BY reviled him, wagging their HEADS,

40 And saying, THOU that DESTROYEST the TEMPLE, and buildest *it* in Three Days, save

thyself. If thou be the Son of † GOD, come down from the CROSS.

41 Likewise also the CHIEF-PRIESTS mocking *him*, with the SCRIBES and Elders, said,

42 He saved Others; Himself he cannot save. † If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the CROSS, and we will believe † him.

43 He trusted in GOD; let him deliver † him now, if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God.

44 *The THIEVES also, which were CRUCIFIED with him, cast the SAME in his teeth.

§ CLXII.

45 Now from the Sixth Hour there was Darkness over All the LAND unto the ninth Hour.

46 And about the NINTH Hour JESUS cried with a loud Voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken Me?

47 Some of THEM that STOOD there, when they heard *that*, said, This *man* calleth for Elias.

48 And straightway one of them ran, and took a Sponge, and filled *it* with Vinegar, and put *it* on a Reed, and gave him to drink.

49 The REST said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save † him.

50 JESUS, when he had cried again with a loud Voice, yielded up the GHOST.

§ CLXIII.

51 And, behold, the VEIL of

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—44. THOSE THIEVES also which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—34. Wine. 40. God. 42. Is he the King of Israel? let. 42. on him. 43. *him* 49. him. And another took a Spear, and pierced his SIDE, and there came out Blood and Water. JESUS, when. See 35.

‡ 35. Psalms xxii. 18.

the TEMPLE was rent in Twain from the top to the bottom; and the EARTH did quake, and the ROCKS rent;

52 And the GRAVES were opened; and Many Bodies of the SAINTS which SLEPT arose,

53 And came out of the GRAVES after his RESURRECTION, and went into the HOLY City, and appeared unto Many.

(§ CLXIV.)

54 Now when the CENTURION, and THEY that were with him WATCHING JESUS, saw the EARTHQUAKE, and *those* THINGS that were DONE, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.

55 And many Women were there beholding afar off, which followed JESUS from GALILEE, ministering unto him:

56 Among which was Mary MAGDALENE, and Mary the MOTHER of JAMES and Joses, and the MOTHER of Zebedee's CHILDREN.

§ CLXV.

57 When the Even was come, there came a rich Man of Arimathea, named Joseph, who also himself was JESUS' disciple:

58 *He* went to PILATE, and begged the BODY of JESUS. Then PILATE commanded †the BODY to be delivered.

59 And when JOSEPH had taken the BODY, he wrapped it in a clean Linen-cloth,

60 And laid it in his own NEW Tomb, which he had hewn out in the ROCK: and he rolled a great Stone to the DOOR of the SEPULCHRE, and departed.

61 And there was Mary MAGDALENE, and the OTHER Mary, sitting over against the SEPULCHRE.

§ CLXVI.

62 Now the NEXT-DAY, that followed *the day of* the PREPARATION, the CHIEF-PRIESTS and PHARISEES came together unto Pilate,

63 Saying, Sir, we remember That ~~that~~ DECEIVER said, while he was yet alive, After Three Days I will rise again.

64 Command therefore that the SEPULCHRE be made sure until the THIRD Day, lest †his DISCIPLES come [by Night,] and steal him away, and say unto the PEOPLE, He is risen from the DEAD: so the LAST Error shall be worse than the FIRST.

65 PILATE said unto them, Ye have a Watch: go your way, make *it* as sure as ye can.

66 So THEY went, and made the SEPULCHRE sure, sealing the STONE, and setting a WATCH.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

§ CLXVII.

1 In the End of the Sabbath, as it BEGAN-TO-DAWN toward the first *day* of the Week, came Mary MAGDALENE and the OTHER Mary to see the SEPULCHRE.

2 And, behold, there was a great Earthquake: for the Angel of the Lord descended from Heaven, and came and rolled back the STONE, [from the DOOR,] and sat upon it.

3 His COUNTENANCE was like Lightning, and his RAIMENT white as Snow:

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. it to be delivered. 64. the DISCIPLES. See 64, 2.

4 And for FEAR of him the KEEPERS did shake, and became as Dead *men*.

5 And the ANGEL answered and said unto the WOMEN, Fear not ꝑꝛ: for I know That ye seek *Jesus, which was CRUCIFIED.

6 He is not here: for he is risen, as he said. Come, see the PLACE where †the LORD lay.

7 And go quickly, and tell his DISCIPLES That he is risen from the DEAD; and, behold, he goeth before you into GALILEE; there shall ye see Him: lo, I have told you.

§ CLXVIII.

8 And they departed quickly from the SEPULCHRE with Fear and great Joy; and did run to bring his DISCIPLES word.

9 And [as they went to tell his DISCIPLES], behold, JESUS met them, saying, All hail. And THEY came and held him by the FEET, and worshipped him.

10 Then said JESUS unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my BRETHREN that they go into GALILEE, and there shall they see Me.

§ CLXIX.

11 Now when they were going, behold, some of the WATCH came into the CITY, and shewed unto the CHIEF-PRIESTS. All the THINGS that were DONE.

12 And when they were assembled with the ELDERS, and had taken Counsel, they gave large Money unto the SOLDIERS,

13 Saying, Say ye, His DISCIPLES came by Night, and stole him *away* while we slept.

14 And if this come to the GOVERNOR'S ears, ~~We~~ will persuade †him, and secure You.

15 So THEY took the MONEY, and did as they were taught: and this SAYING is commonly reported among the Jews until †THIS-DAY.

§ CLXX.

16 Then the ELEVEN Disciples went away into GALILEE, into a MOUNTAIN where JESUS had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped †him: but SOME doubted.

18 And JESUS came and spake unto them, saying, All Power is given unto me in Heaven and in Earth.

19 Go ye therefore, and teach All NATIONS, baptizing them in the NAME of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY Ghost:

20 Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, ~~I~~ am with you ALWAYS, *even* unto the END of the WORLD. [Amen.] †

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—5. THAT Jesus which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—6. he lay. 14. *him*. 15. THIS Day. 17. *him*.
See 9, 20. 20. *Subscription*: ACCORDING TO MATTHEW.

† THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. MARK.

CHAPTER I.

SECTION I.

1 The Beginning of the GOSPEL of Jesus Christ, the Son of †GOD;

2 As it is written in †the PROPHETS, “Behold, †I send my MESSENGER before thy Face, which shall prepare thy WAY [before thee].” †

3 “The Voice of one crying in the WILDERNESS, Prepare ye the WAY of the Lord, make his PATHS straight.” †

4 John did baptize in the WILDERNESS, and preach the Baptism of Repentance for the Remission of Sins.

5 And there went out unto him All the LAND of JUDÆA, and †THEY of Jerusalem, and were [all] baptized of him in the RIVER of JORDAN, confessing their SINS.

6 And John was clothed with Camel’s Hair, and with a Girdle of a Skin about his LOINS; and he did eat Locusts and wild Honey;

7 And preached, saying, There cometh ONE MIGHTIER than I after [me], the LATCHET of whose SHOES I am not worthy to stoop down and unloose.

8 I [indeed] have baptized you

with Water: but he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost.

§ II.

9 [And] it came to pass in Those DAYS, that Jesus came from Nazareth of GALILEE, and was baptized of John in JORDAN.

10 And straightway coming up out of the WATER, he saw the HEAVENS opened, and the SPIRIT like a Dove descending upon him:

11 And there came a Voice from HEAVEN, saying, Thou art my BELOVED SON, in †whom I am well pleased.

§ III.

12 And immediately the SPIRIT driveth Him into the WILDERNESS.

13 And he was [there] in the WILDERNESS forty Days, tempted of SATAN; and was with the WILD-BEASTS; and the ANGELS ministered unto him.

§ IV.

14 †Now after that JOHN was PUT-IN-PRISON, JESUS came into GALILEE, preaching the GOSPEL [of the KINGDOM] of GOD,

15 And saying, The TIME is fulfilled, and the KINGDOM of GOD is at hand: repent ye, and believe the GOSPEL.

16 †Now as he walked by the SEA of GALILEE, he saw Simon

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title:* ACCORDING TO MARK. 1. God. 2. ISAIAH the PROPHET. 2. I send. 5. all THEY. 11. thee I am. 14. And. 16. And as he passed along by. See 2, 5, 7, 8, 9, 13, 14.

‡ 2. Mal. iii. 1. † 3. Isaiah xl. 3.

and Andrew †his BROTHER casting a Net into the SEA: for they were Fishers.

17 And JESUS said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become Fishers of Men.

18 And straightway they forsook †their NETS, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little farther [thence], he saw *James the son of ZEBEDEE, and John his BROTHER, who also were in the SHIP mending their NETS.

20 And straightway he called them: and they left their FATHER Zebedee in the SHIP with the HIRED-SERVANTS, and went after him.

§ v.

21 And they went into Capernaum; and straightway on the SABBATH day he entered into the SYNAGOGUE, and taught.

22 And they were astonished at his DOCTRINE: for he taught them as one that had Authority, and not as the SCRIBES.

23 And there was in their SYNAGOGUE a Man with an unclean Spirit; and he cried out,

24 Saying, [Let us alone;] What have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the HOLY-ONE of GOD.

25 And JESUS rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And when the UNCLEAN SPIRIT had torn him, and cried

with a loud Voice, he came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned †among themselves, saying, What thing is this? †what NEW DOCTRINE is this? For with Authority commandeth he even the UNCLEAN SPIRITS, and they do obey him.

28 And immediately his FAME spread abroad †throughout All the REGION round about GALILEE.

§ VI.

29 And forthwith, when †they were come out of the SYNAGOGUE, †they entered into the HOUSE of Simon and Andrew, with James and John.

30 But Simon's WIFE'S-MOTHER lay sick of a fever, and anon they tell him of her.

31 And he came and took †her by the HAND, and lifted her up; and [immediately] the FEVER left her, and she ministered unto them.

§ VII.

32 And at Even, when the SUN did set, they brought unto him ALL that were DISEASED, and THEM that were POSSESSED-WITH-DEVILS.

33 And all the CITY was gathered together at the DOOR.

34 And he healed Many that were sick of Divers Diseases, and cast out many Devils; and suffered not the DEVILS to speak, Because they knew †him.

35 And in the Morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, [and departed] into a Solitary Place, and there prayed.

36 And †SIMON and THEY that

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—19. THAT James who is the son.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. the BROTHER of Simon casting. 18. the NETS. 27. with themselves. 27. It is a new Doctrine! With Authority. 28. everywhere throughout. 29. he was come. 29. he went into. 31. her HAND. 34. him to be the Christ. 36. Simon. See 19, 24, 31, 35.

were with him followed after him.

37 And †when they had found him, they said unto him, All *men* seek for thee.

§ VIII.

38 And he said unto them, Let us go †into the NEXT Towns, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth.

39 And he †preached in their SYNAGOGUES throughout All GALILEE, and cast out DEVILS.

40 And there came a Leper to him, beseeching him, [and kneeling down to him, and] saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make Me clean.

41 And †JESUS, moved with compassion, put forth †*his* HAND, and touched †him, and saith unto him, I will; be thou clean.

42 And [as soon as he had spoken], immediately the LEPROSY departed from him, and he was cleansed.

43 And he straitly charged him, and forthwith sent him away;

44 And saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but go thy way, shew Thyself to the PRIEST, and offer for thy CLEANSING those things which Moses commanded, for a Testimony unto them.

45 But HE went out, and began to publish *it* much, and to blaze abroad the MATTER, insomuch that *Jesus* could no more openly enter into the City, but was without in Desert Places: and they came to him from every quarter.

CHAPTER II.

§ IX.

1 And again he entered into Capernaum after *some* Days; and it was noised That he was in the House.

2 And [straightway] Many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive *them*, no, not SO-MUCH as about the DOOR: and he preached the WORD unto them.

3 And they come †unto him, bringing one sick of the palsy, which was borne of Four.

4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for the PRESS, they uncovered the ROOF where he was: and when they had broken *it* up, they let down the BED wherein the SICK-OF-THE-PALSY lay.

5 When JESUS saw their FAITH, he said unto the SICK-OF-THE-PALSY, Son, thy SINS †be forgiven [thee].

6 But there were certain of the SCRIBES sitting there, and reasoning in their HEARTS.

7 †Why doth this *man* thus speak Blasphemies; Who can forgive Sins but GOD only?

8 And immediately when JESUS perceived in his SPIRIT That they [so] reasoned within themselves, he †said unto them, Why reason ye these things in your HEARTS?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the SICK-OF-THE-PALSY, †*Thy* SINS be forgiven [thee]; or to say, Arise, and take up thy BED, and walk?

+ VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—37. they found him; and they say unto him. 38. elsewhere, into. 39. went and preached unto them in. 41. he, moved. 41. his HAND. 41 *him*. 3. bringing unto him one sick. 5. are forgiven. 7. *How is it* That this man thus speaketh? He blasphemeth! Who can. 8. saith unto. 9 Thy SINS are forgiven. See 40, 42, 2, 5, 8, 9.

10 But that ye may know That the SON of MAN hath Power on EARTH to forgive Sins—he saith to the SICK-OF-THE-PALSY,—

11 I say unto thee, Arise, [and] take up thy BED, and go thy way into thine HOUSE.

12 And immediately he arose, took up the BED, and went forth before them all; insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified GOD, † saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

§ X.

13 And he went forth again by the SEA-SIDE; and All the MULTITUDE resorted unto him, and he taught them.

14 And as he passed by, he saw *Levi the son of ALPHEUS sitting at the RECEIPT-OF-CUSTOM, and said unto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

§ XI.

15 And it came to pass, that, as *Jesus* SAT-AT-MEAT in his HOUSE, Many Publicans and Sinners sat also together with JESUS and his DISCIPLES: for there were Many, and they followed him.

16 And when the SCRIBES † and PHARISEES saw him eat with PUBLICANS and Sinners, they said unto his DISCIPLES, [How is it] That he eateth [and drinketh] with PUBLICANS and Sinners!

17 When JESUS heard *it*, he saith unto them, THEY that are WHOLE have no Need of the Physician, but THEY that are

SICK: I came not to call the Righteous, but Sinners [to Repentance].

§ XII.

18 And the DISCIPLES of John † and *of the PHARISEES used to fast: and they come and say unto him, Why do the DISCIPLES of John † and *of the PHARISEES fast, but THY Disciples fast not?

19 And JESUS said unto them, Can the CHILDREN of the BRIDE-CHAMBER fast, while the BRIDE-GROOM is with them? as long as they have the BRIDEGROOM with them, they cannot fast.

20 But the Days will come, when the BRIDEGROOM shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in † Those DAYS.

21 No man [also] seweth a Piece of new Cloth on an old Garment: else the NEW PIECE that filled it up † taketh away from the OLD, and the Rent is made worse.

22 And no man putteth new Wine into old Bottles: else the [NEW] WINE † doth burst the BOTTLES, and the WINE is spilled, and the BOTTLES will be marred: but new Wine must be put into new Bottles.

§ XIII.

23 And it came to pass, that he † went through the CORN-FIELDS on the SABBATH day; and his DISCIPLES began, as they † went, to pluck the EARS-OF-CORN.

24 And the PHARISEES said

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14. THAT Levi who is the son. 18. THEY of the PHARISEES.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—12. saying. 16. of the PHARISEES saw him eat. 18. and the PHARISEES. 18. and the DISCIPLES of the PHARISEES fast, but THINE fast not? 20. That DAY. 21. of itself taketh away from. 22. will burst the BOTTLES, and the WINE will be destroyed, and the BOTTLES: but new Wine is put into new Bottles. 23. was passing through. 23. made their way, to pluck. See 11, 16 (twice), 17, 21, 22.

unto him, Behold, why do they on the SABBATH day that which is not lawful?

25 And † **he** said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had Need, and was an hungered, **he**, and **THEY** that were with him?

26 [How] he went into the HOUSE of GOD in the days of Abiathar the HIGH-PRIEST, and did eat the SHEWBREAD, which is not lawful to eat but for the PRIESTS, and gave also to **THEM** which **WERE** with him?

27 And he said unto them, The SABBATH was made for **MAN**, and not **MAN** for the SABBATH:

28 Therefore the SON of **MAN** is Lord also of the SABBATH.

CHAPTER III.

§ XIV.

1 And he entered again into the SYNAGOGUE; and there was a Man there which had a Withered HAND.

2 And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the SABBATH day; that they might accuse him.

3 And he saith unto * the **MAN** which **HAD** the Withered **HAND**, Stand **FORTH**.

4 And he saith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the SABBATH days, or to do evil? to save Life, or to kill? But **THEY** held their peace.

5 And when he had looked round about on them with Anger, being grieved for the **HARDNESS** of their **HEARTS**, he saith unto

the **MAN**, Stretch forth † thine **HAND**. And he stretched *it* out: and his **HAND** was restored [whole as the **OTHER**].

6 And the **PHARISEES** went forth, and straightway † took Counsel with the **HERODIANS** against him, how they might destroy him.

§ XV.

7 But **JESUS** withdrew himself with his **DISCIPLES** to the **SEA**: and a Great Multitude from **GALILEE** followed him, and from **JUDÆA**,

8 And from Jerusalem, and from **IDUMÆA**, and *from* beyond **JORDAN**; and [**THEY**] about Tyre and Sidon, a great Multitude, when they had heard what great things † he did, came unto him.

9 And he spake to his **DISCIPLES**, that † a Small-ship should wait on him because of the **MULTITUDE**, lest they should throng him.

10 For he had healed Many; insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch Him, as many as had Plagues.

11 And **UNCLEAN SPIRITS**, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, **Thou** art the **SON** of **GOD**.

12 And he straitly charged them that they should not make Him known.

13 And he goeth up into a **MOUNTAIN**, and calleth *unto him* whom **he** would: and they came unto him.

§ XVI.

14 And he ordained † twelve, that they should be with him,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. THAT **MAN** which **HAD**.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—25. he said. 5. the **HAND**. 6. gave Counsel. 8. he doeth. 9. Small-ships. 14. twelve, whom also he named Apostles, that. See 26, 5, 8.

and [that] he might send them forth to preach,

15 And to have Power [to heal SICKNESSES, and] to cast out DEVILS:

16 †And SIMON he surnamed Peter;

17 And *James the *son* of ZEBEDEE, and John the RROTHER of JAMES; and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The Sons of Thunder:

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and *James the *son* of ALPHÆUS, and Thaddæus, and Simon the CANAANITE,

19 And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went into an House.

20 And the Multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat Bread.

21 And when his FRIENDS heard *of it*, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself.

22 And *the SCRIBES which CAME-DOWN from Jerusalem said, He hath Beelzebub, and, By the PRINCE of the DEVILS casteth he out DEVILS.

23 And he called them *unto him*, and said unto them in Parables, How can Satan cast out Satan?

24 And if a Kingdom be divided against itself, that KINGDOM cannot stand.

25 And if a House be divided against itself, that HOUSE cannot stand.

26 And if SATAN rise up against

himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 †No man can enter into a STRONG man's HOUSE, and spoil his GOODS, except he will first bind the STRONG man; and then he will spoil his HOUSE.

28 Verily I say unto you, All SINS shall be forgiven unto the SONS of MEN, and †Blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme:

29 But he that shall blaspheme against the HOLY GHOST hath NEVER Forgiveness, but is in danger of Eternal †Damnation:

30 Because they said, He hath an unclean Spirit.

31 There came then †his BRETHREN and his MOTHER, and, standing without, sent unto him, calling him.

32 And the Multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, thy MOTHER and thy BRETHREN without seek for thee.

33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my MOTHER, or my BRETHREN?

34 [And] he looked round about on THEM which SAT about him, and said, Behold my MOTHER and my BRETHREN.

35 [For] whosoever shall do the WILL of GOD, the same is my Brother, and [my] Sister, and Mother.

CHAPTER IV.

§ XVII.

1 And he began again to teach by the SEA-SIDE: and there was

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. THAT James who is the *son*. 18. THAT James who is the *son*. 22. THOSE SCRIBES which CAME-DOWN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. And he ordained TWELVE: both SIMON whom he surnamed PETER. 27. But no man. 28. BLASPHEMIES. 29. Transgression. 31. his MOTHER and his BRETHREN, and. See 14, 15, 34, 35 (twice).

gathered unto him a †great Multitude, so that he entered into a SHIP, and sat in the SEA; and the Whole MULTITUDE was by the SEA on the LAND.

2 And he taught them many things by Parables, and said unto them in his DOCTRINE,

3 Hearken; Behold, there went out a SOWER to †SOW:

4 And it came to pass, as he SOWED, some fell by the WAY-SIDE, and the FOWLS [of the AIR] came and devoured it up.

5 And some fell on STONY-GROUND, where it had not much Earth; and immediately it sprang up, because it HAD no Depth of Earth:

6 †But when the Sun was up, it was scorched; and because it HAD no Root, it withered away.

7 And some fell among THORNS, and the THORNS grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no Fruit.

8 And other fell on GOOD GROUND, and did yield Fruit that sprang up and increased; and brought forth, some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred.

9 And he said [unto them], †HE that HATH Ears to hear, let him hear.

§ XVIII.

10 And when he was alone, THEY that were about him with the TWELVE asked of him the †PARABLE.

11 And he said unto them, Unto you †it is given to know the MYSTERY of the KINGDOM of GOD: but unto THEM that are

WITHOUT, ALL *these* things are done in Parables:

12 That seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and †*their* SINS should be forgiven them.

13 And he said unto them, Know ye not this PARABLE? and how then will ye know All PARABLES?

14 The SOWER soweth the WORD.

15 And these are THEY by the WAY-SIDE, where the WORD is sown; but when they have heard, SATAN cometh immediately, and taketh away *the WORD that was SOWN †in their HEARTS.

16 And these are THEY likewise which are SOWN on STONY-GROUND; who, when they have heard the WORD, immediately receive it with Gladness;

17 And have no Root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward, when Affliction or Persecution ariseth for the WORD'S sake, immediately they are offended.

18 And †these are THEY which are SOWN among THORNS; †SUCH as HEAR the WORD,

19 And the CARES of †this WORLD; and the DECEITFULNESS of RICHES, and the LUSTS of OTHER things entering in, choke the WORD, and it becometh unfruitful.

20 And †these are THEY which are SOWN on GOOD GROUND;

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—15. THAT WORD which was.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. very great. 3. sow. 6. And when the SUN was up. 9. Who hath Ears. 10. PARABLES. 11. is given the MYSTERY. 12. it should be. 15. unto them. 18. others are THEY which. 18. these are THEY which have HEARD the WORD. 19. the WORLD. 20. those are THEY. See 4, 9

† such as hear the WORD, and receive *it*, and bring forth fruit, some †thirtyfold, some sixty, and some an hundred.

21 And he said unto them, Is a CANDLE brought to be put under a BUSHEL, or under a BED? and not to be †set on a CANDLESTICK?

22 For †there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested; neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

23 If any man have Ears to hear, let him hear.

24 And he said unto them, Take heed what ye hear: with What Measure ye mete, it shall be measured to †you: [and unto YOU that HEAR shall more be given.]

25 For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath.

26 And he said, So is the KINGDOM of GOD, as if a Man should cast SEED into the GROUND;

27 And should sleep, and rise, Night and Day, and the SEED should spring and grow up, *he* knoweth not how.

28 [For] the EARTH bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the Blade, then the Ear, after that the Full Corn †in the EAR.

29 But when the FRUIT is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the SICKLE, Because the HARVEST is come.

30 And he said, †Whereunto shall we liken the KINGDOM of

GOD? or †with What Comparison shall we compare it?

31 *It is* like a Grain of Mustard-seed, which, when it is sown in the EARTH, is less than All *the SEEDS that be in the EARTH:

32 But when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than All HERBS, and shooteth out great Branches; so that the FOWLS of the AIR may lodge under the SHADOW of it.

33 And with many Such Parables spake he the WORD unto them, as they were able to hear *it*.

34 †But without a Parable spake he not unto them: and when they were alone, he expounded all things to †his DISCIPLES.

§ XIX.

35 And the Same DAY, when the Even was come, he saith unto them, Let us pass over unto the OTHER-SIDE.

36 And when they had sent away the MULTITUDE, they took him even as he was in the SHIP. And there were [also] with him Other [little] Ships.

37 And there arose a great Storm of Wind, and the WAVES beat into the SHIP, so that †it was now full.

38 And *he* was in the HINDER-PART-OF-THE-SHIP, asleep on a PILLOW: and they awake him, and say unto him, Master, carest thou not That we perish?

39 And he arose, and rebuked the WIND, and said unto the SEA, Peace, be still. And the WIND

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—31. THOSE SEEDS that be.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—20. who hear. 20. thirty, and sixty, and a hundred. 21. put. 22. nothing was hid, except that it should be manifested; neither was it kept secret, but that it should be manifested. 24. you, and shall be added unto you. 28. *is in*. 30. How shall we. 30. in What Comparison shall we place It? 34. And without. 34. his OWN Disciples. 37. the SHIP was. See 24, 28, 36 (twice).

ceased, and there was a great Calm.

40 And he said unto them, Why are ye [so] fearful? How is it that ye have no Faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, That even the WIND and the SEA obey him?

CHAPTER V.

§ XX.

1 And they came over unto the OTHER-SIDE of the SEA, into the COUNTRY of the †GADARENES.

2 And when he was come out of the SHIP, [immediately] there met him out of the TOMBS a Man with an unclean Spirit,

3 Who had *his* DWELLING among the TOMBS; and no man could bind †him, no, not with Chains:

4 Because that he had been often BOUND with Fetters and Chains, and the CHAINS had been plucked asunder by him, and the FETERS broken in pieces: neither could any *man* tame Him.

5 And always, Night and Day, he was in the †MOUNTAINS, and in the TOMBS, crying, and cutting himself with Stones.

6 †But when he saw JESUS afar off, he ran and worshipped him,

7 And cried with a loud Voice, and †said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, *thou* Son of the MOST-HIGH GOD? I adjure thee by GOD, that thou torment Me not.—

8 For he said unto him, Come out of the MAN, *thou* UNCLEAN SPIRIT.—

9 And he asked him, What *is* thy Name? And he †answered, saying, My Name *is* Legion: For we are Many.

10 And he besought him much that he would not send them away out of the COUNTRY.

11 Now there was there nigh unto the †MOUNTAINS a great Herd of Swine feeding.

12 And †All the DEVILS besought him, saying, Send us into the SWINE, that we may enter into them.

13 And †forthwith JESUS gave them leave. And the UNCLEAN SPIRITS went out, and entered into the SWINE: and the HERD ran violently down a STEEP-PLACE into the SEA, [(they were about Two-thousand;)] and were choked in the SEA.

14 And THEY that FED †the SWINE fled, and told *it* in the CITY, and in the COUNTRY. And they †went out to see what *it was that was DONE.

15 And they come to JESUS, and see HIM that was POSSESSED-WITH-THE-DEVIL, *and had the LEGION, sitting, [and] clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

16 And THEY that SAW *it* told them how it befell to HIM that was POSSESSED-WITH-THE-DEVIL, and *also* concerning the SWINE.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their COASTS.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14. THAT was which was DONE. 15. HIM that HAD the LEGION.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. GERASENES. 3. him any longer with. 5. TOMBS, and in the MOUNTAINS, crying. 6. And when. 7. saith. 9. saith unto him, My Name. 11. MOUNTAIN. 12. they besought. 13. he gave them leave. 14. them fled. 14. came to see. See 40, 2, 13, 15.

18 And when he was come into the SHIP, HE that had been POSSESSED-WITH-THE-DEVIL prayed him that he might be with him.

19 † Howbeit JESUS suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go HOME to thy FRIENDS, and tell them how great things the LORD hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publish in DECAPOLIS how great things JESUS had done for him: and all men did marvel.

§ XXI.

21 And when JESUS was passed over again by †SHIP unto the OTHER-SIDE, much People gathered unto him: and he was nigh unto the SEA.

22 And, [behold,] there cometh one of the RULERS-OF-THE-SYNAGOGUE, Jairus by Name; and when he saw him, he fell at his FEET,

23 And besought him greatly, saying, My LITTLE-DAUGHTER lieth at the point of death: *I pray thee*, come and lay thy HANDS on her, that she may be healed; and she shall live.

24 And *Jesus* went with him; and much People followed him, and thronged him.

25 And a [certain] Woman which had an Issue of Blood twelve Years,

26 And had suffered many things of Many Physicians, and had spent ALL that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew WORSE,

27 When she had heard † of JESUS, came in the PRESS behind, and touched his GARMENT.

28 For she said, If I may touch but his CLOTHES, I shall be whole.

29 And straightway the FOUNTAIN of her BLOOD was dried up; and she felt in *her* Body That she was healed of *that* PLAGUE.

30 And JESUS, immediately knowing in himself that VIRTUE had gone out of him, turned him about in the PRESS, and said, Who touched My CLOTHES?

31 And his DISCIPLES said unto him, Thou seest the MULTITUDE thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched Me?

32 And he looked round about to see HER that had DONE this thing.

33 But the WOMAN fearing and trembling, knowing what was done † in her, came and fell down before him, and told him All the TRUTH.

34 And HE said unto her, Daughter, thy FAITH hath made thee whole; go in Peace, and be whole of thy PLAGUE.

35 While he yet spake, there came from the RULER-OF-THE-SYNAGOGUE'S *house certain* which said, Thy DAUGHTER is dead: why troublest thou the MASTER any further?

36 † As soon as JESUS heard the WORD that was spoken, he saith unto the RULER-OF-THE-SYNAGOGUE, Be not afraid, only believe.

37 And he suffered no man to follow † him, save Peter, and James, and John the BROTHER of James.

38 And † he cometh to the HOUSE of the RULER-OF-THE-

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—19. And he suffered. 21. Ship. 27. the things concerning JESUS. 33. to her. 36. But JESUS, neglecting to hear the word which was spoken, saith. 37. with him. 38. they come to. See 22, 25.

SYNAGOGUE, and †seeth the Tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39 And when he was come in, he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the DAMSEL is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to scorn. But when he had put them all out, †HE taketh the FATHER and the MOTHER of the DAMSEL, and THEM that were with him, and entereth in where the DAMSEL was [lying].

41 And he took the DAMSEL by the HAND, and said unto her, Talitha cumi; which is, being interpreted, DAMSEL, I say unto thee, arise.

42 And straightway the DAMSEL arose, and walked; for she was *of the age* of twelve Years. And they were astonished with a great Astonishment.

43 And he charged them straitly that no man should know *it; and commanded that something should be given her to eat.

CHAPTER VI.

§ XXII.

1 And he went out from thence, and †came into his OWN-COUNTRY; and his DISCIPLES follow him.

2 And when the Sabbath day was come, he began to teach in the SYNAGOGUE: and †Many hearing *him* were astonished, saying, From whence hath this *man* these things? and *What WISDOM is THIS which is GIVEN †unto him,

That even such Mighty-works are wrought by his HANDS?

3 Is not this the CARPENTER, the SON of †Mary, the Brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his SISTERS here with us? And they were offended at him.

4 But JESUS said unto them, A Prophet is not without honour, but in his OWN-COUNTRY, and among his own KIN, and in his own HOUSE.

5 And he could there do No MIGHTY-WORK, save that he laid his HANDS upon a Few Sick-folk, and healed *them*.

6 And he marvelled because of their UNBELIEF.

§ XXIII.

And he went round about the VILLAGES, teaching.

7 And he called *unto him* the TWELVE, and began to send Them forth by two and two; and gave them Power over UNCLEAN SPIRITS;

8 And commanded them that they should take Nothing for *their* Journey, save a Staff only; †no Scrip, no Bread, no Money in *their* PURSE:

9 But *be* shod with Sandals; and not put on Two Coats.

10 And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into an House, there abide till ye depart from that place.

11 And †whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off *the DUST UNDER your FEET for a

* EMPHATIC TEXT.--43. this thing.
11. THAT DUST which is UNDER.

2. What is THAT WISDOM which is GIVEN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—38. he seeth. 40. †taketh. 1. cometh into. 2. MANY.
2. unto him? and *what are* such MIGHTY-WORKS which are wrought by his HANDS?
3. MARY, and Brother of. 8. no Bread, no Scrip. 11. whatsoever Place shall not. See 40.

Testimony against them. [Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrha in the Day of Judgment, than for that CITY.]

12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

13 And they cast out many Devils, and anointed with Oil many that were sick, and healed them.

§ XXIV.

14 And KING Herod heard of *him*: for his NAME was spread abroad; and †he said, That John the BAPTIST †was risen from the Dead, and therefore MIGHTY-WORKS do shew forth themselves in him.

15 Others said, That it is Elias. And others said, That it is a Prophet, [or] as one of the PROPHETS.

16 But when HEROD heard thereof, he said, It is John, whom **E** beheaded: **h**† is risen [from the Dead].

17 For HEROD himself had sent forth and laid hold upon JOHN, and bound him in †PRISON for Herodias' sake, *his BROTHER Philip's WIFE: For he had married Her.

18 For JOHN had said unto HEROD, It is not lawful for thee to have thy BROTHER'S WIFE.

19 Therefore HERODIAS had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him; but she could not:

20 For HEROD feared †JOHN, knowing that he was a just Man and an holy, †and observed him;

and when he heard him, he †did many things, and heard Him gladly.

21 And when a convenient Day was come, that Herod on his BIRTHDAY made a Supper to his LORDS, HIGH-CAPTAINS, and CHIEF *estates* of GALILEE;

22 And when †the DAUGHTER of the said HERODIAS came in, and danced, †and pleased HEROD and THEM that SAT with him, †the KING said unto the DAMSEL, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give *it* thee.

23 And he sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of Me, I will give *it* thee, unto the Half of my KINGDOM.

24 And SHE went forth, and said unto her MOTHER, What shall I ask? And SHE said, The HEAD of JOHN the BAPTIST.

25 And she came in straightway with Haste unto the KING, and asked, saying, I will that thou give me by and by in a Charger the HEAD of John the BAPTIST.

26 And the KING was exceeding sorry; *yet* for his OATH'S sake, and for THEIR sakes which SAT with him, he would not reject her.

27 And immediately the KING sent an Executioner, and commanded his HEAD to be brought: and HE went and beheaded him in the PRISON,

28 And brought his HEAD in a Charger, and gave it to the DAMSEL: and the DAMSEL gave it to her MOTHER.

29 And when his DISCIPLES heard of *it*, they came and took

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. the WIFE of Philip his BROTHER.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. they said. knowing that. 20. he observed him. DAUGHTER Herodias. 22. she pleased.

14. hath arisen. 17. Prison. 20. JOHN: was much perplexed, and heard. 22. his 22. and the KING. See 11, 15, 16.

up his CORPSE, and laid it in a TOMB.

§ XXV.

30 And the APOSTLES gathered themselves together unto JESUS, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he †said unto them, Come *ye* yourselves apart into a Desert Place, and rest awhile: for * there were many COMING and GOING, and they had no leisure so much as to eat.

32 And they departed into a Desert Place by SHIP privately.

33 And †the PEOPLE saw them departing, and many knew [him], and ran afoot thither out of All CITIES, and outwent them, [and came together unto him.]

34 And †JESUS, when he came out, saw Much People, and was moved with compassion toward them, Because they were as Sheep not having a Shepherd: and he began to teach them many things.

35 And when the Day was now far spent, his DISCIPLES came unto him, and said, †This is a Desert PLACE, and now the Time is far passed:

36 Send them away, that they may go into the COUNTRY round about, and into the Villages, and buy themselves †Bread: for they have nothing to eat.

37 HE answered and said unto them, Give *ye* them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy Two-hundred Pennyworth of Bread, and give them to eat?

38 HE saith unto them, How

Many Loaves have ye? go and see. And when they knew, they say, Five, and Two Fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all sit down by Companies upon the GREEN Grass.

40 And they sat down in Ranks, by Hundreds, and by Fifties.

41 And when he had taken the FIVE Loaves and the TWO Fishes, he looked up to HEAVEN, and blessed, and brake the LOAVES, and gave *them* to †his DISCIPLES to set before them; and the TWO Fishes divided he among them all.

42 And they did all eat, and were filled.

43 And they took up Twelve Baskets full of the Fragments, and of the FISHES.

44 And THEY that did EAT of the LOAVES were [about] Five-thousand Men.

§ XXVI.

45 And straightway he constrained his DISCIPLES to get into the SHIP, and to go to the OTHER-SIDE before unto Bethsaida, while *he* sent away the PEOPLE.

46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a MOUNTAIN to pray.

47 And when Even was come, the SHIP was in the Midst of the SEA, and *he* alone on the LAND.

48 And he saw them toiling in ROWING; for the WIND was contrary unto them: and about the Fourth Watch of the NIGHT he cometh unto them, walking upon the SEA, and would have passed by them.

49 But when they saw him

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—31. many were THEY that were COMING and GOING.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—31. saith. 33. they saw them. 34. when he came out he saw. 35. The PLACE is a Desert. 36. what they should eat. HE answered. 41. the DISCIPLES. See 33 (twice), 44.

walking upon the SEA, they supposed †it had been a Spirit, and cried out:

50 For they all saw him, and were troubled. And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer: it is **Ī**; be not afraid.

51 And he went up unto them into the SHIP; and the WIND ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves [beyond measure, and wondered].

52 For they considered not *the miracle* of the LOAVES: for their HEART was hardened.

§ XXVII.

53 And when they had passed over, they came into the LAND of Gennesaret, and drew to the shore.

54 And when they were come out of the SHIP, straightway they knew him,

55 And ran through that Whole REGION round about, and began to carry about in BEDS THOSE that were SICK, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever he entered, into Villages, or Cities, or Country, they laid the SICK in the STREETS, and besought him that they might touch if it were but the BORDER of his GARMENT: and as many as touched him were made whole.

CHAPTER VII.

§ XXVIII.

1 Then came together unto him the PHARISEES, and certain of the SCRIBES, which came from Jerusalem.

2 And when they saw some of his DISCIPLES eat †Bread with defiled, that is to say, with Unwashen Hands, [they found fault.]

3 —For the PHARISEES, and All the JEWS, except they wash *their HANDS* oft, eat not, holding the TRADITION of the ELDERS.

4 And *when they come* from the Market, except they †wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, *as* the Washing of Cups, and Pots, †Brasen-vessels, [and of Tables.]—

5 †Then the PHARISEES and SCRIBES asked him, Why walk not thy DISCIPLES according to the TRADITION of the ELDERS, but eat BREAD with †Unwashen Hands?

6 HE [answered and] said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you HYPOCRITES, as it is written, “This PEOPLE honour-eth me with *their* LIPS, but their HEART is far from me.

7 Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching *for* Doctrines the Commandments of Men.” †

8 [For] laying aside the COMMANDMENT of GOD, ye hold the TRADITION of MEN, [*as* the Washing of Pots and Cups: and many other such like things ye do.]

9 And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the COMMANDMENT of GOD, that ye may keep your own TRADITION.

10 For Moses said, “Honour thy FATHER and thy MOTHER”; † and, “WHOSO CURSETH Father

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—49. that it was a Spirit. 2. BREAD. 4. besprinkle themselves, they eat not. 4. and Brasen-vessels. 5. Both the PHARISEES. 5. Defiled Hands. See 51, 2, 4, 6, 8 (twice).

‡ 7. Isaiah xxix. 13. † 10. Exodus xx. 12.

or Mother, let him die the Death": †

11 But ye say, If a Man shall say to his FATHER or MOTHER, *It is Corban*, that is to say, a Gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; [*he shall be free*].

12 [And] ye suffer him no more to do ought for [his] FATHER or [his] MOTHER;

13 Making the WORD of GOD of none effect through your TRADITION, which ye have delivered: and many such like Things do ye.

14 And when he had †called All the PEOPLE *unto him*, he said unto them, Harken unto me every one *of you*, and understand:

15 There is nothing from without a MAN, that entering into him †can defile him: but the THINGS which COME-OUT of †him, those are THEY that DEFILE the MAN.

16 [If a man have Ears to hear, let him hear.]

§ XXIX.

17 And when he was entered into the House from the PEOPLE, his DISCIPLES, asked him concerning the PARABLE.

18 And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, That WHATSOEVER thing from without ENTERETH-INTO the MAN, *it* cannot defile Him;

19 Because it entereth not into his HEART, but into the BELLY, and goeth out into the DRAUGHT, purging All MEATS?

20 And he said, THAT which COMETH-OUT of the MAN, *that* defileth the MAN.

21 For from within, out of the HEART of MEN, proceed EVIL THOUGHTS, Adulteries, Fornications, Murders,

22 Thefts, Covetousness, Wickedness, Deceit, Lasciviousness, an evil Eye, Blasphemy, Pride, Foolishness:

23 All These EVIL things come from within, and defile the MAN.

§ XXX.

24 And from thence he arose, and went into the BORDERS of Tyre and Sidon, and entered into an HOUSE, and would have no man know *it*: but he could not be hid.

25 For a *certain* Woman, whose YOUNG-DAUGHTER had an unclean Spirit, †heard of him, and came and fell at his FEET:

26 The WOMAN was a Greek, a Syrophenician by NATION; and she besought him that he would cast forth the DEVIL out of her DAUGHTER.

27 †But JESUS said unto her, Let the CHILDREN first be filled: for it is not meet to take the CHILDREN'S BREAD, and to cast *it* unto the DOGS.

28 And SHE answered and said unto him, Yes, Lord: †yet the DOGS under the TABLE eat of the CHILDREN'S CRUMBS.

29 And he said unto her, For This SAYING go thy way; the DEVIL is gone out of thy DAUGHTER.

30 And when she was come to her HOUSE, she found †the DEVIL gone out, and her DAUGHTER laid upon the BED.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. again called 15. DEFILETH him. 15. the MAN, are the THINGS that DEFILE. 25. immediately heard. 27. And he said. 28. even the DOGS. 30. *her* DAUGHTER laid upon the BED, and the DEVIL gone out. See 11, 12 (thrice), 16.

‡ 10. Exodus xxi. 17.

§ XXXI.

31 And again, departing from the COASTS of Tyre † and Sidon, he came unto the SEA of GALILEE, through the Midst of the COASTS of Decapolis.

32 And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to put his HAND upon him.

33 And he took him aside from the MULTITUDE, and put his FINGERS into his EARS, and he spit, and touched his TONGUE;

34 And looking up to HEAVEN, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And [straightway] His EARS were opened, and the STRING of his TONGUE was loosed, and he spake plain.

36 And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more † he charged them, so much the more a great deal † they published *it*;

37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the DEAF to hear, and the † DUMB to speak.

CHAPTER VIII.

§ XXXII.

1 In Those DAYS the Multitude † being very great, and having nothing to eat, JESUS called his DISCIPLES *unto him*, and saith unto them,

2 I have compassion on the MULTITUDE, Because they have

now been [with me] three Days, and have nothing to eat:

3 And if I send them away fasting to their own Houses, they will faint by the WAY: † for divers of them came from far.

4 And his DISCIPLES answered him, From whence can a man satisfy These *men* with Bread here in the Wilderness?

5 And he asked them, How Many Loaves have ye? and THEY said, Seven.

6 And he commanded the PEOPLE to sit down on the GROUND: and he took the SEVEN Loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his DISCIPLES to set before *them*; and they did set *them* before the PEOPLE.

7 And they had a few Small-fishes: and he † blessed, and commanded to set † Them also before *them*.

8 † So they did eat, and were filled: and they took up of the Broken *meat* that was left Seven Baskets.

9 And † THEY that had EATEN were about Four-thousand: and he sent them away.

§ XXXIII.

10 And straightway † he entered into a SHIP with his DISCIPLES, and came into the PARTS of Dalmanutha.

11 And the PHARISEES came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a Sign from HEAVEN, tempting him.

12 And he sighed deeply in his SPIRIT, and saith, Why doth this GENERATION seek [after] a Sign?

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—31. he came by Sidon unto. 36. he charged. 36. they published. 37. Dumb. 1. again being great. 3. and some of them are from far. 7. blessed them, and. 7. These. 8. And they were about. 10. he entered. See 35, 2, 12.

verily I say [unto you], There shall no Sign be given unto this GENERATION.

§ XXXIV.

13 And he left them, and entering [into the SHIP] again departed to the OTHER-SIDE.

14 Now *the disciples* had forgotten to take Bread, neither had they in the SHIP with them more than One Loaf.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the LEAVEN of the PHARISEES, and of the LEAVEN of Herod.

16 And they reasoned among themselves, [saying,] †*It is* Because we have no Bread.

17 And †when JESUS knew *it*, he saith unto them, Why reason ye, Because ye have no Bread? perceive ye not yet, neither understand? have ye your HEART [yet] hardened?

18 Having Eyes, see ye not? and having Ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?

19 When I brake the FIVE Loaves among FIVE-THOUSAND, How many Baskets full of Fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve.

20 And when the SEVEN among FOUR-THOUSAND, How many Baskets full of Fragments took ye up? And †THEY said, Seven.

21 And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?

§ XXXV.

22 And †he cometh to Bethsaida; and they bring a Blind man unto

him, and besought him to touch Him.

23 And he took the BLIND man by the HAND, and led him out of the TOWN; and when he had spit on his EYES, and put his HANDS upon him, he asked him if he saw ought.

24 And he looked up, and said, I see MEN as Trees, walking.

25 After that he put *his* HANDS again upon his EYES, and †made him look up: and he was restored: and saw every man clearly.

26 And he sent him away to his †HOUSE, saying, Neither go into the TOWN, [nor tell *it* to any in the TOWN.]

§ XXXVI.

27 And JESUS went out, and his DISCIPLES, into the TOWNS of Cæsarea PHILIPPI: and by the WAY he asked his DISCIPLES, saying unto them, Whom do MEN say that I am?

28 And THEY †answered, John the BAPTIST: but some *say*, Elias; and others, One of the PROPHETS.

29 And ~~he~~ †saith unto them, but whom say *ye* that I am? And PETER answereth and saith unto him, **Thou** art the CHRIST.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

31 And he began to teach them That the SON of MAN must suffer many things, and be rejected of the ELDERS, and of the Chief-priests, and Scribes, and be killed, and after Three Days rise again.

32 And he spake *that* SAYING

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. Because they had no Bread. 17. he knew *it*, and saith. 20. they say unto him, Seven. 22. they come. 25. he saw plainly, and was restored and saw every thing clearly. 26. House, saying, Go not into. 28. spake unto him, saying, John the BAPTIST. 29. asked them, Whom say. See 12, 13, 16, 17, 26.

openly. And PETER took him, and began to rebuke him.

33 But when he had turned about and looked on his DISCIPLES, he rebuked †PETER, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan: For thou savourest not the THINGS that be of GOD, but the THINGS that be of MEN.

34 And when he had called the PEOPLE *unto him* with his DISCIPLES *also*, he said unto them, †Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his CROSS, and follow me.

35 For whosoever will save his LIFE shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his LIFE for my sake and the GOSPEL'S, [the same] shall save it.

36 For what †shall it profit a Man, if he shall gain the whole WORLD, and lose his own SOUL?

37 †Or what shall a Man give in Exchange for his SOUL?

38 Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of MY Words in this ADULTEROUS and sinful GENERATION; of him also shall the SON of MAN be ashamed, when he cometh in the GLORY of his FATHER with the HOLY ANGELS.

CHAPTER IX.

1 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That there be some of THEM that STAND here, which shall not taste of Death, till they have seen the KINGDOM of GOD come with Power.

§ XXXVII.

2 And after six Days JESUS

taketh *with him* PETER, and JAMES, and JOHN, and leadeth them up into an high Mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them.

3 And his RAIMENT became shining, exceeding white [as Snow]; so as no Fuller on EARTH can †white them.

4 And there appeared unto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with JESUS.

5 And PETER answered and said to JESUS, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make †three Tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 For he wist not what to †say; for they were sore afraid.

7 And there was a Cloud that overshadowed them: and †a Voice came out of the CLOUD, [saying,] This is my BELOVED SON: hear him.

8 And suddenly, when they had looked round about, they saw no man †any more, save JESUS only with themselves.

9 And as they came down from the MOUNTAIN, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the SON of MAN were risen from the Dead.

10 And they kept *that* SAYING with themselves, questioning one with another what THE RISING FROM THE DEAD should mean.

11 And they asked him, saying, Why say the SCRIBES That Elias must first come?

12 And HE †answered and told them, Elias verily cometh first, †and restoreth all things; and how

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.— 33. Peter, and saith. 34. If any one will. 36. doth it profit a Man to gain. 37. For what might a MAN give. 38. thus white them. 5. Three Tabernacles 6. answer; for. 7. there was a Voice. 8. any more with themselves, save Jesus only. 12. said unto them. 12. to restore. See 35, 3, 7.

it is written of the SON of MAN, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought.

13 But I say unto you, That Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.

14 And when †he came to *his* DISCIPLES, †he saw a great Multitude about them, and the Scribes questioning with them.

15 And straightway All the PEOPLE, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to *him* saluted him.

16 And he asked †the SCRIBES, What question ye with them?

17 And one of the MULTITUDE †answered and said, Master, I have brought unto thee my SON, which hath a dumb Spirit;

18 And wheresoever he taketh Him, he teareth him: and he foameth, and gnasheth with †his TEETH, and pineth away: and I spake to thy DISCIPLES that they should cast him out; and they could not.

19 HE answereth †him, and saith, O faithless Generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.

20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the SPIRIT †tare him; and he fell on the GROUND, and wallowed foaming.

21 And he asked his FATHER, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And HE said, Of a child.

22 And oftentimes it hath cast Him

into the Fire, and into the Waters, to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

23 JESUS said unto him, †IF thou canst believe, all things *are* possible to HIM that BELIEVETH.

24 [And] straightway the FATHER of the CHILD cried out, and said [with Tears, Lord], I believe; help thou Mine UNBELIEF.

25 When JESUS saw That the People came running together, he rebuked the FOUL SPIRIT, saying unto him, *Thou* DUMB †and Deaf SPIRIT, †I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And *the spirit* cried, and rent him sore, and came out [of him]: and he was as one dead; insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But JESUS took †him by the HAND, and lifted him up; and he arose.

§ XXXVIII.

28 And when he was come into the House, his DISCIPLES asked him privately, Why could not ~~we~~ cast him out?

29 And he said unto them, This KIND can come forth by nothing, but by Prayer [and Fasting].

§ XXXIX.

30 And they departed thence, and passed through GALILEE; and he would not that any man should know *it*.

31 For he taught his DISCIPLES, and said [unto them], The SON of

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. they came. 14. they saw. 16. them, What.
17. answered him, Master. 18. the TEETH. 19. and saith unto them, O faithless.
20. convulsed him. 23. IF THOU CANST? All things. 25. and DEAF. 27. his HAND.
See 24 (twice), 26, 29, 31.

MAN is delivered into the Hands of Men, and they shall kill him; and †after that he is killed, he shall rise the THIRD Day.

32 But THEY understood not *that* SAYING, and were afraid to ask Him.

§ XL.

33 And he came to Capernaum: and being in the HOUSE he asked them, What was it that ye disputed [among yourselves] by the WAY?

34 But THEY held their peace: for by the WAY they had disputed among themselves, who *should be* the greatest.

35 And he sat down, and called the TWELVE, and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, *the same* shall be last of all, and Servant of all.

36 And he took a Child, and set him in the Midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them,

37 Whosoever shall receive one of SUCH Children in my NAME, receiveth Me: and whosoever †shall receive Me, receiveth not Me, but HIM that SENT me.

38 And JOHN †answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out Devils in thy NAME, [and he followeth not us:] and we forbad him, Because he followeth not us.

39 But JESUS said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a Miracle in my NAME, that can lightly speak evil of me.

40 For he that is not against us is on our part.

41 For whosoever shall give you a Cup of Water to drink in †my NAME, Because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, He shall not lose his REWARD.

42 And whosoever shall offend one of †*these* LITTLE-ONES that BELIEVE in me, it is better for him that a Millstone were hanged about his NECK, and he were cast into the SEA.

43 And if thy HAND offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into LIFE maimed, than having TWO Hands to go into HELL, into *the FIRE that never shall be QUENCHED:

44 [Where their WORM dieth not, and the FIRE is not quenched.]

45 And if thy FOOT offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into LIFE, than having TWO Feet to be cast into HELL, [into *the FIRE that never shall be QUENCHED:

46 Where their WORM dieth not, and the FIRE is not quenched.]

47 And if thine EYE offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the KINGDOM of GOD with one eye, than having Two Eyes to be cast into †HELL [FIRE]:

48 Where their WORM dieth not, and the FIRE is not quenched.

49 For every one shall be salted with fire, [and every Sacrifice shall be salted with Salt.]

50 SALT is good: but if the SALT have lost its saltness, wherewith

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—43. THAT FIRE that never. 45. THAT FIRE that never.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—31. when he is killed, after Three Days he shall rise again. 37. receiveth Me. 38. spake to him. 41. the NAME, That ye are CHRIST's, verily. 42. THESE LITTLE-ONES. 47. Hell. See 33, 38, 44, 45—46, 47, 49.

will ye season It? Have Salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.

CHAPTER X.

§ XLI.

1 And he arose from thence, and cometh into the COASTS of JUDÆA †by the FARTHER-SIDE of JORDAN: and the People resort unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again.

2 And the PHARISEES came to him, and asked him, Is it lawful for a Man to put away *his* Wife? tempting him.

3 And HE answered and said unto them, What did Moses command You?

4 And THEY said, Moses suffered to write a Bill of Divorcement, and to put *her* away.

5 And JESUS [answered and] said unto them, For the HARDNESS of your HEART he wrote you this PRECEPT.

6 But from the Beginning of the Creation †GOD made them Male and Female.

7 For this cause shall a Man leave his FATHER and MOTHER, [and cleave to his WIFE;]

8 And they TWAIN shall be one Flesh: so then they are no more Twain, but One Flesh.

9 What therefore GOD hath joined together, let not Man put asunder.

10 And in the HOUSE †his DISCIPLES asked him again †of the SAME *matter*.

11 And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his

WIFE, and marry another, committeth adultery against her.

12 And if †a Woman shall put away her HUSBAND, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.

13 And they brought Young-children to him, that he should touch them: and *his* DISCIPLES rebuked †THOSE that brought *them*.

14 But when JESUS saw *it*, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the LITTLE-CHILDREN to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of SUCH is the KINGDOM of GOD.

15 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the KINGDOM of GOD as a Little-child, he shall not enter therein.

16 And he took them up in his arms, put *his* HANDS upon them, and blessed them.

§ XLII.

17 And when he was gone forth into the Way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal Life?

18 And JESUS said unto him, Why callest thou Me good? *there is none good but one, that is, GOD.*

19 Thou knowest the COMMANDMENTS, †Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, [Defraud not,] Honour thy FATHER and MOTHER.

20 And HE [answered and] said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my Youth.

21 Then JESUS beholding him

VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. even beyond JORDAN. 6. *God* made. 10. the DISCIPLES. 10. concerning this *matter*. 12. *she* that hath put away her HUSBAND shall marry another. 13. *them*. But. 19. Do not kill, Do not commit adultery. See 5, 7, 19 (b), 20.

loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the †POOR, and thou shalt have Treasure in Heaven: and come, [take up the CROSS, and] follow me.

22 And HE was sad at *that* SAYING, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

23 And JESUS looked round about, and saith unto his DISCIPLES, How hardly shall THEY that HAVE RICHES enter into the KINGDOM of GOD!

24 And the DISCIPLES were astonished at his WORDS. But JESUS answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it [for THEM that TRUST in RICHES] to enter into the KINGDOM of GOD!

25 It is easier for a Camel to go through the EYE of a NEEDLE, than for a Rich man to enter into the KINGDOM of GOD.

26 And THEY were astonished out of measure, saying †among themselves, Who then can be saved?

27 And JESUS looking upon them saith, With Men *it is* impossible, but not with GOD: for with †GOD all things are possible.

28 [Then] PETER began to say unto him, Lo, ~~we~~ we have left all, and have followed thee.

29 [And] JESUS [answered and] said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left House, or Brethren, or Sisters, or Father, or Mother, [or Wife,] or Children,

or Lands, for my sake, and the †GOSPEL'S,

30 But he shall receive an Hundredfold now in this TIME, Houses, and Brethren, and Sisters, and Mothers, and Children, and Lands, with Persecutions; and in the WORLD to COME eternal Life.

31 But many *that are* first shall be last; and the LAST first.

32 And they were in the WAY going up to Jerusalem; and JESUS went before them: and they were †amazed; and as they followed, they were afraid. And he took again the TWELVE, and began to tell them WHAT things SHOULD happen unto him,

33 *Saying*, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the SON of MAN shall be delivered unto the CHIEF-PRIESTS, and unto the SCRIBES; and they shall condemn him to Death, and shall deliver him to the GENTILES:

34 And they shall mock him, and shall †scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him: and †the THIRD Day he shall rise again.

35 And James and John, the †SONS of Zebedee, come unto him, †saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest do for us whatsoever we shall †desire.

36 And HE said unto them, What would ye that I should do for you?

37 THEY said unto him, Grant unto us that we may sit, one on †thy Right *hand*, and the other on †thy Left *hand*, in thy GLORY.

38 But JESUS said unto them,

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—21. Poor. 26. unto him, Who. 27. God. 29. GOSPEL'S sake. 32. amazed. And THEY that FOLLOWED were afraid, as he took. 34. spit upon him, and shall scourge him. 34. after Three Days he. 35. two Sons. 35. saying unto him, Master. 35. desire thee. 37. thy Right. 37. the Left. See 21, 24, 28, 29 (thrice).

Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the CUP that I drink of? †and be baptized with the BAPTISM that I am baptized with?

39 And THEY said unto him, We can. And JESUS said unto them, Ye shall [indeed] drink of the CUP that I drink of; and with the BAPTISM that I am baptized withal shall ye be baptized:

40 But to SIT on my Right hand †and on my Left hand is not mine to give; but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the TEN heard *it*, they began to be much displeased with James and John.

42 †But JESUS called them *to him*, and saith unto them, Ye know That THEY which are ACCOUNTED to rule over the GENTILES exercise lordship over them; and their GREAT ones exercise authority upon them.

43 But †so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be †your Minister:

44 And whosoever †of you will be the chiefest, shall be Servant of All.

45 For even the SON of MAN came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his LIFE a Ransom for many.

§ XLIII.

46 And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his DISCIPLES and a great Number of People, †BLIND Bartimæus, the Son of Timæus, sat by the HIGHWAY-SIDE begging.

47 And when he heard That it was Jesus of NAZARETH, he began to cry out, and say, †Jesus, *thou* SON of David, have mercy on me.

48 And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but HE cried the more a great deal, *Thou* Son of David, have mercy on me.

49 And JESUS stood still, and †commanded him to be called. And they call the BLIND man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise; he calleth thee.

50 And HE, casting away his GARMENT, †rose, and came to JESUS.

51 And JESUS answered and said unto him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? The BLIND man said unto him, Lord, that I might receive my sight.

52 And JESUS said unto him, Go thy way; thy FAITH hath made thee whole. And immediately he received his sight, and followed †JESUS in the WAY.

CHAPTER XI.

§ XLIV.

1 And when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, at †the MOUNT of OLIVES, he sendeth forth Two of his DISCIPLES,

2 And saith unto them, Go your way into *the VILLAGE OVER-AGAINST you: and as soon as ye be entered into it, ye shall find a Colt tied, whereon never Man †sat; loose him, and bring *him*.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. THAT VILLAGE which is OVER-AGAINST.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—38. or be baptized. 40. or on the Left. 42. And JESUS. 43. it is not so among you. 43. Your Minister. 44. among you. 46. Bartimæus, a Blind Beggar, the SON of Timæus, sat by the WAY-SIDE. And. 47. *Thou* Son of David, Jesus, have. 49. said, Call him. And. 50. leaped up and came. 52. him in the WAY. 1. THAT MOUNT which is *the mount*. 2. yet sat. See 39.

3 And if any man say unto you, Why do ye this? say ye, [That] the LORD hath Need of him; and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the COLT tied by the DOOR without, in a place where TWO-WAYS met; and they loose him.

5 And certain of THEM that STOOD there said unto them, What do ye, loosing the COLT?

6 And THEY said unto them even as JESUS had † commanded: and they let them go.

7 And they † brought the COLT to JESUS, and cast their GARMENTS on him; and he sat upon him.

8 And many spread their GARMENTS in the WAY: and others † cut down Branches off the TREES, [and strawed *them* in the WAY.]

9 And THEY that WENT-BEFORE, and THEY that FOLLOWED, cried, [saying,] Hosanna; Blessed is HE that COMETH [in the Name of the Lord]:

10 Blessed *be* the KINGDOM of our FATHER David, that COMETH in the Name of the Lord: Hosanna in the HIGHEST.

11 And † JESUS entered into Jerusalem, [and] into the TEMPLE: and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the † EVENTIDE was come, he went out unto Bethany with the TWELVE.

§ XLV.

12 And on the MORROW, when

they were come from Bethany, he was hungry:

13 And seeing a Fig-tree afar off having Leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but Leaves; for the † Time of Figs was not *yet*.

14 And † JESUS answered and said unto it, No man eat Fruit of thee hereafter for EVER. And his DISCIPLES heard *it*.

15 And they come to Jerusalem: and † JESUS went into the TEMPLE, and began to cast out THEM that SOLD and bought in the TEMPLE, and overthrew the TABLES of the MONEYCHANGERS, and the SEATS of THEM that SOLD DOVES;

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry *any* Vessel through the TEMPLE.

17 And he taught, † saying [unto them], Is it not written, "My HOUSE shall be called of All NATIONS the House of Prayer"? † but *ye* have made it a Den of Thieves.

18 And the † SCRIBES and CHIEF-PRIESTS heard *it*, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, Because All the PEOPLE was astonished at his DOCTRINE.

19 And when Even was come, he went out of the CITY.

§ XLVI.

20 And in the Morning, as they passed by, they saw the FIG-TREE dried up from the Roots.

21 And PETER calling to remembrance saith unto him, Master,

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—6. said: and. 7. bring. 8. Branches, cut down out of the FIELDS. And THEY. 11 he entered. 11. Evening. 13. TIME. 14. he answered. 15. he went. 17. and said, Is it not. 18. CHIEF-PRIESTS and the SCRIBES. See 3, 8, 9 (twice), 11, 17.

‡ 17. Isaiah lvi. 7.

behold, the FIG-TREE which thou cursedst is withered away.

22 And JESUS answering saith unto them, Have Faith in God.

23 For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this MOUNTAIN, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the SEA; and shall not doubt in his HEART, but shall believe That †those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith.

24 Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye †desire, when ye pray, believe That ye receive *them*, and ye shall have *them*.

25 And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that *your FATHER also which is in HEAVEN may forgive you your TRESPASSES.

26 || But if ye do not forgive, neither will *your FATHER which is in HEAVEN forgive your TRESPASSES.

27 And they come again to Jerusalem: and as he was walking in the TEMPLE, there come to him the CHIEF-PRIESTS, and the SCRIBES, and the ELDERS,

28 And †say unto him, By What Authority doest thou these things? †and who gave Thee this AUTHORITY to do these things?

29 And JESUS [answered and] said unto them, †I will [also] ask of you One Question, and answer

me, and I will tell you by What Authority I do these things.

30 The BAPTISM of †John, was *it* from Heaven, or of Men? answer me.

31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From Heaven; he will say, Why then did ye not believe him?

32 But †if we shall say, Of Men; they feared the PEOPLE: for all *men* counted JOHN, That he was a Prophet indeed.

33 And they answered and said unto JESUS, We cannot tell. And JESUS [answering] saith unto them, Neither do I tell you by What Authority I do these things.

CHAPTER XII.

§ XLVII.

1 And he began to speak unto them by Parables. A *certain* Man planted a Vineyard, and set an Hedge about *it*, and digged a *place* for the Winefat, and built a Tower, and let it out to HUSBANDMEN, and went into a far country.

2 And at the SEASON he sent to the HUSBANDMEN a Servant, that he might receive from the HUSBANDMEN of the †FRUIT of the VINEYARD.

3 And †THEY caught *him*, and beat Him, and sent *him* away empty.

4 And again he sent unto them Another Servant; and †at *him* they cast stones, and wounded

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—25. also THAT FATHER of yours which is. 26. THAT FATHER of yours which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. what he saith cometh to pass, he shall have it. Therefore. 24. pray for, and desire, believe ye That ye did receive *them*. 28. they said. 28. or who. 29. I will. 30. JOHN. 32. should we say. 2. FRUITS of. 3. they caught. 4. *him* they wounded in the head. See 29 (twice), 33.

|| This verse is omitted by Dr. Birch, but not by Dr. Bentley; Bartolucci does not notice it, but as it was not in the copy which he made use of for his Collation, his silence is more against it, than in favour of it.

him in the head, and [sent *him* away] shamefully handled.

5 And [again] he sent Another; and *him* they killed, and Many Others; beating †SOME, and killing †SOME,

6 †Having yet [therefore] One Son, [his] wellbeloved, he sent him [also] last unto them, saying, They will reverence my SON.

7 But Those HUSBANDMEN said among themselves, This is the HEIR; come, let us kill him, and the INHERITANCE shall be our's.

8 And they took him, and killed *him*, and cast †*him* out of the VINEYARD.

9 What shall [therefore] the LORD of the VINEYARD do? he will come and destroy the HUSBANDMEN, and will give the VINEYARD unto others.

10 And have ye not read this SCRIPTURE; "The Stone which the BUILDERS rejected *is become the Head of the Corner:

11 This was the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our Eyes?" †

12 And they sought to lay hold on Him, but feared the PEOPLE: for they knew That he had spoken the PARABLE against them: and they left him, and went their way.

|| § XLVII.

13 And they send unto him certain of the PHARISEES and of the HERODIANS, to catch Him in *his* Words.

14 And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we

know That thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the Person of Men, but teachest the WAY of GOD in Truth: Is it lawful to give Tribute to Cæsar, or not?

15 Shall we give, or shall we not give? But HE, knowing their HYPOCRISY, said unto them, Why tempt ye Me? bring me a Penny, that I may see *it*.

16 And THEY brought *it*. And he saith unto them, Whose *is* this IMAGE and SUPERScription? And THEY said unto him, Cæsar's.

17 And JESUS [answering] said [unto them], Render to Cæsar the THINGS that are Cæsar's, and to GOD the THINGS that are GOD'S. And they †marvelled at him.

18 Then come unto him the Sadducees, which say there is no Resurrection; and they asked him, saying,

19 Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a man's Brother die, and leave *his* Wife *behind him*, and leave no Children, that his BROTHER should take his WIFE, and raise up Seed unto his BROTHER.

20 Now there were Seven Brethren: and the FIRST took a WIFE, and dying left no Seed.

21 And the SECOND took her, and died, †neither left *he* any Seed: and the THIRD likewise.

22 And the SEVEN [had her, and] left no Seed: last of all the WOMAN died also.

23 In the RESURRECTION [therefore, when they shall rise,] Whose

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—10. this is become.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—5. some. 5. some. 6. He had yet one Son, well-beloved: he sent. 8. him. 17. greatly marvelled at him. 21. leaving no Seed: and. See 4, 5, 6 (thrice), 9, 17 (twice), 22, 23.

‡ 11. Psalms cxviii. 22.

|| It is so numbered in the Vatican Manuscript.

Wife shall she be of them? for the SEVEN had her to Wife.

24 And JESUS answering said unto them, Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the SCRIPTURES, neither the POWER of GOD?

25 For when they shall rise from the Dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as † the Angels which are in HEAVEN.

26 And as touching the DEAD, That they rise: have ye not read in the BOOK of Moses, how in the BUSH GOD spake unto him, saying, “*Æ* am the GOD of Abraham, and the † GOD of Isaac, and the † GOD of Jacob?” †

27 He is not the † GOD of the Dead, but [the God] of the Living: † ye [therefore] do greatly err.

28 And one of the SCRIBES came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving That he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the First Commandment of all?

29 [And] JESUS answered him, The first [of All the COMMANDMENTS] † is, “Hear, O Israel; The Lord our GOD is one Lord:

30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy GOD with All thy † HEART, and with All thy † SOUL, and with All thy † MIND, and with All thy STRENGTH:” † [this is the First Commandment.]

31 And the second is [like, *namely*] this, “Thou shalt love thy NEIGHBOUR as thyself.” † There

is none Other Commandment greater than these.

32 [And] the SCRIBE said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the Truth: For there is one [God]; and there is none other but he:

33 And to LOVE him with All the HEART, and with All the UNDERSTANDING, [and with All the SOUL,] and with All the STRENGTH, and to LOVE *his* NEIGHBOUR as himself, is † more than All WHOLE-BURNT-OFFERINGS and † SACRIFICES.

34 And when JESUS saw That he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the KINGDOM of GOD. And no man after that durst ask Him *any* question.

35 And JESUS answered and said, while he taught in the TEMPLE, How say the SCRIBES That CHRIST is the Son of David?

36 For David himself said by the HOLY GHOST, “The † LORD said to my LORD, Sit thou on my Right *hand*, till I † make thine ENEMIES thy FOOTSTOOL.” †

37 David therefore himself call-eth him Lord; and whence is he *then* † his Son? And the COMMON People heard him gladly.

38 And he said [unto them] in his DOCTRINE, Beware of † the SCRIBES, which LOVE to go in Long-clothing, and *love* Salutations in the MARKET-PLACES,

39 And the Chief-seats in the SYNAGOGUES, and the Uppermost-rooms at FEASTS:

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—38. THOSE SCRIBES which LOVE.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—25. THOSE ANGELS which. 26. God. 26. God. 27. God. 27. ye do greatly err. 29. is. 30. Heart. 30. Soul. 30. Mind. 33. abundantly more. 33. Sacrifices. 36. Lord. 36. put thine ENEMIES under thy FEET. 37. His Son? See 27 (twice), 29 (twice), 30, 31, 32 (twice), 33, 38.

† 26. Exod. iii. 6. † 30. Deut. vi. 4, † 31. Lev. xix. 18. † 36. Psa. cx. 1.

40 Which DEVOUR WIDOWS' HOUSES, and for a Pretence make long prayers: these shall receive Greater Damnation.

§ XLVIII.

41 And †JESUS sat over against the TREASURY, and beheld how the PEOPLE cast Money into the TREASURY: and Many that were Rich cast in much.

42 And there came a Certain poor Widow, and she threw in two Mites, which make a Far-thing.

43 And he called *unto him* his DISCIPLES, and †saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That this POOR WIDOW †hath cast more in, than All THEY which have CAST into the TREASURY:

44 For all *they* did cast in of their ABUNDANCE; but *she* of her WANT did cast in all that she had, *even* All her LIVING.

CHAPTER XIII.

§ XLIX.

1 And as he went out of the TEMPLE, one of his DISCIPLES saith unto him, Master, see What manner of Stones and What Buildings *are here!*

2 And JESUS [answering] said unto him, Seest thou These GREAT Buildings? there shall not be †left one Stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he sat upon the MOUNT of OLIVES over against the TEMPLE, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately,

4 Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the SIGN when all these things shall be fulfilled?

5 And JESUS [answering them] began to †say, Take heed lest any *man* deceive You:

6 [For] many shall come in my NAME, saying, *ƒ am Christ;* and shall deceive Many.

7 And when ye shall hear of Wars and Rumours of Wars, be ye not troubled: [for] *such things* must needs be; but the END *shall not be* yet.

8 For Nation shall rise against Nation, and Kingdom against Kingdom: [and] there shall be Earthquakes in divers Places, [and] there shall be Famines [and Troubles]: these *are* the †Beginnings of Sorrows.

9 But take heed to yourselves: [for] they shall deliver you up to Councils; and in the Synagogues ye shall be beaten: and ye shall be brought before Rulers and Kings for my sake, for a Testimony against them.

10 And the GOSPEL must first be published among All NATIONS.

11 But when they shall lead *you*, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, [neither do ye premeditate:] but whatsoever shall be given you in That HOUR, *that* speak ye: for it is not YE that SPEAK, but the HOLY GHOST.

12 †Now the Brother shall betray the Brother to Death, and the Father the Son; and Children shall rise up against *their* Parents,

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—41. he sat. one. 5. say unto them, Take heed. 8

43. said. 43. did cast. 2. left here Beginning of. 12. And the Brother. See 2,

5, 6, 7, 8 (thrice), 9, 11.

and shall cause them to be put to death.

13 And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my NAME'S sake: but HE that shall ENDURE unto the End, the same shall be saved.

14 But when ye shall see the ABOMINATION of DESOLATION, [spoken of by Daniel the PROPHET] standing where it ought not,—let HIM that READETH understand,—then let THEM that be in Judæa FLEE to the MOUNTAINS:

15 [And] let HIM that is on the HOUSETOP not go down [into the HOUSE], neither enter *therein*, to take Any thing out of his HOUSE:

16 And let HIM that †IS in the FIELD not turn BACK-AGAIN for to take up his GARMENT.

17 But woe to THEM that ARE-WITH-CHILD, and to THEM that GIVE-SUCK in Those DAYS!

18 And pray ye that †your FLIGHT be not in the Winter.

19 For *in* those DAYS shall be Affliction, such as was not from the Beginning of the Creation which GOD created unto THIS-TIME, neither shall be.

20 And except that the Lord had shortened *those* DAYS, No Flesh should be saved: but for the ELECT'S sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the DAYS.

21 And then if any man shall say to you, Lo, here *is* CHRIST; or, lo, *he is* there; believe *him* not:

22 For False Christs and False-prophets shall rise, and shall shew Signs and Wonders, to SEDUCE, if *it were* possible, [even] the ELECT.

23 But take **pc** heed: [behold,] I have foretold you all things.

24 But in Those DAYS, after that TRIBULATION, the SUN shall be darkened, and the MOON shall not give her LIGHT,

25 And †the STARS of HEAVEN shall fall, and *the POWERS that are in HEAVEN shall be shaken.

26 And then shall they see the SON of MAN coming in the Clouds with great Power and Glory.

27 And then shall he send †his ANGELS, and shall gather together his ELECT from the FOUR Winds, from the Uttermost-part of the Earth to the Uttermost-part of Heaven.

28 Now learn a PARABLE of the FIG-TREE; When her BRANCH is yet tender, and putteth forth LEAVES, †ye know That SUMMER is near:

29 So **pc** in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to pass, know That it is nigh, *even* at the Doors.

30 Verily I say unto you, That this GENERATION shall not pass, till all these things be done.

31 HEAVEN and EARTH shall pass away: but my WORDS shall not pass away.

§ L.

32 But of that DAY †and *that* HOUR knoweth no man, no, not *the ANGELS which are in Heaven,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14. THAT ABOMINATION of DESOLATION which is SPOKEN-OF. 25. THOSE POWERS which are. 32. THOSE ANGELS which are.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. *is*. 18. it be not. 25. the STARS shall fall out of HEAVEN, and THOSE POWERS. 27. the ANGELS 28. it is known That. 32. or HOUR knoweth no man, neither an Angel in Heaven. See 14, 15 (twice), 22, 23.

neither the SON, but the FATHER.

33 Take ye heed, watch [and pray]: for ye know not when the TIME is.

34 *For the Son of man is* as a Man taking a far journey, who left his HOUSE, and gave AUTHORITY to his SERVANTS, [and] to every man his WORK, and commanded the PORTER to watch.

35 Watch ye therefore: for ye know not when the MASTER of the HOUSE cometh, †at Even, or at Midnight, or at the Cock-crowing, or in the Morning:

36 Lest coming suddenly he find you sleeping.

37 And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch.

CHAPTER XIV.

1 *After Two Days was *the feast* of the PASSOVER, and of UNLEAVENED-BREAD: and the CHIEF-PRIESTS and the SCRIBES sought how they might take Him by Craft, and put *him* to death.

2 †But they said, Not on the FEAST *day*, lest there be an Up-roar of the People.

§ LI.

3 And being in Bethany in the HOUSE of Simon the LEPER, as he sat at meat, there came a Woman having an Alabaster-box of Ointment of Spikenard very precious; [and] she brake the BOX, and poured *it* on his HEAD.

4 And there were some that had indignation within themselves, [and said,] Why was this WASTE of the OINTMENT made?

5 For †*it* might have been sold for more than Three-hundred Pence, and have been given to the POOR. And they murmured against her.

6 And JESUS said, Let her alone; why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a Good Work †on me.

7 For ye have the POOR with you always, and whensoever ye will ye may †do Them good: but Me ye have not always.

8 †*She* hath done what she could: she is come aforehand to anoint my BODY to the BURYING.

9 †Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever †this GOSPEL shall be preached throughout the Whole WORLD, *this* also that *she* hath done shall be spoken of for a Memorial of her.

§ LII.

10 And †JUDAS ISCARIOT, one of the TWELVE, went unto the CHIEF-PRIESTS, to betray Him unto them.

11 And when they heard *it*, they were glad, and promised to give him Money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray Him.

12 And the FIRST Day of UNLEAVENED-BREAD, when they killed the PASSOVER, his DISCIPLES said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare that thou mayest eat the PASSOVER?

13 And he sendeth forth two of his DISCIPLES, and saith unto them, Go ye into the CITY, and there shall meet you a Man, bearing a Pitcher of Water: follow him.

14 And wheresoever he shall go

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. And after.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—35. whether at Even. 2. For they said. 5. This OINTMENT might. 6. in me. 7. always do. 8. *She*. 9. And verily. 9. the GOSPEL. 10. THAT Judas Iscariot, *who was* one. See 33, 34, 3, 4.

in, say ye to the GOOD-MAN-OF-THE-HOUSE, The MASTER saith, Where is †the GUESTCHAMBER, where I shall eat the PASSOVER with my DISCIPLES?

15 And *he* will shew you a large Upper-room furnished *and* prepared: † there make ready for us.

16 And †his DISCIPLES went forth, and came into the CITY, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the PASSOVER.

17 And in the Evening he cometh with the TWELVE.

18 And as they sat and did eat, JESUS said, Verily I say unto you, †ONE of you which EATETH with me shall betray me.

19 [And] †THEY began to be sorrowful, and to say unto him one by one, *Is it I?* [and another said, *Is it I?*]

20 And HE [answered and] said unto them, *It is* *ONE of the TWELVE, that DIPPETH with me in the DISH.

21 †The SON of MAN indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that MAN by whom the SON of MAN is betrayed! good were it for that MAN if he had never been born.

22 And as they did eat, †JESUS took Bread, and blessed, and brake *it*, and gave to them, and said, Take, [eat:] this is my BODY.

23 And he took the †CUP, and when he had given thanks, he

gave *it* to them: and they all drank of it.

24 And he said [unto them], *This is †my BLOOD of the NEW Testament, which is SHED for many.

25 Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the FRUIT of the VINE, until that DAY that I drink It new in the KINGDOM of GOD.

26 And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the MOUNT of OLIVES.

§ LIII.

27 And JESUS saith unto them, All ye shall be offended [because of me this NIGHT]: For it is written, I will smite the SHEPHERD, and the SHEEP shall be scattered.

28 But after that I am RISEN, I will go before you into GALILEE.

29 But PETER said unto him, †Although all shall be offended, yet *will* not I.

30 And JESUS saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That †This-day, *even* in this NIGHT, before the Cock crow twice, †thou shalt deny me thrice.

31 But HE spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny Thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

32 And they came to a Place which was named Gethsemane:

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—20. THAT ONE of the TWELVE which DIPPETH. 24. This is THAT BLOOD of mine which is of the NEW Testament, THAT which is SHED.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. my GUESTCHAMBER. 15. and there make ye. 16. the DISCIPLES. 18. One of YOU which are EATING with me. 19. They. 21. Because the SON. 22. he took. 23. Cup. 24. THAT BLOOD of mine which is of the TESTAMENT, THAT which is SHED. 29. If even all. 30. thou This-day, in This NIGHT. 30. shalt deny Me thrice. See 19 (twice), 20, 22, 24, 27.

and he saith to his DISCIPLES, Sit ye here, while I shall †pray.

33 And he taketh with him PETER and JAMES and †John, and began to be sore amazed, and to be very heavy;

34 And saith unto them, My SOUL is exceeding sorrowful unto Death: tarry ye here, and watch.

35 And he went forward a little, and fell on the GROUND, and prayed that, if it were possible, the HOUR might pass from him.

36 And he said, Abba, FATHER, all things *are* possible unto thee; take away this CUP from me: nevertheless not what **ƒ** will, but what **thou** wilt.

37 And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto PETER, Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch One Hour?

38 Watch ye and pray, lest ye †enter into Temptation. The SPIRIT truly *is* ready, but the FLESH *is* weak.

39 And again he went away, and prayed, and spake the SAME Words.

40 And †when he returned, he found them asleep again, for their EYES were heavy, neither wist they what to answer him.

41 And he cometh the THIRD time, and saith unto them, Sleep on NOW, and take *your* rest: it is enough, the HOUR is come; behold, the SON of MAN is betrayed into the HANDS of SINNERS.

42 Rise up, let us go; lo, HE that BETRAYETH me is at hand.

§ LIV.

43 And immediately, while he yet spake, cometh †Judas, one of the TWELVE, and with him a [great] Multitude with Swords and Staves, from the CHIEF-PRIESTS and the SCRIBES and the ELDERS.

44 And HE that BETRAYED him had given them a Token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; take him, and lead *him* away safely.

45 And as soon as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and saith, Master, [Master;] and kissed him.

46 And THEY laid [their] HANDS on him, and took him.

47 And one of THEM that STOOD-BY drew a SWORD, and smote a SERVANT of the HIGH-PRIEST, and cut off His †EAR.

48 And JESUS answered and said unto them, Are ye come out, as against a Thief, with Swords and *with* Staves to take me?

49 I was daily with you in the TEMPLE teaching, and ye took me not: but the SCRIPTURES must be fulfilled.

50 And they all forsook him, and fled.

51 And there followed him a certain Young-man, having a Linen-cloth cast about *his* naked *body*; and †the Young-men laid hold on him:

52 And HE left the LINEN-CLOTH, and fled [from them] naked.

§ LV.

53 And they led JESUS away to

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—32. go away and pray (*a*). 33. JOHN. 38. come into. 40. again he came, and found them asleep, for Their EYES were weighed down, neither. 43. JUDAS, one of the twelve. 47. EAR-TIP. 51. they laid hold. See 43, 45, 46, 52.

the HIGH-PRIEST: and with him there assembled All the CHIEF-PRIESTS and the ELDERS and the SCRIBES.

54 And PETER followed him afar off, even into the PALACE of the HIGH-PRIEST: and he sat with the SERVANTS, and warmed himself at the FIRE.

55 And the CHIEF-PRIESTS and All the COUNCIL sought for Witness against JESUS to PUT-HIM-TO-DEATH; and found none.

56 For many bare false witness against him, but their WITNESS agreed not together.

57 And there arose certain, and bare false witness against him, saying,

58 **¶** We heard him say, **¶** I will destroy THIS TEMPLE that is MADE-WITH-HANDS, and within Three Days I will build Another made without hands.

59 But neither so did their WITNESS agree together.

60 And the HIGH-PRIEST stood up in the MIDST, and asked JESUS, saying, Answerest thou nothing? † What *is it which* these witness against thee?

61 But HE held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the HIGH-PRIEST asked him, and said unto him, Art **thou** the CHRIST, the SON of the BLESSED?

62 And JESUS said, **¶** I am: and ye shall see the SON of MAN sitting on the Right *hand* of POWER, and coming in the CLOUDS of HEAVEN.

63 Then the HIGH-PRIEST rent his CLOTHES, and saith, What need we any further Witnesses?

64 Ye have heard the BLASPHEMY: what think ye? And they ALL condemned him to be guilty of Death.

65 And some began to spit on him, and to cover His FACE, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophesy: and the SERVANTS did strike Him with the Palms of their Hands.

66 And as PETER was beneath in the PALACE, there cometh one of the MAIDS of the HIGH-PRIEST:

67 And when she saw PETER warming himself, she looked upon him, and said, And **thou** also wast with † Jesus of NAZARETH.

68 But HE denied, saying, I † know not, neither understand I what **thou** sayest. And he went out into the PORCH; [and the Cock crew.]

69 And a MAID saw him [again], and † began to say to THEM that STOOD-BY, This is *one* of them.

70 And HE denied it again. And a little after, THEY that STOOD-BY said again to PETER, Surely thou art *one* of them: for thou art a Galilæan, [and thy SPEECH agreeth *thereto*.]

71 But HE began to curse and to swear, *saying*, I know not this MAN of whom ye speak.

72 And † the second time the Cock crew. And PETER called to mind the WORD that JESUS said unto him, Before the Cock crew twice, thou shalt deny Me thrice. And when he thought thereon, he wept.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—60. Because these. 67. JESUS. 67. neither know nor understand. 69. said to THEM that. 72. immediately for the second. See 68, 69, 70.

CHAPTER XV.

§ LVI.

1 And straightway in the † MORNING the CHIEF-PRIESTS held a Consultation with the ELDERS and Scribes, and the Whole COUNCIL, and bound JESUS, and carried *him* away, and delivered *him* to † PILATE.

2 And PILATE asked him, Art **thou** the KING of the JEWS? And HE answering † said unto him, **Thou** sayest *it*.

3 And the CHIEF-PRIESTS accused him of many things: [but he answered nothing.]

4 And PILATE asked him again, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they † witness against thee.

5 But JESUS yet answered nothing; so that PILATE marvelled.

6 Now at *that* Feast he released unto them One Prisoner, whomsoever they desired.

7 And there was **one* NAMED Barabbas, *which lay* bound with THEM that had MADE-INSURRECTION [with him], who had committed Murder in the INSURRECTION.

8 And the MULTITUDE † crying aloud began to desire *him to do* as he had ever done unto them.

9 But PILATE answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you the KING of the JEWS?

10 For he knew That † the CHIEF-PRIESTS had delivered him for Envy.

11 But the CHIEF-PRIESTS

moved the PEOPLE, that he should rather release BARABBAS unto them.

12 And PILATE answered and said again unto them, What † will ye then that I shall do *unto him* whom ye call the King of the JEWS?

13 And THEY cried out again, Crucify him.

14 Then PILATE said unto them, Why, What Evil hath he done? And THEY cried out [the more] exceedingly, Crucify him.

15 And *so* PILATE, willing to CONTENT the PEOPLE, released BARABBAS unto them, and delivered JESUS, when he had scourged *him*, to be crucified.

§ LVII.

16 And the SOLDIERS led him away into the HALL, called Prætorium; and they call together the Whole BAND.

17 And they clothed him with Purple, and platted a Crown-of-Thorns, and put it about his *head*,

18 And began to salute him, Hail, King of the JEWS!

19 And they smote him on the HEAD with a Reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing *their* KNEES worshipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they took off the PURPLE from him, and put † his OWN CLOTHES on him, and led him out [to crucify him].

21 And they compel One Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the Country, the FA-

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—7. HE that was NAMED Barabbas.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. Morning. 1. Pilate. 2. saith unto him. 4. accuse thee of. 8. going up began. 10. they had. 12. then shall I do *unto him* ye call the KING of the JEWS. 20. his CLOTHES. See 3, 7, 14, 20.

THEIR of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his CROSS.

22 And they bring him unto † the Place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, The Place of a Skull.

23 And they gave him [to drink] Wine mingled with Myrrh: but † HE received *it* not.

§ LVIII.

24 And † when they had crucified him, they parted his GARMENTS, casting Lots upon them, what every man should take.

25 And it was the third Hour, and they crucified him.

26 And the SUPERScription of his ACCUSATION was written over, The KING of the JEWS.

27 And with him they † crucify Two Thieves; the one on his Right *hand*, and the other on his Left.

28 [And *the SCRIPTURE was fulfilled, which SAITH, "And he was numbered with the Transgressors." †]

29 And THEY that PASSED-BY railed on him, wagging their HEADS, and saying, Ah, THOU that DESTROYEST the TEMPLE, and buildest *it* in Three Days,

30 Save thyself, and come down from the CROSS.

31 Likewise also the CHIEF-PRIESTS mocking said among themselves with the SCRIBES, He saved Others; Himself he cannot save.

32 Let CHRIST the KING of

† ISRAEL descend now from the CROSS, that we may see and believe. And THEY that were CRUCIFIED with him reviled him.

33 And when the sixth Hour was come, there was Darkness over the Whole LAND until the ninth Hour.

34 And at the † NINTH HOUR JESUS cried with a loud Voice, [saying,] Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My GOD, [my GOD,] why hast thou forsaken me?

35 And some of THEM that STOOD-BY, when they heard *it*, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ran and filled a Sponge full of Vinegar, and put *it* on a Reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone; let us see whether Elias will come to take him down.

37 And JESUS cried with a loud Voice, and gave up the ghost.

§ LIX.

38 And the VEIL of the TEMPLE was rent in Twain from the top to the bottom.

39 And when *the CENTURION, which STOOD over against him, saw That he so [cried out, and] gave up the ghost, he said, Truly † this MAN was the Son of God.

40 There were also Women looking on afar off: among whom was Mary MAGDALENE, and Mary the MOTHER of JAMES the LESS and † of Joses, and Salome;

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—28. THAT SCRIPTURE was fulfilled which SAITH. 39. THAT CENTURION which STOOD.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—22. GOLGOTHA, a Place which is. 23. he. 24. they crucify him, and part his GARMENTS. 27. crucified. 32. Israel. 34. NINTH Hour. 39. This MAN. 40. the mother of. See 23, 28, 34 (twice), 39.

‡ 28. Isaiah liii. 12.

41 Who [also,] when he was in GALILEE, followed him, and ministered unto him; and MANY Other *women* which CAME-UP with him unto Jerusalem.

§ LX.

42 And now when the Even was come, because it was the Preparation, that is, the Day before the Sabbath,

43 * Joseph of Arimathæa, an Honourable Counsellor, which also waited for the KINGDOM of GOD, came, and went in boldly unto † Pilate, and craved the BODY of JESUS.

44 And PILATE marvelled if he were already dead: and calling unto him the CENTURION, he asked him † whether he had been any while dead.

45 And when he knew *it* of the CENTURION, he gave the † BODY to JOSEPH.

46 And he bought Fine-linen, [and] took him down, and wrapped him in the LINEN, and † laid him in a Sepulchre which was hewn out of a Rock, and rolled a Stone unto the DOOR of the SEPULCHRE.

47 And Mary MAGDALENE and † Mary *the mother* of Josès beheld where he was laid.

CHAPTER XVI.

§ LXI.

1 And when the SABBATH was past, Mary MAGDALENE, and * Mary *the mother* of JAMES, and Salome, had bought Sweet-spices,

that they might come and anoint him.

2 And very early in the Morning the † FIRST *day* of the Week, they came unto the SEPULCHRE at the rising of the SUN.

3 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the STONE from the DOOR of the SEPULCHRE?

4 And when they looked, they saw that the STONE was rolled away: for it was very great.

5 And † entering into the SEPULCHRE, they saw a Young-man sitting on the RIGHT *side*, clothed in a long white Garment; and they were affrighted.

6 And HE saith unto them, Be not affrighted: Ye seek * Jesus of NAZARETH, which was CRUCIFIED: he is risen; he is not here: behold the PLACE where they laid him.

7 But go your way, tell his DISCIPLES and PETER That he goeth before you into GALILEE: there shall ye see Him, as he said unto you.

8 And they went out [quickly], and fled from the SEPULCHRE; for they trembled and were amazed: neither said they any thing to any *man*; for they were afraid.

9 [Now when *Jesus* was risen early the first *day* of the Week, he appeared first to Mary MAGDALENE, out of whom he had cast Seven Devils.

10 And *she* went and told THEM that had BEEN with him, as they mourned and wept.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—43. THAT Joseph who was of Arimathæa. 1. THAT Mary who was the *mother*. 6. THAT Jesus of NAZARETH which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—43. PILATE. 44. if he were already dead. 45. DEAD-BODY. 46. put him. 47. THAT Mary who was the *mother*. 2. first *day* of the WEEK. 5. coming into. See 41, 46, 8, 9—20.

11 And **they**, when they had heard That he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.

12 After **that** he appeared in Another Form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the Country.

13 And **they** went and told *it* unto the RESIDUE: neither believed they **them**.

14 Afterward he appeared unto the ELEVEN as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their UNBELIEF and HARDNESS-OF-HEART, Because they believed not THEM which had SEEN him after he was risen.

15 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the WORLD, and preach the GOSPEL to Every CREATURE.

16 HE that BELIEVETH and is

baptized shall be saved; but HE that BELIEVETH-NOT shall be damned.

17 And these Signs shall follow THEM that BELIEVE; In my NAME shall they cast out Devils; they shall speak with new Tongues;

18 They shall take up Serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt Them; they shall lay Hands on the Sick, and they shall recover.

19 So then after the LORD had SPOKEN unto them, he was received up into HEAVEN, and sat on the Right *hand* of GOD.

20 And **they** went forth, and preached every where, the LORD working with *them*, and confirming the WORD with Signs FOL-LOWING. Amen.] †

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Subscription*: ACCORDING TO MARK.

† THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. LUKE.

CHAPTER I.

SECTION I.

1 Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a Declaration of *those* THINGS which are MOST-SURELY-BELIEVED among us,

2 Even as *THEY delivered them unto us, which from the Beginning WERE Eyewitnesses, and Ministers of the WORD;

3 It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto Thee in *order, Most-excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the CERTAINTY of *those* Things, wherein thou hast been instructed.

§ II.

5 There was in the DAYS of Herod, the †KING of JUDÆA, a certain Priest named Zacharias, of the Course of Abia: and his †WIFE *was* of the DAUGHTERS of Aaron, and her NAME *was* Elisabeth.

6 And they were both righteous before GOD, walking in All the

COMMANDMENTS and Ordinances of the LORD blameless.

7 And they had no Child, because that †ELISABETH was barren, and they both were *now* well stricken in YEARS.

8 And it came to pass, that while he EXECUTED-THE-PRIEST'S-OFFICE before GOD in the ORDER of his COURSE,

9 According to the CUSTOM of the PRIEST'S-OFFICE, his lot was to BURN-INCENSE when he went into the TEMPLE of the LORD.

10 And the Whole MULTITUDE of the PEOPLE were praying without at the TIME of INCENSE.

11 And there appeared unto him an Angel of the Lord standing on the Right *side* of the ALTAR of INCENSE.

12 And when Zacharias saw *him*, he was troubled, and Fear fell upon him.

13 But the ANGEL said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy PRAYER is heard; and thy WIFE Elisabeth shall bear thee a Son, and thou shalt call his NAME John.

☞ Dr. Birch did not collate the Gospel of Luke and John, but made use of a MS. copy of Dr. Bentley's Collation. Dr. Bentley's Collation is the authority for the following Readings; in addition to which, whenever the Collation of Bartolucci *coincides* with that of Bentley (for it is not nearly so complete or so minute as the latter), a small letter (*d*) is added to the note.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. THEY which WERE from the Beginning Eyewitnesses and Ministers of the WORD delivered them unto us. 3. consecutive order.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: ACCORDING TO LUKE. 5. King. 5. Wife. 7. Elisabeth.

14 And **thou** shalt have Joy and Gladness; and many shall rejoice at his BIRTH.

15 For he shall be great in the sight of the LORD, and shall drink neither Wine nor Strong-drink; and he shall be filled with the holy Ghost, even from his Mother's Womb.

16 And many of the CHILDREN of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their GOD.

17 And **he** shall go before him in the Spirit and Power of Elias, to turn the Hearts of the Fathers to the Children, and the Disobedient to the Wisdom of the Just; to make ready a People prepared for the Lord.

18 And Zacharias said unto the ANGEL, Whereby shall I know this? for **I** am an Old-man, and my WIFE well stricken in YEARS.

19 And the ANGEL answering said unto him, **I** am *Gabriel, that STAND in the presence of GOD; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings.

20 And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the Day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my WORDS, which shall be fulfilled in their SEASON.

21 And the PEOPLE waited for ZACHARIAS, and marvelled that he TARRIED so long in the TEMPLE.

22 And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived That he had seen a Vision in the TEMPLE: for **he**

beckoned unto them, and remained speechless.

23 And it came to pass, that, as soon as the DAYS of his MINISTRATION were accomplished, he departed to his *own* HOUSE.

24 And after Those DAYS *his WIFE Elisabeth conceived, and hid herself five Months, saying,

25 Thus hath the LORD dealt with Me in the Days wherein he looked on *me*, to take away my REPROACH among Men.

§ III.

26 And in the SIXTH MONTH the ANGEL Gabriel was sent †from GOD unto a City of GALILEE, named Nazareth,

27 To a Virgin espoused to a Man whose Name was Joseph, of the House of David; and the VIRGIN'S NAME *was* Mary.

28 And †the ANGEL came in unto her, and said, Hail, *thou that art* highly favoured, the LORD *is* with thee: [blessed *art thou* among Women.]

29 And [when she saw *him*,] SHE was troubled at †his SAYING, and cast in her mind what manner of SALUTATION this should be.

30 And the ANGEL said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found Favour with GOD.

31 And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy Womb, and bring forth a Son, and shalt call his NAME Jesus.

32 **He** shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord GOD shall give unto him the THRONE of *his FATHER David:

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—19. THAT Gabriel who STANDS. 32. David his FATHER.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—26. by GOD. See 28 (d), 29 (d).

24. Elisabeth his WIFE
28. he came (d). 29. the SAYING (d).

33 And he shall reign over the HOUSE of Jacob for EVER; and of his KINGDOM there shall be no End.

34 Then said Mary unto the ANGEL, How shall this be, seeing I know not a Man?

35 And the ANGEL answered and said unto her, The holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the Power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also *that* HOLY thing which shall be BORN of thee shall be called the Son of God.

36 And, behold, * thy COUSIN Elisabeth, ~~she~~ hath also conceived a Son in her Old-age: and this is the sixth Month with HER, who was CALLED barren.

37 For † with GOD * nothing shall be impossible.

38 And Mary said, Behold the HANDMAID of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy WORD. And the ANGEL departed from her.

§ IV.

39 And Mary arose in those DAYS, and went into the HILL-COUNTRY with Haste, into a City of Juda;

40 And entered into the HOUSE of Zacharias, and saluted ELISABETH.

41 And it came to pass, that, when ELISABETH heard the SALUTATION of MARY, the BABE leaped in her WOMB; and ELISABETH was filled with the holy Ghost:

42 And she spake out with a loud † Voice, and said, Blessed *art thou* among Women, and blessed *is* the FRUIT of thy WOMB.

43 And whence *is* this to me,

that the MOTHER of my LORD should come to me?

44 For, lo, as soon as the VOICE of thy SALUTATION sounded in mine EARS, the BABE leaped in my WOMB for Joy.

45 And blessed *is* SHE that BELIEVED: For there shall be a Performance of *those* THINGS which were TOLD her from the Lord.

§ V.

46 And Mary said, My SOUL doth magnify the LORD,

47 And my SPIRIT hath rejoiced in GOD my SAVIOUR.

48 For he hath regarded the LOW-ESTATE of his HANDMAIDEN: for, behold, from HENCEFORTH All GENERATIONS shall call me blessed.

49 For HE that is MIGHTY hath done to me great things; and holy *is* his NAME.

50 And his MERCY *is* on THEM that FEAR him, from Generation to Generation.

51 He hath shewed Strength with his Arm; he hath scattered the Proud in the Imagination of their Hearts.

52 He hath put down the Mighty from *their* Seats, and exalted them of low degree.

53 He hath filled the Hungry with good things; and the Rich he hath sent empty away.

54 He hath holpen * his Servant Israel, in remembrance of *his* Mercy;

55 As he spake to our FATHERS, to ABRAHAM, and to his SEED, for EVER.

56 And Mary abode with her

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—36. Elisabeth, thy COUSIN. 37. No Declaration shall be. 54. Israel, his Servant.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—37. of GOD No Declaration shall be. 42. Cry (*d*).

about three Months, and returned to her *own* HOUSE.

§ VI.

57 Now ELISABETH'S full TIME came that she should be DELIVERED; and she brought forth a Son.

58 And her NEIGHBOURS and *her* COUSINS heard How the Lord had shewed great MERCY upon her; and they rejoiced with her.

59 And it came to pass, that on the EIGHTH Day they came to circumcise the CHILD; and they called him Zacharias, after the NAME of his FATHER.

60 And his MOTHER answered and said, Not *so*; but he shall be called John.

61 And they said unto her, There is none of thy KINDRED that is called by this NAME.

62 And they made signs to his FATHER, HOW HE WOULD HAVE HIM CALLED.

63 And he asked for a Writing-table, and wrote, saying, His NAME is John. And they marvelled all.

64 And his MOUTH was opened immediately, and his TONGUE *loosed*, and he spake, and praised GOD.

65 And Fear came on ALL that DWELT round about them: and All these SAYINGS were noised abroad throughout All the HILL-COUNTRY of JUDÆA.

66 And All THEY that HEARD *them* laid *them* up in their HEARTS, saying, What manner of CHILD shall this be! † And the Hand of the Lord was with him.

§ VII.

67 And *his FATHER Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,

68 Blessed *be* the Lord GOD of ISRAEL; For he hath visited and redeemed his PEOPLE,

69 And hath raised up an Horn of Salvation for us in †the HOUSE of *his SERVANT David;

70 As he spake by the Mouth of *his HOLY Prophets, which have been since the World began:

71 That we should be saved from our Enemies, and from the Hand of ALL that HATE us;

72 To perform the Mercy *promised* to our FATHERS, and to remember his holy Covenant;

73 The Oath which he sware *to our FATHER Abraham,

74 That he would GRANT unto us, that we being delivered out of the Hand of our ENEMIES might serve him without fear,

75 In Holiness and Righteousness before him, †All the DAYS of our LIFE.

76 And †*thou*, Child, shalt be called the Prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before [the Face of] the Lord to prepare his Ways;

77 To GIVE Knowledge of Salvation unto his PEOPLE by the Remission of their Sins,

78 Through the tender Mercy of our God; whereby the Dayspring from on high hath visited us,

79 To give light to THEM that SIT in Darkness and *in* the Shadow of Death, to GUIDE our FEET into the Way of Peace.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—67. Zacharias his FATHER. 69. David his SERVANT. 70. THOSE HOLY Prophets of his which. 73. to Abraham our FATHER.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—66. For also the Hand. 69. the House of David his Servant. 75. All our DAYS. And (*d*). 76. also *thou*. See 76 (*d*).

80 And the CHILD grew, and waxed strong in Spirit, and was in the DESERTS till the Day of his Shewing unto ISRAEL.

CHAPTER II.

§ VIII.

1 And it came to pass in those DAYS, that there went out a Decree from Cæsar Augustus, that All the WORLD should be taxed.

2 † And This TAXING was first made when Cyrenius was governor of SYRIA.

3 And all went to be taxed, every one into *his* OWN City.

4 And Joseph also went up from GALILEE, out of the City of Nazareth, into JUDÆA, unto the City of David, which is called Bethlehem; because he WAS of the House and Lineage of David:

5 To be taxed with Mary his ESPOUSED [Wife], being great with child.

6 And so it was, that, while they WERE there, the DAYS were accomplished that she should be DELIVERED.

7 And she brought forth her FIRSTBORN SON, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a † MANGER; because there was no Room for them in the INN.

(§ IX.)

8 And there were in the SAME COUNTRY Shepherds abiding in the field, keeping Watch over their FLOCK by NIGHT.

9 And, [lo,] the Angel of the Lord came upon them, and the Glory of the Lord shone round

about them: and they were sore afraid.

10 And the ANGEL said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great Joy, which shall be to All PEOPLE.

11 For unto you is born This-day in the City of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

12 And this *shall be* a † SIGN unto you; ye shall find the Babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a † MANGER.

13 And suddenly there was with the ANGEL a Multitude of the heavenly Host praising GOD, and saying,

14 Glory to God in the highest, and on Earth Peace, Good-will toward Men.

§ X.

15 And it came to pass, as the ANGELS were gone away from them into HEAVEN, the SHEPHERDS said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this THING which is COME-TO-PASS, which the LORD hath made known unto us.

16 And they came with haste, and found MARY, and JOSEPH, and the BABE lying in a MANGER.

17 And when they had seen *it*, they made known [abroad] *the SAYING which was TOLD them concerning this CHILD.

18 And All THEY that HEARD *it* wondered at *those* THINGS which were TOLD them by the SHEPHERDS.

19 But MARY kept All [these]

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. THAT SAYING which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—2. This became the first Taxing, when. || 7. Manger. 12. Sign. 12. Manger. See 5 (d), 9, 17, 19.

|| About fifteen years after this time.

THINGS, and pondered *them* in her HEART.

20 And the SHEPHERDS returned, glorifying and praising GOD for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.

§ XI.

21 And when eight Days were accomplished for the CIRCUMCISING of †the CHILD, his NAME was called Jesus, * which was so NAMED of the ANGEL before he was CONCEIVED in the WOMB.

§ XII.

22 And when the †DAYS of her PURIFICATION according to the LAW of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present *him* to the LORD;—

23 As it is written in the Law of the Lord, “Every Male that openeth the Womb shall be called holy to the Lord;” †—

24 And to OFFER a Sacrifice according to THAT which is SAID in †the Law of the Lord, “A Pair of Turtledoves, or Two Young Pigeons.” †

§ XIII.

25 And, behold, there was a Man in Jerusalem, whose Name was Simeon; and the same MAN was just and devout, waiting for the Consolation of ISRAEL: and the holy Ghost was upon him.

26 And it was revealed unto him by the HOLY GHOST, that he should not see Death, before he had seen the Lord's CHRIST.

27 And he came by the SPIRIT into the TEMPLE: and when the

PARENTS BROUGHT-IN the CHILD Jesus, to DO for him after the CUSTOM of the LAW,

28 Then took *he* him up in his ARMS, and blessed GOD, and said,

29 Lord, now letteth thou thy SERVANT depart in Peace, according to thy WORD:

30 For mine EYES have seen thy SALVATION,

31 Which thou hast prepared before the Face of All PEOPLE;

32 A Light to lighten the Gentiles, and the Glory of thy People Israel.

33 And †Joseph and his MOTHER marvelled at *those* THINGS which were SPOKEN of him.

34 And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his MOTHER, Behold, this *child* is set for the Fall and Rising-again of many in ISRAEL; and for a Sign which shall be spoken against;—

35 Yea, a Sword shall pierce through * Thy Own SOUL also,— that the Thoughts of Many Hearts may be revealed.

§ XIV.

36 And there was one Anna, a Prophetess, the Daughter of Phanuel, of the Tribe of Aser: *she* was of a great Age, and had lived with †an Husband seven Years from her VIRGINITY;

37 And *she* was a Widow †of about fourscore and four Years, which departed not from the TEMPLE, but served God with Fastings and Prayers Night and Day.

38 And †*she* coming in †That INSTANT gave thanks likewise

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—21. THAT which was NAMED. 35. the SOUL of Thee Thyself also.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—21. *him*, his NAME. 22. Days of her Purification. 24. the LAW of. 33. his FATHER and MOTHER. 36. an HUSBAND. 37. until fourscore and. 38. *she* (*d*). 38. THAT Instant.

‡ 23. Exod. xxii. 29. 24. Lev. xii. 8.

unto †the LORD, and spake of him to All THEM that LOOKED-FOR Redemption in Jerusalem.

§ XV.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the LAW of the Lord, they returned into GALILEE, to their-own City Nazareth.

40 And the CHILD grew, and waxed strong [in Spirit], filled with Wisdom: and the Grace of God was upon him.

41 *Now his PARENTS went to Jerusalem every Year at the FEAST of the PASSOVER.

§ XVI.

42 And when he was twelve Years old, they went up [to Jerusalem] after the CUSTOM of the FEAST.

43 And when they had fulfilled the DAYS, as they RETURNED, *the CHILD Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and †Joseph and h is MOTHER knew not of *it*.

44 But they, supposing him to h ave been in the COMPANY, went a Day's Journey; and they sought him among *their* KINSFOLK and ACQUAINTANCE.

45 And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.

46 And it came to pass, that after three Days they found him in the TEMPLE, sitting in the Midst of the DOCTORS, both hearing them, and asking them questions.

47 And ALL [that HEARD him] were astonished at his UNDERSTANDING and ANSWERS.

48 And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his MOTHER said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy FATHER and I †have sought thee sorrowing.

49 And he said unto them, How is it That ye sought me? wist ye not That I must be about my FATHER'S BUSINESS?

50 And *they* understood not the SAYING which he spake unto them.

51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his MOTHER kept All †these SAYINGS in her HEART.

52 And Jesus increased †in Wisdom and Stature, and in Favour with God and Man.

CHAPTER III.

§ XVII.

1 Now in the fifteenth Year of the REIGN of Tiberius Cæsar, Pontius Pilate being Governor of JUDÆA, and Herod being tetrarch of GALILEE, and *his BROTHER Philip tetrarch of ITURÆA and of the Region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of ABILENE,

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the †High-priests, the Word of God came unto John the SON of †ZACHARIAS in the WILDERNESS.

3 And he came into All the †COUNTRY about JORDAN, preaching the Baptism of Repentance for the Remission of Sins;

4 As it is written in the Book of the Words of Esaias the PROPHET, [saying,] “The Voice of

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—41. And his. 43. Jesus the CHILD. 1. Philip his BROTHER.
 † VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—38. GOD, and spake (*d*). 43. his PARENTS knew.
 48. seek thee. 51. the SAYINGS. 52. in WISDOM and Stature. 2. High-priest (*d*).
 2 Zacharias. 3. Country. See 40 (*d*), 42 (*d*), 47 (*d*), 4 (*d*).

one crying in the WILDERNESS, Prepare ye the WAY of the Lord, make his PATHS straight.

5 Every Valley shall be filled, and Every Mountain and Hill shall be brought low; and the CROOKED shall be made straight, and the ROUGH Ways *shall be* made smooth;

6 And All Flesh shall see the SALVATION of GOD." †

7 Then said he to the MULTITUDE that CAME-FORTH to be baptized of him, O Generation of Vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the WRATH TO-COME?

8 Bring forth therefore Fruits worthy of REPENTANCE, and begin not to say within yourselves, We have ABRAHAM to *our* Father: for I say unto you, That GOD is able of these STONES to raise up CHILDREN unto ABRAHAM.

9 And now also the AXE is laid unto the ROOT of the TREES: Every Tree therefore which bringeth not forth good Fruit is hewn down, and cast into the Fire.

10 And the PEOPLE asked him, saying, What † shall we do then?

11 He † answereth and saith unto them, HE that HATH Two Coats, let him impart to HIM that HATH none; and HE that HATH Meat, let him do likewise.

§ XVIII.

12 Then came also Publicans to be baptized, and said unto him, Master, what † shall we do?

13 And HE said unto them, Exact no more than THAT which is APPOINTED you.

14 And the Soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, † And what shall *we* do? And he said unto them, Do violence to No man, neither accuse *any* falsely; and be content with your WAGES.

(§ XIX.)

15 And as the PEOPLE were in expectation, and all men mused in their HEARTS of JOHN, whether *he* were the CHRIST, or not;

16 JOHN answered, saying unto *them* all, *I* indeed baptize you with Water; but one MIGHTIER than I cometh, the LATCHET of whose SHOES I am not worthy to unloose: *he* shall baptize You with the holy Ghost and with Fire:

17 Whose FAN *is* in his HAND, † and he will thoroughly purge his FLOOR, and will gather the WHEAT into his GARNER; but the CHAFF he will burn with Fire unquenchable.

18 And many other things in *his* exhortation preached he unto the PEOPLE.

19 But HEROD the TETRARCH, being reproved by him for Herodias *his BROTHER Philip's WIFE, and for all the Evils which HEROD had done,

20 Added [*yet*] this above all, that he shut up JOHN in † PRISON.

§ XX.

21 Now when All the PEOPLE were BAPTIZED, it came to pass, that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the HEAVEN was opened,

22 And the HOLY GHOST de-

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—19. the WIFE of Philip his BROTHER.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—10. should we. 11. answered and said (*d*). 12. should we. 14. What also should *we* do? 17. to thoroughly purge his FLOOR, and to gather (*d*). 20. Prison. See 20.

‡ 6. Isaiah xl. 3; lii. 10.

scended in a Bodily Shape †like a Dove upon him, and a Voice came from Heaven, [which said,] **Thou** art my BELOVED SON; in thee I am well pleased.

§ XXI.

23 And JESUS himself began to be about thirty Years *of age*, being †(as was supposed) the Son of Joseph, which was *the son* of HELI,

24 Which was *the son* of MATTHAT, which was *the son* of LEVI, which was *the son* of MELCHI, which was *the son* of JANNA, which was *the son* of JOSEPH,

25 Which was *the son* of MATTATHIAS, which was *the son* of AMOS, which was *the son* of NAUM, which was *the son* of ESLI, which was *the son* of NAGGE,

26 Which was *the son* of MAATH, which was *the son* of MATTATHIAS, which was *the son* of SEMEI, which was *the son* of JOSEPH, which was *the son* of JUDA,

27 Which was *the son* of JOANNA, which was *the son* of RHESA, which was *the son* of ZOROBABEL, which was *the son*

§ XXII.

of SALATHIEL, which was *the son* of NERI,

28 Which was *the son* of MELCHI, which was *the son* of ADDI, which was *the son* of COSAM, which was *the son* of ELMODAM, which was *the son* of ER,

29 Which was *the son* of JOSE, which was *the son* of ELIEZER, which was *the son* of JORIM,

which was *the son* of MATTHAT, which was *the son* of LEVI,

30 Which was *the son* of SIMEON, which was *the son* of JUDA, which was *the son* of JOSEPH, which was *the son* of JONAN, which was *the son* of ELIAKIM,

31 Which was *the son* of MELEA, which was *the son* of MENAN, which was *the son* of MATTATHA, which was *the son*

§ XXIII.

of NATHAN, which was *the son* of DAVID,

32 Which was *the son* of JESSE, which was *the son* of OBED, which was *the son* of BOOZ, which was *the son* of SALMON, which was *the son* of NAASSON,

33 Which was *the son* of AMINADAB, which was *the son* of ARAM, which was *the son* of ESROM, which was *the son* of PHARES, which was *the son* of JUDA,

34 Which was *the son* of JACOB, which was *the son* of ISAAC, which was *the son*

§ XXIV.

of ABRAHAM, which was *the son* of THARA, which was *the son* of NACHOR.

35 Which was *the son* of SARUCH, which was *the son* of RAGAU, which was *the son* of PHALEC, which was *the son* of HEBER, which was *the son* of SALA,

36 Which was *the son* of CAINAN, which was *the son* of ARPHAXAD, which was *the son* of SEM, which was *the son* of NOE, which was *the son* of LAMECH,

37 Which was *the son* of MATHUSALA, which was *the son* of ENOCH, which was *the son* of

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—22. as a Dove. JOSEPH. See 22 (d).

23. the Son (as was supposed) of

JARED, which was *the son* of MALELEEL, which was *the son* of CAINAN,

38 Which was *the son* of ENOS, which was *the son* of SETH, which was *the son* of ADAM, which was *the son* of GOD.

CHAPTER IV.

§ XXV.

1 And Jesus being full of the holy Ghost returned from JORDAN, and was led by the SPIRIT † into the WILDERNESS,

2 Being forty Days tempted of the DEVIL. And in those DAYS he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he [afterward] hungered.

3 And the DEVIL said unto him, If thou be the Son of GOD, command this STONE that it be made Bread.

4 And † Jesus answered him, [saying,] It is written, "That MAN shall not live by Bread alone, [but by Every Word of God.]" †

§ XXVI.

5 And † the DEVIL, taking him up into an high Mountain, shewed unto him All the KINGDOMS of the WORLD in a Moment of Time.

6 And the DEVIL said unto him, All this POWER will I give Thee, and the GLORY of them: For that is delivered unto Me; and to whomsoever I will I give it.

7 If *thou* therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine.

8 And † JESUS answered and said unto him, [Get thee behind me, Satan: for] it is written,

"Thou shalt worship the Lord thy GOD, and Him only shalt thou serve." †

(§ XXVII.)

9 And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a PINNACLE of the TEMPLE, and said unto him, If thou be the SON of GOD, cast thyself down from hence:

10 For it is written, "He shall give his ANGELS charge over thee, to KEEP thee:

11 "And in *their* Hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy FOOT against a Stone." †

12 And JESUS answering said unto him, It is said, "Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy GOD." †

§ XXVIII.

13 And when the DEVIL had ended All the Temptation, he departed from him for a Season.

14 And JESUS returned in the POWER of the SPIRIT into GALILEE: and there went out a Fame of him through All the REGION round about.

15 And *he* taught in their SYNAGOGUES, being glorified of all.

§ XXIX.

16 And he came to NAZARETH, where he had been brought up: and, as his CUSTOM was, he went into the SYNAGOGUE on the SABBATH DAY, and stood up for to read.

17 And there was delivered unto him the Book of *the PROPHEET Esaias. And when he had opened the BOOK, he found the PLACE where it was written,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. Esaias the PROPHEET.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. in the WILDERNESS. 4. JESUS. 5. bringing him onward, he shewed (*d*). 8. Jesus. See 2 (*d*), 4, 4 (*d*), 8.

‡ 4. Deut. viii. 3. † 8. Deut. x. 20. † 11. Psa. xci. 11. † 12. Deut. vi. 16.

18 "The Spirit of the Lord *is* upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the Poor; he hath sent me [to heal the BROKEN-HEARTED], to preach Deliverance to the Captives, and Recovering-of-sight to the Blind, to set at Liberty them that are bruised,

19 "To preach the acceptable Year of the Lord." ‡

20 And he closed the BOOK, and he gave *it* again to the MINISTER, and sat down. And the EYES of all them that were in the SYNAGOGUE were fastened on him.

21 And he began to say unto them, This-day is this SCRIPTURE fulfilled in your EARS.

22 And all bare him witness, and wondered at * the GRACIOUS WORDS which PROCEEDED out of his MOUTH. And they said, Is not this Joseph's SON?

23 And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this PROVERB, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done † in CAPERNAUM, do also here in thy COUNTRY.

24 And he said, Verily I say unto you, No Prophet is accepted in his OWN-COUNTRY.

25 But I tell you of a Truth, Many Widows were in ISRAEL in the DAYS of Elias, when the HEAVEN was shut up three Years and six Months, when great Famine was throughout All the LAND;

26 But unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, a

city of SIDON, unto a Woman *that was* a Widow.

27 And Many Lepers were in ISRAEL in the time of Eliseus the PROPHET; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the SYRIAN.

28 And all they in the SYNAGOGUE, when they heard these things, were filled with Wrath,

29 And rose up, and thrust him out of the CITY, and led him unto the BROW of the HILL whereon their CITY was built, that they might CAST-HIM-DOWN headlong.

30 But ~~he~~ passing through the Midst of them went his † way,

§ XXX.

31 And came down to Capernaum, a City of GALILEE, and taught them on the SABBATH days.

32 And they were astonished at his DOCTRINE: For his WORD was with Power.

33 And in the SYNAGOGUE there was a Man, which had a Spirit of an unclean Devil, and cried out with a loud Voice,

34 [Saying,] Let *us* alone; what have we to do with thee, *thou* Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art; the HOLY-ONE of GOD.

35 And JESUS rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the DEVIL had thrown him in the MIDST, he came out of him, and hurt him not.

36 And they were all amazed, and spake among themselves, saying, What a WORD *is* this! For

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—22. THOSE WORDS of GRACE which. 30. way. And he came.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. unto CAPERNAUM. See 18 (d), 34 (d).

‡ 19. Isaiah lxi. 1.

with Authority and Power he commandeth the UNCLEAN Spirits, and they come out.

37 And the Fame of him went out into Every Place of the COUNTRY round about.

§ XXXI.

38 And he arose †out of the SYNAGOGUE, and entered into Simon's HOUSE. And SIMON'S † WIFE'S-MOTHER was taken with a great Fever; and they besought him for her.

39 And he stood over her, and rebuked the FEVER; and it left her: and immediately she arose and ministered unto them.

§ XXXII.

40 Now when the SUN was setting, all they that had any sick with divers Diseases brought them unto him; and HE laid *his* HANDS on every one of them, and healed them.

41 And Devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, **Thou** art [CHRIST] the SON of GOD. And he rebuking *them* suffered them not to speak: For they knew that he was CHRIST.

§ XXXIII.

42 And when it was Day, he departed and went into a Desert Place: and the PEOPLE sought him, and came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not DEPART from them.

43 And HE said unto them, I must preach the KINGDOM of GOD to OTHER Cities also: For therefore †am I sent.

§ XXXIV.

44 And he preached †in the SYNAGOGUES of GALILEE.

CHAPTER V.

1 And it came to pass, that, as the PEOPLE PRESSED upon him to HEAR the WORD of GOD, ~~he~~ stood by the LAKE of Gennesaret,

2 And saw † Two SHIPS standing by the LAKE: but the FISHERMEN were gone out of them, and were washing *their* NETS.

3 And he entered into one of the SHIPS, which was SIMON'S, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the LAND. And he sat down, and taught the PEOPLE out of the SHIP.

4 Now when he had left speaking, he said unto SIMON, Launch out into the DEEP, and let down your NETS for a Draught.

5 And †SIMON answering said [unto him], Master, we have toiled All the NIGHT, and have taken Nothing: nevertheless at thy WORD I will let down the †NET.

6 And when they had this done, they inclosed a great Multitude of Fishes: and their †NET brake.

7 And they beckoned unto * *their* PARTNERS, which were in the OTHER Ship, that they should come and HELP them. And they came, and filled Both the SHIPS, so that they began to sink.

8 When Simon Peter saw *it*, he fell down at †JESUS' KNEES, saying, Depart from me; For I am a sinful Man, O Lord.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—7. THOSE PARTNERS *of theirs* which were.

+ VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—38. from the SYNAGOGUE (*d*). 38. Wife's-mother. 43. was I sent. 44. unto the SYNAGOGUES. 2. two Ships. 5. Simon. 5. NETS. 6. NETS were rent. 8. Jesus' KNEES. See 41 (*d*), 5.

9 For he was astonished, and ALL that were with him, at the DRAUGHT of the FISHES which they had taken:

10 And so *was* also James, and John, the Sons of Zebedee, which were Partners with SIMON. And †JESUS said unto SIMON, Fear not; from HENCEFORTH thou shalt catch Men.

11 And when they had brought *their* SHIPS to LAND, they forsook all, and followed him.

§ XXXV.

12 And it came to pass, when he WAS in a certain CITY, behold a Man full of Leprosy: who seeing JESUS fell on *his* Face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt; thou canst make Me clean.

13 And he put forth *his* HAND, and touched him, saying, I will: be thou clean. And immediately the LEPROSY departed from him.

14 And *he* charged him to tell no man: but go, and shew thyself to the PRIEST, and offer for thy CLEANSING, according as Moses commanded, for a Testimony unto them.

§ XXXVI.

15 But so much the more went there a FAME abroad of him: and great Multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed [by him] of their INFIRMITIES.

16 And *he* withdrew himself into the WILDERNESS, and prayed.

§ XXXVII.

17 And it came to pass on a certain DAY, as *he* was teaching, that there were †Pharisees and Doctors of the Law sitting by, which were come out of Every

Town of GALILEE, and Judæa, and Jerusalem: and the Power of the Lord was †*present* to HEAL them.

18 And, behold, Men brought in a Bed a Man which was taken with a palsy: and they sought *means* to bring him in, and to lay *him* before him.

19 And when they could not find by what *way* they might bring him in because of the MULTITUDE, they went upon the HOUSE-TOP, and let him down through the TILING with *his* COUCH into the MIDST before †JESUS.

20 And when he saw their FAITH, he said [unto him], Man, thy SINS are forgiven thee.

21 And the SCRIBES and the PHARISEES began to reason, saying, Who is this which speaketh Blasphemies? Who can forgive Sins, but GOD alone?

22 But when JESUS perceived their THOUGHTS, he answering said unto them, What reason ye in your HEARTS?

23 Whether is easier, to say, Thy SINS be forgiven thee; or to say, Rise up and walk?

24 But that ye may know That the SON of MAN hath Power upon EARTH to forgive Sins, (he said unto the SICK-OF-THE-PALSY,) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy COUCH, and go into thine HOUSE.

25 And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his *own* HOUSE, glorifying GOD.

26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified GOD, and were

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—10. Jesus. 17. PHARISEES. 17. *present* for him to HEAL. And. 19. them all. And (d). See 15 (d), 20 (d).

filled with Fear, saying, We have seen Strange-things To-day.

§ XXXVIII.

27 And after these things he went forth, and saw a Publican, named Levi, sitting at the RECEIPT-OF-CUSTOM: and he said unto him, Follow me.

28 And he left all, rose up, and followed him.

29 And LEVI made him a great Feast in his own HOUSE: and there was a great Company of Publicans and of others that sat down with them.

30 But †their SCRIBES and PHARISEES murmured against his DISCIPLES, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with †Publicans and Sinners?

31 And †JESUS answering said unto them, THEY that are WHOLE need not a Physician; but THEY that are SICK.

32 I came not to call the Righteous, but Sinners to Repentance.

§ XXXIX.

33 And THEY said unto him, [Why do] the DISCIPLES of John fast often, and make Prayers, and likewise **the disciples* of the PHARISEES; but THINE eat and drink?

34 And HE said unto them, Can ye make the CHILDREN of the BRIDECHAMBER fast, while the BRIDEGROOM is with them?

35 But the Days will come, when the BRIDEGROOM shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in Those DAYS.

36 And he spake also a Parable unto them; No man putteth a Piece †of a new Garment upon an old; if otherwise, then both the NEW †maketh a rent, and *the Piece that was *taken* out of the NEW †agreeth not with the OLD.

37 And no man putteth new Wine into old Bottles; else the †NEW Wine will burst the BOTTLES, and be spilled, and the BOTTLES shall perish.

38 But new Wine must be put into new Bottles; [and both are preserved.]

39 No man [also] having drunk old *wine* [straightway] desireth new: for he saith, The OLD is †better.

CHAPTER VI.

§ XL.

1 And it came to pass on the [second] Sabbath [after the first], that he went through the †CORN-FIELDS; and his DISCIPLES plucked the EARS-OF-CORN, and did eat, rubbing *them* in *their* HANDS.

2 And certain of the PHARISEES said [unto them], Why do ye that which is not lawful [to do] on the SABBATH days?

3 And †JESUS answering them said, Have ye not read so much as this, what David did, when himself was an hungered, and THEY which †WERE with him;

4 [How] he went into the HOUSE of GOD, and did take and eat the SHEWBREAD, and gave [also] to THEM that were with

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—33. THOSE of the PHARISEES. 36. THAT Piece which was.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—30. the PHARISEES and their SCRIBES. 30. PUBLICANS. 31. Jesus. 36. rent from a new (*d*). 36. will make a rent, and the PIECE. 36. will not agree with (*d*). 37. NEW WINE. 39. good. 1. Corn-fields. 3. Jesus. 3. were. See 33 (*d*), 38 (*d*), 39, 39 (*d*), 1 (twice) (*d*), 2 (twice) (*d*), 4 (*d*), 4.

him; which it is not lawful to eat but for the PRIESTS alone?

5 And he said unto them, [That] the SON of MAN is Lord also of the SABBATH.

§ XLI.

6 And it came to pass [also] on Another Sabbath, that he entered into the SYNAGOGUE and taught: and there was *a Man whose RIGHT HAND was withered.

7 And the SCRIBES and PHARISEES watched him, whether he would heal on the SABBATH day; that they might find an Accusation against him.

8 But *he* knew their THOUGHTS, and said to *the MAN which HAD the withered HAND, Rise up, and stand forth in the MIDST. And HE arose and stood forth.

9 Then said JESUS unto them, †I will ask you one thing; Is it lawful on the SABBATH days to do good, or to do evil? to save Life, or to destroy *it*?

10 And looking round about upon them all, he said unto †the MAN, Stretch forth thy HAND. And HE did so: and his HAND was restored [whole as the OTHER].

11 And *they* were filled with Madness; and communed one with another what they might do to JESUS.

§ XLII.

12 And it came to pass in those DAYS, that he went out into a MOUNTAIN to pray, and continued all night in PRAYER to GOD.

13 And when it was Day, he called *unto him* his DISCIPLES:

and of them he chose twelve, whom also he named Apostles;

14 Simon, (whom he also named Peter,) and Andrew his BROTHER, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew,

15 Matthew and Thomas, James the *son* of †ALPHEUS, *and Simon CALLED Zelotes,

16 And Judas *the brother* of James, and Judas Iscariot, which [also] was the Traitor.

17 And he came down with them, and stood in the Plain, and †the Company of his Disciples, and a great MULTITUDE of PEOPLE out of All JUDEA and Jerusalem, and from the SEA-COAST of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their DISEASES;

18 And THEY that were †VEXED with unclean Spirits: and they were healed.

19 And the Whole MULTITUDE sought to touch him: For there went Virtue out of him, and healed *them* all.

§ XLIII.

20 And *he* lifted up his EYES on his DISCIPLES, and said, Blessed *be ye* POOR: For your's is the KINGDOM of GOD.

21 Blessed *are* YE that HUNGER now: For ye shall be filled. Blessed *are* YE that WEEP now: For ye shall laugh.

(§ XLIV.)

22 Blessed are ye, when MEN shall hate you, and when they shall separate you *from their company*, and shall reproach *you*, and

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—6. a Man there whose. 8. THAT MAN which. 15. and THAT Simon who was CALLED.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—9. I ask you, whether it be lawful on the SABBATH day (*d*). 10. him, Stretch. 15. Alphæus. 17. a great Company (*d*). 18. distressed by unclean Spirits were healed (*d*). See 5 (*d*), 6, 10 (*d*), 16.

cast out your NAME as evil, for the SON of MAN'S sake.

23 Rejoice ye in That DAY, and leap for joy: for, behold, your REWARD is great in HEAVEN: for † in the like manner did their FATHERS unto the PROPHETS.

(§ XLV.)

24 But Woe unto YOU that are RICH! For ye have received your CONSOLATION.

25 Woe unto YOU that are † FULL! For ye shall hunger. † Woe unto YOU that LAUGH now! For ye shall mourn and weep.

26 Woe [unto you], when All MEN shall speak well of you! for † so did their FATHERS to the FALSE-PROPHETS.

(§ XLVI.)

27 But I say unto YOU which HEAR, Love your ENEMIES, do good to THEM which HATE you,

28 Bless THEM that CURSE you, [and] pray for THEM which DESPITEFULLY-USE you.

29 And unto HIM that SMITETH thee on the *one* CHEEK offer also the OTHER; and HIM that TAKETH-AWAY Thy CLOKE forbid not to take thy COAT also.

§ XLVII.

30 Give to EVERY man that ASKETH of thee; and of HIM that TAKETH-AWAY thy GOODS ask *them* not again.

31 And as ye would that MEN should do to you, do [ye also] to them likewise.

32 For if ye love THEM which LOVE you, What Thank have ye? for SINNERS also love THOSE that LOVE them.

33 † And if ye do-good to THEM which DO-GOOD to you, What Thank have ye? [for] SINNERS also do *even* the SAME.

34 And if ye lend to *them* of whom ye hope to receive, What Thank have ye? [for] SINNERS also lend to Sinners, to receive AS-MUCH again.

35 But love ye your ENEMIES, and do good, and lend, hoping for Nothing again; and your REWARD shall be great, and ye shall be the Children of the † HIGHEST: For he is kind unto the UNTHANKFUL and to the Evil.

§ XLVIII.

36 Be ye [therefore] merciful, as your FATHER [also] is merciful.

37 Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven:

38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good Measure, pressed down, [and] shaken together, [and] running over, shall men give into your BOSOM. For with the SAME Measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again.

39 And he spake a Parable unto them, Can the Blind lead the Blind? shall they not both fall into the Ditch?

§ XLIX.

40 The Disciple is not above his MASTER: but every-one that is perfect shall be as his MASTER.

41 And why beholdest thou *the MOTE that is in thy BROTHER'S EYE, but perceivest not *the BEAM that is in *thine* OWN Eye?

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—41. THAT MOTE which is. 41. THAT BEAM which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. the SAME did. 25. FULL now! 25. Woe, YE that LAUGH now! 26. the SAME did they to the FALSE-PROPHETS (d). 33. For if also ye do-good. 35. Highest. See 26, 28, 31 (d), 33, 34, 36 (d), 36, 38 (twice).

42 [Either] how canst thou say to thy BROTHER, Brother, let me pull out *the MOTE that is in thine EYE, when thou thyself beholdest not the BEAM that is in thine own EYE? Thou Hypocrite, cast out first the BEAM out of thine own EYE, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out *the MOTE that is in thy BROTHER'S EYE.

43 For a good Tree bringeth not forth corrupt Fruit; neither †doth a corrupt Tree bring forth good Fruit.

44 For Every Tree is known by *his* OWN Fruit. For of Thorns men do not gather Figs, nor of a Bramble-bush gather they Grapes.

45 A GOOD Man out of the GOOD Treasure of †his HEART bringeth forth THAT which is GOOD; and an EVIL [Man] out of the EVIL [Treasure of his HEART] bringeth forth THAT which is EVIL: for of the †ABUNDANCE of the HEART his MOUTH speaketh.

46 And why call ye Me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

§ L.

47 WHOSOEVER COMETH to me, and heareth My SAYINGS, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like:

48 He is like a Man which built an House, and digged deep, and laid the Foundation on a ROCK: and when the Flood arose, the STREAM beat vehemently upon that HOUSE, and could not shake it: †for it was founded upon a ROCK.

49 But HE that HEARETH, and doeth not, is like a Man that without a Foundation built an House upon the EARTH; against which the STREAM did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell; and the RUIN of that HOUSE was great.

CHAPTER VII

§ LI.

1 Now when he had ended All his SAYINGS in the AUDIENCE of the PEOPLE, he entered into Capernaum.

2 And a certain Centurion's Servant, who was dear unto him, was sick, and ready to die.

3 And when he heard of JESUS, he sent unto him the Elders of the JEWS, beseeching him that he would come and heal his SERVANT.

4 And when they came to JESUS, THEY besought him instantly, saying, That he was worthy for whom he should do this:

5 For he loveth our NATION, and ~~he~~ hath built us a SYNAGOGUE.

6 Then JESUS went with them. And when he was now not far from the HOUSE, the CENTURION sent Friends [to him], saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter under my ROOF:

7 Wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come unto thee: but say in a Word, and †my SERVANT shall be healed.

8 For ~~I~~ also am a Man set under Authority, having under me

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—42. THAT MOTE which is. 42. THAT MOTE which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—43. again doth. 45. the HEART (*d*). 45. Abundance of the Heart. 48. because it was WELL-BUILT upon. But (*d*). 7. let my SERVANT be healed (*d*). See 42, 45 (twice) (*d*), 6 (*d*).

Soldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my SERVANT, Do this, and he doeth *it*.

9 When JESUS heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the PEOPLE that FOLLOWED him, I say unto you, I have not found So-great Faith, no, not in ISRAEL.

10 And THEY that were SENT, returning to the HOUSE, found the SERVANT whole [that had been sick].

§ LII.

11 And it came to pass the DAY-AFTER, that he went into a City called Nain; and [many of] his DISCIPLES went with him, and much People.

12 Now when he came nigh to the GATE of the CITY, behold, there was a dead man carried out, † the only Son of his MOTHER, and ~~she~~ was a Widow: and much People of the CITY was with her.

13 And when the LORD saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not.

14 And he came and touched the BIER: and THEY that BARE *him* stood still. And he said, Young-man, I say unto thee, Arise.

15 And HE that was DEAD sat up, and began to speak. And he delivered him to his MOTHER.

16 And there came a Fear on all: and they glorified GOD, saying, That a great Prophet is risen up among us; and, That GOD hath visited his PEOPLE.

17 And this RUMOUR of him

went forth throughout All JUDÆA, and [throughout] All the REGION round about.

§ LIII.

18 And the DISCIPLES of John shewed him of all these things.

19 And JOHN calling *unto him* two of his DISCIPLES sent *them* to † JESUS, saying, Art *thou* HE that should COME? or look we for Another?

20 When the MEN were come unto him, they said, John BAPTIST [hath] sent us unto thee, saying, Art *thou* HE that should COME? or look we for Another?

21 And in That *same* HOUR he cured many of *their* Infirmities and Plagues, and of evil Spirits; and unto many *that were* blind he gave † SIGHT.

22 Then † JESUS answering said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard; [*how* That] the Blind see, the Lame walk, the Lepers are cleansed, the Deaf hear, the Dead are raised, to the Poor the gospel is preached.

23 And blessed is *he*, whosoever shall not be offended in me.

§ LIV.

24 And when the MESSENGERS of John were departed, he began to speak unto the PEOPLE concerning John, What went ye out into the WILDERNESS for to see? A Reed shaken with the Wind?

25 But what went ye out for to see? A Man clothed in Soft Raiment? Behold, THEY which are GORGEOUSLY-APPARELLED, and live delicately, are in KINGS'-COURTS.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—12. the Only Son. 19. the LORD, saying (*d*). 22. he answering (*d*). 21. sight. See 10 (*d*), 11 (*d*), 17, 20 (*d*), 22.

26 But what went ye out for to see? A Prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a Prophet.

27 This is *he*, of whom it is written, "Behold, † I send my MESSENGER before thy Face, which shall prepare thy WAY before thee." †

28 [For] I say unto you, Among those that are born of Women there is not a greater [Prophet] than John [the BAPTIST]: but HE that is LEAST in the KINGDOM of GOD is greater than he.

29 And All the PEOPLE that heard *him*, and the PUBLICANS, justified GOD, being baptized with the BAPTISM of John.

30 But the PHARISEES and LAWYERS rejected the COUNSEL of GOD against themselves, being not baptized of him.

§ LV.

31 [And the Lord said,] Whereunto then shall I liken the MEN of this GENERATION? and to what are they like?

32 They are like unto *Children sitting in the Market-place, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept.

33 For John the BAPTIST came neither eating Bread nor drinking Wine; and ye say, He hath a Devil.

34 The SON of MAN is come eating and drinking; and ye say, Behold a gluttonous Man, and a

Winebibber, a Friend of Publicans and Sinners!

35 But WISDOM is justified of All her CHILDREN.

§ LVI.

36 And one of the PHARISEES desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the PHARISEE'S HOUSE, and sat down to meat.

37 And, behold, a Woman † in the CITY, which was a Sinner, when she knew That *Jesus* sat at meat in the PHARISEE'S HOUSE, brought an Alabaster-box of Ointment,

38 And stood † at his FEET behind *him* weeping, and began to wash his FEET with TEARS, and did wipe *them* with the HAIRS of her HEAD, and kissed his FEET, and anointed *them* with the OINTMENT.

39 Now when *the PHARISEE which had BIDDEN him saw *it*, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a Prophet, would have known who and what manner of WOMAN *this is* that toucheth him: For she is a Sinner.

40 And JESUS answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And HE saith, Master, say on.

41 There was a certain Creditor which had Two Debtors: the ONE owed five hundred Pence, and the OTHER fifty.

42 [And] when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. [Tell me] † therefore,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—32. THOSE Children which sit in the Market-place calling. 39 THAT PHARISEE which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—27. I send.

38 behind, at his FEET, weeping. 42. Which of them, therefore, will. See 28 (thrice) (d), 31 (d), 42 (twice).

† 27. Mal. iii. 1.

which of them will love him most?

43 SIMON answered and said, I suppose That *he*, to whom he forgave MOST. And HE said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged.

44 And he turned to the WOMAN, and said unto SIMON, Seest thou This WOMAN? I entered into Thine HOUSE, thou gavest me no Water for my FEET: but *she* hath washed My FEET with TEARS, and wiped *them* with †the HAIRS of her HEAD.

45 Thou gavest Me no Kiss: but this *woman* since the time I came in hath not ceased to kiss My FEET.

46 My HEAD with Oil thou didst not anoint: but this *woman* hath anointed †My FEET with Ointment.

47 Wherefore I say unto thee, Her SINS, which are MANY, are forgiven; For she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, *the same* †loveth little.

48 And he said unto her, Thy SINS are forgiven.

49 And THEY that SAT-AT-MEAT with him began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth Sins also.

50 And he said to the WOMAN, Thy FAITH hath saved thee; go in Peace.

CHAPTER VIII.

§ LVII.

1 And it came to pass AFTERWARD, that *he* went throughout every City and Village, preaching

and shewing the glad tidings of the KINGDOM of GOD: and the TWELVE *were* with him,

2 And certain Women, which had been healed of evil Spirits and Infirmities, *Mary CALLED MAGDALENE, out of whom went seven Devils,

3 And Joanna the Wife of Chuza Herod's Steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto him of their SUBSTANCE.

§ LVIII.

4 And when much People were gathered together, and * were come to him out of every City, he spake by a Parable:

5 A SOWER went out to SOW his SEED: and as he SOWED, some fell by the WAY-SIDE; and it was trodden down, and the FOWLS of the AIR devoured it.

6 And some fell upon a ROCK; and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it LACKED Moisture.

7 And some fell among THORNS; and the THORNS sprang up with it, and choked it.

8 And other fell on GOOD GROUND, and sprang up, and bare Fruit an hundredfold. And when he had said these things, he cried, HE that HATH Ears to hear, let him hear.

9 And his DISCIPLES asked him, [saying,] What †might this PARABLE be?

10 And HE said, Unto you it is given to know the MYSTERIES of the KINGDOM of GOD: but to OTHERS in Parables; that seeing

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. THAT Mary who was CALLED.

4. THEY which were COME.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—44. her Hair. Thou (d).

46. my FEET with. 47. also loveth.

9. might This PARABLE. See 9 (d).

they might not see, and hearing they might not understand.

11 Now the PARABLE is this: The SEED is the WORD of GOD.

12 THOSE by the WAY-SIDE are THEY that HEAR; then cometh the DEVIL, and taketh away the WORD out of their HEARTS, lest they should believe and be saved.

13 THEY on the ROCK *are they*, which, when they hear, receive the WORD with Joy; and these have no Root, which for a While believe, and in Time of Temptation fall away.

14 And THAT which FELL among THORNS are THEY, which, when they have HEARD, go forth, and are choked with Cares and Riches and Pleasures of *this* LIFE, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But THAT on the GOOD Ground are they, which in an honest and good Heart, having heard the WORD, keep *it*, and bring forth fruit with Patience.

16 No man, when he hath lighted a Candle, covereth it with a Vessel, or putteth *it* under a Bed; but setteth *it* on a Candlestick, [that THEY which ENTER-IN may see the LIGHT.]

17 For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest; neither *any thing* hid, that shall not be known and come abroad.

18 Take heed therefore how ye hear: for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have.

§ LIX.

19 Then came to him *his* MOTHER

and his BRETHREN, and could not come at him for the PRESS.

20 And it was told him [*by certain* which said], Thy MOTHER and thy BRETHREN stand without, desiring to see thee.

21 And HE answered and said unto them, My Mother and my Brethren are THESE which HEAR the WORD of GOD, and do it.

§ LX.

22 Now it came to pass on a certain DAY, that *he* went into a Ship with his DISCIPLES: and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the OTHER-SIDE of the LAKE. And they launched forth.

23 But as they sailed he fell asleep: and there came down a Storm of Wind on the LAKE; and they were filled *with water*, and were in jeopardy.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, Master, we perish. Then HE arose, and rebuked the WIND and the RAGING of the WATER: and they ceased, and there was a Calm.

25 And he said unto them, Where is your FAITH? And they being afraid wondered, saying one to another, What manner of man is this! For he commandeth even the WINDS and WATER, [and they obey him.]

26 And they arrived at the COUNTRY of the † GADARENES, which is over against GALILEE.

§ LXI.

27 And when he went forth to LAND, there met him out of the CITY † a certain Man, which had † Devils long Time, and ware no Clothes, neither abode in *any* House, but in the TOMBS.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—26. GERASENES (*d*). 27. a Certain Man. 27. Devils, and of long Time ware (*d*). See 16 (*d*), 20, 25 (*d*).

28 When he saw JESUS, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud Voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, *thou* Son of GOD MOST-HIGH? I beseech thee, torment Me not.

29 For he had commanded the UNCLEAN SPIRIT to come out of the MAN. For oftentimes it had caught him: and he was kept bound with Chains and in Fetters; and he brake the BANDS, and was driven † of the DEVIL into the WILDERNESS.

30 And JESUS asked him, [saying,] What is thy Name? And HE said, Legion: Because many Devils were entered into him.

31 And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the DEEP.

32 And there was there an Herd of many Swine feeding on the MOUNTAIN: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into *them*. And he suffered them.

33 Then went the DEVILS out of the MAN, and entered into the SWINE: and the HERD ran violently down a STEEP-PLACE into the LAKE, and were choked.

34 When THEY that FED *them* saw WHAT WAS DONE, they fled, and went and told *it* in the CITY and in the COUNTRY.

35 Then they went out to see WHAT WAS DONE; and came to JESUS, and found the MAN, out of whom the DEVILS were departed, sitting at the FEET of † JESUS, clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

36 THEY also which SAW *it* told

them by what means HE that was POSSESSED-OF-THE-DEVILS was healed.

37 Then the Whole MULTITUDE of the COUNTRY of the † GADARENES round about besought him to depart from them; For they were taken with great Fear:

§ LXII.

and *he* went up into the † SHIP, and returned back again.

38 Now the MAN out of whom the DEVILS were departed besought him that he might be with him: but † JESUS sent him away, saying,

39 Return to thine own HOUSE, and shew how great things GOD hath done unto thee. And he went his way, and published throughout the Whole CITY how great things JESUS had done unto him.

§ LXIII.

40 And it came to pass, that, when JESUS was RETURNED, the PEOPLE *gladly* received him: for they were all waiting for him.

41 And, behold, there came a Man named Jairus, and *he* was a Ruler of the SYNAGOGUE: and he fell down at † JESUS' FEET, and besought him that he would come into his HOUSE:

42 For he had one only Daughter, about twelve Years of Age, and *she* lay a dying. But as he WENT the PEOPLE thronged him.

43 And a Woman having an Issue of Blood twelve Years, which † had spent All her LIVING upon Physicians, neither could be healed of any,

44 Came behind *him*, and touched the BORDER of his GARMENT:

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—29. by. 35. JESUS. 37. GERASENES. 37. Ship. 38. he sent. 41. Jesus' FEET. 43. could not be healed by any, came behind. See 30 (*d.*

and immediately her ISSUE of BLOOD stanchèd.

45 And JESUS said, WHO TOUCHED me? When all denied, PETER [and THEY that were with him] said, Master, the MULTI-TUDE throng thee and press *thee*, and sayest thou, WHO TOUCHED me?

46 And JESUS said, Somebody hath touched me: for I perceive that Virtue is gone out of me.

47 And when the WOMAN saw That she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared [unto him] before All the PEOPLE for What Cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

48 And HE said unto her, Daughter, [be of good comfort:] thy FAITH hath made thee whole; go in Peace.

49 While he yet spake, there cometh one from the RULER-OF-THE-SYNAGOGUE'S *house*, saying [to him], Thy DAUGHTER is dead; trouble †not the MASTER.

50 But when JESUS heard *it*, he answered him, [saying,] Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole.

51 And when he came into the HOUSE, he suffered no man †to go in, save Peter, and †James, and John, and the FATHER and the MOTHER of the MAIDEN.

52 And all wept, and bewailed her: but HE said, Weep not; †she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to scorn, knowing That she was dead.

54 And he [put them all out,

and] took her by the HAND, and called, saying, MAID, arise.

55 And her SPIRIT came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat.

56 And her PARENTS were astonished: but HE charged them that they should tell no man WHAT WAS DONE.

CHAPTER IX.

§ LXIV.

1 Then he called his TWELVE Disciples together, and gave them Power and Authority over All DEVILS, and to cure Diseases.

2 And he sent them to preach the KINGDOM of GOD, and to heal [the SICK].

3 And he said unto them, Take Nothing for *your* JOURNEY, neither Staves, nor Scrip, neither Bread, neither Money; neither have Two Coats [apiece].

4 And Whatsoever House ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And whosoever will not receive you, when ye go out of that CITY, shake off the [very] DUST from your FEET for a Testimony against them.

6 And they departed, and went through the TOWNS, preaching the gospel, and healing every where.

(§ LXV.)

7 Now Herod the TETRARCH heard of ALL that was DONE [by him]: and he was perplexed, because that it was SAID of some, That John was risen from the Dead;

8 And of some, That Elias had appeared; and of others, That

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—49. no more the MASTER (*d*). 51. to go in with him, save (*d*). 52. for she (*d*). See 45 (*d*), 47 (*d*), 48 (*d*), 49, 50, 54 (*d*), 2 (*d*), 3 (*d*), 5, 7 (*d*).

† one of the OLD Prophets was risen again.

9 † And HEROD said, John have I beheaded: but who is this, of whom † I hear such things? And he desired to see him.

§ LXVI.

10 And the APOSTLES, when they were returned, told him all that they had done. And he took them, and went aside privately into a [desert Place belonging to the] City called Bethsaida.

11 And the PEOPLE, when they knew *it*, followed him: and he † received them, and spake unto them of the KINGDOM of GOD, and healed THEM that HAD Need of Healing.

§ LXVII.

12 † And when the DAY began to wear away, then came the TWELVE, and said unto him, Send the MULTITUDE away, that they may go into the TOWNS and † COUNTRY round about, and lodge, and get Victuals: For we are here in a Desert Place.

13 But he said unto them, Give *pr* them to eat. And THEY said, We have no more but Five Loaves and Two Fishes; except *wc* should go and buy Meat for All this PEOPLE. *

14 For they were about five thousand Men. And he said to his DISCIPLES, Make them sit down † by Fifties in a Company.

15 And they did so, and made them all sit down.

16 Then he took the FIVE Loaves and the TWO Fishes, and

looking up to HEAVEN, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the DISCIPLES to set before the MULTITUDE.

17 And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was taken up of Fragments that REMAINED to them twelve Baskets.

§ LXVIII.

18 And it came to pass, as he WAS alone praying, his DISCIPLES were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the PEOPLE that I am?

19 THEY answering said, John the BAPTIST; but some *say*, Elias; and others *say*, that *one of the OLD Prophets is risen again.

20 He said unto them, But whom say *pr* that I am? † PETER answering said, The CHRIST of GOD.

21 And HE straitly charged them, and commanded *them* to tell no man that thing;

22 Saying, The SON of MAN must suffer many things, and be rejected of the ELDERS and Chief-priests and Scribes, and be slain, and be raised the THIRD Day.

§ LXIX.

23 And he said to *them* all, If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his CROSS daily, and follow me.

24 For whosoever will save his LIFE shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his LIFE for my sake, the same shall save it.

25 For what is a Man advantaged, if he gain the whole WORLD, and lose Himself, or be cast away?

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—19. a certain Prophet of the ANCIENTS is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. a certain Prophet of the ANCIENTS was *d*). 9. But HEROD. 9. I hear. 11. gladly received (*d*). 12. The DAY already began to wear away when the TWELVE came (*d*). 12. Country. 14. as it were by. 20. Peter. See 10 (*d*).

26 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of MY words, of **him** shall the SON of MAN be ashamed, when he shall come in his *own* GLORY, and *in his* FATHER'S, and of the HOLY Angels.

27 But I tell you of a truth, there be SOME STANDING †here, which shall not taste of Death, till they see the KINGDOM of GOD.

§ LXX.

28 And it came to pass about an eight Days after these SAYINGS, he took †PETER and John and James, and went up into a MOUNTAIN to pray.

29 And as he PRAYED, the FASHION of his COUNTENANCE was altered, and his RAIMENT *was* white *and* glistening.

30 And, behold, there talked with him two Men, which were Moses and Elias:

31 Who appeared in Glory, and spake of his DECEASE, which he should accomplish at Jerusalem.

32 But PETER and THEY that were with him were heavy with Sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his GLORY, and * the TWO Men that STOOD with him.

33 And it came to pass, as they DEPARTED from him, PETER said unto JESUS, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three Tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said.

34 While he thus spake, there came a Cloud, and overshadowed them: and they feared as †they ENTERED into the CLOUD.

35 And there came a Voice out

of the CLOUD, saying, This is my †BELOVED Son: hear Him.

36 And when the VOICE was PAST, †JESUS was found alone. And they kept *it* close, and told no man in Those DAYS any of *those* things which they had seen.

§ LXXI.

37 And it came to pass, that on the NEXT Day, when they were come down from the HILL, much People met him.

38 And, behold, a Man of the COMPANY cried [out], saying, Master, I beseech thee, look upon my SON: For he is mine Only-child.

39 And, lo, a Spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out; and it teareth him that he foameth again, and bruising him, hardly departeth from him.

40 And I besought thy DISCIPLES to cast him out; and they could not.

41 And JESUS answering said, O faithless and perverse Generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? Bring thy SON hither.

42 And as he was yet a coming, the DEVIL threw him down, and tare *him*. And JESUS rebuked the UNCLEAN SPIRIT, and healed the CHILD, and delivered him again to his FATHER.

43 And they were all amazed at the MIGHTY-POWER of GOD.

§ LXXII.

But while they wondered every one at all things which JESUS did, he said unto his DISCIPLES,

44 * Let these SAYINGS sink down into your EARS: for the SON

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—32. THOSE TWO Men. 44. Sink *in* these SAYINGS down.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—27. there, which (*d*). 28. Peter. 34. they ENTERED.
35. CHOSEN SON (*d*). 36. Jesus. See 38 (*d*).

of MAN shall be delivered into the Hands of Men.

45 But THEY understood not this SAYING, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not: and they feared to ask him of that SAYING.

46 Then there arose a Reasoning among them, WHICH OF THEM SHOULD BE GREATEST.

47 And JESUS, perceiving the THOUGHT of their HEART, took a Child, and set him by him,

48 And said unto them, Whosoever shall receive This CHILD in my NAME receiveth Me: and whosoever shall receive Me receiveth HIM that SENT me: for HE that is LEAST among you all, the same † shall be great.

49 And † John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out † DEVILS in thy NAME; and we forbad him, Because he followeth not with us.

50 And † JESUS said unto him, Forbid *him* not: for he that is not against † us is for us.

§ LXXIII.

51 And it came to pass, when the TIME was COME that he should be RECEIVED-UP, *he* steadfastly set his FACE to GO to Jerusalem,

52 And sent Messengers before his Face: and they went, and entered into a Village of the Samaritans, † to make ready for him.

53 And they did not receive him, Because his FACE was as though he would go to Jerusalem.

54 And when † his DISCIPLES James and John saw *this*, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we com-

mand Fire to come down from HEAVEN, and consume them [even as Elias did]?

55 But he turned, and rebuked them, [and said, Ye know not what manner of Spirit *ye* are of.

56 For the SON of MAN is not come to destroy Men's Lives, but to save *them*]. And they went to Another Village.

§ LXXIV.

57 And [it came to pass, that,] as they went in the WAY, a certain man said unto him, [Lord,] I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

58 And † JESUS said unto him, FOXES have Holes, and BIRDS of the AIR have nests; but the SON of MAN hath not where to lay *his* HEAD.

59 And he said unto another, Follow me. But HE said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my FATHER.

60 † JESUS said unto him, Let the DEAD bury THEIR Dead: but go *thou* and preach the KINGDOM of GOD.

61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee; but let me first go bid THEM farewell, which are at home at my HOUSE.

62 † And JESUS said [unto him], No man, having put his HAND to the Plough, and looking BACK, is fit for the KINGDOM of GOD.

CHAPTER X.

§ LXXV.

1 After these things the LORD appointed Other † Seventy [also], and sent them two and two be-

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—48. is great (*d*). 49. John. 49. Devils. 50. Jesus. 50. you is for you. 52. as to make. 54. the DISCIPLES. 58. Jesus. 60. But he said. 62. But. 1. Seventy-two, and sent *them* (*d*). See 54 (*d*), 55—56 (*d*), 57 (*d*), 57, 62 (*d*), 1.

fore his Face into Every City and Place, whither he himself † would come.

2 † Therefore said he unto them, The HARVEST truly *is* great, but the LABOURERS *are* few: pray ye therefore the LORD of the HARVEST, that he would send forth Labourers into his HARVEST.

3 Go your ways: behold, † I send you forth as Lambs among Wolves.

4 Carry neither Purse, nor Scrip, nor Shoes: and salute no man by the WAY.

5 And into Whatsoever House ye enter, first say, Peace *be* to this HOUSE.

6 And if the SON of Peace be there, your PEACE shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again.

7 And in the Same HOUSE remain, eating and drinking such THINGS as they give: for the LABOURER is worthy of his HIRE.

§ LXXVI.

Go not from House to House.

8 And into Whatsoever City ye enter, and they receive you, eat such THINGS as are SET-BEFORE you:

9 And heal the SICK that are therein, and say unto them, The KINGDOM of GOD is come nigh unto you.

10 But into Whatsoever City ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the STREETS of the same, and say,

11 Even *the very DUST of your CITY, which CLEAVETH † on us,

we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding be ye sure of this, That the KINGDOM of GOD is come nigh [unto you].

12 But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable in that DAY for Sodom, than for that CITY.

13 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! Woe unto thee, Bethsaida! For if *the MIGHTY-WORKS had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been DONE in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in Sackcloth and Ashes.

14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the JUDGMENT, than for you.

15 And **thou**, Capernaum, † which art EXALTED to HEAVEN, shall be thrust down to Hell.

16 HE that HEARETH you heareth Me; and HE that DESPISETH you despiseth Me; and he that DESPISETH Me despiseth HIM that SENT me.

§ LXXXVII.

17 And the † SEVENTY returned again with Joy, saying, Lord, even the DEVILS are subject unto us through thy NAME.

18 And he said unto them, I beheld SATAN as Lightning fall from HEAVEN.

19 Behold, † I give unto you POWER to TREAD on Serpents and Scorpions, and over All † the POWER of the ENEMY: and nothing shall by any means hurt You.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—11. THAT DUST. which art.

13. THOSE MIGHTY-WORKS.

15. THOU

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. was about to come. 2. And he said. 3. I send. 11. unto our FEET we do (*d*). 15. shalt not be exalted to HEAVEN, thou shalt go down. 17. SEVENTY-TWO (*d*). 19. I have given (*d*). 19. THAT POWER which is the ENEMY'S. See 11 (*d*).

20 Notwithstanding in this re-
joice not, That the SPIRITS are
subject unto you; but rather re-
joice, Because your NAMES † are
written in HEAVEN.

§ LXXVIII.

21 In That HOUR † JESUS re-
joiced in SPIRIT, and said, I thank
thee, O Father, Lord of HEAVEN
and EARTH, That thou hast hid
these things from the Wise and
Prudent, and hast revealed them
unto Babes: even so, FATHER;
For so it seemed good in thy
sight.

22 All things are delivered to
me of my FATHER: and no man
knoweth who the SON is, but the
FATHER; and who the FATHER
is, but the SON, and *he* to whom
the SON will reveal *him*.

23 And he turned him unto *his*
DISCIPLES, and said privately,
Blessed *are* *the EYES which SEE
the things that ye see:

24 For I tell you, That Many
Prophets and Kings have desired
to see those things which *ye* see,
and have not seen *them*; and to
hear those things which ye † hear,
and have not heard *them*.

§ LXXIX.

25 And, behold, a certain Lawyer
stood up, and tempted him, saying,
Master, what shall I do to inherit
eternal Life?

26 HE said unto him, What is
written in the LAW? how readest
thou?

27 And HE answering said,
“Thou shalt love the Lord thy
GOD with All thy HEART, and with
All thy SOUL, and with All thy

STRENGTH, and with All thy MIND;
and thy NEIGHBOUR as thyself.” †

28 And he said unto him, Thou
hast answered right: this do, and
thou shalt live.

29 But HE, willing to justify
himself, said unto JESUS, And
who is My Neighbour?

30 [And] JESUS answering said,
A certain Man went down from
Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell
among Thieves, which stripped
him of his raiment, and wounded
him, and departed, leaving *him*
half dead.

31 And by Chance there came
down a certain Priest that WAY:
and when he saw him, he passed
by on the other side.

32 And likewise a Levite, [when
he was] at the PLACE, came and
looked *on him*, and passed by on
the other side.

33 But a certain Samaritan, as
he journeyed, came where he was:
and when he saw † him, he had
compassion *on him*,

34 And went to *him*, and bound
up his WOUNDS, pouring in Oil
and Wine, and set him on *his* OWN
Beast, and brought him to an Inn,
and took care of him.

35 And on the MORROW [when
he departed], he took out Two
Pence, and gave *them* to the HOST,
and said [unto him], Take care of
him; and whatsoever thou spend-
est more, when I COME-AGAIN, I
will repay thee.

36 Which [now] of These THREE,
thinkest thou, was Neighbour
unto HIM that FELL among the
THIEVES?

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—23. THOSE EYES which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—20. have been enrolled in (*d*). 21. he rejoiced in the HOLY SPIRIT, and (*d*). 24. hear of me, and. 33. *him* (*d*). See 30, 32 (*d*), 35 (twice), 36 (*d*).

‡ 27. Deut. vi. 5, and Lev. xix. 18.

37 And HE said, HE that SHEWED MERCY on him. † Then said JESUS unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

§ LXXX.

38 Now [it came to pass,] as they WENT. [that] he entered into a certain Village: and a certain Woman named Martha received him [into her HOUSE].

39 And SHE had a Sister called Mary, which also sat at † JESUS' FEET, and heard his WORD.

40 But MARTHA was cumbered about Much Serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care That my SISTER hath left Me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.

41 And † JESUS answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things:

42 But † one thing is needful: and Mary hath chosen *that* GOOD Part, which shall not be taken away from her.

CHAPTER XI.

§ LXXXI

1 And it came to pass, that, as he was PRAYING in a certain Place, when he ceased, one of his DISCIPLES said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his DISCIPLES.

2 And he said unto them, When we pray, say, [Our] Father [*which art in HEAVEN,] Hallowed be thy NAME. Thy KINGDOM come. [Thy WILL be done, as in Heaven, so in EARTH.]

3 Give us DAY-BY-DAY our DAILY BREAD.

4 And forgive us our SINS; for we also forgive every-one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into Temptation; [but deliver us from EVIL.]

5 And he said unto them, which of you shall have a Friend, and shall go unto him at Midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me Three Loaves;

6 For a Friend of mine in his Journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him?

7 And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the DOOR is now shut, and my CHILDREN are with me in BED; I cannot rise and give thee.

8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is His Friend, yet because of his IMPORTUNITY he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

9 And say unto you, Ask and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

10 FOREVERY-ONE that ASKETH receiveth; and HE that SEEKETH findeth; and to HIM that KNOCKETH it † shall be opened.

11 † If a SON shall ask Bread of any of you that is a FATHER, will he give him a Stone? or if he ask a Fish, will he for a Fish give him a Serpent?

12 † Or if he shall ask an Egg, will he offer him a Scorpion?

13 If he then, being evil, know

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. THOU which art.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—37. And JESUS said unto. 39. the LORD'S FEET. 41. the LORD answered. 42. of few things, or of one, is there Need; and (d). 10. is opened (d). 11. If a SON ask a Fish of any one of you that is a FATHER, will he for a Fish give him a Serpent (d)? 12. Or also, if he ask an Egg, will he give him a Scorpion (d)? See 33 (thrice) (d), 2 (thrice) (d), 4 (d).

how to give Good Gifts unto your CHILDREN: how much more shall *you* HEAVENLY FATHER give the holy Spirit to THEM that ASK him?

§ LXXXII.

14 And he was casting out a †Devil, and it was dumb. And it came to pass, when the DEVIL was gone out, the DUMB spake; and the PEOPLE wondered.

15 But some of them said, He casteth out DEVILS through Beelzebub †the Chief of the DEVILS.

16 And others, tempting *him*, sought of him a Sign from Heaven.

17 But *he*, knowing Their THOUGHTS, said unto them, Every Kingdom divided against itself, is brought to desolation; and a House *divided* against a House falleth.

18 If SATAN also be divided against himself, how shall his KINGDOM stand? Because ye say that I cast out DEVILS through Beelzebub.

19 And if *I* by Beelzebub cast out DEVILS, by whom do your SONS cast *them* out? therefore shall *they* be your JUDGES.

20 But if I with the Finger of God cast out DEVILS, no doubt the KINGDOM of GOD is come upon you.

21 When a STRONG man armed keepeth HIS Palace, his GOODS are in Peace:

22 But when a †STRONGER than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his ARMOUR wherein he trusted, and divideth his SPOILS.

23 HE that IS not with me is against me: and HE that GATHERETH not with me scattereth.

24 When the UNCLEAN Spirit is gone out of a MAN, he walketh through Dry Places, seeking rest; and finding none, †he saith, I will return unto my HOUSE whence I came out.

25 And when he cometh, he findeth *it* †swept and garnished.

26 Then goeth he, and taketh *to him* Seven Other Spirits more wicked than himself; and they enter in, and dwell there: and the LAST *state* of that MAN is worse than the FIRST.

27 And it came to pass, as he SPAKE these things, a Certain Woman of the COMPANY lifted up her Voice, and said unto him, Blessed is *the WOMB that BARE thee, and the Paps which thou hast sucked.

28 But *he* said, Yea rather, blessed *are* THEY that HEAR the WORD of GOD, and keep it.

§ LXXXIII.

29 And when the PEOPLE were gathered thick together, he began to say, †This is an evil GENERATION: they seek a Sign; and there shall no Sign be given it, but the SIGN of Jonas [the PROPHET].

30 For as †Jonas was a Sign unto the NINEVITES, so shall also the SON of MAN be to this GENERATION.

31 The Queen of the South shall rise up in the JUDGMENT with the MEN of this GENERATION, and condemn them: For

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—27. THAT WOMB which BARE.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. dumb Devil. And it (*d*). 15. the CHIEF. 22. stronger. 24. then he saith (*d*). 25. unoccupied, swept, and garnished (*c*). 29. This GENERATION is an evil Generation (*d*). 30. JONAS. See 29 (*d*).

she came from the **UTMOST-PARTS** of the **EARTH** to hear the **WISDOM** of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon *is* here.

32 The Men of Nineve shall rise up in the **JUDGMENT** with this **GENERATION**, and shall condemn it: For they repented at the **PREACHING** of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas *is* here.

§ LXXXIV.

33 No man, when he hath lighted a Candle, putteth it in a Secret-place, neither under a **BUSHEL**, but on a **CANDLESTICK**, that **THEY** which **COME-IN** may see the **LIGHT**.

34 The **LIGHT** of the **BODY** is † the **EYE**: [therefore] when thine **EYE** is single, thy **Whole BODY** also is full of light; but when *thine eye* is evil, thy **BODY** also is full of darkness.

35 Take heed therefore that *the **LIGHT** which is in thee be not **Darkness**.

36 If thy whole **BODY** therefore *be* full of light, having no Part dark, the **Whole** shall be full of light, as when the **BRIGHT-SHINING** of a **CANDLE** doth give thee light.

§ LXXXV.

37 And as he **SPAKE**, a [certain] Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in, and sat down to meat.

38 And when the **PHARISEE** saw *it*, he marvelled That he had not first washed before **DINNER**.

39 And the **LORD** said unto him, Now do *ye* **PHARISEES** make clean the **OUTSIDE** of the **CUP**

and the **PLATTER**; but your **INWARD** part is full of **Ravening** and **Wickedness**.

40 *Ye* **Fools**, did not **HE** that **MADE THAT** which is **WITHOUT** make **THAT** which is **WITHIN** also?

41 But rather give **Alms** of such **THINGS** as ye **HAVE**; and, behold, all things are clean unto you.

42 But **Woe** unto you, **PHARISEES**! For ye tithe **MINT** and **RUE** and **All manner** of **Herbs**, and pass over **JUDGMENT** and the **LOVE** of **GOD**: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

§ LXXXVI.

43 **Woe** unto you, **PHARISEES**! For ye love the **UPPERMOST-SEATS** in the **SYNAGOGUES**, and **GREETINGS** in the **MARKETS**.

44 **Woe** unto you, [Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites!] For ye are as ***GRAVES** which **APPEAR** not, and the **MEN** that walk over *them* are not aware of *them*.

45 Then answered one of the **LAWYERS**, and said unto him, **Master**, thus saying thou reproachest **Us** also.

46 And **HE** said, **Woe** unto you also, ye **LAWYERS**! For ye lade **MEN** with **Burdens** grievous to be borne, and †ye yourselves touch not the **BURDENS** with one of your **FINGERS**.

§ LXXXVII.

47 **Woe** unto you! For ye build the **SEFULCHRES** of the **PROPHIETS**, and your **FATHERS** killed them.

48 Truly ye bear witness that ye

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—35. THAT LIGHT which. 44. THOSE GRAVES which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—34. thine EYE. 46. ye yourselves (d). See 34 (d), 37, 44 (d).

allow the DEEDS of your FATHERS: For *they* indeed killed them, and *ye* build [Their SEPULCHRES].

49 Therefore also said the WISDOM of GOD, I will send them Prophets and Apostles, and *some* of them they shall slay and persecute:

50 That the * BLOOD of All the PROPHETS which was SHED from the Foundation of the World, may be required of this GENERATION;

51 From the † BLOOD of Abel unto the † BLOOD of *Zacharias, which PERISHED between the ALTAR and the TEMPLE: verily I say unto you, It shall be required of this GENERATION.

§ LXXXVIII.

52 Woe unto you, LAWYERS! For ye have taken away the KEY of KNOWLEDGE: ye entered not in yourselves, and THEM that were ENTERING-IN ye hindered.

53 And as he † said these things unto them, the SCRIBES and the PHARISEES began to urge *him* vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of many things:

54 Laying wait for him, [and seeking] to catch something out of his MOUTH, that they might accuse him.

CHAPTER XII.

1 In the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable MULTITUDE of PEOPLE, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his DISCIPLES first of all,

Beware ye of the LEAVEN of the PHARISEES, which is Hypocrisy.

2 For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known.

3 Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in DARKNESS shall be heard in the LIGHT; and that which ye have spoken in the EAR in CLOSETS shall be proclaimed upon the HOUSETOPS.

4 And I say unto you my FRIENDS, Be not afraid of THEM that KILL the BODY, and after that have no more that they can do.

5 But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear HIM, which, after he hath KILLED, HATH Power to cast into HELL; yea, I say unto you, Fear *him*.

6 Are not Five Sparrows sold for two Farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before GOD?

7 But even the very HAIRS of your HEAD are all numbered. Fear not [therefore]: ye are of more value than Many Sparrows.

8 Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before MEN, him shall the SON of MAN also confess before the ANGELS of GOD:

9 But HE that DENIETH me before MEN shall be denied before the ANGELS of GOD.

10 And whosoever shall speak a Word against the SON of MAN, it shall be forgiven him: but unto HIM that BLASPHEMETH against the HOLY Ghost it shall not be forgiven.

11 And when they bring you unto the SYNAGOGUES, and unto MAGISTRATES, and POWERS, take

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—50. THAT BLOOD.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—51. Blood. SCRIBES (d). See 48 (d), 54 (d), 7.

51. THAT Zacharias which.

51. Blood. 53. departed thence, the

ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say:

12 For the HOLY Ghost shall teach you in the Same HOUR what ye ought to say.

§ LXXXIX.

13 And one of the COMPANY said unto him, Master, speak to my BROTHER, that he divide the INHERITANCE with me.

14 And HE said unto him, Man, who made Me a Judge or a Divider over you?

15 And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of †COVETOUSNESS: For a man's LIFE consisteth not in the ABUNDANCE of the THINGS which he POSSESTH.

§ XC.

16 And he spake a Parable unto them, saying, The GROUND of a certain rich Man, brought forth plentifully:

17 And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, Because I have no room where to bestow my FRUITS?

18 And he said, This will I do: I will pull down My BARNs, and build Greater; and there will I bestow All my †FRUITS and my GOODS.

19 And I will say to my SOUL, Soul, thou hast Much Goods laid up for many Years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry.

20 But GOD said unto him, *Thou Fool*, This NIGHT thy SOUL shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided?

21 So *is* HE that LAYETH-UP-TREASURE for himself, and is not rich toward God.

22 And he said unto †his DISCIPLES, Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for †your LIFE, what ye shall eat; neither for †the BODY, what ye shall put on.

23 †The LIFE is more than MEAT, and the BODY *is more* than RAIMENT.

24 Consider the RAVENS: For they neither sow nor reap; which neither have Storehouse nor Barn; and GOD feedeth them: how much more are ye better than the FOWLS?

25 And which of you with taking thought can add to his STATURE †one Cubit?

26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the REST?

27 Consider the LILIES how they grow: they toil not, they spin not; And yet I say unto you, that Solomon in All his GLORY was not arrayed like one of these.

28 If then GOD so clothe the GRASS, which is To-day in the FIELD, and To-morrow is cast into the Oven; how much more *will he clothe* you, O ye of little faith?

29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat, †or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind.

30 For all these things do the NATIONS of the WORLD seek after: and Your FATHER knoweth That ye have need of these things.

31 But rather seek ye †the KINGDOM of GOD; and [all] these things shall be added unto you.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—15. All Covetousness (*d*). 18. WHEAT and (*d*). 22. the DISCIPLES (*d*). 22. *your* LIFE (*d*). 22. your BODY. 23. For the LIFE. 25. a Cubit. 29. and what. 31. his KINGDOM; and these things. See 31 (*d*).

§ XCI.

32 Fear not, **LITTLE** Flock; For it is your **FATHER'S** good pleasure to give you the **KINGDOM**.

33 Sell **THAT** ye **HAVE**, and give Alms; provide yourselves **Bags** which wax not old, a **Treasure** in the **HEAVENS** that faileth not, where no **Thief** approacheth, neither **Moth** corrupteth.

34 For where your **TREASURE** is, there will your **HEART** be also.

§ XCII.

35 Let Your **LOINS** be girded about, and *your* **LIGHTS** burning;

36 And **ye** yourselves like unto Men that wait for their **LORD**, when he will return from the **WEDDING**; that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately.

37 Blessed *are* those **SERVANTS**, whom the **LORD** when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, That he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them.

38 And if he shall come in the **SECOND** [Watch], or [come] in the **THIRD** Watch, and find *them* so, blessed are † those **SERVANTS**.

39 And this know, That if the **GOODMAN-OF-THE-HOUSE** had known What Hour the **THIEF** would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his **HOUSE** to be broken through.

40 Be **ye** [therefore] ready also: For the **SON** of **MAN** cometh at an Hour when ye think not.

41 Then **PETER** said [unto him],

Lord, speakest thou this **PARABLE** unto us, or even to all?

§ XCIII.

42 And the **LORD** said, Who then is † *that* **FAITHFUL** and wise Steward, whom *his* **LORD** shall make ruler over his **HOUSEHOLD**, to **GIVE** *them their* † **PORTION-OF-MEAT** in due Season?

43 Blessed *is* that **SERVANT**, whom his **LORD** when he cometh shall find so doing.

44 Of a truth I say unto you, That he will make him ruler over **ALL** that he **HATH**.

45 But and if that **SERVANT** say in his **HEART**, My **LORD** delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the **MENSERVANTS** and **MAIDENS**, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken;

46 The **LORD** of that **SERVANT** will come in a **Day** when he looketh not for *him*, and at an **Hour** when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his **PORTION** with the **UNBELIEVERS**.

47 And **THAT** **SERVANT**, which **KNEW** his **LORD'S** **WILL**, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his **WILL**, *shall be beaten with many *stripes*.

48 But **HE** that **KNEW** not, and did commit things worthy of **Stripes**, shall be beaten with few *stripes*. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

§ XCIV.

49 I am come to send **Fire** on

* **EMPHATIC TEXT**.—47. *he* shall be beaten.

† **VATICAN MANUSCRIPT**.—38. *they*. And (*d*). 42. the **FAITHFUL** Steward, the **WISE**, whom. 42. **portion-of-meat** in. See 38 (twice), 40, 41 (*d*).

the EARTH; and what will I, if it be already kindled?

50 But I have a Baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!

51 Suppose ye That I am come to give Peace on EARTH? I tell you, Nay; but rather Division:

52 For from HENCEFORTH there shall be five † in one House divided, three against two, and two against three.

53 The Father shall be divided against the Son, and the Son against the Father; the Mother against the † Daughter, and the Daughter against the † Mother; the Mother-in-law against her DAUGHTER-IN-LAW, and the Daughter-in-law against her MOTHER-IN-LAW.

§ XCV.

54 And he said also to the PEOPLE, When ye see a † CLOUD rise out of the West, straightway ye say, There cometh a Shower; and so it is.

55 And when ye see the South-wind blow, ye say, There will be Heat; and it cometh to pass.

56 Ye Hypocrites, ye can discern the FACE of the SKY and of the EARTH; but how is it that ye † do not discern this TIME?

57 Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not WHAT is RIGHT?

58 When thou goest with thine ADVERSARY to the Magistrate, as thou art in the WAY, give Diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hale thee to the JUDGE, and the JUDGE deliver

Thee to the OFFICER, and the OFFICER cast Thee into Prison.

59 I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the VERY-LAST Mite.

CHAPTER XIII.

§ XCVI.

1 There were present at That SEASON some that told him of the GALILEANS, Whose BLOOD Pilate had mingled with their SACRIFICES.

2 And † JESUS answering said unto them, Suppose ye That these GALILEANS were Sinners above All the GALILEANS, Because they suffered Such things?

3 I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

4 Or Those EIGHTEEN, upon whom the TOWER in SILOAM fell, and slew them, think ye That they were Sinners above † ALL Men that DWELT in Jerusalem?

5 I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

6 He spake also This PARABLE; A certain man had a Fig-tree planted in his VINEYARD; and he came and sought Fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then said he unto the DRESSER-OF-HIS-VINEYARD, Behold, these Three Years I come seeking Fruit on this FIG-TREE, and find none: cut it down; why cumbereth it the GROUND?

8 And HE answering said unto him, Lord, let it alone This YEAR also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it:

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—52. in One House. 53. the DAUGHTER (b). 53. the MOTHER. 54. Cloud. 56. cannot discern (d). 2. he answering (d). 4. All THOSE MEN that.

9 And if †it bear Fruit, *well*: and if not, *then* AFTER-THAT thou shalt cut it down.

§ XCVII.

10 And he was teaching in one of the SYNAGOGUES on the SABBATH.

11 And, behold, there was a Woman which had a Spirit of Infirmity eighteen Years, and was bowed together, and could in NO-WISE lift up *herself*.

12 And when JESUS saw her, he called *her to him*, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine INFIRMITY.

13 And he laid *his HANDS* on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified GOD.

14 And the RULER-OF-THE-SYNAGOGUE answered with indignation, Because that JESUS had healed on the SABBATH day, and said unto the PEOPLE, There are Six Days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the SABBATH DAY.

15 †The LORD then answered him, and said, *Thou Hypocrite*, doth not each one of you on the SABBATH loose his OX or *his ASS* from the STALL, and lead *him* away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman, being a Daughter of Abraham, whom SATAN hath bound, lo, these Eighteen Years, be loosed from this BOND on the SABBATH DAY?

17 And when he had said these things, All his ADVERSARIES were ashamed: and All the PEOPLE

rejoiced for All *the GLORIOUS-THINGS that were DONE by him.

§ XCVIII.

18 Then said he, Unto what is the KINGDOM of GOD like? and whereunto shall I resemble it?

19 It is like a Grain of Mustard-seed, which a Man took, and cast into his Garden; and it grew, and waxed a [great] Tree; and the FOWLS of the AIR lodged in the BRANCHES of it.

20 And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the KINGDOM of GOD?

21 It is like Leaven, which a Woman took and hid in three Measures of Meal, till the whole was leavened.

§ XCIX.

22 And he went through the Cities and Villages, teaching, and journeying toward Jerusalem.

23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be SAVED? And HE said unto them,

24 Strive to enter in at the †STRAIT Gate: For many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.

25 When once the MASTER-OF-THE-HOUSE is risen up, and hath shut to the DOOR, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the DOOR, saying, Lord, [Lord,] open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are:

26 Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our STREETS.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. THOSE GLORIOUS-THINGS which were.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—9. AFTER-THAT it bear Fruit, *well*: and if not, *then* thou shalt. 15. But the Lord answered him, and said, *Ye Hypocrites*. 24. STRAIT Door (*d*). See 19 (*d*), 25 (*d*).

27 But he shall say, † I tell you, I know [you] not whence ye are; depart from me, All *ye* WORKERS of † INIQUITY.

28 There shall be WEEPING and GNASHING of TEETH, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and All the PROPHETS, in the KINGDOM of GOD, and you *yourselves* thrust out.

29 And they shall come from the East, and *from* the West, and from the North, and *from* the South, and shall sit down in the KINGDOM of GOD.

30 And, behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.

§ C.

31 The Same DAY there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence: For Herod will kill Thee.

32 And he said unto them, Go ye, and tell that FOX, Behold, I cast out Devils, and I †do Cures To-day and To-morrow, and the THIRD †*day* I shall be perfected.

33 Nevertheless I must walk To-day, and To-morrow, and the *day* FOLLOWING: For it cannot be that a Prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

34 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *which KILLEST the PROPHETS, and stonest THEM that are SENT unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy CHILDREN together, as a Hen *doth gather* HER Brood under *her* WINGS, and ye would not!

35 Behold, your HOUSE is left

unto you [desolate]: and [verily] I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until [*the time come when*] ye shall say, "Blessed *is* HE that COMETH in the Name of the Lord." †

CHAPTER XIV.

§ CI.

1 And it came to pass, as he WENT into the House of one of the CHIEF PHARISEES to eat Bread on the Sabbath day, that *they* watched him.

2 And, behold, there was a certain Man before him which had the dropsy.

3 And JESUS answering spake unto the LAWYERS and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the SABBATH †*day*?

4 And THEY held their peace. And he took *him*, and healed him, and let him go;

5 And †answered them, saying, Which of you shall have †an Ass or an Ox fallen into a Pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the SABBATH DAY?

6 And they could not answer [*him*] again to these things.

§ CII.

7 And he put forth a Parable to THOSE which were BIDDEN, when he marked how they chose out the CHIEF-ROOMS; saying unto them,

8 When thou art bidden of any *man* to a Wedding, sit not down in the HIGHEST-ROOM; lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him;

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—34. THOU which KILLEST.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—27. speaking unto you, I know not. 27. Iniquity. 32. perform Cures (*d*). 32. Day (*d*). 3. Day, or not? And (*d*). 5. he said unto them, Which (*d*). 5. a Son or an Ox (*d*). See 27 (*d*), 35 (thrice) (*d*), 6.

‡ 35. Psalms cxviii. 26.

9 And HE that BADE Thee and Him come and say to thee, Give this man Place; and thou begin with Shame to take the LOWEST Room.

10 But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the LOWEST Room; that when HE that BADE thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have Worship in the presence of †THEM that SIT-AT-MEAT with thee.

11 For WHOSOEVER EXALTETH himself shall be abased; and HE that HUMBLETH himself shall be exalted.

12 Then said he also to HIM that BADE him, When thou makest a Dinner or a Supper, call not thy FRIENDS, nor thy BRETHREN, neither thy KINSMEN; †nor *thy* rich Neighbours; lest *they* also bid Thee again, and a Recompence be made thee.

13 But when thou makest a Feast, call the Poor, the Maimed, the Lame, the Blind:

14 And thou shalt be blessed; For they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the RESURRECTION of the JUST.

15 And when one of THEM that SAT-AT-MEAT with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat Bread in the KINGDOM of GOD.

16 Then said HE unto him, A certain Man made a great Supper, and bade many:

17 And sent his SERVANT at SUPPER TIME to say to THEM that were BIDDEN, Come; For [all] things are now ready.

18 And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The FIRST said unto him, I have bought a Piece-of-ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have Me excused.

19 And another said, I have bought five Yoke of Oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have Me excused.

20 And another said, I have married a Wife, and therefore I cannot come.

21 So that SERVANT came, and shewed his LORD these things. Then the MASTER-OF-THE-HOUSE being angry said to his SERVANT, Go out quickly into the STREETS and Lanes of the CITY, and bring in hither the POOR, and the Maimed, and the †Halt, and the Blind.

22 And the SERVANT said, Lord, †it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is Room.

23 And the LORD said unto the SERVANT, Go out into the HIGHWAYS and Hedges, and compel *them* to come in, that †my HOUSE may be filled.

24 For I say unto you, That none of THOSE MEN which were BIDDEN shall taste of My SUPPER.

§ CIII.

25 And there went great Multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them,

26 If any *man* come to me, and hate not his FATHER, and MOTHER, and WIFE, and CHILDREN, and BRETHREN, and SISTERS, yea, and †HIS-OWN Life also, he cannot be My Disciple.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—10. All THEM that. 12. not *thy* rich. 21. Blind and the Halt. 22. I have done what thou didst command. 23. the HOUSE. 26. his-OWN LIFE. See 17 (d).

27 † And whosoever doth not bear his CROSS, and come after me, cannot be My Disciple.

28 For which of you, intending to build a Tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the COST, whether he have *sufficient* to finish *it*?

29 Lest haply, after he hath laid the Foundation, and is not able to finish *it*, ALL that BEHOLD *it* begin to mock him,

30 Saying, This MAN began to build, and was not able to finish.

31 Or What King, going to make War against Another King, †sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with Ten Thousand to meet HIM that COMETH against him with Twenty Thousand?

32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an Ambassage, and desireth [CONDITIONS of] Peace.

33 So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not ALL that he HATH, he cannot be My Disciple.

34 SALT *is* good: but if †the SALT have lost *his* savour, where-with shall it be seasoned?

35 It is neither fit for the Land, nor yet for the Dunghill; *but* men cast it out. HE that HATH Ears to hear, let him hear.

CHAPTER XV.

§ CIV.

1 Then drew near unto him All the PUBLICANS and SINNERS for to hear him.

2 And †the PHARISEES and

SCRIBES murmured, saying, This man receiveth Sinners, and eateth with them.

3 And he spake this PARABLE unto them, saying,

4 What Man of you, having an Hundred Sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the NINETY-AND-NINE in the WILDERNESS, and go after THAT which is LOST, until he find it?

5 And when he hath found *it*, he layeth *it* on his SHOULDERS, rejoicing.

6 And when he cometh HOME, he calleth together *his* FRIENDS and NEIGHBOURS, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; For I have found *my SHEEP which was LOST.

7 I say unto you, That likewise Joy shall be in HEAVEN over One Sinner that repenteth, more than over Ninety-and-nine Just persons, which need no Repentance.

8 Either What Woman having ten Pieces-of-silver, if she lose one Piece, doth not light a Candle, and sweep the HOUSE, and seek diligently till she find *it*?

9 And when she hath found *it*, she calleth *her* FRIENDS and *her* NEIGHBOURS together, saying, Rejoice with me; For I have found the PIECE which I had lost.

10 Likewise, I say unto you, there is Joy in the presence of the ANGELS of GOD over One Sinner that repenteth.

§ CV.

11 And he said, A certain Man had Two Sons:

12 And the YOUNGER of them

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—6. THAT SHEEP of mine which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—27. Whosoever therefore doth not bear his-own CROSS. 31. will not sit down first and consult. 34. also the SALT. 2. both the. See 32 (d).

said to *his* FATHER, Father, give me the PORTION of GOODS that FALLETH to me. And †he divided unto them *his* LIVING.

13 And not Many Days after the YOUNGER Son gathered all together, and took *his* journey into a far Country, and there wasted his SUBSTANCE with riotous living.

14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty Famine in that LAND; and he began to be in want.

15 And he went and joined himself to a CITIZEN of that COUNTRY; and he sent him into his FIELDS to feed Swine.

16 And he would fain have †filled his BELLY with the HUSKS that the SWINE did eat: and no man gave unto him.

17 And when he came to himself, he said, How-many Hired-servants of my FATHER'S have †Bread enough and to spare, and I perish with Hunger!

18 I will arise and go to my FATHER, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against HEAVEN, and before †thee,

19 †And am no more worthy to be called thy Son: make me as one of thy HIRED-SERVANTS.

20 And he arose, and came to his FATHER. But when he was yet a great way off, his FATHER saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his NECK, and kissed him.

21 And the SON said unto him, Father, I have sinned against

HEAVEN, and †in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy Son.

22 But the FATHER said to his SERVANTS, Bring †forth the BEST ROBE, and put *it* on him; and put a Ring on his HAND, and Shoes on *his* FEET:

23 And bring [hither] the FATTED CALF, and kill *it*; and let us eat, and be merry:

24 For This my SON was dead, and is alive [again]; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

25 Now his ELDER SON was in the Field: and as he came and drew nigh to the HOUSE, he heard Musick and Dancing.

26 And he called one of the SERVANTS, and asked what these things meant.

27 And HE said unto him, Thy BROTHER is come; and thy FATHER hath killed the FATTED CALF, Because he hath received him safe and sound.

28 And he was angry, and would not go in: †therefore came his FATHER out, and intreated him.

29 And HE answering said to †*his* FATHER, Lo, these Many Years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy Commandment: and yet thou never gavest Me a Kid, that I might make merry with my FRIENDS:

30 But as soon as *THIS thy SON was come, which hath DEVoured Thy LIVING with Har-

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—30. THIS SON of thine was come which hath.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—12. HE divided. 16. been fed with the HUSKS (*d*). 17. abundance of Bread, and I perish here with (*d*). 18. thee. 19. I am no more. 21. before thee. I am no more worthy to be called thy Son: make me as one of thy HIRED-SERVANTS. But (*d*). 22. forth quickly. 28. and his FATHER came out. 29. his FATHER. See 23 (*d*), 24 (*d*).

lots, thou hast killed for him the † FATTED CALF.

31 And HE said unto him, Son, **thou** art ever with me, and ALL that I HAVE is thine.

32 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: For this thy BROTHER was dead, and is alive [again]; and was lost, and is found.

CHAPTER XVI.

§ CVI.

1 And he said also unto † his DISCIPLES, There was a certain rich Man, which had a Steward; and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his GOODS.

2 And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an ACCOUNT of thy STEWARDSHIP; for thou mayest be no longer steward.

3 Then the STEWARD said within himself, What shall I do? For my LORD taketh away from me the STEWARDSHIP: I cannot dig; † to beg I am ashamed.

4 I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the STEWARDSHIP, they may receive me into † their HOUSES.

5 So he called every one of his LORD'S DEBTORS *unto him*, and said unto the FIRST, How much owest thou unto my LORD?

6 And HE said, An Hundred Measures of Oil. And † he said unto him, Take † Thy BILL, and sit down quickly, and write fifty.

7 Then said he to another, And how much owest **thou**? And HE

said, An Hundred Measures of Wheat. [And] he said unto him, Take † Thy BILL and write four-score.

8 And the LORD commended the UNJUST STEWARD, Because he had done wisely: For the CHILDREN of this WORLD are *in THEIR GENERATION wiser than the CHILDREN of LIGHT.

9 And **ƒ** say unto you, Make to yourselves Friends of the MAMMON of UNRIGHTEOUSNESS; that, when † ye fail, they may receive you into EVERLASTING Habitations.

10 HE that is FAITHFUL in that which is least is faithful also in much: and HE that is UNJUST in the least is unjust also in much.

11 If therefore ye have not been faithful in the UNRIGHTEOUS Mammon, who will commit to your trust the TRUE riches?

12 And if ye have not been faithful in THAT which is ANOTHER man's, who shall give you THAT which is † YOUR-OWN?

§ CVII.

13 No Servant can serve Two Masters: for either he will hate the ONE, and love the OTHER; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the OTHER. Ye cannot serve God and Mammon.

14 And the PHARISEES also, who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him.

15 And he said unto them, **Ɔ**e are THEY which JUSTIFY yourselves before MEN; but GOD knoweth your HEARTS: For THAT

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. in THAT GENERATION which is their-own, wiser.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—30. FATTED Calf. 1. the Disciples (*d*). 3. and to beg. 4. their-own HOUSES. 6. HE said. 6. Thy LETTERS, and (*d*). 7. Thy LETTERS, and. 9. it fails (*c*). 12. OUR-OWN? See 32, 7.

which is HIGHLY-ESTEEMED among Men is Abomination in the sight of † GOD.

§ CVIII.

16 The LAW and the PROPHETS were until John: since that time the KINGDOM of GOD is preached, and every man presseth into it.

17 And it is easier for HEAVEN and EARTH to pass, than One Tittle of the LAW to fail.

18 WHOSOEVER PUTTETH-AWAY his WIFE, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and † WHOSOEVER MARRIETH her that is put away from *her* Husband committeth adultery.

§ CIX.

19 There was a certain rich Man, which was clothed in Purple and Fine-linen, and fared sumptuously every Day:

20 And [there was] a certain Beggar named Lazarus, [which] was laid at his GATE, full of sores,

21 And desiring to be fed with *the † CRUMBS which FELL from the RICH-MAN'S TABLE: moreover the DOGS came and licked his SORES.

22 And it came to pass, that the BEGGAR died, and was carried by the ANGELS into ABRAHAM'S BOSOM: the RICH-MAN also died, and was buried;

23 And in HELL he lift up his EYES, being in Torments, and seeth † ABRAHAM afar off, and Lazarus in his BOSOM.

24 And *he* cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may

dip the TIP of his FINGER in Water, and cool my TONGUE; For I am tormented in this FLAME.

25 But Abraham said, Son, remember That *thou* in thy LIFE-TIME receivedst thy GOOD things, and likewise Lazarus EVIL things: but now † *he* is comforted, and *thou* art tormented.

26 And beside all this, between us and you there is a great Gulf fixed: so that THEY which WOULD pass from hence to you cannot; neither can † THEY pass to us, that *would come* from thence.

27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore, Father, that thou wouldst send him to my FATHER'S HOUSE:

28 For I have Five Brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest *they* also come into this PLACE of TORTURE.

29 † Abraham saith [unto him], They have Moses and the PROPHETS; let them hear them.

30 And HE said, Nay, Father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the Dead, they will repent.

31 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the PROPHETS, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the Dead.

CHAPTER XVII.

§ CX.

1 Then said he unto † the DISCIPLES, It is impossible but that OFFENCES † will come: but Woe unto *him*, through whom they come!

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—21. THOSE CRUMBS which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—15. the Lord (*d*). 18. HE that MARRIETH (*d*). 21. THINGS which FELL (*d*). 23. Abraham. 25. he is here comforted, and. 26. they pass. 29. But Abraham. 1. his DISCIPLES. 1. should COME: nevertheless Woe. See 20 (twice) (*d*), 29.

2 It were better for him that a Millstone were hanged about his NECK, and he cast into the SEA, than that he should offend one of these LITTLE-ONES.

3 Take heed to yourselves: If thy BROTHER trespass [against thee], rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him.

4 And if he trespass against thee seven times in a DAY, and seven times [in a DAY] turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

§ CXI.

5 And the APOSTLES said unto the LORD, Increase our Faith.

6 And the LORD said, If ye had Faith as a Grain of Mustard-seed, ye might say unto this SYCAMINE-TREE, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the SEA; and it should obey you.

7 But which of you, having a Servant plowing or feeding cattle, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the FIELD, Go and sit down to meat?

8 And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink?

9 Doth he thank †that SERVANT Because he did the THINGS that were COMMANDED [him? I trow not].

10 So likewise ye, when ye shall have done All those THINGS which are COMMANDED you, say, We are unprofitable Servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

§ CXII.

11 And it came to pass, as he WENT to Jerusalem, that he passed through the Midst of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entered into a Certain Village, there met †him Ten Men that were Lepers, which †stood afar off:

13 And they lifted up their Voices, and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us.

14 And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go shew yourselves unto the PRIESTS. And it came to pass, that, as they WENT, they were cleansed.

15 And one of them, when he saw That he was healed, turned back, and with a loud Voice glorified GOD,

16 And fell down on his Face at his FEET, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan.

17 And JESUS answering said, Were there not TEN cleansed? but where are the NINE?

18 There are not found that returned to give Glory to GOD, save this STRANGER.

19 And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way: [thy FAITH hath made thee whole.]

§ CXIII.

20 And when he was demanded of the PHARISEES, when the KINGDOM of GOD should come, he answered them and said, The KINGDOM of GOD cometh not with Observation:

21 Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, [lo] there! for, behold, the KINGDOM of GOD is within you.

22 And he said unto the DIS-

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—9. the SERVANT (d). 12. him (d). 12. stood up afar off (d). See 3 (d), 4, 9 (d), 19 (d), 21.

CIPLES, The Days will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the DAYS of the SON of MAN, and ye shall not see *it*.

23 And they shall say to you, See † here; or, see there: go not after *them*, nor follow *them*.

24 For as *the LIGHTNING, that LIGHTENETH out of the ONE *part* under Heaven, shineth unto the OTHER *part* under Heaven; so shall also the SON of MAN be [in his DAY].

25 But first must he suffer Many things, and be rejected of this GENERATION.

26 And as it was in the DAYS of NOE, so shall it be also in the DAYS of the SON of MAN.

27 They did eat, they drank, they married-wives, they were given in marriage, until the Day that Noe entered into the ARK, and the FLOOD came, and destroyed them all.

28 Likewise also as it was in the DAYS of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded;

29 But the Same Day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained Fire and Brimstone from Heaven, and destroyed them all.

30 Even thus shall it be in the Day when the SON of MAN is revealed.

31 In That DAY, he which shall be upon the HOUSETOP, and his STUFF in the HOUSE, let him not come down to take it away: and HE that is in the † FIELD, let him likewise not return BACK.

32 Remember Lot's WIFE.

33 Whosoever shall seek to † save

his LIFE shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose *his LIFE shall preserve it.

34 I tell you, in That NIGHT there shall be two *men* in † one Bed; the ONE shall be taken, and the OTHER shall be left.

35 Two *women* shall be grinding TOGETHER; the ONE shall be taken, and the OTHER left.

[36 Two *men* shall be in the FIELD; the ONE shall be taken, and the OTHER left.]

37 And they answered and said unto him, Where, Lord? And HE said unto them, Wheresoever the BODY is, thither † will the EAGLES be gathered together.

CHAPTER XVIII.

§ CXIV.

1 And he spake a Parable unto them *to this end*, that men OUGHT always to pray, and not to faint;

2 Saying, There was in a City a Judge, which feared not GOD, neither regarded Man:

3 And there was a Widow in that City; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine ADVERSARY.

4 And he would not for a While: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not GOD, nor regard Man;

5 Yet because this WIDOW TROUBLETH me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me.

6 And the LORD said, Hear what the UNJUST JUDGE saith.

7 And shall not GOD avenge *his own ELECT, which CRY Day

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—24. THAT LIGHTNING that. 33. *it*, shall preserve it. 7. THOSE ELECT of his which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. there; or see here: follow not. For (*d*). 31. Field. 33. ensure his LIFE (*d*). 34. a Bed (*d*). 37. also will (*d*). See 24 (*d*), 36 (*d*).

and Night unto him, though he bear long with them?

8 I tell you That he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the SON of MAN cometh, shall he find FAITH on the EARTH?

§ CXV.

9 And he spake this PARABLE unto CERTAIN which TRUSTED in themselves That they were righteous, and despised OTHERS:

10 Two Men went up into the TEMPLE to pray; the ONE a Pharisee, and the OTHER a Publican.

11 The PHARISEE stood and prayed thus with himself, GOD, I thank thee, That I am not as OTHER MEN *are*, Extortioners, Unjust, Adulterers, or even as This PUBLICAN.

12 I fast twice in the WEEK, I give tithes of all that I possess.

13 † And the PUBLICAN, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* EYES unto HEAVEN, but smote [upon] † his BREAST, saying, GOD be merciful to me a SINNER.

14 I tell you, this man went down to his HOUSE justified † *rather* than the other: For EVERY-ONE that EXALTETH himself shall be abased; and HE that HUMBLETH himself shall be exalted.

§ CXVI.

15 And they brought unto him also INFANTS, that he would touch them: but when *his* DISCIPLES saw *it*, they rebuked him.

16 But JESUS called † them *unto him*, and said, Suffer LITTLE-CHILDREN to come unto me, and

forbid them not: for of SUCH is the KINGDOM of GOD.

17 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the KINGDOM of GOD as a Little-child shall in no wise enter therein.

§ CXVII.

18 And a Certain Ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal Life?

19 And JESUS said unto him, Why callest thou Me good? none *is* good, save one, *that is*, GOD.

20 Thou knowest the COMMANDMENTS, "Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy FATHER and [thy] MOTHER." †

21 And HE said, All these have I kept from † my Youth up.

22 Now when JESUS heard [these things], he said unto him, Yet lackest thou One thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the Poor, and thou shalt have Treasure in † Heaven: and come, follow me.

23 And when he heard this, HE † was very sorrowful: for he was very rich.

24 And when † JESUS saw [that he was very sorrowful], he said, How hardly shall THEY that HAVE RICHES enter into the KINGDOM of GOD!

25 For it is easier for a Camel to go through a Needle's Eye, than for a Rich man to enter into the KINGDOM of GOD.

26 And THEY that HEARD *it* said, Who then can be saved?

27 And HE said, The THINGS

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—13. But. 13. *his* BREAST. 14. more than the other (*d*). 16. *them*. 21. *my* (*d*). 22. HEAVEN. 23. became very sorrowful. 24. Jesus beheld him, he said. See 13, 20, 22, 24 (*d*).

‡ 20. Exodus xx. 12.

which are IMPOSSIBLE with Men are possible with GOD.

28 Then PETER said, Lo, we have left †all, and followed thee.

29 And HE said unto them, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left House, or †Parents, or Brethren, or Wife, or Children, for the KINGDOM of GOD's sake,

30 Who shall not receive manifold more in this PRESENT-TIME, and in the WORLD TO-COME Life everlasting.

§ CXVIII.

31 Then he took *unto him* the TWELVE, and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and All THINGS that are WRITTEN by the PROPHETS concerning the SON of MAN shall be accomplished.

32 For he shall be delivered unto the GENTILES, and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on:

33 And they shall scourge *him*, and put him to death: and the THIRD DAY he shall rise again.

34 And *they* understood none of these things: and this SAYING was hid from them, neither knew they the THINGS which were SPOKEN.

§ CXIX.

35 And it came to pass, that as he was COME-NIGH unto Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the WAY-SIDE begging:

36 And hearing the Multitude pass by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they told him, That Jesus of NAZARETH passeth by.

38 And he cried, saying, Jesus,

thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

39 And THEY which WENT-BEFORE rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but *he* cried so much the more, *Thou* Son of David, have mercy on me.

40 And JESUS stood, and commanded him to be brought unto him: and when he was come near, he asked him,

41 [Saying,] What wilt thou that I shall do unto thee? And HE said, Lord, that I may receive *my* sight.

42 And JESUS said unto him, Receive *thy* sight: thy FAITH hath saved thee.

43 And immediately he received *his* sight, and followed him, glorifying GOD: and All the PEOPLE, when they saw *it*, gave Praise unto GOD.

CHAPTER XIX.

§ CXX.

1 And *Jesus* entered and passed through JERICHO.

2 And, behold, *there was* a Man named Zacchæus, which was the Chief-among-the-Publicans, and *he* †was rich.

3 And he sought to see JESUS who he was; and could not for the PRESS, Because he was little of STATURE.

4 And he ran †before, and climbed up into a Sycomore-tree to see him: For he was to pass that *way*.

5 And when †JESUS came to the PLACE, he looked up, [and saw him,] and said unto him, Zacchæus, make haste, and come

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—28. our OWN, and (d).
or Children. 2. *was* rich (d). 4. BEFORE (d).

29. Wife, or Brethren, or Parents,
5. Jesus. See 41 (d), 5 (d).

down; for To-day I must abide at thy HOUSE.

6 And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully.

7 And when they saw *it*, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a Man that is a Sinner.

8 And Zacchæus stood, and said unto the LORD; Behold, Lord, the HALF † of my GOODS I give to the POOR; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore *him* fourfold.

9 And † JESUS said unto him, This-day is Salvation come to this HOUSE, forsomuch as *he* also is a Son of Abraham.

10 For the SON of MAN is come to seek and to save THAT which was LOST.

§ CXXI.

11 And as they heard these things, he added and spake a Parable, because he WAS nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought That the KINGDOM of GOD should immediately appear.

12 He said therefore, A certain Nobleman went into a far Country to receive for himself a Kingdom, and to return.

13 And he called his Ten Servants, and delivered them Ten Pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come.

14 But his CITIZENS hated him, and sent a Message after him, saying, We will not have this *man* to reign over us.

15 And it came to pass, that when he was RETURNED, having received the KINGDOM, then he commanded these SERVANTS to be

called unto him, to whom he had given the MONEY, that he might know how much † every man had gained by trading.

16 Then came the FIRST, saying, Lord, thy POUND hath gained Ten Pounds.

17 And he said unto him, † Well, thou Good Servant: Because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou Authority over Ten Cities.

18 And the SECOND came, saying, Lord, thy POUND hath gained Five Pounds.

19 And he said likewise to *him*, Be *thou* also over Five Cities.

20 And † another came, saying, Lord, behold, *here is* thy POUND, which I have kept laid up in a Napkin:

21 For I feared thee, Because thou art an austere Man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow.

22 And he saith unto him, Out of thine-own MOUTH will I judge thee, *thou* Wicked Servant. Thou knewest That **Æ** was an austere Man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow:

23 Wherefore then gavest not thou my MONEY into the BANK, that at my coming **Æ** might have required *mine own with Usury?

24 And he said unto THEM that STOOD-BY, Take from him the POUND, and give *it* to HIM that HATH TEN Pounds.

25 And they said unto him, Lord, he hath Ten Pounds.

26 [For] I say unto you, That

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—23. the Same with.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. of My GOODS I give to the Poor. 9. Jesus. 15. they had gained (d). 17. well done, *thou*. 20. the OTHER. See 26 (d).

unto EVERY-ONE which HATH shall be given; and from HIM that HATH not, even that he hath shall be taken away [from him].

27 But †THOSE mine ENEMIES, which WOULD not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay † *them* before me.

§ CXXII.

28 And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.

29 And it came to pass, when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at *the MOUNT CALLED *the mount* of Olives, he sent two of †his DISCIPLES,

30 Saying, Go ye into the VILLAGES OVER-AGAINST *you*; in the which at *your* entering ye shall find a Colt tied, whereon yet never Man sat: loose him, and bring *him* hither.

31 And if any man ask you, Why do ye loose *him*? thus shall ye say [unto him], Because the LORD hath Need of him.

32 And THEY that were SENT went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.

33 And as they were loosing the COLT, the OWNERS thereof said unto them, Why loose ye the COLT?

34 And THEY said, †The LORD hath Need of him.

35 And they brought him to JESUS: and they cast Their GARMENTS upon the COLT, and they set JESUS thereon.

36 And as he went, they spread their CLOTHES in the WAY.

37 And when he was come nigh,

even now at the DESCENT of the MOUNT of OLIVES, the Whole MULTITUDE of the DISCIPLES began to rejoice and praise GOD with a loud Voice for All the Mighty-works that they had seen;

38 Saying, “Blessed *be* the KING that COMETH in the Name of the Lord”:‡ Peace in Heaven, and Glory in the highest.

39 And some of the PHARISEES from among the MULTITUDE said unto him, Master, rebuke thy DISCIPLES.

40 And he answered and said [unto them], I tell you, That if these should hold their peace, the STONES would immediately cry out.

§ CXXIII.

41 And when he was come near, he beheld the CITY, and wept over it,

42 Saying, If thou hadst known, even *thou*, [at least] in this [thy] DAY, the THINGS *which belong* unto †thy Peace! but now they are hid from thine Eyes.

43 For the Days shall come upon thee, that thine ENEMIES shall cast a Trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side,

44 And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy CHILDREN within thee; and they shall not leave in thee one Stone upon another; because thou knewest not the TIME of thy VISITATION.

45 And he went into the TEMPLE, and began to cast out THEM that SOLD therein, [and them that bought;]

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—29. THAT MOUNT which is CALLED.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—27. THESE ENEMIES of mine, which WOULD not (*d*). 27. them (*d*). 29. the DISCIPLES (*d*). 34. Because the LORD. 42. *thy* Peace (*d*). See 26 (*d*), 31 (*d*), 40 (*d*), 42 (twice) (*d*), 45 (*d*).

‡ 38. Psalms cxviii. 26.

46 Saying unto them, It is written, "My HOUSE † is the House of Prayer": but "ye have made It a Den of Thieves." ‡

47 And he taught DAILY in the TEMPLE. But the CHIEF-PRIESTS and the SCRIBES and the CHIEF of the PEOPLE sought to destroy Him,

48 And could not find WHAT they might do: for all the PEOPLE were very attentive to hear Him.

CHAPTER XX.

§ CXXIV.

1 And it came to pass, *that* on one of † those DAYS, as he taught the PEOPLE in the TEMPLE, and preached the gospel, the CHIEF-PRIESTS and the SCRIBES came upon *him* with the ELDERS,

2 And spake unto him, saying, Tell us, by What Authority doest thou These things? or who is HE that GAVE thee this AUTHORITY?

3 And he answered and said unto them, **¶** I will also ask you † One Thing; and answer me:

4 The BAPTISM of John, was it from Heaven, or of Men?

5 And THEY reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From Heaven; he will say, Why [then] believed ye him not?

6 But and if we say, Of Men; † All the PEOPLE will stone us: for they be persuaded that John was a Prophet.

7 And they answered, that they could not tell whence *it was*.

8 And JESUS said unto them, Neither tell **¶** you by What Authority I do These things.

§ CXXV.

9 Then began he to speak to the PEOPLE this PARABLE; A [certain] Man planted a Vineyard, and let it forth to Husbandmen, and went into a far country for a long Time.

10 And at the Season he sent a Servant to the HUSBANDMEN, that they should give him of the FRUIT of the VINEYARD: but the HUSBANDMEN beat him, and sent *him* away empty.

11 And again he sent Another Servant: and THEY beat *him* also, and entreated *him* shamefully, and sent *him* away empty.

12 And again he sent a third: and THEY wounded *him* also, and cast *him* out.

13 Then said the LORD of the VINEYARD, What shall I do? I will send my BELOVED SON: it may be they will reverence *him* [when they see *him*].

14 But when the HUSBANDMEN saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the HEIR: [come,] let us kill him, that the INHERITANCE may be our's.

15 So they cast him out of the VINEYARD, and killed *him*. What therefore shall the LORD of the VINEYARD do unto them?

16 He shall come and destroy these HUSBANDMEN, and shall give the VINEYARD to others. And when they heard *it*, they said, *God* forbid.

17 And HE beheld them, and said, What is THIS then that is WRITTEN, "The Stone which the

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—46. shall be a HOUSE (*d*). 1. the DAYS (*d*). 3. a Thing; and answer ye me (*d*). 6. all the PEOPLE. See 5, 9, 13 (*d*), 14 (*d*).

‡ 46. Isa. lvi. 7; Jer. vii. 11. *See*

BUILDERS rejected, the same is become the Head of the Corner?" †

18 WHOSOEVER shall FALL upon That STONE shall be broken; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

19 And the CHIEF-PRIESTS and the SCRIBES the Same HOUR sought to lay HANDS on him: and they feared the PEOPLE: for they perceived That he had spoken this PARABLE against them.

§ CXXVI.

20 And they watched *him*, and sent forth Spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of His Words, that so they might DELIVER him unto the POWER and AUTHORITY of the GOVERNOR.

21 And they asked him, saying, Master, we know That thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the Person of *any*, but teachest the WAY of GOD truly:

22 Is it lawful for us to give Tribute unto Cæsar, or no?

23 But he perceived Their CRAFTINESS, and said unto them, [Why tempt ye Me?]

24 Shew me a Penny. Whose Image and Superscription hath it? † They answered and said, Cæsar's.

25 And HE said unto them, Render therefore unto Cæsar the THINGS which be Cæsar's, and unto GOD the THINGS which be GOD'S.

26 And they could not take hold of † His Words before the PEOPLE:

and they marvelled at his ANSWER, and held their peace.

§ CXXVII.

27 Then came to *him* CERTAIN of the SADDUCEES, † which DENY that there is any Resurrection; and they asked him,

28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any man's Brother die, having a Wife, and † *he* die without children, that his BROTHER should take *his* WIFE, and raise up Seed unto his BROTHER.

29 There were therefore Seven Brethren: and the FIRST took a Wife, and died without children.

30 And the SECOND [took her to WIFE, and *he* died childless].

31 And the THIRD took her; and in like manner the SEVEN also: [and] they left no Children, and died.

32 Last [of all] the WOMAN died also.

33 Therefore in the RESURRECTION Whose Wife of them is she? for SEVEN had her to Wife.

34 And JESUS [answering] said unto them, The CHILDREN of this WORLD marry, and are given in marriage:

35 But THEY which shall be ACCOUNTED-WORTHY to obtain that WORLD, and *the RESURRECTION from the Dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage:

36 Neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are the Children of † GOD, being the Children of the RESURRECTION.

37 Now That the DEAD are

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—35. THAT RESURRECTION which is from.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—24. And THEY said, Cæsar's (*d*). 26. a word before. 27. which SAY that there is no Resurrection (*d*). 28. *he* be without (*d*). 36. God. See 23 (*d*), 30 (*d*), 31, 32 (*d*), 34 (*d*).

‡ 17. Psalms cxviii. 22.

raised, even Moses shewed at the BUSH, when he calleth the Lord “the GOD of Abraham, and the †GOD of Isaac, and the †GOD of Jacob.” †

38 For he is not a God of the Dead, but of the Living: for all live unto him.

39 Then certain of the SCRIBES answering said, Master, thou hast well said.

40 †And after that they durst not ask him any *question at all*.

§ CXXVIII.

41 And he said unto them, How say they that CHRIST is David’s Son?

42 †And David himself saith in the Book of Psalms, “The †LORD said unto my LORD, Sit thou on my Right *hand*,

43 Till I make thine ENEMIES thy FOOTSTOOL.” †

44 David therefore calleth him Lord, how is he then †his Son?

45 Then in the audience of All the PEOPLE he said unto †his DISCIPLES,

46 Beware of *the SCRIBES, which DESIRE to walk in long Robes, and love Greetings in the MARKETS, and the Highest-seats in the SYNAGOGUES, and the Chief-rooms at FEASTS;

47 Which devour WIDOWS’ HOUSES, and for a Shew make long prayers: the same shall receive Greater Damnation.

CHAPTER XXI.

§ CXXIX.

1 And he looked up, and saw

the RICH men CASTING their GIFTS into the TREASURY.

2 And he saw [also] a Certain poor Widow casting in thither Two Mites.

3 And he said, Of a truth I say unto you, That this POOR WIDOW hath cast in more than they all:

4 For all these have of their ABUNDANCE cast in unto the OFFERINGS [of GOD]: but *she* of her PENURY hath cast in All the LIVING that she had.

§ CXXX.

5 And as some spake of the TEMPLE, How it was adorned with goodly Stones and Gifts, he said,

6 *As for* these things which ye behold, the Days will come, in the which there shall not be †left one Stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

7 And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and What SIGN *will there be* when these things shall come to pass?

8 And HE said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my NAME, saying, *I am Christ*; and the TIME draweth near: go ye not [therefore] after them.

9 *But when ye shall hear of Wars and Commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to pass; but the END is not *by and by.

10 Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against Nation, and Kingdom against Kingdom:

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—46. THOSE SCRIBES which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—37. God. 37. God.

42. Lord. 44. His Son? 45. the DISCIPLES.

† 37. Exod. iii. 6. † 43. Psa. cx. 1.

9. And when.

9. immediately.

40. For after.

42. For David.

6. left here one (d). See 2, 4, 8 (d).

11 And † great Earthquakes shall be in divers Places, and Famines, and Pestilences; and Fearful-sights and great Signs shall there be from Heaven.

12 But before all these, they shall lay their HANDS on you, and persecute *you*, delivering *you* up to the Synagogues, and into Prisons, being † brought before Kings and Rulers for my NAME'S sake.

13 And it shall turn to you for a Testimony.

14 Settle *it* therefore in your HEARTS, not to meditate before what ye shall answer:

15 For £ will give you a Mouth and Wisdom, which All your ADVERSARIES shall not be able to gainsay nor resist.

16 And ye shall be betrayed both by Parents, and Brethren, and Kinsfolks, and Friends; and *some* of you shall they cause to be put to death.

17 And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my NAME'S sake.

18 But there shall not an Hair of your HEAD perish.

19 In your PATIENCE possess ye your SOULS.

§ CXXXI.

20 And when ye shall see JERUSALEM compassed with Armies, then know That the DESOLATION thereof is nigh.

21 Then let THEM which are in JUDEA flee to the MOUNTAINS; and let THEM which are in the Midst of it depart out; and let not THEM that are in the COUNTRIES enter thereinto.

22 For these be the Days of

Vengeance, that All THINGS which are WRITTEN may be FULFILLED.

23 [But] Woe unto THEM that ARE-WITH-CHILD, and to THEM that GIVE-SUCK, in Those DAYS! for there shall be great Distress in the LAND, and Wrath upon this PEOPLE.

24 And they shall fall by the Edge of the Sword, and shall be led away captive into All NATIONS: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until † the Times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

25 And there shall be Signs in the Sun, and in the Moon, and in the Stars; and upon the EARTH Distress of Nations, with Perplexity; † the Sea and the Waves roaring;

26 Men's hearts failing them for Fear, and for Looking-after *those* THINGS which are COMING on the EARTH: for the POWERS of HEAVEN shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the SON of MAN coming in a Cloud with Power and great Glory.

28 And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your HEADS; for your REDEMPTION draweth nigh.

29 And he spake to them a Parable; Behold the FIG-TREE, and All the TREES;

30 When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves That SUMMER is now nigh at hand.

31 So likewise p̄t , when ye see these things come to pass, know

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—11. there shall be great Earthquakes, and in divers Places Famines, and. 12. led away before. 24. when they should be fulfilled; and the Times shall be *those* of the Gentiles. And (*d*). 25. Roarings of the Sea and of the Waves. See 23.

ye That the KINGDOM of GOD is nigh at hand.

32 Verily I say unto you, This GENERATION shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled.

33 HEAVEN and EARTH shall pass away: but my WORDS shall not pass away.

34 And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time Your HEARTS be overcharged with Surfeiting, and Drunkenness, and Cares of this life, and so that DAY come upon you unawares.

35 For as a Snare shall it come on All THEM that DWELL on the Face of the Whole EARTH.

36 † Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape All these THINGS that SHALL come to pass, and to stand before the SON of MAN.

§ CXXXII.

37 And in the DAY-TIME he was teaching in the TEMPLE; and at NIGHT he went out, and abode in *the MOUNT that is CALLED *the mount* of Olives.

38 And All the PEOPLE came early in the morning to him in the TEMPLE, for to hear him.

CHAPTER XXII.

1 Now *the FEAST of UNLEAVENED-BREAD drew nigh, which is CALLED the Passover.

2 And the CHIEF-PRIESTS and SCRIBES sought HOW they might kill him; for they feared the PEOPLE.

3 Then entered SATAN †into

*Judas SURNAMED Iscariot, being of the NUMBER of the TWELVE.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the CHIEF-PRIESTS and CAPTAINS, HOW he might betray him unto them.

5 And they were glad, and covenanted to give him Money.

6 And he promised, and sought Opportunity to BETRAY him unto them in the absence of the Multitude.

§ CXXXIII.

7 Then came the DAY of UNLEAVENED-BREAD, when the PASSOVER must be killed.

8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the PASSOVER, that we may eat.

9 And THEY said unto him, Where wilt thou that we †prepare?

10 And HE said unto them, Behold, when ye are entered into the CITY, there shall a Man meet you, bearing a Pitcher of Water; follow him into the HOUSE where he entereth in.

11 And ye shall say unto the GOODMAN of the HOUSE, The MASTER saith unto thee, Where is the GUESTCHAMBER, where I shall eat the PASSOVER with my DISCIPLES?

12 And he shall shew you a large Upper-room furnished: there make ready.

13 And they went, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the PASSOVER.

§ CXXXIV.

14 And when the HOUR was

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—37. THAT MOUNT which is. Judas who is SURNAMED.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—36. But watch ye, and pray always, that ye may prevail to escape (d). 3. into THAT Judas which is CALLED Iscariot. 9. prepare for thee to eat the PASSOVER? And (d).

1. THAT FEAST of. 3. THAT

come, he sat down, and † the TWELVE Apostles with him.

15 And he said unto them, With Desire I have desired to eat This PASSOVER with you before I SUFFER.

16 For I say unto you, I will not [any more] eat † thereof, until it be fulfilled in the KINGDOM of GOD.

17 And he took the Cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide *it* among yourselves:

18 For I say unto you, I will not drink † of the FRUIT of the VINE, until the KINGDOM of GOD shall come.

19 And he took Bread, and gave thanks, and brake *it*, and gave unto them, saying, This is *my BODY which is GIVEN for you: this do in REMEMBRANCE of ME.

20 Likewise also the CUP after SUPPER, saying, This CUP *is* the NEW Testament in my BLOOD, *which is SHED for you.

21 But, behold, the HAND of HIM that BETRAYETH me *is* with me on the TABLE.

22 † And truly the SON of MAN goeth, *as IT was DETERMINED: but Woe unto that MAN by whom he is betrayed!

23 And *they* began to enquire among themselves, WHICH of them it was that should do this thing.

§ CXXXV.

24 And there was also a Strife among them, WHICH of them should be accounted the greatest.

25 And HE said unto them, The KINGS of the GENTILES exercise

lordship over them; and THEY that EXERCISE-AUTHORITY upon them are called Benefactors.

26 But *ye shall* not be so: but HE that is GREATEST among you, let him be as the YOUNGER; and HE that is CHIEF, as HE that doth SERVE.

27 For whether *is* greater, HE that SITTETH-AT-MEAT, or HE that SERVETH? *is* not HE that SITTETH-AT-MEAT? but **Ʒ** am among you as HE that SERVETH.

28 **Ɔ** are THEY which have CONTINUED with me in my TEMP-TATIONS.

29 And **Ʒ** appoint unto you a Kingdom, as my FATHER hath appointed unto me;

30 That ye may eat and drink at my TABLE in my KINGDOM, and sit on Thrones judging the TWELVE Tribes of ISRAEL.

§ CXXXVI.

31 [And the LORD said,] Simon, Simon, behold, SATAN hath desired *to have* you, that he may SIFT *you* as WHEAT:

32 But **Ʒ** have prayed for thee, that thy FAITH fail not: and *when *thou* art converted, strengthen thy BRETHREN.

33 And HE said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into Prison, and to Death.

34 And HE said, I tell thee, Peter, the Cock shall not crow This-day † before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

35 And he said unto them, When I sent you without Purse,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—19. THAT BODY of mine which is GIVEN for you: this do in MY Remembrance. 20. THAT which is SHED for you. 22. according to THAT which was DETERMINED. 32. *thou*, when thou art.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. the APOSTLES with him (*d*). 16. the same, until (*d*). 18. from HENCEFORTH of. 22. Because truly. 34. until thou shalt (*d*). See 16 (*d*), 31.

and Scrip, and Shoes, lacked ye any thing? And THEY said, Nothing.

36 † Then said he unto them, But now, HE that HATH a Purse, let him take *it*, and likewise *his* Scrip: and HE that HATH no Sword, let him sell his GARMENT, and buy one.

37 For I say unto you, That THIS that is WRITTEN must [yet] be accomplished in me, “AND he was reckoned among the Transgressors”: ‡ for the THINGS concerning me have an end.

38 And THEY said, Lord, behold, here *are* two Swords. And HE said unto them, It is enough.

§ CXXXVII.

39 And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the MOUNT OF OLIVES; and his DISCIPLES also followed him.

40 And when he was at the PLACE, he said unto them, Pray that ye enter not into Temptation.

41 And *he* was withdrawn from them about a Stone's Cast, and kneeled down, and prayed,

42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove † this CUP from me: nevertheless not my WILL, but THINE, be done.

43 [And there appeared an Angel unto him from Heaven, strengthening him.

44 And being in an Agony he prayed more earnestly: and his SWEAT was as it were great Drops of Blood falling down to the GROUND.]

45 And when he rose up from PRAYER, and was come to *his*

DISCIPLES, he found them sleeping for SORROW,

46 And said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into Temptation.

§ CXXXVIII.

47 [And] while he yet spake, behold a Multitude, and HE that was CALLED Judas, one of the TWELVE, went before them, and drew near unto JESUS to kiss him.

48 But † JESUS said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the SON of MAN with a Kiss?

49 When THEY which were about him saw WHAT would FOLLOW, they said [unto him], Lord, shall we smite with the Sword?

50 And one of them smote the SERVANT of the HIGH-PRIEST, and cut off His RIGHT EAR.

51 And † JESUS answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched † his EAR, and healed him.

52 Then JESUS said unto the CHIEF-PRIESTS, and Captains of the TEMPLE, and the Elders, which were COME to him, Be ye come out, as against a Thief, with Swords and Staves?

53 When I was daily with you in the TEMPLE, ye stretched forth no HANDS against me: but this is Your HOUR, and the POWER of DARKNESS.

(§ CXXXIX.)

54 Then took they him, and led *him*, and brought † him into the HIGH-PRIEST'S HOUSE. And PETER followed afar off.

55 And when they had kindled a Fire in the Midst of the HALL,

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—36. And he said unto them. 42. This Cup. 48. Jesus. 51. Jesus. 51. the EAR. 54. *him*. See 37 (d), 43—44 (d), 47, 49.

‡ 37. Isaiah liii. 12.

and were set down together, PETER sat down among them.

56 But a certain Maid beheld him as he sat by the FIRE, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him.

57 And HE denied [him], saying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a little while another saw him, and said, **Thou** art also of them. And PETER said, Man, I am not.

59 And about the space of one Hour after another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a Truth this *fellow* also was with him: for he is a Galilæan.

60 And PETER said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately, while he yet spake, the COCK crew.

61 And the LORD turned, and looked upon PETER. And PETER remembered the WORD of the LORD, how he had said unto him, Before the Cock †crew, thou shalt deny me thrice.

62 And †PETER went out, and wept bitterly.

63 And *the MEN that HELD †JESUS mocked him, and smote *him*.

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they [struck him on the FACE, and] asked him, saying, Prophecy, who is †it that SMOTE thee?

65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

§ CXL.

66 And as soon as it was Day, the ELDERS of the PEOPLE, and

the Chief-priests and the Scribes came together, and led him into their COUNCIL, saying,

67 Art **thou** the CHRIST? tell us. And he said unto them, If I tell you, ye will not believe:

68 And if I [also] ask *you*, ye will not answer [me, nor let *me* go].

69 †HEREAFTER shall the SON of MAN sit on the Right *hand* of the POWER of GOD.

70 Then said they all, Art **thou** then the SON of GOD? And HE said unto them, **Ye** say That **I** am.

71 And **they** said, What need we any further Witness? for we ourselves have heard of his *own* MOUTH.

CHAPTER XXIII.

1 And the Whole MULTITUDE of them arose, and led him unto PILATE.

§ CXLI.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this *fellow* perverting †the NATION, and forbidding to give Tribute to Caesar, †saying that he himself is Christ a King.

3 And PILATE asked him, saying, Art **thou** the KING of the JEWS? And HE answered him and said, **Thou** sayest *it*.

4 Then said PILATE to the CHIEF-PRIESTS and to the PEOPLE, I find No Fault in this MAN.

5 And THEY were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the PEOPLE, teaching throughout All

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—63. THOSE MEN which HELD.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—61. crew To-day, thou shalt. 62. he went out. 63. him mocked him (*d*). 64. HE that SMOTE. 69. But from HENCEFORTH shall. 2. our NATION. 2. and saying. See 57 (*d*) 64 (*d*), 68 (twice) (*d*).

JEWRY, beginning †from GALILEE to this place.

6 When Pilate heard [of Galilee], he asked whether the MAN were a Galilæan.

7 And as soon as he knew That he belonged unto Herod's JURISDICTION, he sent him to †Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem at That TIME.

§ CXLII.

8 And when HEROD saw JESUS, he was exceeding glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long *season*, because he had HEARD [many things] of him; and he hoped to have seen Some Miracle done by him.

9 Then he questioned with him in many Words; but *he* answered him nothing.

10 And the CHIEF-PRIESTS and SCRIBES stood and vehemently accused him.

11 And HEROD with his MEN-OF-WAR set him at nought, and mocked *him*, and arrayed †him in a gorgeous Robe, and sent him again to PILATE.

12 And the Same DAY †PILATE and HEROD were made Friends together: for before they were at Enmity between themselves.

§ CXLIII.

13 And Pilate, when he had called together the CHIEF-PRIESTS and the RULERS and the PEOPLE,

14 Said unto them, Ye have brought this MAN unto me, as one that perverteth the PEOPLE: and,

behold, *he*, having examined *him* before you, have found no Fault in this MAN touching those things whereof ye accuse him:

15 No, nor yet Herod: for †I sent you to him; and, lo, nothing worthy of Death is done unto him.

16 I will therefore chastise him, and release *him*.

17 [For of Necessity he must release one unto them at the Feast.]

18 And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this *man*, and release unto us BARABBAS:

19 Who for a certain Sedition made in the CITY, and for Murder, was cast into †Prison.

§ CXLIV.

20 PILATE therefore, willing to release JESUS, spake again to them.

21 But THEY cried, saying, Crucify *him*, crucify him.

22 And HE said unto them the Third time, Why, What Evil hath *he* done? I have found No Cause of Death in him: I will therefore chastise him, and let *him* go.

23 And THEY were instant with loud Voices, requiring that he †might be crucified. And the VOICES of them [and of the CHIEF-PRIESTS] prevailed.

24 And †PILATE gave sentence that *it should be as they REQUIRED.

25 And he released unto them HIM that for Sedition and Murder was CAST into †PRISON, whom they had desired; but he delivered JESUS to their WILL.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—24. their REQUEST should be granted.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—5. even from. 7. HEROD. 11. *him*. 12. HEROD and PILATE. 15. he sent him back again to you; and, lo, nothing worthy of Death hath been done by him. 19. PRISON (*d*). 23. should be crucified. 24. Pilate. 25. Prison. See 6 (*d*), 8 (*d*), 17 (*d*), 23 (*d*).

§ CXLV.

26 And as they led him away, they laid hold upon †ONE Simon, a Cyrenian, COMING out of the Country, and on him they laid the CROSS, that he might bear *it* after JESUS.

27 And there followed him a Great Company of PEOPLE, and of Women, which [also] bewailed and lamented him.

28 But †JESUS turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your CHILDREN.

29 For, behold, the Days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed *are* the BARREN, and the Wombs that never bare, and the Paps which never †gave suck.

30 Then shall they begin to say to the MOUNTAINS, Fall on us; and to the HILLS, Cover us.

31 For if they do these things in a †GREEN Tree, what shall be done in the DRY?

§ CXLVI.

32 And there were also two other, Malefactors, led with him to be put to death.

33 And when they were come to *the PLACE, which is CALLED Calvary, there they crucified him, and the MALEFACTORS, one on the Right *hand*, and the other on the Left.

34 [Then said JESUS, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.] And they parted his RAIMENT, and cast Lots.

35 And the PEOPLE stood beholding. And the RULERS also [with them] derided *him*, saying, He saved Others; let him save himself, if †*he* be CHRIST, the CHOSEN of GOD.

36 And the SOLDIERS also mocked him, coming to him, [and] offering him Vinegar,

37 And saying, If *thou* be the KING of the JEWS, save thyself.

38 And a Superscription also was [written] over him [in Letters of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew], This is the KING of the JEWS.

§ CXLVII.

39 And one of the MALEFACTORS which were HANGED railed on him, [saying,] †If *thou* be CHRIST, save thyself and us.

40 But the OTHER answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not *thou* fear GOD, seeing thou art in the SAME Condemnation?

41 And *we* indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of *our* deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.

42 And he said unto †JESUS, [Lord,] remember me when thou comest †into thy KINGDOM.

43 And †JESUS said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be with me in PARADISE.

§ CXLVIII.

44 †And it was about the sixth Hour, and there was a Darkness over All the EARTH until the ninth †Hour.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—33. THAT PLACE which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—26. one Simon, a Cyrenian, coming. 28. Jesus. 29. nourished (*d*). 31. Green Tree. 35. he be the Son, the CHRIST, the CHOSEN of GOD (*d*). 39. Art not *thou* the Christ? save (*d*). 42. Jesus (*d*). 42. unto. 43. he said (*d*). 44. It was now about. 44. Hour; the SUN failing (*d*). See 27, 34 (*d*), 35 (*d*), 36, 38 (twice) (*d*), 39, 42 (*d*).

45 † And [the SUN was darkened, and] the VEIL of the TEMPLE was rent in the Midst.

46 And when JESUS had cried with a loud Voice, he said, Father, into thy Hands I † commend my SPIRIT: and having said † thus, he gave up the ghost.

47 Now when the CENTURION saw WHAT was DONE, he glorified GOD, saying, Certainly this * was a righteous MAN.

48 And All the PEOPLE that CAME-TOGETHER to that SIGHT, † beholding the THINGS which were DONE, smgte † Their BREASTS, and returned.

49 And All his ACQUAINTANCE, † and * the Women that FOLLOWED him from GALILEE, stood afar off, beholding these things.

§ CXLIX.

50 And, behold, *there was* a Man named Joseph, a Counsellor; *and he was* a good Man, and a just:

51 The same had not consented to the COUNSEL and DEED of them; *he was* of Arimathæa, a City of the JEWS: who [also himself] waited for the KINGDOM of GOD.

52 This *man* went unto PILATE, and begged the BODY of JESUS.

53 And he took it down, and wrapped it in Linen, and laid it in a Sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

54 And † that Day was the Preparation, and the Sabbath drew on.

55 And the † Women [also], which came with him from GALILEE, followed after, and beheld the SEPULCHRE, and how his BODY was laid.

56 And they returned, and prepared Spices and Ointments; and rested the SABBATH day according to the COMMANDMENT.

CHAPTER XXIV.

§ CL.

1 Now upon the FIRST *day* of the WEEK, very early in the Morning, they came unto the SEPULCHRE, bringing the Spices which they had prepared, [and certain *others* with them.]

2 And they found the STONE rolled away from the SEPULCHRE.

3 And they entered in, and found not the BODY of the LORD Jesus.

4 And it came to pass, as they were MUCH-PERPLEXED * thereabout, behold, Two Men stood by them in shining † Garments:

5 And as they were afraid, and bowed down *their* FACES to the EARTH, they said unto them, Why seek ye the LIVING among the DEAD?

6 He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in GALILEE,

7 Saying, The SON of MAN must be delivered into the Hands of sinful Men, and be crucified, and the THIRD Day rise again.

8 And they remembered his WORDS,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—47. This MAN was righteous. 49. THOSE Women that. 4. about this, behold.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—45. And the VEIL. 46. commit (*d*). 46. This. 48. having beheld (*d*). 48. *their* (*d*). 49. and THOSE WOMEN that. 54. it was the Day of the. 55. WOMEN. 4. Apparel (*d*). See 45 (*d*), 51 (*d*), 55, 1 (*d*).

9 And returned from the SEPULCHRE, and told all these things unto the ELEVEN, and to All the REST.

10 *It was Mary MAGDALENE, and Joanna, and †Mary *the mother* of James, and OTHER *women that were* with them, which told these things unto the APOSTLES.

11 And †their WORDS seemed to them as Idle-*tales*, and they believed them not.

12 Then arose PETER, and ran unto the SEPULCHRE; and stooping down, he beheld the LINENCLOTHES [laid] by themselves, and departed, wondering in himself at THAT which was COME-TO-PASS.

§ CLI.

13 And, behold, two of them went that Same DAY to a Village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem *about* threescore Furlongs.

14 And *they* talked together of All these THINGS which had HAPPENED.

15 And it came to pass, that, while they COMMUNED *together* and reasoned, †JESUS himself drew near, and went with them.

16 But their EYES were holden that they should not KNOW him.

17 And he said unto them, What manner of COMMUNICATIONS *are* these that ye have one to another, as ye †walk, and are sad?

18 And the ONE of them, whose

Name was Cleopas, answering said unto him, Art *thou* only a Stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the THINGS which are COME-TO-PASS there in these DAYS?

19 And he said unto them, What things? And THEY said unto him, *CONCERNING Jesus of NAZARETH, which was a Prophet mighty in Deed and Word before GOD and All the PEOPLE:

20 And how the CHIEF-PRIESTS and our RULERS delivered him to be condemned to Death, and have crucified him.

21 But *we* trusted That it had been HE which SHOULD have redeemed ISRAEL: and beside all this, †To-day is the Third Day since these things were done.

22 Yea, and certain Women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the SEPULCHRE;

23 And when they found not his BODY, they came, saying, that they had also seen a Vision of Angels, which said that he was alive.

24 And certain of THEM which were with us went to the SEPULCHRE, and found *it* [even] so as the WOMEN had said: but Him they saw not.

25 Then *he* said unto them, O Fools, and slow of HEART to BELIEVE all that the PROPHETS have spoken:

26 Ought not CHRIST to have suffered these things, and to enter into his GLORY?

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—10. They were the MAGDALENE Mary, and Joanna. 19. The THINGS concerning.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—10. THAT Mary *who was*. 11. these WORDS. 15. Jesus. 17. walk? And they stood still, and were sad (*d*). 21. This Day is the Third since (*d*). See 12 (*d*), 24.

27 And beginning at Moses and All the PROPHETS, he expounded unto them in All the SCRIPTURES the THINGS concerning himself.

28 And they drew nigh unto the VILLAGE, whither they went: and *he* made as though he would have gone further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: For it is toward Evening, and the DAY is † far spent. And he went in to TARRY with them.

30 And it came to pass, as he SAT-AT-MEAT with them, he took BREAD, and blessed *it*, and brake, and gave to them.

31 And Their EYES were opened, and they knew him; and *he* vanished out of their sight.

32 And they said one to another, Did not our HEART burn [within us], while he talked with us by the WAY, [and] while he opened to us the SCRIPTURES?

§ CLII.

33 And they rose up the Same HOUR, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the ELEVEN gathered together, and THEM that were with them,

34 * Saying, the LORD is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 And *they* told what THINGS were done in the WAY, and how he was known of them in BREAKING of BREAD.

36 And as they thus spake, [JESUS] * himself stood in the

Midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you.

37 But they were † terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a Spirit.

38 And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled? and why do Thoughts arise in your † HEARTS?

39 Behold my HANDS and my FEET, That it is *I* myself: handle me, and see; For a Spirit hath not † Flesh and Bones, as ye see Me have.

40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them *his* HANDS and *his* FEET.

41 And while they yet believed not for JOY, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any Meat?

42 And THEY gave him a Piece of a broiled Fish, [and of an Honeycomb.]

43 And he took *it*, and did eat before them.

44 And he said unto them, These *are* the WORDS which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, That All THINGS must be fulfilled, which were WRITTEN in the LAW of Moses, and *in* the † Prophets, and *in* the Psalms, concerning me.

45 Then opened he Their UNDERSTANDING, that they might UNDERSTAND the SCRIPTURES,

46 And said unto them, Thus it is written, † and thus it behoved CHRIST to suffer, and to rise from the Dead the THIRD Day:

47 And that Repentance † and

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—34. who SAID. 36. *he* stood.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—29. now far spent (*d*). 37. troubled, and (*d*). 38. HEART (*d*). 39. both Flesh and. 44. PROPHETS. 46. that the CHRIST should suffer, and should rise (*d*). 47. unto Remission. See 32 (twice), 36 (*d*), 42 (*d*).

Remission of Sins should be preached in his NAME among All NATIONS, beginning at Jerusalem.

48 * And *ye* are Witnesses of these things.

49 And, behold, *ƒ* † send the PROMISE of my FATHER upon you: but tarry *ye* in the CITY [of Jerusalem], until ye be endued with Power from on high.

50 And he led them out as far

as to Bethany, and he lifted up his HANDS, and blessed them.

51 And it came to pass, while he BLESSED them, he was parted from them, and carried up into HEAVEN.

52 And *they* worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great Joy:

53 And were continually in the TEMPLE, [praising and] blessing GOD. [Amen.] †

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—48. *ye are* Witnesses.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—49. send forth. LUKE. See 49 (*d*), 53 (twice) (*d*).

53. *Subscription*: ACCORDING TO

† THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. JOHN.

CHAPTER 1.

SECTION I.

1 In the Beginning was the WORD, and the WORD was with GOD, and the WORD was God.

2 The same was in the Beginning with GOD.

3 All things were made by him: and without him was not any thing made that was made.

4 In him was Life; and the LIFE was the LIGHT of MEN.

5 And the LIGHT shineth in DARKNESS; and the DARKNESS comprehended It not.

§ II.

6 There was a Man sent from God, whose Name *was* John.

7 The same came for a Witness, to bear witness of the LIGHT, that all *men* through him might believe.

8 *He* was not *that* LIGHT, but *was sent* to bear witness of *that* LIGHT.

9 *That* was the TRUE LIGHT, which lighteth Every Man that cometh into the WORLD.

10 He was in the WORLD, and

the WORLD was made by him, and the WORLD knew Him not.

11 He came unto *his* OWN, and *his* OWN received Him not.

12 But as many as received him, to them gave he Power to become the Sons of God, *even* to THEM that BELIEVE on his NAME:

13 Which were born, not of Blood, nor of the Will of the Flesh, nor of the Will of Man, but of God.

14 And the WORD was made Flesh, and dwelt among us,—and we beheld his GLORY, the Glory as of the Only-begotten of the Father,—full of Grace and Truth.

15 John bare witness of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, HE that COMETH after me is preferred before me: For he was before me.

16 † And of his FULNESS have all *we* received, and Grace for Grace.

17 For the LAW was given by Moses, *but* GRACE and TRUTH came by Jesus Christ.

§ III.

18 No man hath seen God at any time; * the † ONLY-BEGOTTEN

☞ Dr. Birch did not collate the Gospel of Luke and John, but made use of a MS. copy of Dr. Bentley's Collation. Dr. Bentley's Collation is the authority for the following Readings; in addition to which, whenever the Collation of Bartolucci *coincides* with that of Bentley (for it is not nearly so complete or so minute as the latter), a small letter (*d*) is added to the note.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—18. THAT ONLY-BEGOTTEN SON which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: ACCORDING TO JOHN.

16. Because of his.

18. Only-begotten SON, HE which is.

Son, which IS in the BOSOM of the FATHER, *he* hath declared *him*.

19 And this is the RECORD of JOHN, when the JEWS sent † Priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, Who art *thou*?

20 And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, *I* am not the CHRIST.

21 And they asked him, What † then? Art *thou* Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art *thou that* PROPHET? And he answered, No.

22 † Then said they unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an Answer to THEM that SENT us. What sayest thou of thyself?

23 He said, *I am* "the Voice of one crying in the WILDERNESS, Make straight the WAY of the Lord," † as said *the PROPHET Esaias.

24 And † THEY which were SENT were of the PHARISEES.

25 And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou then, if *thou* be not *that* CHRIST, nor Elias, neither *that* PROPHET?

26 JOHN answered them, saying, *I* baptize with Water: [but] † there standeth one among you, whom *ye* know not;

27 *He* *it is, who COMING after me is preferred before me, Whose SHOE'S LATCHET *I* am not worthy to unloose.

28 These things were done in † Bethabara beyond JORDAN, where † John was baptizing.

§ IV.

29 The NEXT-DAY † JOHN seeth JESUS coming unto him, and saith, Behold *the LAMB of GOD, which TAKETH-AWAY the SIN of the WORLD.

30 This is he of whom *I* said, After me cometh a Man which is preferred before me: For he was before me.

31 And *I* knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to ISRAEL, therefore am *I* come baptizing with † WATER.

32 And John bare record, saying, I saw the SPIRIT descending from Heaven † like a Dove, and it abode upon him.

33 And *I* knew him not: but HE that SENT me to baptize with Water, *the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the SPIRIT descending, and remaining on him, *the same is HE which BAPTIZETH with the holy Ghost.

34 And *I* saw, and bare record That this is the SON of GOD.

§ V.

35 Again the NEXT-DAY-AFTER † JOHN stood, and two of his DISCIPLES;

36 And looking upon JESUS as he walked, he saith, Behold the LAMB of GOD!

37 And the TWO Disciples heard him speak, and they followed JESUS.

38 Then JESUS turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? THEY said

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—23. Esaias the PROPHET. 27. is HE that COMETH after me who is preferred. 29. THAT LAMB of GOD which. 33. *he* said. 33. this is HE which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—19. unto him Priests (*d*). 21. then *art thou*? Art thou Elias? 22. They said unto him. 24. they which were sent. 26. in the midst of you, coming after me, standeth *one* whom *ye* know not, Whose SHOE'S LATCHET (*d*). 28. Bethany (*d*). 28. JOHN. 29. he seeth. 31. Water. 32. as a Dove. 35. John. See 26 (*d*).

† 23. Isaiah xl. 3.

unto him, Rabbi,—which is to say, being interpreted, Master,—where dwellest thou?

39 He saith unto them, Come and see. They came † and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that DAY: [for] it was about the tenth Hour.

40 One of * the TWO which HEARD John *speak*, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's BROTHER.

41 *We* first findeth *his* OWN BROTHER Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the MESSIAS, which is, being interpreted, the CHRIST.

42 [And] he brought him to JESUS. And when JESUS beheld him, he said, *Thou* art Simon the SON of Jona: *thou* shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, A stone.

§ VI.

43 The DAY-FOLLOWING † JESUS would go forth into GALILEE, and findeth Philip, † and saith unto him, Follow me.

44 Now PHILIP was of Bethsaida, the CITY of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth NATHANAEL, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom Moses in the LAW, and the PROPHETS, did write, * Jesus of Nazareth, the † SON of JOSEPH.

46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? † Philip saith unto him, Come and see.

47 † JESUS saw NATHANAEL coming to him, and saith of him,

Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no Guile!

48 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou Me? † JESUS answered and said unto him, Before that Philip CALLED Thee, when thou wast under the FIG-TREE, I saw thee.

49 Nathanael answered [and saith unto him], Rabbi, *thou* art the SON of GOD; *thou* art the KING of ISRAEL.

50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, † I saw thee under the FIG-TREE, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these.

51 And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, [Hereafter] ye shall see HEAVEN open, and the ANGELS of GOD ascending and descending upon the SON of MAN.

CHAPTER II.

§ VII.

1 And the † THIRD DAY there was a Marriage in Cana of GALILEE; and the MOTHER of JESUS was there:

2 And both JESUS was called, and his DISCIPLES, to the MARRIAGE.

3 And when they wanted Wine, the MOTHER of JESUS saith unto him, They have no Wine.

4 JESUS saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine HOUR is not yet come.

5 His MOTHER saith unto the SERVANTS, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do *it*.

6 And there were set there six Waterpots of stone, after the

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—40. THOSE TWO.

45. THAT Jesus *who is* of Nazareth.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—39. therefore, and saw. 43. he would (*d*). 43. and JESUS saith (*d*). 45. Son. 46. PHILIP. 47. Jesus. 48. Jesus. 50. That I saw. 1. THIRD Day. See 39, 42, 49, 51.

manner of the PURIFYING of the JEWS, containing two or three Firkins apiece.

7 JESUS saith unto them, Fill the WATERPOTS with Water. And they filled them up to the brim.

8 And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the GOVERNOR-OF-THE-FEAST. And † they bare *it*.

9 When the RULER-OF-THE-FEAST had tasted the WATER that was made Wine, and knew not whence it was; but *the SERVANTS which DREW the WATER knew; the GOVERNOR-OF-THE-FEAST called the BRIDEGROOM,

10 And saith unto him, Every Man at the Beginning doth set forth GOOD Wine; and when men have well drunk, [then] THAT which is WORSE: *but thou* hast kept the GOOD Wine until now.

11 This † BEGINNING of MIRACLES did JESUS in Cana of GALILEE, and manifested forth his GLORY; and his DISCIPLES believed on him.

§ VIII.

12 After this he went down to Capernaum, *he*, and his MOTHER, and [his] BRETHREN, and his DISCIPLES: and they continued there not Many Days.

13 And the JEWS' PASSOVER was at hand, and JESUS went up to Jerusalem,

14 And found in the TEMPLE THOSE that SOLD Oxon and Sheep and Doves, and the CHANGERS-OF-MONEY sitting:

15 And when he had made a Scourge of Small-cords, he drove

them all out of the TEMPLE, and the SHEEP, and the OXEN; and poured out the CHANGERS' MONEY, and overthrew the TABLES.

16 And said unto THEM that SOLD DOVES, Take these things hence; make not my FATHER'S HOUSE an House of Merchandise.

17 [And] his DISCIPLES remembered That it was written, "The ZEAL of thine HOUSE hath eaten me up." †

18 Then answered the JEWS and said unto him, What Sign shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest These things?

19 † JESUS answered and said unto them, Destroy this TEMPLE, and in Three Days I will raise it up.

20 Then said the JEWS, Forty and Six Years was this TEMPLE in building, and wilt *thou* rear it up in Three Days?

21 But *he* spake of the TEMPLE of his BODY.

22 When therefore he was risen from the Dead, his DISCIPLES remembered That he had said This unto them; and they believed the SCRIPTURE, and the WORD which JESUS had said.

§ IX.

23 Now when he was in † Jerusalem at the PASSOVER, in the FEAST *day*, many believed in his NAME, when they saw *the MIRACLES which he did.

24 But † JESUS did not commit himself unto them, because he KNEW all *men*,

25 And needed not that any

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—9. THOSE SERVANTS. 23. His MIRACLES which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. THEY bare. 11. *which was* the Beginning of. 19. Jesus. 23. JERUSALEM. 24. Jesus. See 10, 12, 17.

‡ 17. Psalms lxix. 9.

should testify of MAN: for he knew what was in MAN.

CHAPTER III.

§ X.

1 There was a Man of the PHARISEES, named Nicodemus, a Ruler of the JEWS:

2 The same came to †JESUS by Night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know That thou art a Teacher come from God: for no man can do These MIRACLES that thou doest, except GOD be with him.

3 †JESUS answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, * Except a man be born again, he cannot see the KINGDOM of GOD.

4 NICODEMUS saith unto him, How can a Man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his MOTHER'S WOMB, and be born?

5 JESUS answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, * Except a man be born of Water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the KINGDOM of GOD.

6 THAT which is BORN of the FLESH is Flesh; and THAT which is BORN of the SPIRIT is Spirit.

7 Marvel not That I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.

8 The WIND bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the SOUND thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is EVERY-ONE that is BORN of the SPIRIT.

9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be?

10 JESUS answered and said

unto him, Art thou a MASTER of ISRAEL, and knowest not These things?

11 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our WITNESS.

12 If I have told you EARTHLY things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you of HEAVENLY things?

13 And no man hath ascended up to HEAVEN, but HE that CAME-DOWN from HEAVEN, † even * the SON of MAN [which IS in HEAVEN].

14 And as Moses lifted up the SERPENT in the WILDERNESS, even so must the SON of MAN be lifted up:

15 That WHOSOEVER BELIEVETH in him should [not perish, but] have eternal Life.

16 For GOD so loved the WORLD, that he gave † his ONLY-BEGOTTEN SON, that WHOSOEVER BELIEVETH in him should not perish, but have everlasting Life.

17 For GOD sent not his SON into the WORLD to condemn the WORLD; but that the WORLD through him might be saved.

18 HE that BELIEVETH on him is NOT condemned: [but] HE that BELIEVETH not is condemned already, Because he hath not believed in the NAME of the ONLY-BEGOTTEN Son of GOD.

19 And this is the CONDEMNATION, That LIGHT is come into the WORLD, and MEN loved DARKNESS rather than LIGHT, because Their DEEDS were evil.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. Except any one be. 5. Except any one be. 13. THAT SON of MAN which is in HEAVEN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—2. him by Night (d). 3. Jesus. 13. even the SON of MAN. And. 16. the ONLY-BEGOTTEN SON (d). See 13 (d), 15 (d), 18.

20 For EVERY-ONE that DOETH Evil hateth the LIGHT, neither cometh to the LIGHT, lest his DEEDS should be reproved.

21 But HE that DOETH TRUTH cometh to the LIGHT, that His DEEDS may be made manifest, That they are wrought in God.

§ XI.

22 After these things came JESUS and his DISCIPLES into the LAND of JUDÆA; and there he tarried with them, and baptized.

23 And † John also was baptizing in Ænon near to SALIM, Because there was much Water there: and they came, and were baptized.

24 For † JOHN was not yet cast into PRISON.

25 Then there arose a Question between † some of John's DISCIPLES and the Jews about Purifying.

26 And they came unto JOHN, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond JORDAN, to whom thou barest witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him.

27 John answered and said, A Man can receive nothing, except it be given him from HEAVEN.

28 *Ye* yourselves bear me witness, That I said, *I* am not the CHRIST, but That I am sent before him.

29 HE that HATH the BRIDE is the Bridegroom: but * the FRIEND of the BRIDEGROOM, which STANDETH and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the BRIDEGROOM'S VOICE: this MY JOY therefore is fulfilled.

30 *We* must increase, but *I* must decrease.

31 HE that COMETH from above is above all: HE that IS of the EARTH is EARTHLY, and speaketh of the EARTH: HE that COMETH from HEAVEN is above all.

32 [And] what he hath seen and heard, *that* he testifieth; and no man receiveth his TESTIMONY.

33 HE that hath RECEIVED His TESTIMONY hath set to his seal That GOD is true.

34 For he whom GOD hath sent speaketh the WORDS of GOD: for † GOD giveth not the SPIRIT by Measure *unto him*.

35 The FATHER loveth the SON, and hath given All things into his HAND.

36 HE that BELIEVETH on the SON hath everlasting Life: and HE that BELIEVETH not the SON shall not see Life; but the Wrath of GOD abideth on him.

CHAPTER IV.

§ XII.

1 When therefore the LORD knew How the PHARISEES had heard That Jesus made and baptized More Disciples than John,

2 Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his DISCIPLES,

3 He left JUDÆA, and departed again into GALILEE.

4 And he must needs go through SAMARIA.

5 Then cometh he to a City of SAMARIA, which is called Sychar, near to the PARCEL-OF-GROUND that Jacob gave † to * his SON Joseph.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—29. THAT FRIEND.

5. Joseph his SON.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. JOHN. were of John, and a Jew, about.

24. John.

25. THOSE DISCIPLES which were of John, and a Jew, about.

34. he giveth not.

5. to JOSEPH his SON. See 32.

6 Now JACOB'S Well was there. JESUS therefore, being wearied with *his* JOURNEY, sat thus on the WELL: *and* it was about the sixth Hour.

7 There cometh a Woman of SAMARIA to draw Water: JESUS saith unto her, Give me to drink.

8 For his DISCIPLES were gone away unto the CITY to buy Meat.

9 Then saith the WOMAN of SAMARIA unto him, How is it that **thou**, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a Woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans.

10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the GIFT of GOD, and who *it is that SAITH to thee, Give me to drink; **thou** wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee Living Water.

11 † The WOMAN saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the WELL is deep: from whence then hast thou *that* LIVING WATER?

12 Art **thou** greater than our FATHER Jacob, which gave us the WELL, and drank thereof himself, and his CHILDREN, and his CATTLE?

13 † JESUS answered and said unto her, WHOSOEVER DRINKETH of this WATER shall thirst again:

14 But whosoever drinketh of the WATER that I shall give him shall NEVER thirst; but the WATER that I shall give him shall be

in him a Well of Water springing up into everlasting Life.

15 The WOMAN saith unto him, Sir, give me This WATER, that I thirst not, neither † come hither to draw.

16 † JESUS saith unto her, Go, call thy HUSBAND, and come hither.

17 The WOMAN answered and said, I have no Husband. JESUS said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no Husband:

18 For thou hast had Five Husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not Thy Husband: in **that** saidst thou truly.

19 The WOMAN saith unto him, Sir, I perceive That **thou** art a Prophet.

20 Our FATHERS worshipped in This MOUNTAIN; and *ye* say, That in Jerusalem is the PLACE where men ought to worship.

21 JESUS saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the Hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this MOUNTAIN, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the FATHER.

22 *We* worship ye know not what: *we* know what we worship: For SALVATION is of the JEWS.

23 But the Hour cometh, and now is, when the TRUE Worshipers shall worship the FATHER in Spirit and in Truth: for the FATHER seeketh SUCH to worship him.

24 GOD *is* a Spirit: and THEY that WORSHIP him must worship *him* in Spirit and in Truth.

25 The WOMAN saith unto him, I know *That Messias cometh,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—10. is HE that. 25. That THAT Messias cometh which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—11. She saith (*d*). 13. Jesus. 15. come over hither. 16. He saith (*d*).

which is CALLED Christ: when *he* is come, he will tell us all things.

26 JESUS saith unto her, *I* that SPEAK unto thee am HE.

27 And upon this came his DISCIPLES, and marvelled That he talked with the Woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her?

28 The WOMAN then left her WATERPOT, and went her way into the CITY, and saith to the MEN,

29 Come, see a Man, which told me all things that [ever] I did: is not this the CHRIST?

30 [Then] they went out of the CITY, and came unto him.

§ XIII.

31 In the MEAN-WHILE his DISCIPLES prayed him, saying, Master, eat.

32 But HE said unto them, *I* have Meat to eat that *ye* know not of.

33 Therefore said the DISCIPLES one to another, Hath any man brought him *ought* to eat?

34 JESUS saith unto them, My Meat is to do the WILL of HIM that SENT me, and to finish His WORK.

35 Say not *ye*, There are yet four Months, and *then* cometh HARVEST? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your EYES, and look on the FIELDS; For they are white already to Harvest.

36 [And] HE that REAPETH receiveth Wages, and gathereth Fruit unto Life eternal: that [both] HE that SOWETH and HE that REAPETH may rejoice together.

37 And herein is *that* SAYING

TRUE, One SOWETH and another REAPETH.

38 *I* sent you to reap that whereon *ye* bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and *ye* are entered into their LABOURS.

39 And many of the SAMARITANS of that CITY believed on him for the SAYING of the WOMAN, which testified, He told me all that [ever] I did.

40 † So when the SAMARITANS were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them: and he abode there Two Days.

41 And many more believed because of his *own* WORD;

42 And said unto the WOMAN, Now we believe, not because of † THY Saying: for we have heard *him* ourselves, and know That this is indeed [the CHRIST], the SAVIOUR of the WORLD.

(§ XIV.)

43 Now after TWO Days he departed thence, [and went] into GALILEE.

44 For JESUS himself testified, That a Prophet hath no Honour in *his* OWN Country.

45 Then when he was come into GALILEE, the GALILÆANS received him, having seen All the things that he did at Jerusalem at the FEAST: for *they* also went unto the FEAST.

46 † So JESUS came again into CANA of GALILEE, where he made the WATER Wine. And there was a Certain Nobleman, Whose SON was sick at Capernaum.

47 When *he* heard That Jesus

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—40. Then came the SAMARITANS unto him, and besought him. 42. thy SAYING. 46. Then he came again towards Cana. See 29 (d), 30 (d), 36 (twice), 39, 42 (d), 43.

was come out of JUDÆA into GALILEE, he went unto him, and besought †him that he would come down, and heal His SON: for he was at the point of death.

48 Then said JESUS unto him, Except ye see Signs and Wonders, ye will not believe.

49 The NOBLEMAN saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my CHILD die.

50 JESUS saith unto him, Go thy way; thy SON liveth. [And] the MAN believed the WORD that JESUS had spoken unto him, and he went his way.

51 And as he was now going down, his SERVANTS met him, [and told *him*], saying, †Thy SON liveth.

52 Then enquired he [of them] †the HOUR when he began to amend. †And they said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh Hour the FEVER left him.

53 So the FATHER knew That *it was* at the Same HOUR, in the which JESUS said unto him, Thy SON liveth: and himself believed, and his whole HOUSE.

54 †This *is* again the Second Miracle *that* JESUS did, when he was come out of JUDÆA into GALILEE.

CHAPTER V.

§ xv.

1 After this there was a Feast of the JEWS; and †JESUS went up to Jerusalem.

2 Now there is at JERUSALEM by the SHEEP-MARKET *a Pool,

which is CALLED in the Hebrew tongue †Bethesda, having Five Porches.

3 In these lay a [great] Multitude of IMPOTENT folk, of Blind, Halt, Withered, [waiting for the MOVING of the WATER.

4 For an Angel went down at a certain Season into the POOL, and troubled the WATER: WHOSOEVER then FIRST after the TROUBLING of the WATER STEPPED-IN was made whole of Whatsoever Disease he had.]

5 And a Certain Man was there, which had †an INFIRMITY Thirty and Eight Years.

6 When JESUS saw *him* lie, and knew That he had been now a Long Time *in that case*, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The IMPOTENT man answered him, Sir, I have no Man, when the WATER is troubled, to put me into the POOL: but while ~~ƒ~~ I am coming, another steppeth down before me.

8 JESUS saith unto him, Rise, take up thy BED, and walk.

9 And immediately the MAN was made whole, and took up his BED, and walked: and on the Same DAY was the Sabbath.

10 The JEWS therefore said unto HIM that was CURED, It is the Sabbath day: it is not lawful for thee to carry *thy* BED.

11 †He answered them, HE that MADE me whole, *the same said unto me, Take up thy BED, and walk.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. THAT Pool which. 11. *he* said.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—47. *him*. 51. That his son liveth. 52. that HOUR when. 52. Then said they unto him. 54. And this again is the Second. 1. Jesus. 2. Bethsaida (*d*). 5. his INFIRMITY. 11. But he. See 50, 51 (*d*), 52 (*d*), 3 (*d*), 3—4 (*d*).

12 † Then asked they him, What MAN is THAT which SAID unto thee, † Take up thy BED, and walk?

13 And HE that was HEALED wist not who it was: for JESUS had conveyed himself away, a Multitude being in *that* PLACE.

14 Afterward † JESUS findeth him in the TEMPLE, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.

15 The MAN departed, and told the JEWS That *it was Jesus, which had MADE him whole.

16 And therefore did the JEWS persecute JESUS, [and sought to slay Him,] Because he had done These things on the Sabbath day.

17 But † JESUS answered them, My FATHER worketh hitherto, and ~~ƒ~~ work.

18 Therefore the JEWS sought the more to kill Him, Because he not only had broken the SABBATH, but said also that GOD was his * Father, making himself equal with GOD.

19 Then † answered JESUS and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The SON can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the FATHER do: for what things soever ~~he~~ doeth, These also doeth the SON likewise.

20 For the FATHER loveth the SON, and sheweth him All things that himself doeth: and he will shew him Greater Works than these, that ~~ye~~ may marvel.

21 For as the FATHER raiseth up the DEAD, and quickeneth *them*;

even so the SON quickeneth Whom he will.

22 For the FATHER judgeth no man, but hath committed all JUDGMENT unto the SON:

23 That all *men* should honour the SON, even as they honour the FATHER. HE that HONoureth not the SON honoureth not *the FATHER which hath SENT him.

24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, HE that HEARETH my WORD, and believeth on HIM that SENT me, hath everlasting Life, and shall not come into Condemnation; but is passed from DEATH unto LIFE.

25 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Hour is coming, and now is, when the DEAD shall hear the VOICE of the SON of GOD: and THEY that HEAR shall live.

26 For as the FATHER hath Life in himself; so hath he † given to the SON to have Life in himself;

27 And hath given him Authority to execute Judgment also, Because he is the Son of Man.

28 Marvel not at this: For the Hour is coming, in the which ALL that are in the GRAVES shall hear his VOICE,

29 And shall come forth; THEY that have DONE GOOD, unto the Resurrection of Life; [and] THEY that have DONE EVIL, unto the Resurrection of Damnation.

30 ~~ƒ~~ can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and MY JUDGMENT is just; Because I seek not MINE-OWN WILL, but the WILL of † the FATHER which hath SENT me.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—15. Jesus was HE which. 18. own Father. 23. THAT FATHER.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—12. They asked him. 12. Take *it* up, and (*d*). 14. Jesus. 17. HE answered and said, My FATHER (*d*). 19. he answered and said. 26. also given. 30. HIM which hath (*d*). See 16, 29.

31 If **Ʒ** bear witness of myself, my WITNESS is not true.

32 There is ANOTHER that BEARETH-WITNESS of me; and I know That the WITNESS which he witnesseth of me is true.

33 **Ʒ** sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the TRUTH.

34 But **Ʒ** receive not TESTIMONY from Man: but These things I say, that **ȳ** might be saved.

35 **ȳ** was a BURNING and a shining LIGHT: and **ȳ** were willing for a Season to rejoice in his LIGHT.

36 But **Ʒ** have greater WITNESS than *that* of JOHN: for the WORKS which the FATHER hath given me to finish, the Same WORKS that **†Ʒ** do, bear witness of me, That the FATHER hath sent Me.

37 And the FATHER [himself], which hath SENT me, **†** hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his Voice at any time, nor seen his Shape.

38 And ye have not his WORD abiding in you: For whom **ȳ** hath sent, **ȳ** **ȳ** believe not.

39 Search the SCRIPTURES; For in them **ȳ** think ye have eternal Life: and **they** are THEY which TESTIFY of me.

40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might have Life.

41 I receive not Honour from Men.

42 But I know you, That ye have not the LOVE of GOD in you.

43 **Ʒ** am come in my FATHER'S NAME, and ye receive me not: if

another shall come in *his* OWN NAME, **ȳ** ye will receive.

44 How can **ȳ** believe, which receive Honour one of another, and seek not *the HONOUR that *cometh* from **†** God ONLY?

45 Do not think That **Ʒ** will accuse you to the FATHER: **†** there is ONE that ACCUSETH you, *even* Moses, in whom **ȳ** trust.

46 For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for **ȳ** wrote of me.

47 But if ye believe not HIS Writings, how **†** shall ye believe MY Words.

CHAPTER VI.

§ XVI.

1 After these things JESUS went over *the SEA of GALILEE, which is *the sea* of TIBERIAS.

2 And a great Multitude followed him, Because they saw **†** His MIRACLES which he did on THEM that were DISEASED.

3 And **†** JESUS went up into a MOUNTAIN, and there he sat with his DISCIPLES.

4 And the PASSOVER, a FEAST of the JEWS, was nigh.

5 When JESUS then lifted up *his* EYES, and saw a Great Company come unto him, he saith unto **†** PHILIP, Whence **†** shall we buy Bread, that these may eat?

6 And This he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do.

7 Philip answered him, Two Hundred Pennyworth of Bread

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—44. THAT HONOUR.

1. THAT SEA of GALILEE which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—36. I do.

37. **ȳ** hath (*d*).

44. the ONLY one (*d*).

45. HE that ACCUSETH you to the FATHER

is Moses, in whom.

47. can ye believe.

2. the MIRACLES. 3. JESUS. 5. Philip.

5. may we buy. See 37 (*d*).

is not sufficient for them, that every-one [of them] may take a little.

8 One of his DISCIPLES, Andrew, Simon Peter's BROTHER, saith unto him,

9 There is a Lad here, which hath Five barley Loaves, and Two Small-fishes: but what are *they* among so many?

10 [And] JESUS said, Make the MEN sit down. Now there was much Grass in the PLACE. So the MEN sat down, in NUMBER about five thousand.

11 † And JESUS took the LOAVES; and when he had given thanks, he distributed [to the DISCIPLES, and the DISCIPLES] to THEM that were SET-DOWN; and likewise of the FISHES as much as they would.

12 When they were filled, he said unto his DISCIPLES, Gather up the FRAGMENTS that REMAIN, that nothing be lost.

13 Therefore they gathered *them* together, and filled Twelve Baskets with the Fragments of the FIVE BARLEY Loaves, which remained over and above unto THEM that had EATEN.

14 Then *those* MEN, when they had seen the † Miracle that JESUS did, said, This is of a truth THAT PROPHET that should COME into the WORLD.

§ XVII.

15 When Jesus therefore perceived That they would come and take him by force, to make † him a King, he departed again into a MOUNTAIN himself alone.

16 And when Even was *now* come, his DISCIPLES went down unto the SEA,

17 And entered into a SHIP, and went over the SEA toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and JESUS was not † come to them.

18 And the SEA arose by reason of a great Wind that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty Furlongs, they see JESUS walking on the SEA, and drawing nigh unto the SHIP: and they were afraid.

20 But HE saith unto them, It is I; be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly received him into the SHIP: and immediately the SHIP was at the LAND whither they went.

§ XVIII.

22 The DAY-FOLLOWING, when * the PEOPLE which STOOD on the other side of the SEA saw That there was none other Boat there, save [that] one [wherein-to his DISCIPLES were entered], and That JESUS went not with his DISCIPLES into the † BOAT, but *that* his DISCIPLES were gone away alone;

23 Howbeit there came Other † Boats from Tiberias nigh unto the PLACE where they did eat BREAD, after that the LORD had given thanks:

24 When the PEOPLE therefore saw That Jesus was not there, neither his DISCIPLES, *they* [also] *took SHIPPING, and came to Capernaum, seeking for JESUS.

25 And when they had found

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—22. THAT PEOPLE which. 24. entered into SHIPS and came.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—11. Then JESUS. 14. Miracles. 15. *him* (d). 17. yet come. 22. SHIP. 23. Ships from TIBERIAS (d). See 7 (d), 10, 11 (d), 22 (twice) (d), 24.

him on the other side of the SEA, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

26 JESUS answered them and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not Because ye saw the Miracles, but Because ye did eat of the LOAVES, and were filled.

27 Labour not for *the MEAT which PERISHETH, but for THAT MEAT which ENDURETH unto everlasting Life, which the SON of MAN shall give unto you: for **him** hath GOD the FATHER sealed.

28 Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the WORKS of GOD?

29 JESUS answered and said unto them, This is the WORK of GOD, that ye believe on him whom **he** hath sent.

30 They said therefore unto him, What Sign shewest **thou** then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work?

31 Our FATHERS did eat MANNA in the DESERT; as it is written, "He gave them Bread from HEAVEN to eat." †

32 Then JESUS said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not *that* BREAD from HEAVEN; but my FATHER giveth you the TRUE BREAD from HEAVEN.

33 For the BREAD of GOD is HE which COMETH-DOWN from HEAVEN, and giveth Life unto the WORLD.

34 Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this BREAD.

35 [And] JESUS said unto them, **I** am the BREAD of LIFE: HE that COMETH to me shall never hunger; and HE that BELIEVETH on me shall never thirst.

36 But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me, and believe not.

37 All that the FATHER giveth me shall come to me; and HIM that COMETH to me I will in no wise cast out.

38 For I came down from HEAVEN, not to do MINE-OWN WILL, but the WILL of HIM that SENT me.

39 And this is *the †Father's WILL which hath SENT me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the LAST Day.

40 †And this is the WILL of him that SENT me, that EVERYONE which SEETH the SON, and believeth on him, may have everlasting Life: and **I** will raise him up at the LAST Day.

§ XIX.

41 The JEWS then murmured at him, Because he said, **I** am *the BREAD which CAME-DOWN from HEAVEN.

42 And they said, Is not this Jesus, the SON of Joseph, Whose FATHER and MOTHER **we** know? how is it †then that **he** saith, I came down from HEAVEN?

43 JESUS [therefore] answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves.

44 No man can come to me, except *the FATHER which hath

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—27. THAT MEAT which. 39. the WILL of the FATHER which hath SENT me. 41. THAT BREAD which. 44. THAT FATHER which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—39. WILL of HIM that SENT me. 40. For this is. 42. now that (d). See 35, 43.

‡ 31. Psalms lxxviii. 24.

SENT me draw him: and **ƒ** will raise him up at the LAST Day.

45 It is written in the PROPHETS, "And they shall be all taught of †**GOD**." ‡ Every man [therefore] that hath HEARD, and hath learned of the FATHER, cometh unto me.

46 Not That any man hath seen the FATHER, save HE which IS of †**GOD**, **h̄c** hath seen the FATHER.

47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, HE that BELIEVETH [on me] hath everlasting Life.

48 **ƒ** am *that* BREAD of LIFE.

49 Your FATHERS did eat MANNA in the WILDERNESS, and are dead.

50 This is *the BREAD which COMETH-DOWN from HEAVEN, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

51 **ƒ** am *the LIVING BREAD which CAME-DOWN from HEAVEN: if any man eat of This BREAD, he shall live FOR-EVER: and the BREAD [that **ƒ** will give] is my FLESH, which **ƒ** will give for the LIFE of the WORLD.

§ XX.

52 The JEWS therefore strove among themselves, saying, How can this man give us †*his* FLESH to eat?

53 Then JESUS said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the FLESH of the SON of MAN, and drink His BLOOD, ye have no Life in you.

54 WHOSO EATETH My FLESH,

and drinketh My BLOOD, hath eternal Life; and **ƒ** will raise him up at the LAST Day.

55 For my FLESH is † Meat indeed, and my BLOOD is † Drink indeed.

56 HE that EATETH My FLESH, and drinketh My BLOOD, dwelleth in me, and **ƒ** in him.

57 As the LIVING Father hath sent me, and **ƒ** live by the FATHER: so HE that EATETH me, even **h̄c** shall live by me.

58 This is THAT BREAD which CAME-DOWN from † HEAVEN: not as † your FATHERS did eat MANNA, and are dead: HE that EATETH of This BREAD shall live FOR-EVER.

59 These things said he in the Synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his DISCIPLES, when they had heard *this*, said, *This is an Hard SAYING; who can hear it?

61 When JESUS knew in himself That his DISCIPLES murmured *at it, he said unto them, Doth this offend You?

62 *What* and if ye shall see the SON of MAN ascend up where he was BEFORE?

63 *It is the SPIRIT that QUICKENETH; the FLESH profiteth nothing: the WORDS that †**ƒ** speak unto you, *they* are Spirit, and *they* are Life.

64 But there are some of you that believe not. For JESUS knew from the Beginning WHO they

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—50. THAT BREAD. this SAYING; who. 61. at This, he said.

+ VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—45. God. True Meat. 55. the True Drink. 58. Heaven. spoken unto (*d*). See 45, 47 (*d*), 51 (*d*).

‡ 45. Isaiah liv. 13.

51. THAT LIVING BREAD. 60. Hard is 63. The SPIRIT is THAT which QUICKENETH.

46. God. 52. his FLESH (*d*). 55. the 58. the FATHERS (*d*). 63. **ƒ** have

were that BELIEVED not, and WHO should BETRAY him.

65 And he said, Therefore said I unto you, That no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of † my FATHER.

66 From *that time* many of his DISCIPLES went BACK, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said JESUS unto the TWELVE, Will *ye* also go away?

68 [Then] Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the Words of eternal Life.

69 And *we* believe and are sure That *thou* art † *that* CHRIST, the SON of the LIVING GOD.

70 JESUS answered them, Have not *I* chosen you TWELVE, and one of you is a Devil?

71 He spake of JUDAS † Iscariot *the son* of Simon: for *he* it was that should betray him, being one of the TWELVE.

CHAPTER VII.

§ XXI.

1 After these things † JESUS walked in GALILEE: for he would not walk in JEWRY, Because the JEWS sought to kill him.

2 Now the JEWS' FEAST of TABERNACLES was at hand.

3 His BRETHREN therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into JUDÆA, that thy DISCIPLES also may see * the WORKS that thou doest.

4 For *there is* no man *that* doeth Any thing in secret, and

† he himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou do These things, shew thyself to the WORLD.

5 For neither did his BRETHREN believe in him.

6 Then JESUS said unto them, MY TIME is not yet come: but YOUR TIME is always ready.

7 The WORLD cannot hate you; but Me it hateth, because *I* testify of it, That the WORKS thereof are evil.

8 Go *ye* up unto † this FEAST: *I* go not up yet unto this FEAST; for † MY TIME is not yet full come.

9 When he had said These words unto them, he abode *still* in GALILEE.

§ XXII.

10 But when his BRETHREN were gone up, then went *he* also up unto the FEAST, not openly, but as it were in secret.

11 Then the JEWS sought him at the FEAST, and said, Where is *he*?

12 And there was much Murmuring among the PEOPLE concerning him: for SOME said, He is a good man: others said, Nay; but he deceiveth the PEOPLE.

13 Howbeit no man spake openly of him for FEAR of the JEWS.

§ XXIII.

14 Now about the midst of the FEAST † JESUS went up into the TEMPLE, and taught.

15 † And the JEWS marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man Letters, having never learned?

16 † JESUS answered them, and

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. thy WORKS which thou doest.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—65. the FATHER (*d*). 69. the HOLY one of GOD. JESUS (*d*). 71 *the son* of Simon Iscariot: for *he* was about to betray him, *being* (*d*). 1. Jesus. 4. seeketh that the same be known. 8. the FEAST. 8. MY Time. 14. Jesus. 15. Then the JEWS. 16. Then Jesus. See 68.

said, MY Doctrine is not mine, but HIS that SENT me.

17 If any man will do his WILL, he shall know of the DOCTRINE, whether it be of GOD, or *whether* I speak of myself.

18 HE that SPEAKETH of himself seeketh *his* OWN GLORY: but HE that SEEKETH HIS GLORY that SENT him, the same is true, and no Unrighteousness is in him.

19 Did not Moses give you the LAW, and *yet* none of you keepeth the LAW? Why go ye about to kill Me?

20 The PEOPLE answered [and said], Thou hast a Devil: Who goeth about to kill Thee?

21 † JESUS answered and said unto them, I have done One Work, and ye all marvel.

22 Moses therefore gave unto you CIRCUMCISION; not Because it is of MOSES, but of the FATHERS; and ye on the Sabbath day circumcise a Man.

23 If † a Man on the Sabbath day receive Circumcision, that the LAW of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, Because I have made a Man every whit whole on the Sabbath day?

24 Judge not according to the Appearance, but judge RIGHTEOUS Judgment.

25 Then said some of THEM of Jerusalem, Is not this he, whom they seek to kill?

26 But, lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say Nothing unto him. Do the RULERS know indeed That this is *the [very] CHRIST?

27 Howbeit we know This man

whence he is: but when CHRIST cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cried JESUS in the TEMPLE as he taught, saying, Ye both know Me, and ye know whence I am: and I am not come of myself, but HE that SENT me is true, whom ye know not.

29 [But] I know him: For I am from him, and he hath sent Me.

30 Then they sought to take Him: but no man laid HANDS on him, Because his HOUR was not yet come.

§ XXIV.

31 And many of the PEOPLE believed on him, and said, When CHRIST cometh, will he do More Miracles than † these which this *man* hath done?

32 The PHARISEES heard that the PEOPLE murmured such things concerning him; and the † PHARISEES and the CHIEF-PRIESTS sent Officers to take him.

33 Then said JESUS [unto them], Yet a Little While am I with you, and *then* I go unto HIM that SENT me.

34 Ye shall seek me, and shall not find † *me*: and where I am, † *thither* ye cannot come.

35 Then said the JEWS among themselves, Whither will he go, That we shall not find him? will he go unto the DISPERSED among the GENTILES, and teach the GENTILES?

36 What **manner* of SAYING is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find † *me*: and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come?

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—26. [verily] the CHRIST. 36. is This SAYING that he said.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—21. Jesus. 23. a MAN. 31. *these* (d). 32. CHIEF-PRIESTS and the PHARISEES sent. 34. me; and. 34. *thither*. 36. me; and. See 20 (d), 26 (d), 29, 33 (d).

§ XXV.

37 In the LAST Day, *that* GREAT day of the FEAST, JESUS stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.

38 HE that BELIEVETH on me, as the SCRIPTURE hath said, out of his BELLY shall flow Rivers of living Water.

39 But this spake he of the SPIRIT, which THEY that †BELIEVE on him should receive: for the holy Ghost †was not yet *given*; Because that JESUS was not yet glorified.

40 Many of the PEOPLE therefore, when they heard this SAYING, said, Of a truth †this is the PROPHET.

41 †Others said, this is the CHRIST. But †some said, Shall CHRIST come out of GALILEE?

42 Hath not the SCRIPTURE said, That CHRIST cometh of the SEED of David, and out of the TOWN of Bethlehem, where David was?

43 So there was a Division among the PEOPLE because of him.

44 And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid HANDS on him.

§ XXVI.

45 Then came the OFFICERS to the CHIEF-PRIESTS and Pharisees; and *they* said unto them, Why have ye not brought him?

46 The OFFICERS answered, Never Man spake †like This MAN.

47 Then answered [them] the

PHARISEES, Are *ye* also deceived?

48 Have any of the RULERS or of the PHARISEES believed on him?

49 But THIS PEOPLE who KNOWETH not the LAW are cursed.

50 Nicodemus saith unto them, —HE that CAME †to Jesus by Night, being one of them,—

51 Doth our LAW judge *any* MAN, †before it hear him, and know what he doeth?

52 They answered and said unto him, Art *thou* also of GALILEE? Search, and look: for out of GALILEE ariseth no PROPHET.

[53 And every man went unto his own HOUSE.

CHAPTER VIII.

1 Jesus went unto the MOUNT of OLIVES.

2 And early in the Morning he came again into the TEMPLE, and All the PEOPLE came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them.

3 And the SCRIBES and PHARISEES brought unto him a Woman taken in Adultery; and when they had set her in the Midst,

4 They say unto him, Master, This WOMAN was taken in adultery, in the very act.

5 Now Moses in the LAW commanded us, that SUCH should be stoned: but what sayest *thou*?

6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But JESUS stooped down, and with *his* FINGER wrote on the

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—39. should BELIEVE on him were about to receive. 39. had not yet been given (*d*). 40. these WORDS said (*d*). 41. SOME said. 41. others said. 46. thus. Then (*d*). 50. to him before, being one (*d*). 51. unless it first hear him, and know. See 47.—*The Vatican Manuscript also omits* vii. 53, to viii. 11 (*d*).

GROUND, *as though he heard them not.*

7 So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, HE that is WITHOUT-SIN among you, let him first cast a STONE at her.

8 And again he stooped down, and wrote on the GROUND.

9 And THEY which HEARD *it*, being convicted by *their own CONSCIENCE*, went out one by one, beginning at the ELDEST, *even* unto the LAST: and JESUS was left alone, and the WOMAN standing in the Midst.

10 When JESUS had lifted up himself, and saw None but the WOMAN, he said unto her, WOMAN, where are those thine ACCUSERS? hath no man condemned Thee?

11 She said, No man, Lord. And JESUS said unto her, Neither do I condemn Thee: go, and sin no more.]

§ XXVII.

12 Then spake JESUS again unto them, saying, I am the LIGHT of the WORLD: HE that FOLLOWETH me shall not walk in DARKNESS, but shall have the LIGHT of LIFE.

13 The PHARISEES therefore said unto him, **Thou** bearest record of thyself; thy RECORD is not true.

14 Jesus answered and said unto them, Though I bear record of myself, *yet* my RECORD is true: For I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go.

15 **Ye** judge after the FLESH; I judge no man.

16 And yet if I judge, MY JUDGMENT is true: For I am not alone, but I and the FATHER that SENT me.

17 It is also written in YOUR LAW, That the TESTIMONY of Two Men is true.

18 I am ONE that BEAR-WITNESS of myself, and the FATHER that SENT me beareth witness of me.

19 Then said they unto him, Where is thy FATHER? JESUS answered, Ye neither know Me, nor my FATHER: if ye had known Me, ye should have known my FATHER also.

20 These WORDS †spake JESUS in the TREASURY, as he taught in the TEMPLE: and no man laid hands on him; For his HOUR was not yet come.

§ XXVIII.

21 Then †said JESUS again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your SINS: whither I go, ye cannot come.

22 Then said the JEWS, Will he kill himself? Because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come.

23 And he said unto them, **Ye** are from BENEATH; I am from ABOVE: ye are †of this WORLD; I am not of this WORLD.

24 I said therefore unto you, That ye shall die in your SINS: for if ye believe not That I am *he*, ye shall die in your SINS.

25 Then said they unto him, Who art **thou**? † And JESUS saith unto them, Even the same that I said unto you from the BEGINNING.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—20. he spake in. 25. Jesus saith.

21. said he again.

23. of This WORLD.

26 I have many things to say and to judge of you: but HE that SENT me is true; and I speak to the WORLD Those things which I have heard of him.

27 They understood not That he spake to them of the FATHER.

28 Then said JESUS [unto them], When ye have lifted up the SON of MAN, then shall ye know That I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my FATHER hath taught me, I speak These things.

29 And HE that SENT me is with me: †the FATHER hath not left me alone; For I do always those THINGS that PLEASE him.

30 As he spake These words, many believed on him.

§ XXIX.

31 Then said JESUS to those JEWS which BELIEVED on him, If ye continue in MY WORD, then are ye my Disciples indeed;

32 And ye shall know the TRUTH, and the TRUTH shall make you free.

33 They answered him, We be Abraham's Seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?

34 †JESUS answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, WHOSOEVER COMMITTETH SIN is the Servant of SIN.

35 And the SERVANT abideth not in the HOUSE FOR-EVER: but the SON abideth EVER.

36 If the SON therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

37 I know That ye are Abraham's Seed; but ye seek to kill Me,

Because MY WORD hath no place in you.

38 †I speak that which I have seen with my FATHER: and ye do †That which ye have seen with your FATHER.

39 They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our FATHER. JESUS saith unto them, If ye were ABRAHAM'S Children, ye would do the WORKS of ABRAHAM.

40 But now ye seek to kill Me, a Man that hath told you the TRUTH, which I have heard of GOD: This did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the DEEDS of your FATHER. †Then said they to him, We be not born of Fornication; we have One Father, even GOD.

42 †JESUS said unto them, If GOD were your †Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from GOD; neither came I of myself, but he sent Me.

43 Why do ye not understand MY SPEECH? even Because ye cannot hear MY WORD.

44 Ye are of †your Father the DEVIL, and the LUSTS of your FATHER ye will do. He was a Murderer from the Beginning, and abode not in the TRUTH, Because there is no Truth in him. When he speaketh a LIE, he speaketh of his OWN: For he is a Liar, and the FATHER of it.

45 And Because I tell you the TRUTH, ye believe me not.

46 Which of you convinceth me of Sin? [And] if I say the Truth, why do ye not believe me?

47 HE that IS of GOD heareth GOD'S WORDS: ye therefore hear

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—29. he hath not left me (*d*). 34. Jesus. 38. I speak the things which I have seen with a FATHER; and ye then do the things which ye have heard from a FATHER (*d*). 41. They said to him, We were not, 42. Jesus. 42. FATHER. 44. a FATHER, the DEVIL. See 28, 46.

them not, Because ye are not of GOD.

48 †Then answered the JEWS, and said unto him, Say **we** not well That **thou** art a Samaritan, and hast a Devil?

49 Jesus answered, **I** have not a Devil; but I honour my FATHER, and **ye** do dishonour me.

50 And **I** seek not mine own GLORY: there is ONE that SEEKETH and judgeth.

51 Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep †MY SAYING, he shall NEVER see Death.

52 †Then said the JEWS unto him, Now we know That thou hast a Devil. Abraham is dead, and the PROPHETS; and **thou** sayest, If a man keep my SAYING, he shall NEVER †taste of Death.

53 Art **thou** greater than our FATHER Abraham, which is dead? and the PROPHETS are dead: whom makest †**thou** thyself?

54 Jesus answered, If †**I** honour myself, my HONOUR is nothing: *it is my FATHER that HONOURETH me; of whom **ye** say, That he is your God:

55 Yet ye have not known him; but **I** know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a Liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his SAYING.

56 *Your FATHER Abraham rejoiced to see MY DAY: and he saw *it*, and was glad.

57 Then said the JEWS unto him, Thou art not yet Fifty Years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?

58 †Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, **I** am.

59 Then took they up Stones to cast at him: [but] Jesus hid himself, and went out of the TEMPLE, going through the Midst of them, and so passed by.

CHAPTER IX.

§ XXX.

1 And as *Jesus* passed by, he saw a Man which was blind from *his* Birth.

2 And his DISCIPLES asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his PARENTS, that he was born blind?

3 †JESUS answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his PARENTS: but that the WORKS of GOD should be made manifest in him.

4 †I must work the WORKS of HIM that SENT me, while it is Day: the Night cometh, when no man can work.

5 As long as I am in the WORLD, I am the Light of the WORLD.

6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the Ground, and made Clay of the SPITTLE, †and he anointed the EYES of the BLIND man with the CLAY,

7 And said unto him, Go, wash in the POOL of SILOAM,—which is by interpretation, Sent.—He went his way, [therefore, and washed, and came] seeing.

8 The NEIGHBOURS therefore, and THEY which BEFORE had

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—54. HE that HONoureth me is my FATHER; of whom. 56. Abraham your FATHER.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—48. the JEWS answered and said. 51. MY Saying. 52. The JEWS said unto him. 52. see Death (*d*). 53. thou thyself? 54. **I** should honour. 58. Jesus. 3. Jesus. 4. We must (*d*). 6. and he put the CLAY thereof on *his* eyes, and said (*d*). See 59, 7 (*d*).

SEEN him That he was †blind, said, Is not this HE that SAT and begged?

9 Some said, This is he: others †said, He is like him: but *he* said, *I* am *he*.

10 Therefore said they unto him, How were Thine EYES opened?

11 *He* answered [and said], † A Man that is called Jesus made Clay, and anointed Mine EYES, and said unto me, Go to the [POOL of] SILOAM, and wash: † and I went and washed, and I received sight.

12 † Then said they unto him, Where is *he*? He said, I know not.

13 They brought to the PHARISEES HIM that aforetime was BLIND.

14 And it was the † Sabbath day when JESUS made the CLAY, and opened His EYES.

15 Then again the PHARISEES also asked him how he had received his sight. HE said unto them, He put Clay † upon mine EYES, and I washed, and do see.

16 Therefore said some of the PHARISEES, This MAN is not of † GOD, Because he keepeth not the SABBATH day. Others said, How can a Man that is a Sinner do Such Miracles? And there was a Division among them.

17 † They say unto the BLIND man again, What sayest *thou* of him, That he hath opened Thine EYES? HE said, He is a Prophet.

18 But the JEWS did not believe

concerning him, That he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the PARENTS of HIM that had RECEIVED-*his*-SIGHT.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your SON, *who *ye* say was born blind? how then doth he now see?

20 † His PARENTS answered [them] and said, We know That this is our SON, and That he was born blind:

21 But by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened His EYES, *we* know not: † *he* is of Age; ask Him: *he* shall speak for himself.

22 These *words* spake his PARENTS, Because they feared the JEWS: for the JEWS had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.

23 Therefore said his PARENTS, He is of Age; ask Him.

24 Then again called they the MAN that was blind, and said unto him, Give GOD the Praise: *we* know † That this MAN is a Sinner.

25 *He* answered [and said], Whether he be a Sinner *or no*, I know not: One thing I know, That, whereas I was blind, now I see.

26 Then said they to him [again], What did he to thee? how opened he Thine EYES?

27 He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: † wherefore would ye hear

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—19. of whom *ye* say That he was born blind?

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. a Beggar, said (*d*). 9. said, Not so; but he is. 11. A MAN that. 11. I went therefore and. 12. And they said unto him. 14. Sabbath, on which Day JESUS. 15. upon Mine EYES. 16. God. 17. Then they say. 20. Then his PARENTS (*d*). 21. ask Him; *he* is of age; *he* shall. 24. That This Man is. 27. wherefore then would. See 11 (twice) (*d*), 20, 25 (*d*), 26 (*d*).

it again? will **ye** also be His Disciples?

28 † Then they reviled him, and said, **Thou** art **his** Disciple; but **we** are **MOSES'** Disciples.

29 **We** know That **GOD** spake unto **Moses**: *as for This fellow*, we know not from whence he is.

30 The **MAN** answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, That **ye** know not from whence he is, and *yet* he hath opened Mine **EYES**.

31 [Now] we know That **GOD** heareth not Sinners: but if any man be a Worshipper-of-God, and doeth his **WILL**, **him** he heareth.

32 Since the **WORLD** began was it not heard That any man opened the **Eyes** of one that was born blind.

33 If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

34 They answered and said unto him, **Thou** wast altogether born in Sins, and dost **thou** teach us? And they cast him out. *In Synagogue*

35 **JESUS** heard That they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said [unto him], Dost **thou** believe on the † **SON** of **GOD**?

36 **We** answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?

37 [And] **JESUS** said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and *it is **he** that **TALKETH** with thee.

38 And **HE** said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

39 And **JESUS** said, For Judgment **I** am come into this **WORLD**, that **THEY** which **SEE** not might

see; and that **THEY** which **SEE** might be made blind.

40 [And] **SOME** of the **PHARISEES** which **WERE** with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are **we** blind also?

41 † **JESUS** said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no Sin: but now ye say, We see; [therefore] your **SIN** remaineth.

CHAPTER X.

(§ XXXI.)

1 Verily, verily, I say unto you, **HE** that **ENTERETH** not by the **DOOR** into the **SHEEPFOLD**, but climbeth up some other way, *the same is a Thief and a Robber.

2 But **HE** that **ENTERETH-IN** by the **DOOR** is the Shepherd of the **SHEEP**.

3 To **him** the **PORTER** openeth; and the **SHEEP** hear his **VOICE**: and he calleth his **OWN** Sheep by Name, and leadeth them out.

4 [And] when he putteth forth † his **OWN** Sheep, he goeth before them, and the **SHEEP** follow him: For they know his **VOICE**.

5 And a Stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: For they know not the **VOICE** of **STRANGERS**.

6 This **PARABLE** spake **JESUS** unto them: but **they** understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

§ XXXII.

7 Then said † **JESUS** [unto them] again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, **I** am the **DOOR** of the **SHEEP**.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—37. **he** is **HE** that **TALKETH** with thee. 1. **he** is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—28. And they (*d*). 35. SON of MAN? And he said, Who (*d*). 41. Jesus. 4. all his OWN, he goeth (*d*). 7. Jesus. See 31, 35, 37, 40, 41, 4, 7 (*d*).

8 All that ever came before me are Thieves and Robbers: but the SHEEP did not hear them.

9 I am the DOOR: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find Pasture.

10 The THIEF cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have Life, and that they might have *it* more abundantly.

11 I am the GOOD SHEPHERD: the GOOD SHEPHERD giveth his LIFE for the SHEEP.

12 But HE that is an HIRELING, and not the Shepherd, whose own the SHEEP are not, seeth the WOLF coming, and leaveth the SHEEP, and fleeth: and the WOLF catcheth them, and scattereth † the SHEEP.

13 The HIRELING fleeth, Because he is an Hireling, and careth not for the SHEEP.

§ XXXIII.

14 I am the GOOD SHEPHERD, and know † MY *sheep*, and am known of MINE.

15 As the FATHER knoweth me, even so know I the FATHER: and I lay down my LIFE for the SHEEP.

16 And Other Sheep I have, which are not of this FOLD: *them* also I must bring, and they shall hear my VOICE; and there shall be One Fold, *and* One Shepherd.

17 Therefore doth *my* FATHER love Me, Because I lay down my LIFE, that I might take it again.

18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I

have Power to lay it down, and I have Power to take it again. This COMMANDMENT have I received of my FATHER.

19 There was a Division [therefore] again among the JEWS for these SAYINGS.

20 And many of them said, He hath a Devil, and is mad; why hear ye him?

21 Others said, These are not the WORDS of him that hath a devil. Can a Devil open the Eyes of the Blind?

§ XXXIV.

22 † And it was at JERUSALEM the FEAST-OF-THE-DEDICATION, and it was Winter.

23 And † JESUS walked in the TEMPLE in SOLOMON'S PORCH.

24 Then came the JEWS round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt? If *thou* be the CHRIST, tell us plainly.

25 JESUS answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the WORKS that I do in my FATHER'S NAME, *they* bear witness of me.

26 But *ye* believe not, because ye are not of MY SHEEP, [as I said unto you.]

27 MY SHEEP hear my VOICE, and I know them, and they follow me:

28 And I give unto them eternal Life; and they shall NEVER perish, neither shall any *man* pluck *them* out of my HAND.

29 My FATHER, which gave *them* me, is greater than all; and no *man* is able to pluck *them* out of † my FATHER'S HAND.

30 I and *my* FATHER are One.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—12. *them*; Because he is an Hireling, and (*d*). 14. MINE, and MINE know me. As (*d*). 22. It was then the FEAST-OF-THE-DEDICATION at JERUSALEM: it was Winter (*d*), 23. Jesus. 29. *my* FATHER'S HAND. See 19 (*d*), 26 (*d*).

* Our FRIEND Lazarus sleepeth; but I go, that I may awake him out of his sleep.

12 Then said †his DISCIPLES, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.

13 Howbeit JESUS spake of his DEATH: but they thought That he had spoken of TAKING-OF-REST in SLEEP.

14 Then said JESUS unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your sakes That I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless let us go unto him.

16 Then said *Thomas, which is CALLED Didymus, unto his FELLOWDISCIPLES, Let us also go, that we may die with him.

17 Then when JESUS came, he found that he had lain in the GRAVE Four Days already.

18 Now BETHANY was nigh unto JERUSALEM, about fifteen Furlongs off:

§ XXXVI.

19 And many of the JEWS came to MARTHA and †MARY, to comfort them concerning †their BROTHER.

20 Then MARTHA, as soon as she heard That †JESUS was coming, went and met him: but Mary sat still in the HOUSE.

21 Then said MARTHA unto †JESUS, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my BROTHER had not died.

22 †But I know, That even now, Whatsoever thou wilt ask of GOD, GOD will give it thee.

23 JESUS saith unto her, Thy BROTHER shall rise again.

24 †Martha saith unto him, I know That he shall rise again in the RESURRECTION at the LAST Day.

25 JESUS said unto her, I am the RESURRECTION, and the LIFE: HE that BELIEVETH in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live:

26 And WHOSOEVER LIVETH and believeth in me shall NEVER die. Believest thou this?

27 She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe That thou art the CHRIST, *the SON of GOD, which should COME into the WORLD.

28 And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her SISTER secretly, saying, The MASTER is come, and calleth for thee.

29 †As soon as she heard that, she arose quickly, and came unto him.

30 Now JESUS was not yet come into the TOWN, but was †in that PLACE where MARTHA met him.

31 *The JEWS then which WERE with her in the HOUSE, and comforted her, when they saw MARY, That she rose up hastily and went out, followed her, †saying, She goeth unto the GRAVE to weep there.

32 Then when MARY was come where †JESUS was, and saw him, she fell down at his FEET, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, My BROTHER had not died.

33 When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the JEWS also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the SPIRIT, and was troubled,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—11. Lazarus our FRIEND sleepeth. 16. THAT Thomas which. 27. THAT SON of GOD which. 31 THOSE JEWS then.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—12. the DISCIPLES to him. Lord. 19. Mary. 19. their BROTHER. 20. Jesus. 21. Jesus. 22. AND I know. 24. MARTHA. 29. And she, when she heard, arose (d). 30. still in the PLACE. 31. thinking (d). 32. Jesus.

34 And said, Where have ye laid him? They said unto him, Lord, come and see.

35 JESUS wept.

36 Then said the JEWS, Behold how he loved him!

37 And some of them said, Could not THIS man, which OPENED the EYES of the BLIND, have caused that even this man should not have died?

38 Jesus therefore again groaning in himself cometh to the GRAVE. It was a Cave, and a Stone lay upon it.

39 JESUS said, Take ye away the STONE. Martha, the SISTER of HIM that †was DEAD, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been *dead* four days.

40 JESUS saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, That, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the GLORY of GOD?

41 Then they took away the STONE [*from the place* where the DEAD was laid]. And JESUS lifted up *his* EYES, and said, Father, I thank thee That thou hast heard me.

42 And **ƒ** knew That thou hearest Me always: but because of * the PEOPLE which STAND-BY I said *it*, that they may believe That **thou** hast sent Me.

43 And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud Voice, Lazarus, come forth.

44 [And] HE that was DEAD came forth, bound HAND and FOOT with Graveclothes: and his FACE was bound about with a

Napkin. †JESUS saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

45 Then MANY of the JEWS which CAME to MARY, and had seen †the things which JESUS did, believed on him.

46 But some of them went their ways to the PHARISEES, and told them what things JESUS had done.

§ XXXVII.

47 Then gathered the CHIEF-PRIESTS and the PHARISEES a Council, and said, What do we? For This MAN doeth Many Miracles.

48 If we let him thus alone, all *men* will believe on him: and the ROMANS shall come and take away both Our PLACE and NATION.

49 And one of them, *named* Caiaphas, being the High-priest that same YEAR, said unto them, **Ɔ**e know nothing at all,

50 Nor consider That it is expedient for us, that One Man should die for the PEOPLE, and that the Whole NATION perish not.

51 And this spake he not of himself: but being High-priest that YEAR, he prophesied That †JESUS should die for *that* NATION;

52 And not for *that* NATION only, but that also he should gather together in one, *the CHILDREN of GOD that were SCATTERED-ABROAD.

§ XXXVIII.

53 Then from That DAY forth they took counsel [*together*] for to put him to death.

54 †Jesus therefore walked no

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—42. THOSE PEOPLE which. 52. THOSE CHILDREN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—39. had died, saith (*d*). 44. Jesus. 45. that which he had done, believed. 51. Jesus. 54. JESUS. See 41 (*d*), 44, 53 (*d*).

more openly among the JEWS; but went thence unto a COUNTRY near to the WILDERNESS, into a City called Ephraim, and there †continued with his DISCIPLES.

55 And the JEWS' PASSOVER was nigh at hand: and many went out of the COUNTRY up to Jerusalem before the PASSOVER, to purify themselves.

56 Then sought they for JESUS, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the TEMPLE, What think ye, That he will not come to the FEAST?

57 Now [both] the CHIEF-PRIESTS and the PHARISEES had given † a Commandment, that, if any man knew where he were, he should shew *it*, that they might take him.

CHAPTER XII.

§ XXXIX.

1 Then JESUS Six Days before the PASSOVER came to Bethany, where *Lazarus was [which had been DEAD], whom †he raised from the Dead.

2 There they made him a Supper; and MARTHA served: but LAZARUS was one of THEM that SAT-AT-THE-TABLE with him.

3 Then took MARY a Pound of Ointment of Spikenard, very costly, and anointed the FEET of †JESUS, and wiped his FEET with her HAIR: and the HOUSE was filled with the ODOUR of the OINTMENT.

4 † Then saith *one of his DISCIPLES, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which SHOULD betray Him,

5 Why was not This OINTMENT sold for Three-hundred Pence, and given to the Poor?

6 This he said, not That he cared for the POOR; but Because he was a Thief, and had the BAG, and bare WHAT was PUT therein.

7 Then said JESUS, † Let her alone: against the DAY of my BURYING hath she kept this.

8 For the POOR always ye have with you; but Me ye have not always.

9 Much People of the JEWS therefore knew That he was there: and they came not for JESUS' sake only, but that they might see LAZARUS also, whom he had raised from the Dead.

10 † But the CHIEF-PRIESTS consulted that they might put LAZARUS also to death;

11 Because that by reason of him many of the JEWS went away, and believed on JESUS.

§ XL.

12 On the NEXT-DAY MUCH People that were COME to the FEAST, when they heard That JESUS was coming to Jerusalem,

13 Took BRANCHES of PALM-TREES, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna: "Blessed † is *the KING of ISRAEL that COMETH in the Name of the Lord." †

14 And JESUS, when he had

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THAT Lazarus was. 4. THAT One. 13. THAT KING.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—54. abode with the DISCIPLES (*d*). 57. Commandments that. 1. Jesus raised. 3. Jesus. 4. And one of his DISCIPLES, THAT ISCARIOT which was ABOUT to betray him, saith. 7. Suffer her, that unto the DAY of my BURYING she should have kept this (*d*). 10. But even the CHIEF-PRIESTS. 13. is HE, even the KING of ISRAEL, that. See 57, 1 (*d*).

‡ 13. Psa. cxviii. 26.

found a YOUNG-ASS, sat thereon; as it is written,

15 "Fear not, † Daughter of Sion: behold, thy KING cometh, sitting on an Ass's Colt." †

16 These things understood not his DISCIPLES AT-THE-FIRST: but when JESUS was glorified, then remembered they That These things were written of him, and *that* they had done These things unto him.

17 *The PEOPLE therefore that WAS with him when he called LAZARUS out of *his* GRAVE, and raised him from the Dead, bare record.

18 For this cause the PEOPLE also met him, For that they heard that he had done This MIRACLE.

19 The PHARISEES therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye How ye prevail nothing? behold, the WORLD is gone after him.

§ XLI.

20 And there were certain Greeks among THEM that CAME-UP to worship at the FEAST:

21 The same came therefore to *Philip, which was of Bethsaida of GALILEE, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see JESUS.

22 † Philip cometh and telleth ANDREW: [and again] Andrew and Philip † tell JESUS.

23 And JESUS † answered them, saying, The HOUR is come, that the SON of MAN should be glorified.

24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a CORN of WHEAT fall into the GROUND and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth Much Fruit.

25 HE that LOVETH his LIFE shall lose it; and HE that HATETH his LIFE in this WORLD shall keep it unto Life eternal.

§ XLII.

26 If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where **ƒ** am, there shall also MY SERVANT be: if any man serve me, him will *my* FATHER honour.

27 Now is my SOUL troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this HOUR: but for this cause came I unto this HOUR.

28 Father, glorify † Thy NAME. Then came there a Voice from HEAVEN, *saying*, I have both glorified *it*, and will glorify *it* again.

29 *The PEOPLE [therefore], that STOOD-BY, and heard *it*, said that it thundered: others said, An Angel spake to him.

30 † JESUS answered and said, This VOICE came not because of me, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the Judgment of this WORLD: now shall the PRINCE of this WORLD be cast out.

32 And **ƒ**, if I be lifted up from the EARTH, will draw All *men* unto me.

33 This he said, signifying What Death he should die.

34 † The PEOPLE answered him, ~~we~~ we have heard out of the LAW That CHRIST abideth FOR-EVER: and how sayest **thou**, The SON of MAN must be lifted up? Who is This SON of MAN?

35 Then JESUS said unto them, Yet a Little While is the LIGHT † with you. Walk while ye have

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. THAT PEOPLE. 21. THAT Philip which. 29. THAT PEOPLE.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—15. DAUGHTER of Sion. 22. PHILIP. 22. come and tell. 23. answereth (*d*). 28. My NAME. 30. JESUS. 34. Then the PEOPLE. 35. among you (*d*). See 22, 29.

‡ 15. Zech. ix. 9.

the LIGHT, lest Darkness come upon You: for HE that WALKETH in DARKNESS knoweth not whether he goeth.

36 While ye have LIGHT, believe in the LIGHT, that ye may be the Children of Light. These things spake †JESUS, and departed, and did hide himself from them.

§ XLIII.

37 But though he had done So Many Miracles before them, yet they believed not on him:

38 That the SAYING of Esaias the PROPHET might be fulfilled, which he spake, "Lord, who hath believed our REPORT? and to whom hath the ARM of the Lord been revealed?" †

39 Therefore they could not believe, Because that Esaias said again,

40 "He hath blinded Their EYES, and hardened Their HEART; that they should not see with *their* EYES, nor understand with *their* HEART, and †be converted, and I should heal them." †

41 These things said Esaias, †when he saw his GLORY, and spake of him.

42 Nevertheless among the CHIEF-RULERS also many believed on him; but because of the PHARISEES they did not confess *him*, lest they should be put out of the synagogue:

43 For they loved the PRAISE of MEN more than the PRAISE of GOD.

§ XLIV.

44 Jesus cried and said, HE that

BELIEVETH on me, believeth not on me, but on HIM that SENT me.

45 And HE that SEETH me seeth HIM that SENT me.

46 I am come a Light into the WORLD, that †WHOSOEVER BELIEVETH on me should not abide in DARKNESS.

47 And if any man hear My WORDS, and †believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the WORLD, but to save the WORLD.

48 HE that REJECTETH me, and receiveth not my WORDS, hath ONE that JUDGETH him: the WORD that I have spoken, *the same shall judge him in the LAST Day.

49 For I have not spoken of myself; but the FATHER which SENT me, he †gave me a Commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.

50 And I know That his COMMANDMENT is Life everlasting: Whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the FATHER said unto me, so I speak.

CHAPTER XIII.

§ XLV.

1 Now before the FEAST of the PASSOVER, †when JESUS knew That His HOUR was come that he should depart out of this WORLD unto the FATHER, having loved *his OWN which were in the WORLD, he loved them unto the †end.

2 And Supper being ended, the DEVIL having now put into

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—48. that shall. 1. THOSE his OWN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—36. Jesus. 40. should convert, and (d). 41. Because he saw. 46. HE that BELIEVETH (d). 47. keep *them* not, I judge (d). 49. hath given me. 1. JESUS knowing That. 1. End; And.

† 38. Isa. liii. 1. † 40. Isa. vi. 9. *Spoken by Jesus.*

*The Lord in his own
nature is God.*

the HEART of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him;

3 †JESUS knowing That the FATHER had given All things into his HANDS, and That he was come from God, and went to GOD;

4 He riseth from SUPPER, and laid aside *his* GARMENTS; and took a Towel, and girded himself.

5 After that he poureth Water into a BASON, and began to wash the DISCIPLES' FEET, and to wipe *them* with the TOWEL wherewith he was girded.

6 Then cometh he to Simon Peter: †and *Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost *thou* wash My FEET?

7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What *ƒ* do, *thou* knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter.

8 Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt NEVER wash my FEET. †JESUS answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no Part with me.

9 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my FEET only, but also *my* HANDS and *my* HEAD.

10 †JESUS saith to him, HE that is WASHED needeth not †save to wash *his* FEET, but is clean every whit: and *ƒc* are clean, but not all.

11 For he knew WHO should BETRAY him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

§ XLVI.

12 So after he had washed their FEET, and had taken his GAR-

MENTS, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you?

13 *ƒc* call me MASTER and LORD: and ye say well; for *so* I am.

14 If *ƒ* then, *your* LORD and MASTER, have washed Your FEET; *ƒc* also ought to wash One-another's FEET.

15 For I have given you an Example, that *ƒc* should do as *ƒ* have done to you.

16 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Servant is not greater than his LORD; neither he that is sent greater than HE that SENT him.

17 If ye know These things, happy are ye if ye do them.

18 I speak not of you all: *ƒ* know †whom I have chosen: but that the SCRIPTURE may be fulfilled, "HE that EATETH †BREAD with me hath lifted up his HEEL against me." †

19 Now I tell you before it COME, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe That *ƒ* am *he*.

20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, HE that RECEIVETH whomsoever I send receiveth Me; and HE that RECEIVETH Me receiveth HIM that SENT me.

(§ XLVII.)

21 When †JESUS had thus said, he was troubled in SPIRIT, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, That one of you shall betray me.

22 [Then] the DISCIPLES looked

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—6. *he* saith.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. *Jesus* knowing (*d*). 6. *he* saith (*d*). 8. *He* answered. 10. *Jesus*. 10. *but* to wash. 18. *same* I have chosen (*d*). 18. *My* BREAD hath lifted. 21. *Jesus*. See 22.

‡ 18. Psalms xli. 9.

one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

23 Now there was leaning on JESUS' BOSOM one of his DISCIPLES, whom †JESUS loved.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, † that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake.

25 **He** then † lying on JESUS' BREAST saith unto him, Lord, who is it?

26 †JESUS answered, **He** it is, † to whom **I** shall give a SOP, when I have dipped *it*. And when he had dipped the SOP, he gave *it* to †Judas [Iscariot], *the son* of Simon.

27 And after the SOP SATAN entered into him. Then said †JESUS unto him, That thou doest, do quickly.

28 [Now] no man at the TABLE knew for what intent he spake this unto him.

29 For some *of them* thought, because †JUDAS had the BAG, That †JESUS had said unto him, Buy *those things* that we have need of against the FEAST; or, that he should give something to the POOR.

30 **He** then having received the SOP went immediately out: and it was Night.

§ XLVIII.

31 Therefore, when he was gone out, †JESUS said, Now is the SON of MAN glorified, and GOD is glorified in him.

32 [If GOD be glorified in him,]

GOD shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him.

33 Little-children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the JEWS, Whither **I** go, **ye** cannot come; so now I say to you.

34 A new Commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that **ye** also love one another.

35 By this shall all *men* know That ye are My Disciples, if ye have Love one to another.

36 Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? †JESUS answered [him], Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow [me] afterwards.

37 PETER said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my LIFE for thy sake.

38 †JESUS answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy LIFE for my sake? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The Cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

CHAPTER XIV.

§ XLIX.

1 Let not Your HEART be troubled: ye believe in GOD, believe also in me.

2 In my FATHER'S HOUSE are many Mansions: if *it were* not so, I would have told †you. I go to prepare a Place for you.

3 And if I go and prepare a

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. Jesus. 24. And saith unto him, Ask who it is of whom (*d*). 25. leaning thus against Jesus' BREAST (*d*). 26. Then JESUS. 26 for whom I shall dip a sop and give it to him. Dipping then the sop, he took and gave (*d*). 26. Judas the son of Simon Iscariot. 27. Jesus. 29. Judas. 29. Jesus saith unto. 31. Jesus saith, Now. 36. Jesus (*d*). 38. Jesus answereth, Wilt. 2. you; Because I go to (*d*). See 26, 28, 32, 36 (twice) (*d*).

Place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where **Ʒ** am, *there* **ꝛ** may be also.

4 And whither **Ʒ** go ye know, [and] the WAY ye know.

5 Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; †[and] how can we know the WAY?

6 JESUS saith unto him, **Ʒ** am the WAY, the TRUTH, and the LIFE: no man cometh unto the FATHER, but by me.

7 If ye had known me, ye should have known my FATHER also: [and] from henceforth ye know him, and have seen †him.

8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the FATHER, and it sufficeth us.

9 JESUS saith unto him, Have I been So Long Time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? HE that hath SEEN me hath seen the FATHER; [and] how sayest thou *then*, Shew us the FATHER?

10 Believest thou not That **Ʒ** am in the FATHER, and the FATHER in me? the WORDS that **Ʒ** speak unto you I speak not of myself: but *the FATHER that †DWELLETH in me, **hc** doeth the WORKS.

11 Believe me That **Ʒ** *am* in the FATHER, and the FATHER in me: or else believe me for †the very WORKS' sake.

§ L.

12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, HE that BELIEVETH on me, the WORKS that **Ʒ** do shall **hc** do also;

and greater *works* than these shall he do; Because **Ʒ** go unto †my FATHER.

13 And whatsoever ye shall ask in my NAME, that will I do, that the FATHER may be glorified in the SON.

14 If ye shall †ask any thing in my NAME, **Ʒ** will do *it*.

15 If ye love me, †keep MY COMMANDMENTS.

16 And **Ʒ** will pray the FATHER, and he shall give you Another Comforter, that he may †abide with you FOR-EVER;

17 *Even* the SPIRIT of TRUTH; whom the WORLD cannot receive, Because it seeth him not, neither knoweth †him: [but] **ꝛ** know him; For he dwelleth with you, and †shall be in you.

18 I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you.

19 Yet a little while, and the WORLD seeth me no more; but **ꝛ** see me: Because **Ʒ** live, **ꝛ** shall live also.

20 At That DAY **ꝛ** shall know That **Ʒ** *am* in my FATHER, and **ꝛ** in me, and **Ʒ** in you.

21 HE that HATH my COMMANDMENTS, and keepeth them, **hc** *it is that LOVETH me: and HE that LOVETH me shall be loved of my FATHER, and **Ʒ** will love him, and will manifest myself to him.

§ LI.

22 Judas saith unto him, not ISCARIOT, Lord, how is it That thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the WORLD?

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—10. THAT FATHER. 21. is HE that.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—5. how know we the WAY? (*d*). 7. *him*. 10. dwelleth in me, doeth his WORKS (*d*). 11. his WORKS' sake. 12. the FATHER (*d*). 14. ask me anything in my Name, this **Ʒ** will do. 15. ye will keep. 16. be with you (*d*). 17. *him* (*d*). 17. is in you. See 4, 5, 7, 9, 17.

23 †JESUS answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my WORDS: and my FATHER will love him, and we will come unto him, and make *our* Abode with him.

24 HE that LOVETH me not keepeth not my SAYINGS: and the WORD which ye hear is not mine, but the FATHER'S which SENT me.

25 These things have I spoken unto you, being *yet* present with you.

26 But the COMFORTER, *which* is the HOLY GHOST, whom the FATHER will send in my NAME, *he* shall teach You all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

LII.

27 Peace † I leave with you, MY Peace I give unto you: not as the WORLD giveth, give *ƒ* unto you. Let not Your HEART be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

28 Ye have heard How *ƒ* said unto you, I go away, and come *again* unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoyce, Because [I said], I go unto the FATHER: For my FATHER is greater than I.

29 And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe.

30 Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the PRINCE of † this WORLD cometh, and hath nothing in me.

31 But that the WORLD may know That I love the FATHER; and as the FATHER gave me commandment, even so I do.

§ LIII.

Arise, let us go hence.

CHAPTER XV.

1 I am the TRUE VINE, and my FATHER is the HUSBANDMAN.

2 Every Branch in me that beareth not Fruit he taketh away: and every *branch* that beareth FRUIT, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth More Fruit.

3 Now *ye* are clean through the WORD which I have spoken unto you.

4 Abide in me, and *ƒ* in you. As the BRANCH cannot bear Fruit of itself, except it abide in the VINE; no more can *ye*, except ye abide in me.

5 *ƒ* am the VINE, *ye* are the BRANCHES: HE that ABIDETH in me, and *ƒ* in him, the same bringeth forth much Fruit: For without me ye can do nothing.

6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a BRANCH, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast *them* into the Fire, and they are burned.

7 If ye abide in me, and my WORDS abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

8 Herein is my FATHER glorified, that ye bear much Fruit; so shall ye be My Disciples.

9 As the FATHER hath loved me, so have *ƒ* loved you: continue ye in MY LOVE.

10 If ye keep my COMMANDMENTS, ye shall abide in my LOVE; even as *ƒ* have kept † my FATHER'S COMMANDMENTS, and abide in His LOVE.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. Jesus. 27. *ƒ* leave. 30. the WORLD (*d*). 10. the FATHER'S. See 28 (*d*).

§ LIV.

11 These things have I spoken unto you, that MY JOY might † remain in you, and *that* your JOY might be full.

12 This is MY COMMANDMENT, That ye love one another, as I have loved you.

13 Greater Love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his LIFE for his FRIENDS.

14 **Ye** are my Friends, if ye do what [soever] **I** command you.

15 Henceforth I call you not Servants; For the SERVANT knoweth not what His LORD doeth: but I have called You Friends; For all things that I have heard of my FATHER I have made known unto you.

16 **Ye** have not chosen Me, but **I** have chosen you, and ordained you, that **ye** should go and bring forth Fruit, and *that* your FRUIT should remain: that whatsoever ye [shall] ask of the FATHER in my NAME, he may give it you.

§ LV.

17 These things I command you, that ye love one another.

18 If the WORLD hate You, ye know That it hated Me before *it hated* you.

19 If ye were of the WORLD, the WORLD would love his OWN: but Because ye are not of the WORLD, but **I** have chosen you out of the WORLD, therefore the WORLD hateth you.

20 Remember the WORD that **I** said unto you, The Servant is not greater than his LORD. If they have persecuted Me, they will also

persecute You; if they have kept my SAYING, they will keep YOUR'S also.

21 But all These things will they do unto you for my NAME'S sake, Because they know not HIM that SENT me.

22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had Sin: but now they have no Cloke for their SIN.

23 HE that HATETH Me hateth my FATHER also.

24 If I had not done among them the WORKS which none other man did, they had not had Sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my FATHER.

25 But *this cometh to pass*, that *the WORD might be fulfilled that is WRITTEN in their LAW, "They hated me without a cause." ‡

§ LVI.

26 But when the COMFORTER is come, whom **I** will send unto you from the FATHER, *even* the SPIRIT of TRUTH, which proceedeth from the FATHER, **he** shall testify of me:

27 And **ye** also shall bear witness, Because ye have been with me from the Beginning.

CHAPTER XVI.

1 These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended.

2 They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the Time cometh, that WHOSOEVER KILLETH † you will think that he doeth GOD Service.

3 And These things will they

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—25. THAT WORD.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—11. be in you (*d*). 2. you (*d*). See 14 (*d*), 16.

‡ 25. Psalms xxxv. 19.

do [unto you], Because they have not known the FATHER, nor me.

4 But These things have I told you, that when †the TIME shall come, ye may remember That I told you of them. And These things I said not unto you at the Beginning, Because I was with you.

5 But now I go my way to HIM that SENT me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

6 But Because I have said These things unto you, SORROW hath filled Your HEART.

7 Nevertheless I tell you the TRUTH; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the COMFORTER will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

8 And when he is come, he will reprove the WORLD of Sin, and of Righteousness, and of Judgment:

9 Of Sin, Because they believe not on me;

10 Of Righteousness, Because I go to my FATHER, and ye see me no more;

11 Of Judgment, Because the PRINCE of this WORLD is judged.

§ LVII.

12 I have yet Many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

13 Howbeit when he, the SPIRIT of TRUTH, is come, he will guide you into †All TRUTH: for he shall not speak of himself; but Whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you THINGS to COME.

14 We shall glorify Me: For he

shall receive of MINE, and shall shew it unto you.

15 All things that the FATHER hath are mine: therefore said I, That he †shall take of MINE, and shall shew it unto you.

16 A little while, and ye shall †not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, [Because I go to the FATHER.]

17 Then said some of his DISCIPLES among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me: and, Because †I go to the FATHER?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A †LITTLE WHILE? we cannot tell [what he saith].

§ LVIII.

19 [Now] †JESUS knew That they were desirous to ask Him, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me?

20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the WORLD shall rejoice: [and] ye shall be sorrowful, but your SORROW shall be turned into Joy.

21 A WOMAN when she is in travail hath Sorrow, Because her HOUR is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the CHILD, she remembereth no more the ANGUISH, for JOY That a Man is born into the WORLD.

22 And ye now therefore have

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—4. their TIME. 13. all TRUTH. 15. taketh of(d). 16. see me no longer. 17. I go. 18. little-while? (d). 19. Jesus. See 3, 16 (d), 18 (d), 19, 20.

Sorrow: but I will see you again, and Your HEART shall rejoice, and your JOY no man taketh from you.

23 And in That DAY ye shall ask Me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the FATHER in my NAME, he will give *it* you.

24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my NAME: ask, and ye shall receive, that your JOY may be full.

§ LIX.

25 These things have I spoken unto you in Proverbs: but the Time cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in Proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the FATHER.

26 At That DAY ye shall ask in my NAME: and I say not unto you, That I will pray the FATHER for you:

27 For the FATHER himself loveth you, Because *ye* have loved Me, and have believed That I came out from †GOD.

28 I came †forth from the FATHER, and am come into the WORLD: again, I leave the WORLD, and go to the FATHER.

§ LX. ||

29 His DISCIPLES said [unto him], Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no Proverb.

30 Now are we sure That thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask Thee: by this we believe That thou camest forth from God.

31 †JESUS answered them, Do ye now believe?

32 Behold, the Hour cometh, yea, is [now] come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his OWN, and shall leave Me alone: and yet I am not alone, Because the FATHER is with me.

33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have Peace. In the WORLD ye shall have Tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the WORLD.

CHAPTER XVII.

§ LXI.

1 These words spake JESUS, and lifted up his EYES to HEAVEN, and said, Father, the HOUR is come; glorify Thy SON, that †thy SON [also] may glorify thee:

2 As thou hast given him Power over All Flesh, that he should give eternal Life to as many as thou hast given him.

3 And this is *Life ETERNAL, that they might know thee the ONLY TRUE God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.

4 I have glorified Thee on the EARTH: †I have finished the WORK which thou gavest me to do.

5 And now, O Father, glorify *thou* me with thine own self with the GLORY which I had with thee before the WORLD WAS. *Ps. 111. 36.*

6 I have manifested Thy NAME unto the MEN which thou gavest me out of the WORLD: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy WORD.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. ETERNAL Life.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—27. the FATHER (*d*). 28. out from. 31. Jesus. 1. the SON. 4. having finished (*d*). See 29 (*d*), 32 (*d*), 1.

|| *This sectional number in the Greek original, is placed opposite the words: "Again, I leave the WORLD, and go to the FATHER."*

7 Now they have known That all things whatsoever thou † hast given me are of thee.

8 For I have given unto them the WORDS which thou gavest me; and **they** have received *them*, and have known surely That I came out from thee, and they have believed That **thou** didst send Me.

9 **I** pray for them: I pray not for the WORLD, but for them which thou hast given me; For they are thine.

10 And all MINE are thine, and THINE are mine; and I am glorified in them.

11 And now I am no more in the WORLD, but † these are in the WORLD, and **I** come to thee. Holy Father, keep † through thine own NAME those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as † **we** *are*.

12 While I was with them [in the WORLD], **I** kept them in thy † NAME: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the SON OF PERDITION; that the SCRIPTURE might be fulfilled.

13 And now come I to thee; and These things I speak in the WORLD, that they might have MY JOY fulfilled in themselves.

14 **I** have given them thy WORD; and the WORLD hath hated them, Because they are not of the WORLD, even as **I** am not of the WORLD.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the WORLD, but that thou shouldest keep them from the EVIL.

16 They are not of the WORLD, even as **I** am not of the WORLD.

17 Sanctify them through † thy TRUTH: **THY WORD** is † Truth.

18 As thou hast sent Me into the WORLD, even so have **I** also sent them into the WORLD.

19 And for their sakes **I** sanctify myself, that **they** also might be sanctified through the Truth.

20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for **THEM** also which shall BELIEVE on me through their WORD;

21 That they all may be one; as **thou**, Father, *art* in me, and **I** in thee, that **they** also may be [one] in us: that the WORLD may believe That **thou** hast sent Me.

22 And the GLORY which thou gavest me **I** have given them; that they may be one, even as **we** † are one:

23 **I** in them, and **thou** in me, that they may be made perfect in one; [and] that the WORLD may know That **thou** hast sent Me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved Me.

24 Father, † I will that **they** also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where **I** am; that they may behold MY GLORY, which thou hast given me: For thou lovedst me before the Foundation of the World.

25 O righteous Father, the WORLD hath not known Thee: but **I** have known Thee, and **these** have known That **thou** hast sent Me.

26 And I have declared unto them thy NAME, and will declare *it*: that the LOVE wherewith thou

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—7. gavest me. 11. **they** are in (*d*). 11. them in thy NAME, by which thou hast given *them* me, that (*d*). 11. **we** also *are*. 12. NAME, by which thou hast given *them* me; and I have kept *them*, and none. 17. the Truth (*d*). 17. the TRUTH. 22. *are* one (*d*). 24. who hast given *them* me, I will that where **I** am, **they** also may be with me; that they may. See 12 (*d*), 21, 23.

hast loved me may be in them, and **ƒ** in them.

CHAPTER XVIII.

§ LXII.

1 When † JESUS had spoken These words, he went forth with his DISCIPLES over the BROOK CEDRON, where was a Garden, into the which **he** entered, and his DISCIPLES.

2 And *Judas also, which BETRAYED him, knew the PLACE: For † JESUS oftentimes resorted thither with his DISCIPLES.

3 JUDAS then, having received a BAND of men, and Officers from the CHIEF-PRIESTS and † Pharisees, cometh thither with Lanterns and Torches and Weapons.

4 Jesus therefore, knowing All THINGS that should COME upon him, went forth, and † said unto them, Whom seek ye?

5 They answered him, Jesus of NAZARETH. † JESUS saith unto them, **ƒ** am *he*. And *Judas also, which BETRAYED him, stood with them.

6 As soon then as he had said unto them, **ƒ** am *he*, they went BACKWARD, and fell to the Ground.

7 Then asked he them again, Whom seek ye? And THEY said, Jesus of NAZARETH.

8 † JESUS answered, I have told you That **ƒ** am *he*: if therefore ye seek Me, let these go their way:

9 That the SAYING might be fulfilled, which he spake, Of them

which thou gavest me have I lost none.

10 Then Simon Peter having a Sword drew it, and smote the HIGH-PRIEST'S SERVANT, and cut off His RIGHT † EAR. The SERVANT'S Name was Malchus.

11 Then said JESUS unto PETER, Put up † thy SWORD into the SHEATH: the CUP which *my* FATHER hath given me, shall I not drink it?

§ LXIII.

12 Then the BAND and the CAPTAIN and OFFICERS of the JEWS took JESUS, and bound him,

13 And led † him away to Annas first; for he was Father-in-law to CAIAPHAS, which was the High-Priest that same YEAR.

14 Now Caiaphas was HE, which GAVE-COUNSEL to the JEWS, That it was expedient that One Man should die for the PEOPLE.

15 And Simon Peter followed JESUS, and *so did* ANOTHER Disciple: that DISCIPLE was known unto the HIGH-PRIEST, and went in with JESUS into the PALACE of the HIGH-PRIEST.

§ LXIV.

16 But PETER stood at the DOOR without. Then went out † *that* OTHER DISCIPLE, which was known unto the HIGH-PRIEST, and spake unto HER that KEPT-THE-DOOR, and brought in PETER.

17 Then saith *the DAMSEL that KEPT-THE-DOOR unto PETER, Art not **thou** also *one* of this

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. THAT Judas also which. 5. THAT Judas also which. 17. THAT DAMSEL.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. Jesus. 2. Jesus. 3. PHARISEES. 4. saith (*d*). 5. He saith unto them, **ƒ** am JESUS. And. 8. Jesus. 10. EAR-TIP (*d*). 11. the SWORD. 13. *him* (*d*). 16. THAT OTHER DISCIPLE which was the ACQUAINTANCE of the HIGH-PRIEST, and (*d*).

MAN'S DISCIPLES? **He** saith, I am not.

18 And the SERVANTS and OFFICERS stood there, who had made a Fire-of-coals; For it was cold: and they warmed themselves: and PETER † stood with them, and warmed himself.

19 The HIGH-PRIEST then asked JESUS of his DISCIPLES, and of his DOCTRINE.

20 JESUS answered him, **I** † spake openly to the WORLD; **I** ever taught in the SYNAGOGUE, and in the TEMPLE, whither the JEWS always resort; and in secret have I said nothing.

21 Why askest thou Me? ask THEM which HEARD *me*, what I have said unto them: behold, **they** know what **I** said.

22 And when he had thus spoken, one of the OFFICERS which stood by struck JESUS with the Palm-of-his-hand, saying, Answerest thou the HIGH-PRIEST so?

23 † JESUS answered him, If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the EVIL: but if well, why smitest thou Me?

§ LXV.

24 Now ANNAS had sent him bound unto Caiaphas the HIGH-PRIEST.

25 And Simon Peter stood and warmed himself. They said therefore unto him, Art not **thou** also one of his DISCIPLES? **He** denied *it*, and said, I am not.

26 One of the SERVANTS of the HIGH-PRIEST, being *his* Kinsman Whose EAR Peter cut off, saith,

Did not **I** see Thee in the GARDEN with him?

27 † PETER then denied again: and immediately the Cock crew.

§ LXVI.

28 Then led they JESUS from CAIAPHAS unto the HALL-OF-JUDGMENT: and it was early; and they themselves went not into the JUDGMENT-HALL, † lest they should be defiled; but that they might eat the PASSOVER.

29 PILATE then went out unto them, and † said, What Accusation bring ye † against this MAN?

30 They answered and said unto him, If **he** were not † a Malefactor, we would not have delivered him up unto thee.

31 Then said † PILATE unto them, Take *ye* him, and judge him according to your LAW. The JEWS [therefore] said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death:

32 That the SAYING of JESUS might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying What Death he should die.

§ LXVII.

33 Then PILATE entered into the JUDGMENT-HALL again, and called JESUS, and said unto him, Art **thou** the KING of the JEWS?

34 † JESUS answered [him], Sayest **thou** This thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of me?

35 PILATE answered, Am **I** a Jew? THINE-OWN NATION and the CHIEF-PRIESTS have delivered thee unto me: What hast thou done?

36 † JESUS answered, MY KING-

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—18. also stood. 20. have spoken openly (*d*). 23. Jesus. 27. Peter. 28. that they should not be defiled, but should eat. 29. saith (*d*). 29. of this MAN? (*d*). 30. one who doeth evil, we would (*d*). 31. Pilate. 34. Jesus. 36. Jesus. See 31, 34.

DOM is not of this WORLD: if MY KINGDOM were of this WORLD, then would MY SERVANTS fight, that I should not be delivered to the JEWS: but now is MY KINGDOM not from hence.

37 PILATE therefore said unto him, Art **thou** a King then? Jesus answered, **Thou** sayest That **†** I am a King. To this end was **†** I born, and for this cause came I into the WORLD, that I should bear witness unto the TRUTH. EVERY-ONE that IS of the TRUTH heareth My VOICE.

38 PILATE saith unto him, What is Truth? And when he had said This, he went out again unto the JEWS, and saith unto them, **†** I find in him No Fault *at all*.

39 But ye have a Custom, that I should release unto you One at the PASSOVER: will ye therefore that I release unto you the KING of the JEWS?

40 Then cried they [all] again, saying, Not this man, but BARABBAS. Now BARABBAS was a Robber.

CHAPTER XIX.

§ LXVIII.

1 Then PILATE therefore took JESUS, and scourged *him*.

2 And the SOLDIERS platted a Crown of Thorns, and put *it* on His HEAD, and they put on him a purple Robe,

3 And **†**said, Hail, KING of the JEWS! and they smote him with *their* Hands.

4 **†** PILATE therefore went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, That ye may know that I find No Fault in him.

5 Then came **†**JESUS forth, wearing the *Crown of THORNS, and the PURPLE Robe. And *Pilate* saith unto them, Behold the MAN!

6 When the CHIEF-PRIESTS therefore and OFFICERS saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucify *him*, crucify *him*. PILATE saith unto them, Take **ye** him, and crucify *him*: for **†** I find no Fault in him.

7 The JEWS answered him, **We** have a Law, and by **†**our LAW he ought to die, Because he made himself the Son of **†**GOD.

8 When PILATE therefore heard That SAYING, he was the more afraid;

9 And went again into the JUDGMENT-HALL, and saith unto JESUS, Whence art **thou**? But JESUS gave him no Answer.

10 Then saith PILATE unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not That I have Power to **†**crucify thee, and have Power to release thee?

11 **†** JESUS answered, Thou couldest have no Power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore HE that DELIVERED me unto thee hath the Greater Sin.

12 And from thenceforth PILATE sought to release him: but the JEWS cried out, saying, If thou let This man go, thou art not CÆSAR'S Friend: WHOSOEVER

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—5. THORNY CROWN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—37. I am. 3. they came unto him and said. 4. And PILATE went. 5. Jesus. 7. the LAW (*d*). 7. God. 10. to release thee, and have Power to crucify thee? 11. Jesus answered him, Thou. See 40 (*d*).

MAKETH Himself a King speaketh against CÆSAR.

13 When PILATE therefore heard † That SAYING, he brought JESUS forth, and sat down in the † JUDGMENT-SEAT in a Place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the Preparation of the PASSOVER, † and about the sixth Hour: and he saith unto the JEWS, Behold your KING!

15 † But THEY cried out, Away with *him*, away with *him*, crucify him. PILATE saith unto them, Shall I crucify your KING? The CHIEF-PRIESTS answered, We have no King but Cæsar.

§ LXIX.

16 Then delivered he him therefore unto them to be crucified. † And they took JESUS, [and led *him* away].

17 And he bearing his CROSS went forth *into a PLACE CALLED *the place* of a Skull, which is called in the Hebrew Golgotha:

18 Where they crucified Him, and two other with him, on either side one, and JESUS in the Midst.

19 And PILATE wrote a Title, and put *it* on the CROSS. And the Writing was, Jesus of NAZARETH the KING of the JEWS.

20 This TITLE then read many of the JEWS: For the PLACE where JESUS was crucified was nigh to the CITY: and it was written in Hebrew, and † Greek, and Latin.

21 Then said the CHIEF-PRIESTS of the JEWS to PILATE, Write not, The KING of the JEWS; but That *he* said, I am King of the JEWS.

22 PILATE answered, What I have written I have written.

§ LXX.

23 Then the SOLDIERS, when they had crucified JESUS, took his GARMENTS, and made Four Parts, to Every Soldier a Part; and also *his* COAT: now the COAT was without seam, woven from the TOP throughout.

24 They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the SCRIPTURE might be fulfilled, [which SAITH,] “They parted my RAIMENT among them, and for my VESTURE they did cast Lots.” †

§ LXXI.

These things therefore the SOLDIERS did.

25 Now there stood by the CROSS of JESUS his MOTHER, and his MOTHER'S SISTER, *Mary the *wife* of CLEOPHAS, and Mary MAGDALENE.

26 When Jesus therefore saw *his* MOTHER, and the DISCIPLE standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto † his MOTHER, Woman, behold thy SON!

27 Then saith he to the DISCIPLE, Behold thy MOTHER! And from That HOUR *that* DISCIPLE took her unto his OWN *home*.

28 After this, † JESUS knowing

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. into the PLACE which is CALLED *the Place* of a Skull. 25. THAT Mary who was the *wife*.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—13. these SAYINGS, he brought. 13. Judgment-seat, in a Place. 14. the Hour was about the sixth; and. 15. Then *they*. 16. Then they. 20. Latin, and Greek. 26. *his* (d). 28. Jesus. See 16 (d), 24 (d).

† 24. Psalms xxii. 18.

That all things were now accomplished, that the SCRIPTURE might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

29 [Now] there was set a Vessel full of Vinegar: † and THEY FILLED a Sponge with Vinegar, and put *it* upon Hyssop, and put *it* to His MOUTH.

30 When † JESUS therefore had received the VINEGAR, he said, It is finished: and he bowed *his* HEAD, and gave up the GHOST.

§ LXXII.

31 The JEWS therefore, because it was the Preparation, that the BODIES should not remain upon the CROSS on the SABBATH day, (for That SABBATH DAY was an high *day*,) besought PILATE that Their LEGS might be broken, and *that* they might be taken away.

32 Then came the SOLDIERS, and brake the LEGS of the FIRST, and of *the OTHER which was CRUCIFIED with him.

33 But when they came to JESUS, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not His LEGS:

34 But one of the SOLDIERS with a Spear pierced His SIDE, and forthwith came there out Blood and Water.

35 And HE that SAW *it* bare record, and His RECORD is true: and *he* knoweth That he saith true, that *ye* † might believe.

36 For these things were done,

that the SCRIPTURE should be fulfilled, “A Bone of him shall not be broken.” †

37 And again Another Scripture saith, “They shall look on him whom they pierced.” †

§ LXXIII.

38 And after this † JOSEPH of Arimathæa, being a Disciple of † JESUS, but secretly for FEAR of the JEWS, besought PILATE that he might take away † the BODY of JESUS: and PILATE gave *him* leave. He came therefore, and took the BODY of JESUS.

39 And there came also *Nicodemus, which AT-THE-FIRST CAME to † JESUS by Night, and brought a Mixture of Myrrh and Aloes, about an hundred Pound *weight*.

40 Then took they the BODY of JESUS, and wound it in Lincloth with the SPICES, as the Manner of the JEWS is to bury.

41 Now in the PLACE where he was crucified there was a Garden; and in the GARDEN a new Sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.

42 There laid they JESUS therefore because of the JEWS' PREPARATION *day*; For the SEPULCHRE was nigh at hand.

CHAPTER XX.

§ LXXIV.

1 The FIRST *day* of the WEEK cometh Mary MAGDALENE early,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—32. THAT OTHER which. 39. THAT Nicodemus which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—29. putting then a Sponge full of VINEGAR upon Hyssop, they brought it to His MOUTH (*d*). 30. Jesus. 35. may believe. 38. Joseph. 38. Jesus. 38. his Body: and PILATE. 39. him by Night, and he brought. See 29 (*d*).

† 36. Psa. xxxiv. 20; Exod. xii. 14. † 37. Psa. xxii. 16; Zech. xii. 10.

when it was yet dark, unto the SEPULCHRE, and seeth the STONE taken away from the SEPULCHRE.

2 Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the OTHER Disciple whom JESUS loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the LORD out of the SEPULCHRE, and we know not where they have laid him.

3 PETER therefore went forth, and *that* OTHER disciple, and came to the SEPULCHRE.

4 So they ran BOTH together: and the OTHER Disciple did outrun PETER, and came first to the SEPULCHRE.

5 And he stooping down, *and looking in*, saw the LINEN-CLOTHES lying; yet went he not in.

6 Then cometh † Simon Peter following him, and went into the SEPULCHRE, and seeth the LINEN-CLOTHES lie,

7 And the NAPKIN, that was about his HEAD, not lying with the LINEN-CLOTHES, but wrapped together in a Place by itself.

8 Then went in also THAT OTHER Disciple, which CAME first to the SEPULCHRE, and he saw, and believed.

9 For as yet they knew not the SCRIPTURE, That he must rise again from the Dead.

10 Then the DISCIPLES went away again unto their own home.

§ LXXV.

11 But Mary stood without at the SEPULCHRE weeping: and as

she wept, she stooped down, *and looked* into the SEPULCHRE,

12 And seeth Two Angels in white sitting, the one at the HEAD, and the other at the FEET, where the BODY of JESUS had lain.

13 And *they* say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? † She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my LORD, and I know not where they have laid him.

14 [And] when she had thus said, she turned herself BACK, and saw JESUS standing, and knew not That it was JESUS.

15 † JESUS saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? Whom seekest thou? *She*, supposing him to be the GARDENER, saith unto him, Sir, if *thou* have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take Him away.

16 † JESUS saith unto her, Mary. *She* turned herself, and saith unto him, † Rabboni; which is to say, Master.

17 † JESUS saith unto her, Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to † my FATHER: but go to my BRETHREN, and say unto them, I ascend unto my FATHER, and your Father; and *to* my God, and your God.

18 Mary MAGDALENE came and told the DISCIPLES That she had seen the LORD, and *that* he had spoken These things unto her.

§ LXXVI.

19 Then the same DAY at Evening, being the FIRST *day* of the

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—6. also Simon Peter. 13. And she saith. 15. Jesus. 16. Jesus. 16. in the Hebrew tongue, Rabboni (d). 17. Jesus. 17. the FATHER. See 14.

† WEEK, when the DOORS were shut where the DISCIPLES were [assembled] for FEAR of the JEWS, came JESUS and stood in the MIDST, and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you.

20 And when he had so said, he shewed unto them † *his* HANDS and his SIDE. Then were the DISCIPLES glad, when they saw the LORD.

21 Then said JESUS to them again, Peace *be* unto you: as *my* FATHER hath sent me, even so send I you.

22 And when he had said This, he breathed on *them*, and saith unto them, Receive ye the holy Ghost:

23 Whose soever SINS ye remit, they are remitted unto them; *and* whose soever *sins* ye retain, they are retained.

§ LXXVII.

24 But Thomas, * one of the TWELVE, CALLED Didymus, was not with them when † JESUS came.

25 The OTHER Disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the LORD. But HE said unto them, Except I shall see in his HANDS the PRINT of the NAILS, and put my FINGER into the PRINT of the NAILS, and thrust † my HAND into his SIDE, I will not believe.

§ LXXVIII.

26 And after eight Days again his DISCIPLES were within, and Thomas with them: *then* came JESUS, the DOORS being shut, and

stood in the MIDST, and said, Peace *be* unto you.

27 Then saith he to THOMAS, Reach hither thy FINGER, and behold my HANDS; and reach hither thy HAND, and thrust *it* into my SIDE: and be not faithless, but believing.

28 † And THOMAS answered and said unto him, My LORD and my GOD.

29 † JESUS saith unto him, [Thomas,] Because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed *are* THEY that have not SEEN, and *yet* have believed.

30 And many Other Signs truly did JESUS in the presence of † his DISCIPLES, which are not written in this BOOK:

31 But these are written, that ye † might believe That JESUS is the CHRIST, the SON of GOD; and that believing ye might have Life through his NAME.

CHAPTER XXI.

§ LXXIX.

1 After these things † JESUS shewed himself again to the DISCIPLES at the SEA of TIBERIAS; and on this wise shewed he *himself*.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and * Thomas CALLED Didymus, and * Nathanael of Cana in GALILEE, and * the *sons* of ZEBEDEE, and two other of his DISCIPLES.

3 Simon Peter saith unto them,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—24. THAT one of the TWELVE who is CALLED. 2. THAT Thomas who is CALLED. 2. THAT Nathanael who was of Cana. 2. THEY who were the *Sons*.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—19. Week. 20. both *his* Hands and *his* Side. 24. Jesus. 25. My HAND. 28. Thomas answered, 29. Jesus. 30. the DISCIPLES. 31. may believe. 1. Jesus. See 19 (d), 29.

I go a fishing. They say unto him, **¶** **¶** also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a SHIP [immediately]; and That NIGHT they caught nothing.

4 But when the Morning was now come, † JESUS stood on the SHORE: but the DISCIPLES knew not That it was Jesus.

5 Then † JESUS saith unto them, Children, have ye any Meat? They answered him, No.

6 And HE said unto them, Cast the NET on the RIGHT Side of the SHIP, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the MULTITUDE of FISHES.

7 Therefore that DISCIPLE whom JESUS loved saith unto PETER, It is the LORD. Now when Simon Peter heard That it was the LORD, he girt *his* FISHER'S-COAT unto him, (for he was naked,) and did cast himself into the SEA.

8 And the OTHER Disciples came in a LITTLE-SHIP; (for they were not far from LAND, but as it were two hundred Cubits,) dragging the NET with FISHES.

9 As soon then as they were come to LAND, they saw a Fire-of-coals there, and Fish laid thereon, and Bread.

10 † JESUS saith unto them, Bring of the FISH which ye have now caught.

11 † Simon Peter went up, and drew the NET to LAND full of great Fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the NET broken.

12 † JESUS saith unto them, Come *and* dine. [And] none of the DISCIPLES durst ask him, Who art **thou**? knowing That it was the LORD.

13 † JESUS [then] cometh, and taketh BREAD, and giveth them, and FISH likewise.

14 This is now the third time that † JESUS shewed himself to † his DISCIPLES, after that he was risen from the Dead.

§ LXXX.

15 So when they had dined, JESUS saith to SIMON Peter, Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; **thou** knowest That I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my LAMBS.

16 He saith to him again the second time, Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; **thou** knowest That I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my SHEEP.

17 He saith unto him the THIRD time, Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? PETER was grieved Because he said unto him the THIRD time, Lovest thou me? And he said [unto him], Lord, **thou** knowest All things; **thou** knowest That I love thee. † JESUS saith unto him, Feed my SHEEP.

18 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdest thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy HANDS, and another

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—4. Jesus. 5. Jesus. 10. Jesus. 11. Then Simon Peter. 12. Jesus. 13. Jesus. 14. Jesus. 14. the DISCIPLES. 17. Jesus. See 3 (d), 12, 13, 17.

shall gird thee, and carry *thee* whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake he, signifying by What Death he should glorify GOD. And when he had spoken This, he saith unto him, Follow me.

20 [Then] PETER, turning about, seeth the DISCIPLE whom JESUS loved following; which also leaned on his BREAST at SUPPER, and said, Lord, which is HE that BETRAYETH thee?

21 †PETER seeing *him* saith to JESUS, Lord, and what *shall* this man *do*?

22 JESUS saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee? follow *thou* me.

23 Then † went this SAYING abroad among the BRETHREN, That that DISCIPLE should not die: †yet JESUS said not unto him, He shall not die; but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee?

24 This is *† the DISCIPLE which TESTIFIETH of these things, and wrote these things: and we know † That his TESTIMONY is true.

25 And there are also many other things which JESUS did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the WORLD itself could not contain the BOOKS that should be WRITTEN. [Amen.] †

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—24. THAT DISCIPLE which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—21. PETER therefore. 23. went This SAYING. 23. but JESUS. 24. THAT DISCIPLE which both TESTIFIETH of these things and WROTE these things. 24. That His TESTIMONY. 25. *Subscription*: ACCORDING TO JOHN. See 20 25.

† THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES.

CHAPTER I.

SECTION I.

1 The FORMER Treatise have I made, O Theophilus, of all that † JESUS began both to do and teach.

2 Until the Day in which he was taken up, after that he through the holy Ghost had given commandments unto the APOSTLES whom he had chosen:

3 To whom also he shewed himself alive after his PASSION by Many Infallible-proofs, being seen of them forty Days, and speaking of the THINGS pertaining to the KINGDOM of GOD:

4 And, being assembled together with *them*, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the PROMISE of the FATHER, which, *saieth he*, ye have heard of me.

5 For John truly baptized with Water; but *ye* shall be baptized with the holy Ghost not Many Days hence.

6 When THEY therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this TIME restore again the KINGDOM to ISRAEL?

7 † And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the Times

or the Seasons, which the FATHER hath put in his OWN Power.

8 But ye shall receive Power, after that the HOLY Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be Witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in All JUDÆA, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the EARTH.

9 And when he had spoken These things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a Cloud received him out of their SIGHT.

10 And while they looked steadfastly toward HEAVEN as he went up, behold, two Men stood by them in white Apparel;

11 Which also said, Ye Men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing [up] into HEAVEN? This SAME JESUS, which is TAKEN-UP from you into HEAVEN, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into HEAVEN.

12 Then returned they unto Jerusalem from *the Mount CALLED Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a Sabbath-day's Journey.

13 And when they were come in, they went up into an UPPER-ROOM, where abode both PETER, and † James, and John and Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew, James

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—12. THAT MOUNT WHICH IS CALLED.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—Title: THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES. 1. Jesus. 7. Then he said. 13. John, and James and Andrew. See 11.

the son of Alphæus and Simon ZELOTES, and Judas the brother of James.

14 These all continued with one accord in PRAYER [and SUPPLICATION], with the Women, and Mary the MOTHER of †JESUS, and with his BRETHREN.

§ II.

15 And in those DAYS Peter stood up in the midst of the †DISCIPLES, and said,—the Number of Names together were about an hundred and twenty,—

16 Men *and* Brethren, †this SCRIPTURE must needs have been fulfilled, which the HOLY GHOST by the Mouth of David spake before concerning *Judas, which WAS Guide to THEM that TOOK †JESUS.

17 For he was numbered †with us, and had obtained PART of this MINISTRY.—

18 Now this man purchased a Field with the REWARD of INIQUITY; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and All his BOWELS gushed out.

19 And it was known unto All the DWELLERS at Jerusalem; in-somuch as that FIELD is called in their PROPER Tongue, †Aceldama, that is to say, The Field of Blood.—

20 For it is written in the Book of Psalms, “ Let his HABITATION be desolate, and let no man DWELL therein: and his BISHOPRICK let another take.”

21 Wherefore of these MEN

which have COMPANIED with us all the Time that the LORD Jesus went in and out among us,

22 Beginning from the BAPTISM of John, unto that same DAY that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a Witness with us of his RESURRECTION.

23 And they appointed two, *Joseph CALLED †Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, and said, **Thou**, Lord, which knowest the hearts of all *men*, shew whether of These TWO thou hast chosen,

25 That he may take †PART of this MINISTRY and Apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his OWN PLACE.

26 And they gave forth †their Lots; and the LOT fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered with the ELEVEN Apostles.

CHAPTER II.

§ III.

1 And when the DAY of PENTECOST was FULLY-COME, they were all †with one accord in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a Sound from HEAVEN as of a rushing mighty Wind, and it filled All the HOUSE where they were sitting.

3 And there appeared unto them Cloven Tongues like as of Fire, and it sat upon *each of them.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—16. THAT Judas who BECAME Guide. 23. THAT Joseph who was CALLED. 3. every one of them.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. Jesus. 15. BRETHREN, and said. 16. The SCRIPTURE. 16. Jesus. 17. among us. 19. Aceldamach. 23. Barsabbas. 25. the PLACE of this. 26. the Lots to them; and. 1. together in one place. See 14.

‡ 20. Psa. lxi. 25.

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speak with Other Tongues, as the SPIRIT gave them utterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout Men, of Every Nation under HEAVEN.

6 Now when this was NOISED abroad, the MULTITUDE came together, and were confounded, Because that every man heard them speak in his OWN Language.

7 And they were [all] amazed and marvelled, saying [one to another], Behold, are not all THESE which SPEAK Galilæans?

8 And how hear *we* every man in our OWN Tongue, wherein we were born?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the DWELLERS in MESOPOTAMIA, *and in Judæa and Cappadocia, in Pontus and ASIA,

10 *Phrygia and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the PARTS of LIBYA about Cyrene, and STRANGERS of Rome, *Jews and proselytes,

11 Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in OUR Tongues the WONDERFUL-WORKS of God.

12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this?

13 Others mocking said, These men are full of New-wine.

§ IV.

14 But Peter standing up with the ELEVEN, lifted up his VOICE, and said unto them, Ye Men of Judæa, and all YE that DWELL at

Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my WORDS:

15 For these are not drunken as *ye* suppose, seeing it is *but* the third Hour of the DAY.

16 But this is THAT which was SPOKEN by the PROPHET Joel;

17 “And it shall come to pass † in the LAST Days, saith GOD, I will pour out of my SPIRIT upon All Flesh: and your SONS and your DAUGHTERS shall prophesy, and your YOUNG-MEN shall see Visions, and your OLD-MEN shall dream Dreams.

18 “And on my SERVANTS and on my HANDMAIDENS I will pour out in those DAYS of my SPIRIT; and they shall prophesy:

19 “And I will shew Wonders in HEAVEN above, and Signs in the EARTH beneath; Blood, and Fire, and Vapour of Smoke:

20 “The SUN shall be turned into Darkness, and the MOON into Blood, before THAT great and notable Day of the Lord come:

21 “And it shall come to pass, *that* whosoever shall call on the NAME of the Lord shall be saved.” ‡

§ V.

22 Ye Men of Israel, hear these WORDS; Jesus of NAZARETH, a Man approved of GOD among you by Miracles and Wonders and Signs, which GOD did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves [also] know:

23 *Him*, being delivered by the DETERMINATE Counsel and Foreknowledge of GOD, ye † have taken, and by wicked Hands have crucified and slain:

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—9. both Judæa and. 10. both Phrygia and. 10. both Jews and.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—17. after these things, saith God. 23. by the Hand of Wicked men have crucified and slain. See 7 (twice), 22.

‡ 21. Joel ii. 28, 29.

24 Whom GOD hath raised up, having loosed the PAINS of DEATH: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.

(§ VI.)

25 For David speaketh concerning him, "I foresaw the LORD always before my face, For he is on my Right *hand*, that I should not be moved:

26 "Therefore did †my HEART rejoice, and my TONGUE was glad; moreover also my FLESH shall rest in Hope:

27 "Because thou wilt not leave my SOUL in Hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine HOLY-ONE to see Corruption.

28 "Thou hast made known to me the Ways of Life; thou shalt make me full of Joy with thy COUNTENANCE." †

§ VII.

29 Men *and* Brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the PATRIARCH David, That he is both dead and buried, and his SEPULCHRE is with us unto this DAY.

30 Therefore being a Prophet, and knowing That GOD had sworn with an Oath to him, that of the Fruit of his LOINS, according to the Flesh, he would RAISE-UP CHRIST to sit on his THRONE;

31 He seeing this before spake of the RESURRECTION of CHRIST, That †his SOUL was not left in Hell, neither his FLESH did see Corruption.

32 This JESUS hath GOD raised up, whereof *wē* all are Witnesses.

33 Therefore being by the RIGHT-HAND of GOD exalted, and having received of the FATHER the PROMISE of the †HOLY Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which *ye* [now] †see and hear.

34 For David is not ascended into the HEAVENS: but he saith himself, "The LORD said unto my LORD, Sit thou on my Right *hand*,

35 "Until I make thy FOES thy FOOTSTOOL." †

36 Therefore let All the House of Israel know assuredly, that GOD hath made †that Same JESUS, whom *ye* have crucified, both Lord and Christ.

37 Now when they heard *this*, they were pricked † in their HEART, and said unto PETER and to the REST of the Apostles, Men *and* Brethren, what shall we do?

38 Then Peter [said] unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the NAME of Jesus Christ for the Remission † of Sins, and ye shall receive the GIFT of the HOLY Ghost.

39 For the PROMISE is unto you, and to your CHILDREN, and to ALL that are afar off, *even* as many as the Lord our GOD shall call.

40 And with many Other Words did he testify and † exhort, saying, Save yourselves from this UNTOWARD GENERATION.

41 Then THEY that [gladly] RECEIVED his WORD were baptized: and the same DAY there were added *unto them* about three thousand Souls.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—26. My HEART. 31. neither was he left in Hell, nor did his FLESH see. 33. HOLY GHOST. 33. both see. 36. This JESUS, whom *ye* have crucified, both very Lord and. 37. to the HEART. 38. of your SINS (*a*). 40. exhort them, saying. See 33, 38, 41.

‡ 28. Psa. xvi. 8. ‡ 35. Psa cx. 1.

42 And they continued stedfastly in the APOSTLES' DOCTRINE and FELLOWSHIP, [and] in BREAKING of BREAD, and in PRAYERS.

43 And Fear came upon Every Soul: and Many Wonders and Signs were done by the APOSTLES.

44 And ALL that BELIEVED †were TOGETHER, and had all things common;

45 And sold their POSSESSIONS and GOODS, and parted them to all *men*, as every man had Need.

46 And they, continuing daily with one accord in the TEMPLE, and breaking Bread from House to House, did eat their Meat with Gladness and Singleness of Heart.

47 Praising GOD, and having Favour with All the PEOPLE. And the LORD added [to the CHURCH] daily *SUCH as should be SAVED.

CHAPTER III.

§ VIII.

1 Now Peter and John went up TOGETHER into the TEMPLE at the HOUR of PRAYER, *being* the NINTH *hour*.

2 And a Certain Man lame from his Mother's Womb was carried, whom they laid daily *at the GATE of the TEMPLE which is CALLED Beautiful, to ASK Alms of THEM that ENTERED into the TEMPLE.

3 Who seeing Peter and John about to go into the TEMPLE asked an Alms.

4 And Peter, fastening his eyes upon him with JOHN, said, Look on us.

5 And HE gave heed unto them, expecting to receive Something of them.

6 Then Peter said, Silver and Gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the NAME of Jesus Christ of NAZARETH [rise up and] walk.

7 And he took him by the RIGHT Hand, and lifted †*him* up: and immediately †His FEET and ANCLE-BONES received strength.

8 And he leaping up stood, and walked, and entered with them into the TEMPLE, walking, and leaping, and praising GOD.

9 And All the PEOPLE saw him walking and praising GOD:

10 And they knew That it was HE which SAT for ALMS at the BEAUTIFUL Gate of the TEMPLE: and they were filled with Wonder and Amazement at THAT which had HAPPENED unto him.

11 And as the LAME man which was HEALED held PETER and John, All the PEOPLE ran together unto them in *the PORCH that is CALLED Solomon's, greatly wondering.

12 And when †Peter saw *it*, he answered unto the PEOPLE, Ye Men of Israel, why marvel ye at this? or why look ye so earnestly on Us, as though by Our-own Power or Holiness we had made this man to WALK?

13 The GOD of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the GOD of our FATHERS, hath glorified his SON Jesus; whom †*pe* delivered up, and denied [him] in

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—47. THEM that were SAVED.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—44. had all things common together; and sold.

7. his FEET.

12. PETER.

13. *pe* indeed delivered up.

2. THAT GATE of the TEMPLE which is CALLED. 11. THAT PORCH which is. 7. *him*. See 42, 47, 6, 13.

the Presence of Pilate, when *he* was determined to let *him* go.

14 But *ye* denied the HOLY-ONE and the Just, and desired a Murderer to be granted unto you;

15 And killed the PRINCE of LIFE, whom GOD hath raised from the Dead; whereof *wē* are Witnesses.

16 And his NAME † through FAITH in his NAME hath made This man strong, whom ye see and know: yea, *the FAITH which is by him hath given him this PERFECT-SOUNDNESS in the presence of you all.

17 And now, Brethren, I wot That through Ignorance ye did *it*, as *did* also your RULERS.

18 But those things, which GOD before had shewed by the Mouth of All † his PROPHETS, that CHRIST should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

19 Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that Your SINS may be BLOTTED-OUT, when the Times of Refreshing shall come from the Presence of the LORD;

20 And he shall send JESUS Christ, † which BEFORE-WAS-PREACHED unto you:

21 Whom the Heaven must receive until the Times of Restitution of all things, which GOD hath spoken by the Mouth † of All his Holy Prophets since the world began.

22 [For] Moses truly said [unto the FATHERS], "A Prophet shall the Lord your GOD raise up unto

you of your BRETHREN, like unto me; Him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

23 "And it shall come to pass, *that* Every Soul, which will not hear that PROPHET, shall be destroyed from among the PEOPLE." †

24 Yea, and All the PROPHETS from Samuel and THOSE that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these DAYS.

25 *Ye* are † of the Children of the PROPHETS, and of the COVENANT which GOD made with our FATHERS, saying unto Abraham, "And in thy SEED shall All the KINDREDS of the EARTH be blessed." †

26 Unto you first GOD, having raised up his SON [Jesus], sent him to bless you, in TURNING-AWAY every one [of you] from *his INIQUITIES.

CHAPTER IV.

§ IX.

1 And as they spake unto the PEOPLE, the †PRIESTS, and the CAPTAIN of the TEMPLE, and the SADDUCEES, came upon them.

2 Being grieved that they TAUGHT the PEOPLE, and preached through JESUS *the RESURRECTION from the Dead.

3 And they laid HANDS on them, and put *them* in Hold until the NEXT-DAY: for it was now Eventide.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—16. THAT FAITH which. 26. *his*. 2, THAT RESURRECTION which is from.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. by FAITH in. 18. the PROPHETS his CHRIST. 20. who WAS FORE-ORDAINED unto you. 21. of HIS HOLY. 25. the CHILDREN of. 1. CHIEF-PRIESTS and. See 22 (twice), 26 (twice).

‡ 23. Deut. xviii. 15, 19. † 25. Gen. xii. 3

4 Howbeit many of THEM which HEARD the WORD believed; and the NUMBER of the MEN was about five Thousand.

5 And it came to pass on the MORROW, that Their RULERS, †and Elders, and Scribes,

6 And Annas the HIGH-PRIEST, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the Kindred of the High-priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem.

7 And when they had set them in the MIDST, they asked, By What Power, or by What Name, have ye done this?

8 Then Peter, filled with the holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye Rulers of the PEOPLE, and Elders [of ISRAEL],

9 If we this day be examined of the Good-deed done to the impotent Man, by what means he is made whole;

10 Be it known unto you all, and to All the PEOPLE of Israel, That by the NAME of Jesus Christ of NAZARETH, whom ye crucified, whom GOD raised from the Dead, *even* by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

11 This is *the STONE which was SET-AT-NOUGHT of You BUILDERS, *which is BECOME the Head of the Corner." †

12 Neither is there SALVATION in any other: for there is none OTHER Name under HEAVEN GIVEN among Men, whereby we must be saved.

§ x.

13 Now when they saw the

BOLDNESS of PETER and John, and perceived That they were unlearned and ignorant Men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, That they had been with JESUS.

14 And beholding *the MAN which was HEALED standing with them, they could say Nothing against it.

15 But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the COUNCIL, they conferred among themselves,

16 Saying, What shall we do to these MEN? for That indeed a Notable Miracle hath been done by them *is* manifest to All THEM that DWELL in Jerusalem; and we cannot deny *it*.

17 But that it spread no further among the PEOPLE, let us [straitly] threaten them, that they speak henceforth to No Man in this NAME.

18 And they called them, and commanded †them not to SPEAK at all nor teach in the NAME of JESUS.

19 But PETER and John answered and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of GOD to hearken unto You more than unto GOD, judge ye.

20 For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard.

21 So *when they had further threatened them, THEY let them go, finding Nothing HOW they might punish them, because of the PEOPLE: for all *men* glori-

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—11. THAT STONE which. 11. THAT which is BECOME. 14. THAT MAN which. 21. THEY, when they had further threatened them, let them go.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—5. and the ELDERS. 18. that they should not speak at all nor. See 8, 17.

‡ 11. Psa. cxviii. 22.

fied GOD for THAT which was DONE.

22 For the MAN was above forty Years old, on whom this MIRACLE of HEALING was shewed.

§ XI.

23 And being let go, they went to their OWN-COMPANY, and reported all that the CHIEF-PRIESTS and ELDERS had said unto them.

24 And *when they heard that, THEY lifted up their Voice to GOD with one accord, and said, Lord, †thou art *GOD, which hast MADE HEAVEN, and EARTH, and the SEA, and ALL that in them is:

25 *Who †by the Mouth of thy SERVANT David hast SAID, “Why did the Heathen rage, and the People imagine vain things?”

26 “The KINGS of the EARTH stood up, and the RULERS were gathered TOGETHER against the LORD, and against his CHRIST.” ‡

27 For of a Truth †against thy HOLY Child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the People of Israel, were gathered together,

28 For to do whatsoever thy HAND and [thy] COUNSEL determined before to be done.

29 And NOW, Lord, behold their THREATENINGS: and grant unto thy SERVANTS, that with all Boldness they may speak thy WORD.

30 By STRETCHING-FORTH thine HAND to heal; and that Signs

and Wonders may be done by the NAME of thy HOLY Child Jesus.

31 And when they had prayed, the PLACE was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with †the holy Ghost, and they spake the WORD of GOD with Boldness.

§ XII.

32 And the MULTITUDE of THEM that BELIEVED were of one HEART and of one SOUL: neither said any of them that ought of the THINGS which he POSSESSED was his own; but they had all things common.

33 And with †Great Power gave the APOSTLES WITNESS of the RESURRECTION of the LORD Jesus: and great Grace was upon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were Possessors of Lands or Houses sold them, and brought the PRICES of the THINGS that were SOLD,

35 And laid them down at the APOSTLES' FEET: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had Need.

36 And *Joses, who by the APOSTLES was SURNAMED Barnabas,—which is, being interpreted, The Son of Consolation,—a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus,

37 Having Land, sold it, and brought the MONEY, and laid it at the APOSTLES' FEET.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—24. THEY, when they heard that, lifted up. 24. THAT GOD who made HEAVEN. 25. THOU who. 36. THAT Joses who.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—24. thou art HE who MADE HEAVEN. 25. through the holy Spirit, by the Mouth of our FATHER David thy Servant hast SAID. 27. in this CITY against. 31. the HOLY Ghost. 33. great Power. See 28.

‡ 26. Psa. ii. 1.

CHAPTER V.

§ XIII.

1 But a certain Man named Ananias, with Sapphira his WIFE, sold a Possession,

2 And kept back *part* of the PRICE, † his WIFE also being privy *to it*, and brought a certain Part, and laid *it* at the APOSTLES' FEET.

3 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath SATAN filled thine HEART to lie to the HOLY GHOST, and to keep back *part* of the PRICE of the LAND?

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in THINE-OWN Power? *why hast thou conceived this THING in thine HEART? thou hast not lied unto Men, but unto GOD.

5 And † Ananias hearing these WORDS fell down, and gave up the ghost: and great Fear came on All THEM that HEARD these things.

6 And the YOUNG-MEN arose, wound him up, and carried *him* out, and buried *him*.

7 And it was about the Space of three Hours after, when his WIFE, not knowing WHAT was DONE, came in.

8 † And PETER answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the LAND for so much? And SHE said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then PETER † said unto her, How is it That ye have agreed together to tempt the SPIRIT of the Lord? behold, the FEET of THEM which have BURIED thy

HUSBAND *are* at the DOOR, and shall carry thee out.

10 Then fell she down straight-way at his FEET, and yielded up the ghost: and the YOUNG-MEN came in, and found her dead, and, carrying *her* forth, buried *her* by her HUSBAND.

11 And great Fear came upon All the CHURCH, and upon as MANY as HEARD these things.

§ XIV.

12 And by the HANDS of the APOSTLES were many Signs and Wonders wrought among the PEOPLE;—and they were all with one accord in Solomon's PORCH.

13 And of the REST durst no man join himself to them: but the PEOPLE magnified them.

14 And Believers were the more added to the LORD, Multitudes both of Men and Women.

15 Insomuch that they brought forth the SICK † into the STREETS, and laid *them* on † Beds and Couches, that at the least the SHADOW of Peter passing by might overshadow some of them.

16 There came also a MULTITUDE *out* of the CITIES round about unto Jerusalem, bringing Sick-folks, and them which were vexed with unclean Spirits: and they were healed every one.

17 Then the HIGH-PRIEST rose up, and All THEY that were with him,—which is the SECT of the SADDUCEES,—and were filled with Indignation,

18 And laid [their] HANDS on the APOSTLES, and put them in the common Prison.

19 But the Angel of the Lord

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—4. How is it That thou hast conceived.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—2. the WIFE.
15. even into.

5. ANANIAS.

8. Peter.

9. said.

See 18.

by NIGHT opened the PRISON DOORS, and brought them forth, and said,

20 Go, stand and speak in the TEMPLE to the PEOPLE All the WORDS of this LIFE.

21 And when they heard *that*, they entered into the TEMPLE early in the MORNING, and taught.

§ XV.

But the HIGH-PRIEST came, and THEY that were with him, and called the COUNCIL together, and All the SENATE of the CHILDREN of Israel, and sent to the PRISON to have them brought.

22 But when the OFFICERS came, and found them not in the PRISON, they returned, and told,

23 Saying, The PRISON [truly] found we shut with All Safety, and the KEEPERS standing [without] † before the DOORS: but when we had opened, we found No man within.

24 Now when [the *high* PRIEST and] the CAPTAIN of the TEMPLE and the CHIEF-PRIESTS heard these THINGS, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one and told them, saying, Behold, the MEN whom ye put in PRISON are standing in the TEMPLE, and teaching the PEOPLE.

26 Then went the CAPTAIN with the OFFICERS, and brought them without Violence: for they feared the PEOPLE, lest they should have been stoned.

27 And when they had brought them, they set *them* before the

COUNCIL: and the HIGH-PRIEST asked them,

28 Saying, † Did not we straitly command you that ye should not teach in this NAME? and, behold, ye have filled JERUSALEM with your DOCTRINE, and intend to bring this MAN'S BLOOD upon us.

29 Then PETER and the *other* APOSTLES answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than Men.

30 The GOD of our FATHERS raised up † Jesus, whom *ye* slew and hanged on a Tree.

31 *Whom* hath GOD exalted with his RIGHT-HAND *to be* a Prince and a Saviour, for † to give Repentance to ISRAEL, and Forgiveness of Sins.

32 And † *we* are His Witnesses of these THINGS; and *so is* also the HOLY GHOST, whom GOD hath given to THEM that OBEY him.

33 * When they heard *that*, THEY were cut *to the heart*, and took counsel to slay them.

§ XVI.

34 Then stood there up one in the COUNCIL, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a Doctor of the Law, had in reputation among All the PEOPLE, and commanded to put the † APOSTLES forth a little space;

35 And said unto them, Ye Men of Israel, take heed to yourselves what ye intend to do as touching these MEN.

36 For before These DAYS rose up Theudas, boasting himself to

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—33. And THEY, when they heard that, were.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. at the DOORS. 28. We straitly commanded you that 30. JESUS. 31. to GIVE. 32. *we* are Witnesses in him of these THINGS; and *that* God hath given the HOLY GHOST to THEM that OBEY him. 34. MEN forth. See 23 (twice), 24.

be somebody; to whom a Number of Men, about four hundred, joined themselves: who was slain; and all, as many as obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought.

37 After this man rose up Judas of GALILEE in the DAYS of the TAXING, and drew away [much] People after him: ~~he~~ also perished; and all, *even* as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

38 And NOW I say unto you, Refrain from these MEN, and let them alone: For if this COUNSEL or this WORK be of Men, it will come to nought:

39 But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow † it; lest haply ye be found even to fight against God.

40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the APOSTLES, and beaten *them*, they commanded that they should not speak in the NAME of JESUS, and let them go.

41 And THEY departed from the Presence of the COUNCIL, rejoicing That they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his NAME.

42 And daily in the TEMPLE, and in every House, they ceased not to teach and preach † Jesus *CHRIST.

CHAPTER VI.

§ XVII.

1 And in those DAYS, when the number of the DISCIPLES was multiplied, there arose a Murmuring of the GRECIANS against the HEBREWS, Because their WIDOWS

were neglected in the DAILY MINISTRATION.

2 Then the TWELVE called the MULTITUDE of the DISCIPLES *unto them*, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the WORD of GOD, and serve Tables.

3 † Wherefore, Brethren, look ye out among you seven Men of honest report, full of † the holy Ghost and Wisdom, whom we may appoint over this BUSINESS.

4 * But ~~we~~ will give ourselves continually to PRAYER, and to the MINISTRY of the WORD.

5 And the SAYING pleased the Whole MULTITUDE: and they chose Stephen, a man full of Faith and of the holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a Proselyte of Antioch:

6 Whom they set before the APOSTLES: and when they had prayed, they laid *their* HANDS on them.

7 And the WORD of GOD increased; and the NUMBER of the DISCIPLES multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a Great Company of the PRIESTS were obedient to the FAITH.

8 And Stephen, full of † Faith and Power, did great Wonders and Miracles among the PEOPLE.

§ XVIII.

9 Then there arose CERTAIN of *the SYNAGOGUE, which is CALLED *the synagogue* of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of THEM of Cilicia and of Asia, disputing with STEPHEN.

10 And they were not able to

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—42. the CHRIST. 4. and ~~we~~ will. 9. THAT SYNAGOGUE which.
 † VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—39. them. 42. the CHRIST Jesus. 3. But, Brethren, we will look out among you. 3. the Spirit and. 8. Grace and Power. See 37.

resist the WISDOM and the SPIRIT by which he spake.

11 Then they suborned Men, which said, We have heard him speak blasphemous Words against Moses, and *against* GOD.

12 And they stirred up the PEOPLE, and the ELDERS, and the SCRIBES, and came upon *him*, and caught him, and brought *him* to the COUNCIL,

13 And set up false Witnesses, which said, This MAN ceaseth not to speak [blasphemous] Words against this HOLY PLACE, and the LAW:

14 For we have heard him say, That this Jesus of NAZARETH shall destroy this PLACE, and shall change the CUSTOMS which Moses delivered us.

15 And ALL that SAT in the COUNCIL, looking steadfastly on him, saw his FACE as it had been the Face of an Angel.

CHAPTER VII.

1 Then said the HIGH-PRIEST, Are these things so?

2 And HE said, Men, Brethren, and Fathers, hearken; The GOD of GLORY appeared unto our FATHER Abraham, when he was in MESOPOTAMIA, before he dwelt in Charran,

3 And said unto him, "Get thee out of thy COUNTRY, and from thy KINDRED, and come into the † Land which I shall shew thee." ‡

4 Then came he out of the Land of the Chaldæans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, when

his FATHER was DEAD, he removed him into this LAND, wherein *ye* now dwell.

5 And he gave him none Inheritance in it, no, not *so much as* to set his Foot on: yet he promised that he would give it to him for a Possession, and to his SEED after him, when *as yet* he had no Child.

6 And GOD spake on this wise, "That his SEED should sojourn in a strange Land; and that they should bring them into bondage, and entreat *them* evil four hundred Years.

7 "And the NATION to whom they shall be in bondage will † judge, said GOD: and after that shall they come forth, and serve me in this PLACE." ‡

8 And he gave him the Covenant of Circumcision: and so *Abraham* begat ISAAC, and circumcised him the EIGHTH DAY; and ISAAC *begat* JACOB; and JACOB *begat* the TWELVE Patriarchs.

9 And the PATRIARCHS, moved with envy, sold JOSEPH into Egypt: but GOD was with him,

10 And delivered him out of All his AFFLICTIONS, and gave him Favour and Wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh King of Egypt; and he made him Governor over Egypt and All his HOUSE.

§ XIX.

11 Now there came a Dearth over All the LAND of Egypt and Chanaan, and great Affliction: and our FATHERS found no Sustainance.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. LAND which. See 13.

‡ 3. Gen. xii. 1. † 6. Gen. xv. 13.

12 But when Jacob heard that there was †Corn in Egypt, he sent out our FATHERS first.

13 And at the SECOND *time* Joseph was made known to his BRETHREN; and †JOSEPH'S KINDRED was made known unto PHARAOH.

14 Then sent Joseph, and called his FATHER Jacob to *him*, and All his KINDRED, threescore and fifteen Souls.

15 So Jacob went down [into Egypt], and died, he, and our FATHERS,

16 And were carried over into Sychem, and laid in the SEPULCHRE that Abraham bought for a Sum of Money of the SONS of Emmor †*the father* of SYCHEM.

17 But when the TIME of the PROMISE drew nigh, which GOD had †sworn to ABRAHAM, the PEOPLE grew and multiplied in Egypt,

18 Till another King † arose, which knew not JOSEPH.

19 The same dealt subtilly with our KINDRED, and evil entreated † our FATHERS, so that they CAST-OUT their YOUNG-CHILDREN, to the end they might not LIVE.

20 In Which Time Moses was born, and was EXCEEDING fair, and nourished up in his FATHER'S HOUSE three Months:

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaoh's DAUGHTER took him up, and nourished him for Her own Son.

22 And Moses was learned in All the Wisdom of the Egyptians,

and was mighty in Words and in Deeds.

23 And when he was full forty-years old, it came into his HEART to visit his BRETHREN the †CHILDREN of Israel.

24 And seeing one of *them* suffer wrong, he defended *him*, and avenged HIM that was OPPRESSED, and smote the EGYPTIAN:

25 For he supposed his BRETHREN would have understood How-that GOD by his Hand would deliver them: but THEY understood not.

26 And the NEXT Day he shewed himself unto them as they strove, and would have set them at one again, saying, "Sirs, †*ye* are Brethren; why do ye wrong one to another?" †

27 But HE that did his NEIGHBOUR WRONG thrust him away, saying, "Who made Thee a Ruler and a Judge over us?"

28 "Wilt *thou* kill me, as thou diddest the EGYPTIAN yesterday?" †

29 Then fled Moses at this SAYING, and was a Stranger in the Land of Madian, where he begat two Sons.

30 And when forty Years were expired, there appeared to him in the WILDERNESS of MOUNT Sina an Angel [of the Lord] in a Flame of Fire in a Bush.

31 When MOSES saw *it*, he wondered at the SIGHT: and as he drew near to behold *it*, the Voice of the Lord came [unto him].

32 *Saying*, "I am the GOD of

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—12. Provision for Egypt. 13. Joseph's KINDRED. 16. in SYCHEM. 17. avowed to ABRAHAM. 18. rose up in Egypt, who knew. 19. the FATHERS. 23. Children. 26. ye are. See 15, 30, 31.

‡ 26. Exod. ii. 13. † 28. Exod. ii. 14.

thy FATHERS, the GOD of Abraham, and [the GOD] of Isaac, and [the GOD] of Jacob." † Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold.

33 Then said the LORD to him, "Put off thy SHOES from †thy FEET: for the PLACE where thou standest is holy Ground." †

34 "I have seen, I have seen the AFFLICTION of *my PEOPLE which is in Egypt, and I have heard their GROANING, and am come down to deliver them. And now come, I will send thee into Egypt." †

§ XX.

35 This MOSES whom they refused, saying, Who made Thee a Ruler and a Judge? the Same did GOD send to be a Ruler and a Deliverer †by the Hand of *the Angel which appeared to him in the BUSH.

36 **He** brought them out, after that he had shewed Wonders and Signs in †the Land of Egypt, and in the Red Sea, and in the WILDERNESS forty Years.

37 This is THAT MOSES, which SAID unto the CHILDREN of Israel, "A Prophet shall [the Lord] your GOD raise up unto you of your BRETHREN, like unto me; [Him shall ye hear]." †

38 This is HE that WAS in the CHURCH in the WILDERNESS with *the ANGEL which SPAKE to him in the MOUNT Sina, and *with* our FATHERS: who received the lively Oracles to give unto us:

39 To whom our FATHERS would not obey, but thrust *him* from them, and in their HEARTS turned back again into Egypt,

40 Saying unto AARON, "Make us Gods to go before us: for *as for* this MOSES, which brought us out of the Land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him." †

41 And they made a calf in those DAYS, and offered Sacrifice unto the IDOL, and rejoiced in the WORKS of their own HANDS.

42 Then GOD turned, and gave them up to worship the HOST of HEAVEN; as it is written in the Book of the PROPHETS, "O ye House of Israel, have ye offered to me Slain-beasts and Sacrifices *by the space of* forty Years in the WILDERNESS?"

43 "Yea, ye took up the TABERNACLE of MOLOCH, and the STAR of †your GOD Remphan, FIGURES which ye made to worship them: and I will carry you away beyond Babylon." †

44 Our FATHERS had the TABERNACLE of WITNESS in the WILDERNESS, as *HE had appointed, SPEAKING unto MOSES, that he should make it according to the FASHION that he had seen.

45 Which also our FATHERS that came after brought in with Jesus into the POSSESSION of the GENTILES, whom GOD drave out before the Face of our FATHERS, unto the DAYS of David;

46 Who found Favour before

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—34. THAT PEOPLE of mine which is. 35. THAT Angel which. 38. THAT ANGEL which. 44. HE had appointed who SPAKE unto MOSES.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—33. Thy FEET. 35. with the Hand. 36. EGYPT, and in. 43. the GOD. 46. HOUSE of Jacob. See 32 (twice), 37 (twice).

† 32. Exod. iii. 6. † 33. Exod. iii. 5. † 34. Exod. iii. 7. † 37. Deut. xviii. 15.

† 40. Exod. xxxii. 1. † 43. Amos v. 25.

GOD, and desired to find a Tabernacle for the † GOD of Jacob.

47 But Solomon built him an House.

48 Howbeit the MOST-HIGH dwelleth not in † Temples made with hands; as saith the PROPHET,

49 "HEAVEN *is* My Throne, and EARTH *is* my FOOTSTOOL: What House will ye build me? saith the Lord: or what *is* the PLACE of my REST?"

50 "Hath not my HAND made all these things?" ‡

51 Ye stiffnecked and uncircumcised in HEART and EARS, ¶ do always resist the HOLY GHOST: as your FATHERS *did*, so do ¶.

52 Which of the PROPHETS have not your FATHERS persecuted? and they have slain THEM which SHEWED-BEFORE of the COMING of the JUST-ONE; of whom ¶ have been now the Betrayers and Murderers:

53 Who have received the LAW by the Disposition of Angels, and have not kept *it*.

54 When they heard these things, they were cut to the HEART, and they gnashed on him with *their* TEETH.

55 But he, being full of the holy Ghost, looked up steadfastly into HEAVEN, and saw the Glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right *hand* of GOD,

56 And said, Behold, I see the HEAVENS opened, and the SON of MAN standing on the right *hand* of GOD.

57 Then they cried out with a

loud Voice, and stopped their EARS, and ran upon him with one accord,

58 And cast *him* out of the CITY, and stoned *him*: and the WITNESSES laid down their CLOTHES at a Young-man's FEET, whose name was Saul.

59 And they stoned STEPHEN, calling upon *God*, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my SPIRIT.

60 And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud Voice, Lord, lay not † this SIN to their charge. And when he had said This, he fell asleep.

CHAPTER VIII.

§ XXI.

1 And Saul was consenting unto his DEATH. And at That TIME there was a great Persecution against *the CHURCH which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the REGIONS of JUDÆA and Samaria, except the APOSTLES.

2 And devout Men carried STEPHEN *to his burial*, and made great Lamentation over him.

3 As for Saul, he made havock of the CHURCH, entering into every HOUSE, and haling Men and Women committed *them* to Prison.

4 Therefore THEY that were SCATTERED-ABROAD went every where preaching the WORD.

5 Then Philip went down to the City of SAMARIA, and preached CHRIST unto them.

6 And the PEOPLE with one accord gave heed unto *those

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THAT CHURCH which. 6. the THINGS which were SPOKEN by PHILIP.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—46. HOUSE of. 48. things made with. 60. This SIN.

‡ 50. Isaiah lxvi. 1.

THINGS which PHILIP SPAKE, HEARING and seeing the MIRACLES which he did.

7 For †unclean Spirits, crying with Loud Voice, came out of MANY that were POSSESSED *with them*: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed.

8 And there was †great Joy in that CITY.

§ XXII.

9 But there was a certain Man, called Simon, which beforetime in the same CITY used sorcery, and bewitched the PEOPLE of SAMARIA, giving out that himself was some great one:

10 To whom they all gave heed, from the least to the greatest, saying, †This man is the GREAT POWER of GOD.

11 And to him they had regard, because that of Long Time he had BEWITCHED them with SORCERIES.

12 But when they believed PHILIP preaching [the THINGS] concerning the KINGDOM of GOD, and the NAME of †JESUS Christ, they were baptized, both Men and Women.

13 Then SIMON himself believed also: and when he was baptized, he continued with PHILIP, and wondered, beholding the †Miracles and Signs which were done.

14 Now when the APOSTLES which were at Jerusalem heard That SAMARIA had received the WORD of GOD, they sent unto them PETER and John:

15 Who, when they were come

down, prayed for them, that they might receive the holy Ghost.

16 For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the NAME of the LORD Jesus.

17 Then laid they *their* HANDS on them, and they received the holy Ghost.

§ XXIII.

18 And when SIMON saw That through LAYING-ON of the APOSTLE'S HANDS the †HOLY GHOST was given, he offered them Money,

19 Saying, Give me also this POWER, that on whomsoever I lay HANDS, he may receive the holy Ghost.

20 But Peter said unto him, Thy MONEY perish with thee, Because thou hast thought that the GIFT of GOD may be purchased with Money.

21 Thou hast neither Part nor Lot in this MATTER: for thy HEART is not right in the sight of GOD.

22 Repent therefore of this thy WICKEDNESS, and pray †GOD, if perhaps the THOUGHT of thine HEART may be forgiven thee.

23 For I perceive that thou art in the Gall of Bitterness, and *in* the Bond of Iniquity.

24 Then answered SIMON, and said, Pray *ye* to the LORD for me, that none of these things which ye have spoken come upon me.

25 And THEY, when they had testified and preached the WORD of the LORD, returned to Jerusalem, and preached the gospel in

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—7. many of THOSE who HAD unclean Spirits which cried with loud Voice were dispossessed: and many who were taken with. 8. Much Joy. 10. This is THAT which is CALLED the GREAT POWER of GOD. 12. Jesus Christ. 13. SIGNS and great Miracles. 18. SPIRIT was given. 22. the LORD, if. See 12.

Many Villages of the SAMARITANS.

§ XXIV.

26 And the Angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise, and go toward the South unto *the WAY that GOETH-DOWN from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert.

27 And he arose and went: and, behold, a Man of Ethiopia, an Eunuch of great authority under Candace † QUEEN of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of All her TREASURE, and had come to Jerusalem for to worship,

28 Was returning, and sitting in his CHARIOT read Esaias the PROPHET.

29 Then the SPIRIT said unto PHILIP, Go near, and join thyself to this CHARIOT.

30 And PHILIP ran thither to him, and heard him read † the PROPHET Esaias, and said, Understandest thou what thou readest?

31 And HE said, How can I, except some man should guide me? And he desired PHILIP that he would come up and sit with him.

32 The PLACE of the SCRIPTURE which he read was this, "He was led as a Sheep to the Slaughter; and like a Lamb dumb before his SHEARER, so opened he not his MOUTH:

33 "In † his HUMILIATION his JUDGMENT was taken away: and who shall declare his GENERATION? For his LIFE is taken from the EARTH." ‡

34 And the EUNUCH answered

PHILIP, and said, I pray thee, of whom speaketh the PROPHET this? of himself, or of some other man?

35 Then PHILIP opened his MOUTH, and began at the same SCRIPTURE, and preached unto him JESUS.

36 And as they went on *their* WAY, they came unto a Certain Water: and the EUNUCH said, See, *here is* Water; what doth hinder me to be baptized?

37 [And PHILIP said, If thou believest with All *thine* HEART, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that JESUS Christ is the SON of GOD.]

38 And he commanded the CHARIOT to stand still: and they went down both into the WATER, both PHILIP and the EUNUCH; and he baptized him.

39 And when they were come up out of the WATER, the Spirit of the Lord caught away PHILIP, that the EUNUCH saw him no more: and he went on † his WAY rejoicing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing through he preached in all the CITIES, till he CAME to Cæsarea.

CHAPTER IX.

§ XXV.

1 And SAUL, yet breathing out Threatenings and Slaughter against the DISCIPLES of the LORD, went unto the HIGH-PRIEST,

2 And desired of him Letters to Damascus to the SYNAGOGUES, that if he found Any of this WAY,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—26. THAT WAY which GOETH-DOWN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—27. QUEEN. HUMILIATION. 39. His WAY. See 37.

‡ 33. Isaiah liii. 7.

30. Esaias the PROPHET, and said. 33. the

whether they were Men or Women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem.

3 And as he JOURNEYED, he came near DAMASCUS: and suddenly there shined round about him a Light from HEAVEN:

4 And he fell to the EARTH, and heard a Voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou Me?

5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And †the LORD said, **Ʒ** am Jesus whom **thou** persecutest: [*it is hard for thee to kick against the Pricks.*]

6 And he trembling and astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the LORD *said* unto him], †Arise, and go into the CITY, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.

7 And †the MEN which JOURNEYED with him stood speechless, hearing a VOICE but seeing No man.

8 And SAUL arose from the EARTH; and when his EYES were opened, he saw No man: but they led him by the hand, and brought *him* into Damascus.

9 And he was three Days without sight, and neither did eat nor drink.

§ XXVI.

10 And there was a Certain Disciple at Damascus, named Ananias; and to him said the LORD in a Vision, Ananias. And HE said, Behold, **Ʒ** *am here*, Lord.

11 And the LORD *said* unto him, Arise, and go into *the STREET

which is CALLED Straight, and enquire in the House of Judas for *one* called Saul, of Tarsus: for, behold, he prayeth,

12 And hath seen in a Vision a Man named Ananias coming in, and putting †*his* Hand on him, that he might receive his sight.

13 Then †ANANIAS answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this MAN, how much Evil he hath done to thy SAINTS at Jerusalem:

14 And here he hath Authority from the CHIEF-PRIESTS to bind ALL that CALL on thy NAME.

15 But the LORD said unto him, Go thy way: For **he** is a chosen Vessel unto me, to BEAR my NAME before the Gentiles, †and Kings, and the Children of Israel:

16 For **Ʒ** will show him how great things he must suffer for my NAME'S sake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entered into the HOUSE; and putting his HANDS on him said, Brother Saul, the LORD, *even* *Jesus, that APPEARED unto thee in the WAY as thou camest, hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediately there fell from †his EYES as it had been Scales: and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

19 And when he had received Meat, he was strengthened: Then †was SAUL certain Days with the DISCIPLES which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway he preached

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—7. THOSE MEN which. Jesus who APPEARED.

11. THAT STREET which. 17. THAT

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—5. HE *said*.
13. Ananias. 15. and also Kings.
See 5, 6.

6. But arise. 12. HANDS on him.
18. His EYES. 19. was he certain.

† CHRIST in the SYNAGOGUES, That *he* is the SON of GOD.

21 But ALL that HEARD *him* were amazed, and said; Is not this HE that DESTROYED THEM which CALLED on this NAME in Jerusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound unto the CHIEF-PRIESTS?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and † confounded * the JEWS which DWELT at Damascus, proving That this is *very* CHRIST.

23 And after that many Days were fulfilled, the JEWS took counsel to kill him:

24 But their LAYING-AWAIT was known of SAUL. And † they watched the GATES Day and Night to kill Him.

25 Then the DISCIPLES took him by Night, and let *him* down by the WALL in a Basket.

26 And when † SAUL was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to join himself to the DISCIPLES: but they were all afraid of him, and believed not That he was a Disciple.

27 But Barnabas took him, and brought *him* to the APOSTLES, and declared unto them how he had seen the LORD in the WAY, and That he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus in the NAME of JESUS.

28 And he was with them coming in and going out at Jerusalem.

29 And he spake boldly in the NAME of the LORD Jesus, and disputed against the GRECIANS: but THEY went about to slay him.

30 Which when the BRETHREN

knew, they brought him down to Cæsarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus.

31 Then had † the CHURCHES Rest throughout All JUDÆA and Galilee and Samaria, and † were edified; and walking in the FEAR of the LORD, and in the COMFORT of the HOLY Ghost, † were multiplied.

§ XXVII.

32 And it came to pass, as Peter passed throughout all *quarters*, he came down also to * the SAINTS which DWELT at Lydda.

33 And there he found a certain Man named Æneas, which had kept his Bed eight Years, and was sick of the palsy.

34 And PETER said unto him, Æneas, Jesus CHRIST maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately.

35 And ALL that DWELT at Lydda and SARON saw him, and turned to the LORD.

36 Now there was at Joppa a Certain Disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: this woman was full of † Good Works and Almsdeeds which she did.

37 And it came to pass in those DAYS, that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid [*her*] in an Upper-chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to JOPPA, and the DISCIPLES had heard That Peter was there, they sent unto him Two Men, desiring † *him* that he would not delay to come to them.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—22. THOSE JEWS which. 32. THOSE SAINTS which.

† VATTMAN MANUSCRIPT—20. JESUS. 22. confounded THOSE JEWS which. 24. they also watched the GATES. 26. he was come. 31. the CHURCH Rest. 31. was edified. 31. was multiplied. 36. good Works. 38. that thou wouldst not delay to come over to us. Then Peter. See 37.

39 Then Peter arose and went with them. When he was come, they brought him into the UPPER-CHAMBER: and All the WIDOWS stood by him weeping, and shewing the Coats and Garments which DORCAS made, while she was with them.

40 But PETER put them all forth, and kneeled down, and prayed; and turning *him* to the BODY said, Tabitha, arise. And SHE opened her EYES: and when she saw PETER, she sat up.

41 And he gave her *his* Hand, and lifted her up, and when he had called the SAINTS and WIDOWS, presented her alive.

42 And it was known throughout All †JOPPA; and many believed in the LORD.

43 And it came to pass, that he tarried many Days in Joppa with One Simon a Tanner.

CHAPTER X.

§ XXVIII.

1 There was a certain Man in Caesarea called Cornelius, a Centurion of *the Band CALLED the Italian *band*,

2 A devout *man*, and one that feared GOD with All his HOUSE, which gave much Alms to the PEOPLE, and prayed to GOD always.

3 He saw in a Vision evidently †about the ninth Hour of the DAY an Angel of GOD coming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius.

4 And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is

it, Lord? And he said unto him, Thy PRAYERS and thine ALMS are come up for a Memorial before GOD.

5 And now send Men to Joppa, and call for †*one* Simon, whose surname is Peter:

6 ~~He~~ lodgeth with One Simon a Tanner, whose House is by the Sea-side: [~~he~~ shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do].

7 And when *the ANGEL which SPAKE unto † CORNELIUS was departed, he called two of † his HOUSEHOLD-SERVANTS, and a devout Soldier of THEM that WAITED on him continually;

8 And when he had declared all *these* things unto them, he sent them to JOPPA.

9 On the MORROW, as ~~they~~ went on their journey, and drew nigh unto the CITY, Peter went up upon the HOUSETOP to pray, about the sixth Hour:

10 And he became very hungry, and would have eaten: but while † ~~they~~ made ready, he fell into a Trance,

11 And saw HEAVEN opened, and a certain Vessel descending [unto him], as it had been a great Sheet †knit at the Four Corners, and let down to the EARTH:

12 Wherein were All manner of FOURFOOTED-BEASTS of the EARTH, and WILD-BEASTS, and CREEPING-THINGS, and FOWLS of the AIR.

13 And there came a Voice to him, Rise, Peter; kill, and eat.

14 But PETER said, Not so, Lord; For I have never eaten any

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THAT Band which is CALLED. 7. THAT ANGEL which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—42. Joppa. 3. as if about. 5. one Simon. 7. him was departed. 7. the HOUSEHOLD-SERVANTS. 10. they. 11. let down by the Four Corners to the EARTH. See 6, 11.

thing that is common † or unclean.

15 And the Voice *spake* unto him again the second time, What GOD hath cleansed, *that* call not *thou* common.

16 This was done thrice: and the VESSEL was received up † again into HEAVEN.

17 Now while PETER doubted in himself what this VISION which he had seen should mean, behold, * the MEN which were SENT † from Cornelius had made enquiry for † Simon's HOUSE, and stood before the GATE,

18 And called, and asked whether * Simon, which was SUR-NAMED Peter, were lodged there.

§ XXIX.

19 While PETER † thought on the VISION, the SPIRIT said [unto him], Behold, † three Men seek thee.

20 Arise therefore, and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing: † for *Æ* have sent them.

21 Then Peter went down † to * the MEN which were SENT unto him from CORNELIUS; and said, Behold, *Æ* am he whom ye seek: what *is* the † CAUSE wherefore ye are come?

22 And THEY said, Cornelius the centurion, a just Man, and one that feareth GOD, and of good report among All the NATION of the JEWS, was warned from God by an holy Angel to send for thee

into his HOUSE, and to hear Words of thee.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged *them*. And on the MORROW † PETER went away with them, and certain * BRETHREN from † JOPPA accompanied him.

24 And the MORROW-AFTER they entered into CÆSAREA. And CORNELIUS waited for them, and had called together his KINSMEN and NEAR Friends.

25 And as PETER was † coming in, CORNELIUS met him, and fell down at his FEET, and worshipped *him*.

26 But PETER took him up, saying, Stand up; *Æ* myself also am a Man.

27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said unto them, *Ye* know how that it is an unlawful thing for a Man that is a Jew to keep company, or come unto one of another Nation; but GOD hath shewed Me that I should not call any man common or unclean.

29 Therefore came I *unto you* without gainsaying, as soon as I was sent for: I ask therefore for what Intent ye have sent for me?

§ XXX.

30 And CORNELIUS said, Four Days ago † I was fasting until This HOUR; and at the NINTH Hour I prayed in my HOUSE, and, behold, a Man stood before me in bright Clothing,

31 And said, Cornelius, thy

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. THOSE MEN which. 18. THAT Simon which. 21. THOSE MEN which. 23. of THOSE BRETHREN which were from.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. and unclean. 16. straightway into HEAVEN. 17. by Cornelius. 17. SIMON'S HOUSE. 19. was reflecting on the VISION. 19. two Men. 20. For *Æ* have. 21. to the MEN, and said. 21. Cause. 23. he arose and went away. 23. Joppa. 25. COMING-IN. 30. unto This Hour, I was at the NINTH *hour* praying in my HOUSE. See 19.

PRAYER is heard, and thine ALMS are had in remembrance in the sight of GOD.

32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither Simon, whose surname is Peter; *he* is lodged in the House of *one* Simon a Tanner by the Sea-side: [who, when he cometh, shall speak unto thee].

33 Immediately therefore I sent to thee; and *thou* hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are *we* all here present before GOD, to hear All THINGS that are COMMANDED thee of † GOD.

34 Then Peter opened *his* MOUTH, and said, Of a Truth I perceive That GOD is no Respecter-of-persons:

35 But in Every Nation HE that FEARETH him, and worketh Righteousness, is accepted with him.

36 † The WORD which *God* sent unto the CHILDREN of Israel, preaching Peace by Jesus Christ: — *he* is Lord of all:—

37 † *That* WORD, *I say*, *ye* know, which was PUBLISHED throughout All JUDEA, and began from GALILEE, after the BAPTISM which John preached;

† 38 How GOD anointed * Jesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost and with Power: who went about doing-good, and healing ALL that were OPPRESSED of the DEVIL; For GOD was with him.

39 And *we* are Witnesses of all things which he did both in the LAND of the JEWS, and in

Jerusalem; whom they † slew and hanged on a Tree:

40 *him* GOD raised up the THIRD Day, and shewed him openly;

41 Not to All the PEOPLE, but unto * Witnesses CHOSEN-BEFORE of GOD, *even* to us, who did eat and drink with him after he ROSE from the Dead.

42 And he commanded us to preach unto the PEOPLE, and to testify † That * it is HE which was ORDAINED of GOD *to be* the Judge of Quick and Dead.

43 To *him* give All the PROPHEETS witness, that through his NAME WHOSOEVER BELIEVETH in him shall receive Remission of Sins.

44 While PETER yet spake these WORDS, the HOLY GHOST fell on all THEM which HEARD the WORD.

45 And THEY of the Circumcision which BELIEVED were astonished, † as many as came with PETER, Because that on the GENTILES also was poured out the GIFT of the HOLY Ghost.

46 For they heard them speak with Tongues, and magnify GOD. Then answered PETER,

47 Can any man forbid WATER, that these should not be BAPTIZED, which have received the HOLY GHOST as † well as *we* ?

48 And he commanded * them to be baptized in the NAME of † the LORD. Then prayed they him to tarry certain Days.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—38. THAT Jesus who was of Nazareth. 41. THOSE Witnesses which were CHOSEN-BEFORE. 42. the same is HE which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—33. the LORD. Then Peter. 36. He sent the WORD unto the CHILDREN of Israel, preaching. 37. Ye know the WORD which was PUBLISHED. 39. also slew and. 42. That this is HE. 45. who came with. 47. also *we* ? 48. Jesus Christ (b). See 32.

CHAPTER XI.

§ XXXI.

1 And *the APOSTLES and BRETHREN that WERE in JUDÆA heard That the GENTILES had also received the WORD of GOD.

2 And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, THEY that were of the Circumcision contended with him,

3 Saying, †Thou wentest in to Men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them.

4 But †PETER rehearsed *the matter* from the beginning, and expounded *it* by order unto them, saying,

5 **ƒ** was in the City of Joppa praying: and in a Trance I saw a Vision, A certain Vessel descend, as it had been a great Sheet, let down from HEAVEN by Four Corners; and it came even to me:

6 Upon the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw FOURFOOTED-BEASTS of the EARTH, and WILD-BEASTS, and CREEPING-THINGS, and FOWLS of the AIR.

7 And †I heard a Voice saying unto me, Arise, Peter; slay and eat.

8 But I said, Not so, Lord: For nothing common or unclean hath at any time entered into my MOUTH.

9 But the Voice answered †me again from HEAVEN, What GOD hath cleansed, *that* call not **thou** common.

10 And this was done three times: and all were drawn up again into HEAVEN.

11 And, behold, immediately there were Three Men already come unto the HOUSE where I was, sent from Cæsarea unto me.

12 And the SPIRIT bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover these SIX Brethren accompanied me, and we entered into the MAN'S HOUSE:

13 And he shewed us how he had seen an ANGEL in his HOUSE, which stood and said [unto him], Send [Men] to Joppa, and call for *Simon, whose SURNAME is Peter;

14 Who shall tell thee Words, whereby **thou** and All thy HOUSE shall be saved.

15 And as I BEGAN to speak, the HOLY GHOST fell on them, as on us at the Beginning.

16 Then remembered I the WORD of the Lord, how that he said, John indeed baptized with Water; but **ye** shall be baptized with the holy Ghost.

17 Forasmuch then as GOD gave them the LIKE Gift as *he did* unto us who believed on the LORD Jesus Christ; what was **ƒ**, that I could withstand GOD?

18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified GOD, saying, Then hath GOD also to the GENTILES granted REPENTANCE unto Life.

19 Now THEY which were SCATTERED-ABROAD upon *the PERSECUTION that AROSE about Stephen travelled as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the WORD to none but unto the Jews only.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THOSE APOSTLES and. 13. THAT Simon. 19. THAT PERSECUTION which AROSE.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. That he went in to Men uncircumcised, and did eat with them. 4. Peter. 7. I also heard. 9. a second time from HEAVEN. See 13 (twice).

20 And some of them were Men of Cyprus and Cyrene, which, when they were come to Antioch, spake † unto the GRECIANS, preaching the LORD Jesus.

21 And the Hand of the Lord was with them: and † a Great Number believed, and turned unto the LORD.

22 Then TIDINGS of these things came unto the EARS of * the CHURCH which † was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, † that he should go as far as Antioch.

23 Who, when he came, and had seen the GRACE of GOD, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with PURPOSE of HEART they would † cleave unto the LORD.

24 For he was a good Man, and full of the holy Ghost and of Faith: and much People was added unto the LORD.

25 Then † departed BARNABAS to Tarsus, for to seek Saul:

26 And when he had found † him, he brought † him unto Antioch. And it came to pass, that a whole Year they assembled themselves with the CHURCH, and taught much People. And the DISCIPLES were called Christians first in Antioch.

§ XXXII.

27 And in These DAYS came Prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch.

28 And there stood up one of them named Agabus, and signified by the SPIRIT that there should

be great Dearth throughout All the WORLD: which came to pass in the days of Claudius [Cæsar].

29 Then the DISCIPLES, every man according to his ability, determined to send Relief unto the BRETHREN which DWELT in JUDEA:

30 Which also they did, and sent it to the ELDERS by the Hands of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAPTER XII.

§ XXXIII.

1 Now about That TIME Herod the KING stretched forth *his* HANDS to vex CERTAIN of the CHURCH.

2 And he killed James the BROTHER of John with the Sword.

3 And because he saw it pleased the JEWS, he proceeded further to take Peter also.—Then were the Days of UNLEAVENED-BREAD.—

4 And when he had apprehended him, he put *him* in Prison, and delivered *him* to Four Quarters of Soldiers to keep him; intending after EASTER to bring him forth to the PEOPLE.

5 PETER therefore was kept in PRISON: but Prayer was made without ceasing of the CHURCH [unto GOD] † for him.

6 And when HEROD would have brought him forth, the same NIGHT PETER was sleeping between Two Soldiers, bound with two Chains: and the Keepers before the DOOR kept the PRISON.

7 And, behold, the Angel of

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—22. THAT CHURCH which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—20. also unto. 22. was in Jerusalem. 23. continue in the LORD. 25. he departed to Tarsus. See 28, 5.

21. THAT Great Number which believed 22. unto Antioch, who. 23. continue in 26. *him*. 26. *him*. 5. concerning him.

the Lord came upon *him*, and a Light shined in the PRISON: and he smote PETER on the SIDE, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And His CHAINS fell off from *his* HANDS.

8 And the ANGEL said unto him, Gird thyself, and bind on thy SANDALS. And so he did. And he saith unto him, Cast thy GARMENT about thee, and follow me.

9 And he went out, and followed [him]; and wist not That IT was true which was DONE by the ANGEL; but thought he saw a Vision.

10 When they were past the First and the second Ward, they came unto *the IRON GATE that LEADETH unto the CITY; which opened to them of his own accord: and they went out, and passed on through one Street; and forthwith the ANGEL departed from him.

11 And when PETER was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety, That the Lord hath sent his ANGEL, and hath delivered me out of the Hand of Herod, and *from* All the EXPECTATION of the PEOPLE of the JEWS.

12 And when he had considered *the thing*, he came to the HOUSE of Mary the MOTHER of *John, whose SURNAME was MARK; where many were gathered together praying.

13 And as †PETER knocked at the DOOR of the GATE, a Damsel came to hearken, named Rhoda.

14 And when she knew PETER'S VOICE, she opened not the GATE

for GLADNESS, but ran in, and told how PETER stood before the GATE.

15 And THEY said unto her, Thou art mad. But SHE constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said THEY, It is his ANGEL.

16 But PETER continued knocking: and when they had opened *the door*, and saw him, they were astonished.

17 But he, beckoning unto them with the HAND to hold their peace, declared unto them how the LORD had brought Him out of the PRISON. And he said, Go shew these things unto James, and to the BRETHREN. And he departed, and went into Another Place.

§ XXXIV.

18 Now as soon as it was Day, there was no small Stir among the SOLDIERS, what was become of PETER.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the KEEPERS, and commanded that *they* should be put to death. And he went down from JUDÆA to CÆSAREA, and *there* abode.

20 And †HEROD was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and, having made *Blastus the KING'S CHAMBERLAIN their friend, desired Peace; because Their COUNTRY was NOURISHED by the KING'S *country*.

21 And upon a Set Day †HEROD, arrayed in royal Apparel,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—10. THAT IRON GATE that. 12. THAT John who was SURNAMED MARK. 20. THAT Blastus who was.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—13. he knocked. 20. he was highly. 21. Herod. See 9.

sat upon his THRONE, and made an oration unto them.

22 And the PEOPLE gave a shout, *saying*, *It is the Voice of a God, and not of a Man.*

23 And immediately the Angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not GOD the GLORY: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost.

24 But the WORD of † GOD grew and multiplied.

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled *their* MINISTRY, and took with them * John, whose SURNAME was MARK.

CHAPTER XIII.

§ XXXV.

1 Now there were in the CHURCH that WAS at Antioch [Certain] Prophets and Teachers; as BARNABAS, and * Simeon that was CALLED NIGER, and Lucius of CYRENE, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the TETRARCH, and Saul.

2 As they ministered to the LORD, and fasted, the HOLY GHOST said, Separate me BARNABAS and SAUL for the WORK whereunto I have called them.

3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid *their* HANDS on them, they sent *them* away.

4 So *they*, being sent forth by the † HOLY GHOST, departed unto † SELEUCIA; and from thence they sailed to † CYPRUS.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the WORD of

GOD in the SYNAGOGUES of the JEWS: and they had also John to *their* Minister.

6 And when they had gone through † the ISLE unto Paphos, they found † a Certain Sorcerer, a False-prophet, a Jew, whose Name was Bar-Jesus:

7 Which was with the DEPUTY-OF-THE-COUNTRY, Sergius Paulus, a prudent Man; who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to hear the WORD of GOD.

8 But Elymas—the SORCERER, for so is his NAME by interpretation—withstood them, seeking to turn away the DEPUTY from the FAITH.

9 Then * Saul, who also *is called* Paul, filled with the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And said, O full of All Subtilty and All Mischief, *thou* Child of the Devil, *thou* Enemy of All Righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the RIGHT WAYS of the Lord?

11 And now, behold, the Hand of the LORD *is* upon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing the SUN for a Season. And immediately there fell [on him] a Mist and a Darkness; and he went about seeking some to lead him by the hand.

12 Then the DEPUTY, when he saw WHAT was DONE, believed, being astonished at the DOCTRINE of the LORD.

§ XXXVI.

13 Now when † PAUL and his COMPANY loosed from PAPHOS,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—25. THAT John who was SURNAMED MARK. 1. THAT Simeon who was CALLED. 9. THAT Saul who.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—24. the LORD grew. 4. HOLY Ghost. 4. Seleucia. 4. Cyprus. 6. the Whole ISLE unto Paphos. 6. a certain Man, a Sorcerer, a False-prophet. 13. Paul. See 1, 11.

they came to Perga in PAMPHYLIA: and John departing from them returned to Jerusalem.

14 But when they departed from PERGA, they came to Antioch in PISIDIA, and went into the SYNAGOGUE on *the SABBATH DAY, and sat down.

15 And after the READING of the LAW and the PROPHEETS the RULERS-OF-THE-SYNAGOGUE sent unto them, saying, *Ye Men and Brethren*, if † ye have any Word of Exhortation for the PEOPLE, say on.

16 Then Paul stood up, and beckoning with *his HAND* said, Men of Israel, and YE that FEAR GOD, give audience.

17 The GOD of †this PEOPLE of Israel chose our FATHERS, and exalted the PEOPLE when they DWELT-AS-STRANGERS in the Land of Egypt, and with an high Arm brought he them out of it.

18 And about the Time of Forty Years suffered he their manners in the WILDERNESS.

19 [And] when he had destroyed seven Nations in the Land of Chanaan, he †divided their LAND to them by Lot.

20 And after that he gave *unto them* Judges about the space of four hundred and fifty Years, until Samuel the PROPHET.

21 And afterwards they desired a King: and GOD gave unto them SAUL the Son of Cis, a Man of

the Tribe of Benjamin, by the space of forty Years.

22 And when he had removed him, he raised up unto them DAVID to be their King; to whom also he gave testimony, and said, "I have found *David the *son* of JESSE, [a Man] after mine own HEART, which shall fulfil All my WILL." †

23 Of This man's SEED hath GOD according to *his* Promise †raised unto ISRAEL a Saviour, Jesus:

24 When John had first preached before his COMING the Baptism of Repentance to All the PEOPLE of Israel.

25 And as JOHN fulfilled his COURSE, he said, † Whom think ye that I am? ¶ am not *he*. But, behold, there cometh one after me, Whose SHOES of *his* FEET I am not worthy to loose.

§ XXXVII.

26 Men *and* Brethren, Children of the Stock of Abraham, † and WHOSEVER among you FEAR-ETH GOD, to You is the WORD of this SALVATION †sent.

27 For THEY that DWELL at Jerusalem, and their RULERS, because they knew *him* not, nor yet *the VOICES of the PROPHEETS which are READ Every Sabbath-day, they have fulfilled *them* in condemning *him*.

28 And though they found no Cause of Death *in him*, yet desired they Pilate that he should be slain.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14. the DAY of the SABBATHS. 22. THAT David who is the *son*. 27. THOSE Voices.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—15. any one among you have a Word of. 17. the PEOPLE of ISRAEL chose. 19. he gave their LAND for an inheritance, about four hundred and fifty Years. And after that he gave them Judges until Samuel the Prophet. 23. brought unto ISRAEL. 25. What think ye that. 26. THEY who among you FEAR GOD, to You. 26. sent forth. For. See 19, 22.

‡ 22. Psalm lxxxix. 20.

29 And when they had fulfilled ALL that was WRITTEN of him, they took *him* down from the TREE, and laid *him* in a Sepulchre.

30 But GOD raised him from the Dead:

31 And he was seen many Days of THEM which CAME-UP with him from GALILEE to Jerusalem, who are his Witnesses unto the PEOPLE.

32 And *we* declare unto You glad tidings, *how* That the PROMISE which was made unto the FATHERS,

33 GOD hath fulfilled the same unto †us their CHILDREN, in that he hath raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the SECOND PSALM, “*Thou* art my Son, This-day have I begotten thee.” †

34 And as concerning That he raised him up from the Dead, *now* no more to return to Corruption, he said on this wise, “I will give you the SURE MERCIES of David.” †

35 Wherefore he saith also in another *psalm*, “Thou shalt not suffer thine HOLY-ONE to see Corruption.” †

36 For David, after he had served his Own Generation by the WILL of GOD, fell on sleep, and was laid unto his FATHERS, and saw Corruption:

37 But he, whom GOD raised again, saw no Corruption.

38 Be it known unto you therefore, Men *and* Brethren, That through this man is preached unto you the Forgiveness of Sins:

39 And by *him* ALL that BELIEVE are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the LAW of Moses.

40 Beware therefore, lest THAT come upon you, which is SPOKEN-OF in the PROPHETS;

41 “Behold, ye DESPISERS, and wonder, and perish: For I work a Work in your DAYS, a Work which ye shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you.” †

42 And when †the JEWS were gone out of the SYNAGOGUE, the GENTILES besought that these WORDS might be preached to them the NEXT Sabbath.

43 Now when the CONGREGATION was broken up, many of the JEWS and RELIGIOUS proselytes followed PAUL and BARNABAS: who, speaking to them, persuaded them to continue in the GRACE of GOD.

44 And the NEXT Sabbath-day came almost the Whole CITY together to hear the WORD of GOD.

45 But when the JEWS saw the MULTITUDES, they were filled with Envy, and spake against *those* THINGS which were SPOKEN by †PAUL, contradicting [and blaspheming].

46 Then PAUL and BARNABAS waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the WORD of GOD should first have been spoken to You: [but] seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of EVERLASTING Life, lo, we turn to the GENTILES.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—33. our CHILDREN, in that. 42. they were gone out, it was thought proper that these words should be preached. 45. Paul, contradicting. And Paul and. See 45, 46.

‡ 33. Psal. ii. 7. ‡ 34. Isa. lv. 3. ‡ 35. Psal. xvi. 10. ‡ 41 Habakk. i. 5.

47 For so hath the LORD commanded us, *saying*, "I have set thee to be a Light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest BE for Salvation unto the Ends of the EARTH." †

48 And when the GENTILES heard this, they were glad, and glorified the WORD of †the LORD: and as many as were ordained to eternal Life believed.

49 And the WORD of the LORD was published throughout All the REGION.

50 But the JEWS stirred up the DEVOUT and HONOURABLE Women, and the CHIEF-MEN of the CITY, and raised Persecution against PAUL and †BARNABAS, and expelled them out of †their COASTS.

51 But THEY shook off the DUST of †their FEET against them, and came unto Iconium.

§ XXXVIII.

52 And the DISCIPLES were filled with Joy, and with the holy Ghost.

CHAPTER XIV.

1 And it came to pass in Iconium, that they went BOTH-TOGETHER into the SYNAGOGUE of the JEWS, and so spake, that a Great Multitude both of the Jews and also of the Greeks believed.

2 But the UNBELIEVING Jews stirred up the GENTILES, and made their MINDS evil affected against the BRETHERN.

3 Long Time therefore abode they speaking boldly in *the LORD, which GAVE-TESTIMONY

unto the WORD of his GRACE, †and granted Signs and Wonders to be done by their HANDS.

4 But the MULTITUDE of the CITY was divided: and PART held with the JEWS, and PART with the APOSTLES.

5 And when there was an Assault made both of the GENTILES, and also of the Jews with their RULERS, to use *them* despitely, and to stone them,

6 They were ware of *it*, and fled unto Lystra and Derbe, CITIES of LYCAONIA, and unto the REGION that lieth round about:

7 And there they preached the gospel.

§ XXXIX.

8 And there sat a Certain Man at Lystra, impotent in his FEET, [being] a Cripple from his Mother's Womb, who never had walked:

9 The same heard PAUL speak: who steadfastly beholding him, and perceiving That he had Faith to be HEALED,

10 Said with a †Loud VOICE, Stand upright on thy FEET. And he leaped and walked.

11 And when the PEOPLE saw what PAUL had done, they lifted up their VOICES, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The GODS are come down to us in the likeness of Men.

12 And they called BARNABAS, Jupiter; and PAUL, Mercurius, because *he* was the CHIEF SPEAKER.

13 Then the PRIEST of *JUPI-TER, which WAS before †their CITY, brought Oxen and Garlands

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. THAT LORD which. 13. THAT JUPITER which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—48. GOD: and as many. 50. Barnabas. 50. the coasts. 51. *their* FEET. 3. granting Signs and. 10. Loud Voice. 13. the CITY. See 8.

‡ 47. Isaiah xlix. 6.

unto the GATES, and would have done sacrifice with the PEOPLE.

14 *Which* when the APOSTLES, Barnabas and Paul, heard of, they rent their CLOTHES, and †ran in among the PEOPLE, crying out,

15 And saying, Sirs, why do ye These things? **WE** also are Men of like passions with you, and preach unto you that ye should turn from These VANITIES unto the LIVING GOD, which made HEAVEN, and EARTH, and the SEA, and All THINGS that are therein:

16 Who in TIMES PAST suffered All NATIONS to walk in their own WAYS.

17 Nevertheless he left not Himself without witness, in that he did good, and gave us Rain from heaven, and fruitful Seasons, filling our HEARTS with Food and Gladness.

18 And with These sayings scarce restrained they the PEOPLE, that they had not DONE-SACRIFICE unto them.

19 And there came thither *certain* Jews from Antioch and Iconium, who persuaded the PEOPLE, and, having stoned PAUL, drew *him* out of the CITY, supposing he had been dead.

20 Howbeit, as the DISCIPLES stood round about him, he rose up, and came into the CITY: and the NEXT-DAY he departed with BARNABAS to Derbe.

21 And when they had preached the gospel to that CITY, and had taught many, they returned again to LYSTRA, and to Iconium, and Antioch,

22 Confirming the SOULS of the

DISCIPLES, *and* exhorting them to continue in the FAITH, and That we must through Much Tribulation enter into the KINGDOM of GOD.

23 And when they had ordained them Elders in every Church, and had prayed with Fasting, they commended them to the LORD, on whom they believed.

24 And after they had passed throughout PISIDIA, they came to †Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the WORD in Perga, they went down into Attalia:

26 And thence sailed to Antioch, from whence they had been recommended to the GRACE of GOD for the WORK which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come, and had gathered the CHURCH together, they rehearsed all that GOD had done with them, and How he had opened the Door of Faith unto the GENTILES.

28 And [there] they abode long Time with the DISCIPLES.

CHAPTER XV.

1 And certain men which came down from JUDÆA taught the BRETHREN, *and said*, Except ye be circumcised after the MANNER of †Moses, ye cannot be saved.

2 When therefore PAUL and BARNABAS had no small Dissension and Disputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and Certain Other of them, should go up to Jerusalem unto the APOSTLES and Elders about this QUESTION.

3 And *being brought on their

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. THEY, being brought on their way by the CHURCH, passed.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. ran forth among. 24. PAMPHYLIA. 1. MOSES. See 28.

way by the CHURCH, THEY passed through PHENICE and Samaria, declaring the CONVERSION of the GENTILES: and they caused great Joy unto All the BRETHREN.

4 And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received † of the CHURCH, and of the APOSTLES and ELDERS, and they declared all things that GOD had done with them.

5 But there rose up CERTAIN of the SECT of the PHARISEES which BELIEVED, saying, That it was needful to circumcise them, and to command *them* to keep the LAW of Moses.

6 And the APOSTLES and ELDERS came together for to consider of this MATTER.

7 And when there had been Much Disputing, Peter rose up, and said unto them, Men and Brethren, *ye* know *how* That a good while ago GOD made choice among us, that the GENTILES by my MOUTH should hear the WORD of the GOSPEL, and believe.

8 And GOD, which KNOWETH-THE-HEARTS, bare them witness, giving [them] the HOLY GHOST, even as *he did* unto us;

9 And put no difference between us and them, purifying their HEARTS by FAITH.

10 Now therefore why tempt ye GOD, to put a Yoke upon the NECK of the DISCIPLES, which neither our FATHERS nor *we* were able to bear?

11 But we believe that through

the GRACE of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved, even as *they*.

12 Then All the MULTITUDE kept silence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring What Miracles and Wonders GOD had wrought among the GENTILES by them.

13 And after they had HELD-THEIR-PEACE, James answered, saying, Men and Brethren, hearken unto me:

14 Simeon hath declared how GOD at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a People † for his NAME.

15 And to this agree the WORDS of the PROPHETS; as it is written,

16 “After this I will return, and will build again *the TABERNACLE of David, which is FALLEN-DOWN; and I will build again the RUINS thereof, and I will set it up:

17 “That the RESIDUE of MEN might seek after the LORD, and All the GENTILES, upon whom my NAME is called, saith *the Lord, who DOETH [all] these † things.” ‡

18 Known unto GOD are All his WORKS from the Beginning of the World.

19 Wherefore My Sentence is, that we trouble not THEM, which from among the GENTILES are TURNED to GOD:

20 But that we write unto them, that they ABSTAIN from POLLUTIONS of IDOLS, and *from*

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—16. THAT TABERNACLE of David which. 17. THAT Lord who DOETH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—4. by the CHURCH and the APOSTLES and. 14. in his NAME. 17. things, which were known from the Beginning of the World. See 8, 17, 18.

‡ 17. Amos ix. 11.

FORNICATION, and *from* THINGS-STRANGLED, and *from* BLOOD.

21 For Moses of old Time hath in every City THEM that PREACH him, being read in the SYNAGOGUES Every Sabbath *day*.

22 Then pleased it the APOSTLES and ELDERS, with the Whole CHURCH, to send Chosen Men of their own company to Antioch with PAUL and Barnabas; *namely*, * Judas † SURNAMED BARSABAS, and Silas, chief Men among the BRETHREN:

23 And they wrote *letters* by them [after this manner];

§ XL.

The APOSTLES and † ELDERS and BRETHREN send greeting unto *the BRETHREN which are of the Gentiles in ANTIOCH and Syria and Cilicia:

24 Forasmuch as we have heard, That certain [which went out] from us have troubled you with Words, subverting your SOULS, [saying, *Ye must* be circumeised, and keep the LAW]: to whom we gave no *such* commandment:

25 It seemed good unto us, being assembled with one accord, † to send Chosen Men unto you with our BELOVED Barnabas and Paul,

26 Men that have hazarded their LIVES for the NAME of our LORD Jesus Christ.

27 We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell *you* the SAME things by Mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the † HOLY Ghost, and to us, to lay

upon you no Greater Burden than † these NECESSARY things;

29 That ye abstain from meats offered to Idols, and from Blood, and from Things Strangled, and from Fornication: from which if ye keep yourselves, ye shall do well. Fare ye well.

30 So when they were dismissed, THEY † came to Antioch: and when they had gathered the MULTITUDE together, they delivered the EPISTLE:

31 *Which* when they had read, they rejoiced for the CONSOLATION.

32 And Judas and Silas, being Prophets also themselves, exhorted the BRETHREN with many Words, and confirmed *them*.

33 And after they had tarried *there* a Space, they were let go in Peace from the BRETHREN unto † the APOSTLES.

34 [Notwithstanding it pleased SILAS to abide there still.]

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the WORD of the LORD, with many others also.

36 And Some Days after Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us go again and visit our BRETHREN in † Every City where we have preached the WORD of the LORD, *and see* how they do.

37 And Barnabas † determined to take with them * JOHN, whose SURNAME was MARK.

38 But Paul thought not good to take HIM with them, who

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—22. THAT Judas who was SURNAMED. 23. THOSE BRETHREN which. 37. THAT JOHN whose.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—22. who was called Barsabbas. 23. ELDER BRETHREN send. 25. *and* chosen out, to send Men unto you. 28. HOLY GHOST. 28. These NECESSARY things. 30. came down to Antioch. 33. THEM who had SENT them. 36. every City. 37. was minded to take. See 23, 24 (twice), 34.

DEPARTED from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the WORK.

39 And the Contention was so sharp between them, that they departed asunder one from the other: and so BARNABAS took MARK, and sailed unto Cyprus;

§ XLI.

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed, being recommended by the BRETHREN unto the GRACE of †GOD.

41 And he went through SYRIA and Cilicia, confirming the CHURCHES.

CHAPTER XVI.

1 Then came he †to Derbe and Lystra: and, behold, a certain Disciple was there, named Timotheus, the Son of a [certain] Woman, which was a Jewess, and believed; but his Father *was* a Greek:

2 Which was well reported of by the BRETHREN that were at Lystra and Iconium.

3 *Whom* would PAUL have to go forth with him; and took and circumcised him because of *the JEWS which WERE in those QUARTERS: for they knew all That his FATHER was a Greek.

4 And as they went through the CITIES, they delivered them *the DECREES for to keep, that were ORDAINED †of *the APOSTLES and ELDERS which were at Jerusalem.

5 And so were the CHURCHES established in the FAITH, and increased in NUMBER daily.

6 † Now when they had gone throughout PHRYGIA and the REGION of GALATIA, and were forbidden of the HOLY Ghost to preach the WORD in ASIA,

7 † After they were come to MYSIA, they assayed to go into BITHYNIA: but †the SPIRIT suffered them not.

8 And they passing by MYSIA came down to Troas.

9 And a Vision appeared to PAUL in the NIGHT; There stood †a Man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come over into Macedonia, and help us.

10 And after he had seen the VISION, immediately we endeavoured to go into MACEDONIA, assuredly gathering That †the LORD had called us for to preach the gospel unto them.

11 Therefore loosing from TROAS, we came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the NEXT *day* to Neapolis;

12 And from thence to Philippi, which is the Chief City of †that PART of MACEDONIA, *and* a Colony: and we were in That CITY abiding certain Days.

13 And on *the SABBATH we went out of the †CITY by a Riverside, where Prayer was wont to be made; and we sat down, and spake unto the WOMEN which RESORTED *thither*.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. THOSE JEWS which. 4. THOSE DECREES. 4. THOSE APOSTLES. 13. the SABBATH DAY.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—40. the LORD. And he went. 1. both unto Derbe and unto Lystra. 4. of THOSE APOSTLES and Elders which. 6. And they went throughout the REGION of PHRYGIA and Galatia, being forbidden of the HOLY Ghost. 7. And when they were come. 7. the SPIRIT of Jesus suffered. 9. a certain Man of. 10. God had called us. 12. a Part of. 13. the GATE by a River-side, where we supposed that Prayer would be made; and we sat. See 34, 1.

§ XLII.

14 And a Certain Woman named Lydia, a Seller-of-purple, of the City of Thyatira, which worshipped GOD, heard *us*: Whose HEART the LORD opened, that she attended unto the THINGS which were SPOKEN of † PAUL.

15 And when she was baptized, and her HOUSEHOLD, she besought *us*, saying, If ye have judged me to be faithful to the LORD come into my HOUSE, and abide *there*. And she constrained us.

16 And it came to pass, as we went † to Prayer, a certain Damsel possessed with a Spirit of Divination met us, which brought her MASTERS much Gain by sooth-saying:

17 The same followed † PAUL and us, and cried, saying, These MEN are the Servants of the MOST-HIGH GOD, which shew unto us the Way of Salvation.

18 And this did she Many Days. But PAUL being grieved, turned and said to the SPIRIT, I command thee in the † NAME of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out the Same HOUR.

19 And when her MASTERS saw That the HOPE of their GAINS was gone, they caught PAUL and SILAS, and drew *them* into the MARKETPLACE unto the RULERS,

20 And brought them to the MAGISTRATES, saying, These MEN, being Jews, do exceeding trouble our CITY,

21 And teach Customs, which are not lawful for us to receive, neither to observe, being Romans.

22 And the MULTITUDE rose

up together against them: and the MAGISTRATES rent off Their CLOTHES, and commanded to beat *them*.

23 And when they had laid Many Stripes upon them, they cast *them* into Prison, charging the JAILOR to keep them safely:

24 Who, † having received such a Charge, thrust them into the INNER Prison, and made their FEET fast in the STOCKS.

§ XLIII.

25 And at MIDNIGHT Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto GOD: and the PRISONERS heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great Earthquake, so that the FOUNDATIONS of the PRISON were shaken: and [immediately] all the DOORS were opened, and Every-one's BANDS were loosed.

27 And the KEEPER-OF-THE-PRISON awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the PRISON DOORS open, he drew † out his Sword, and would have killed Himself, supposing that the PRISONERS had been fled.

28 But PAUL cried with a loud Voice, saying, Do thyself no harm: for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a Light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell down before PAUL and † SILAS,

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved?

31 And THEY said, Believe on the LORD Jesus Christ, and *thou* shalt be saved, and thy HOUSE.

32 And they spake unto him the

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. Paul. 16. to PRAYER, a certain Damsel. 17. Paul. 18. Name of. 24. on receiving such. 27. a SWORD, and was about to have killed Himself. 29. Silas. See 26.

WORD of †the LORD, and to ALL that were in his HOUSE.

33 And he took them the Same HOUR of the NIGHT, and washed *their* STRIPES; and was baptized, *he* and all HIS, straightway.

34 And when he had brought them into †his HOUSE, he set Meat before them, and rejoiced believing in GOD with all his house.

§ XLIV.

35 And when it was day, the MAGISTRATES sent the SERJEANTS, saying, Let those MEN go.

36 And the KEEPER-OF-THE-PRISON told †this SAYING to PAUL, The MAGISTRATES have sent to let you go: now therefore depart, and go in Peace.

37 But PAUL said unto them, They have beaten us openly uncondemned, being Romans, and have cast *us* into Prison; and now do they thrust Us out privily? nay verily; but let them come themselves and fetch Us out.

38 And the SERJEANTS told these WORDS unto the MAGISTRATES: and they feared, when they heard That they were Romans.

39 And they came and besought them, and brought *them* out, and desired *them* to depart †out of the CITY.

40 And they went out of the PRISON, and entered into *the house of* LYDIA: and when they had seen the BRETHREN, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAPTER XVII.

1 Now when they had passed through AMPHIPOLIS and Apol-

lonia, they came to †Thessalonica, where was a †SYNAGOGUE of the JEWS:

2 And PAUL, as his MANNER was, went in unto them, and three Sabbath-days reasoned with them out of the SCRIPTURES,

3 Opening and alleging, That CHRIST must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead; and That This Jesus, whom *he* preach unto you, is CHRIST.

4 And some of them believed, and consorted with PAUL and †SILAS; and of the DEVOUT Greeks a †Great Multitude, and of the CHIEF Women not a few.

§ XLV.

5 But the JEWS [which BELIEVED-NOT], moved with envy, took unto them certain lewd Fellows of the BASER-SORT, and gathered a company, and set all the CITY on an uproar, and assaulted the HOUSE of Jason, and sought to bring them †out to the PEOPLE.

6 And when they found them not, they drew †JASON and Certain Brethren unto the RULERS-OF-THE-CITY, crying, THESE that have TURNED the WORLD upside down are come hither also;

7 Whom Jason hath received: and these all do contrary to the DECREES of Cæsar, saying that there is another King, *one* Jesus.

8 And they troubled the PEOPLE and the RULERS-OF-THE-CITY, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken SECURITY of JASON, and of the OTHER, they let them go.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—32. GOD, with ALL that were. 34. the HOUSE. 36. the SAYING. 39. from the CITY. 1. THESSALONICA. 1. Synagogue of. 4. Silas. 4. great Multitude. 5. forth unto the PEOPLE. 6. Jason. See 5.

10 And the BRETHREN immediately sent away PAUL and SILAS by †NIGHT unto Berea: who coming *thither* went into the SYNAGOGUE of the JEWS.

11 These were more noble than THOSE in Thessalonica, in that they received the WORD with All Readiness-of-mind, and searched the SCRIPTURES DAILY, whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them believed; also of HONOURABLE WOMEN which were GREEKS, and of Men not a few.

13 But when the JEWS of THESALONICA had knowledge That the WORD of GOD was preached of PAUL at BEREA, they came thither also, and stirred up †the PEOPLE.

14 And then immediately the BRETHREN sent away PAUL to go as it were to the SEA: but SILAS and TIMOTHEUS abode there still.

15 And THEY that CONDUCTED PAUL brought †him unto Athens: and receiving a Commandment unto SILAS and †Timotheus for to come to him with all speed, they departed.

16 Now while PAUL waited for them at ATHENS, his SPIRIT was stirred in him, when he saw the CITY wholly given to idolatry.

17 Therefore disputed he in the SYNAGOGUE with the JEWS, and with the DEVOUT persons, and in the MARKET daily with THEM that MET with him.

18 Then certain PHILOSOPHERS of the EPICUREANS, and of the

†STOICKS, encountered him. And some said, What will this BABBLER say? other SOME, He seemeth to be a Setter-forth of Strange Gods: Because he preached [unto them] JESUS, and the RESURRECTION.

19 And they took him, and brought him unto *AREOPAGUS, saying, May we know what This NEW Doctrine, whereof thou SPEAKEST, is?

20 For thou bringest certain strange things to our EARS: we would know therefore what these things mean.—

21 For all the Athenians and STRANGERS which WERE there spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear some new thing.—

§ XLVI.

22 Then PAUL stood in the midst of *MARS' HILL, and said, Ye Men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your DEVOTIONS, I found an Altar with this inscription, To the Unknown God. † Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, *him* declare ‡ unto you.

24 *GOD that MADE the WORLD and All THINGS therein, seeing that *he* is Lord of Heaven and Earth, dwelleth not in Temples made with hands;

25 Neither is worshipped with Men's Hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing *he* giveth to all Life, and Breath, and all things;

26 And hath made of One [Blood] All Nations of Men for

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—19. the AREOPAGUS. 22. the AREOPAGUS, and said. 24. THAT God who.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—10. Night. 13. and troubled the PEOPLE. 15. *him*. 15. TIMOTHEUS. 18. Stoicks. 23. What therefore ye ignorantly worship, This declare ‡ unto you (*a* and *Tisch.*). See 18, 26.

to dwell on † All the FACE of the EARTH, and hath determined the Times before appointed, and the BOUNDS of their HABITATION;

27 That they should seek the LORD, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us:

28 For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of YOUR-OWN Poets have said, "For we are also HIS Offspring." †

29 Forasmuch then as we are the Offspring of GOD, we ought not to think that the GODHEAD is like unto Gold, or Silver, or Stone, graven by Art and Man's Device.

30 And the TIMES of *this* IGNORANCE GOD winked at; but NOW commandeth all MEN every where to repent:

31 † Because he hath appointed a DAY, in the which he will judge the WORLD in Righteousness by *that* Man whom he hath ordained; *whereof* he hath given Assurance unto all *men*, in that he hath raised him from the Dead.

32 And when they heard of the Resurrection of the Dead, SOME mocked: and OTHERS said, We will hear thee † again of this *matter*.

33 So PAUL departed from among them.

§ XLVII.

34 Howbeit Certain Men clave unto him, and believed: among the which *was* Dionysius the † AREOPAGITE, and a Woman

named Damaris, and others with them.

CHAPTER XVIII.

1 After these things † PAUL departed from ATHENS, and came to Corinth;

2 And found a Certain Jew named Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from ITALY, with his wife Priscilla;—because that † Claudius had COMMANDED All JEWS to depart from ROME:—and came unto them.

2 And because he WAS of the same craft, he abode with them, and † wrought: for by *their* OCCUPATION they were Tentmakers.

4 And he reasoned in the SYNAGOGUE Every Sabbath, and persuaded the Jews and the Greeks.

5 And when SILAS and TIMOTHEUS were come from MACEDONIA, PAUL was pressed † in the SPIRIT, and testified to the JEWS *that* Jesus *was* CHRIST.

6 And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook *his* RAIMENT and said unto them, Your BLOOD *be* upon your own HEADS; ‡ *am* clean: from HENCEFORTH I will go unto the GENTILES.

7 And he departed thence, and entered into a Certain *man's* House, named Justus, *one* that worshipped GOD, Whose HOUSE joined hard to the SYNAGOGUE.

8 And Crispus, the CHIEF-RULER-OF-THE-SYNAGOGUE, believed on the LORD with All his

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—26. the Whole Face of. 31. Forasmuch as he hath. 32. also again concerning this. 34. Areopagite. 1. he departed from. 2. All JEWS were COMMANDED to depart from ROME. 3. they wrought. 5. by the word, and testified to the JEWS that Jesus was the CHRIST.

‡ 28. Aratus.

HOUSE; and many of the CORINTHIANS hearing believed, and were baptized.

9 Then spake the LORD to PAUL in the Night by a Vision, Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not thy peace:

10 For I am with thee, and no man shall set on thee to HURT thee: for I have much People in this CITY.

11 And he continued *there* a Year and six Months, teaching the WORD of GOD among them.

§ XLVIII.

12 And when Gallio was the deputy of ACHAIA, the JEWS made insurrection with one accord against PAUL, and brought him to the JUDGMENT-SEAT,

13 Saying, This *fellow* persuadeth MEN to worship GOD contrary to the LAW.

14 And when PAUL was now about to open *his* MOUTH, GALLIO said unto the JEWS, If it were a matter of Wrong or wicked Lewdness, O *ye* Jews, Reason would that I should bear with you:

15 But if it be a Question of Words and Names, and of *YOUR Law, look *ye* to it; [for] I will be no Judge of such *matters*.

16 And he drave them from the JUDGMENT-SEAT.

17 Then All [the GREEKS] took Sosthenes, the CHIEF-RULER-OF-THE-SYNAGOGUE, and beat *him* before the JUDGMENT-SEAT. And GALLIO cared for none of those things.

18 And PAUL *after this* tarried *there* yet a good while, and then

took his leave of the BRETHREN, and sailed thence into SYRIA, and with him Priscilla and Aquila; having shorn *his* HEAD in Cenchrea: for he had a Vow.

19 And he came to Ephesus, and left *them* there: but he himself entered into the SYNAGOGUE, and reasoned with the JEWS.

20 When they desired *him* to tarry Longer Time [with them], he consented not;

21 But bade [them] farewell, saying, [I must by all means keep THIS FEAST that COMETH in Jerusalem: but] I will return again unto you, if GOD will. [And] he sailed from EPHESUS.

22 And when he had landed at Cæsarea, and gone up, and saluted the CHURCH, he went down to Antioch.

23 And after he had spent some Time *there*, he departed, and went over *all* the COUNTRY of GALATIA and Phrygia in order, strengthening All the DISCIPLES.

24 And a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent Man, *and* mighty in the SCRIPTURES, came to Ephesus.

25 This man was instructed in the WAY of the LORD; and being fervent in the SPIRIT, he spake and † taught diligently the THINGS † of the LORD, knowing only the BAPTISM of John.

26 And *he* began to speak boldly in the SYNAGOGUE: whom when † Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they took him unto *them*, and expounded unto him the WAY of GOD more perfectly.

27 And when he was disposed

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—15. THAT Law which is yours.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—25. also taught. 25. concerning JESUS, knowing only. 26. Priscilla and Aquila had heard. See 15, 17, 20, 21 (thrice).

to pass into ACHAIA, the BRETHREN wrote, exhorting the DISCIPLES to receive him: who when he was come, helped THEM much which had BELIEVED through GRACE:

28 For he mightily convinced the JEWS, *and that* publickly, shewing by the SCRIPTURES that Jesus was CHRIST.

CHAPTER XIX.

§ XLIX.

1 And it came to pass, that, while APOLLOS WAS at Corinth, Paul having passed through the UPPER Coasts came to †Ephesus: and finding Certain Disciples,

2 He said unto them, Have ye received the holy Ghost since ye believed? And THEY †said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any holy Ghost.

3 And he said [unto them], Unto what then were ye baptized? And THEY said, Unto JOHN'S BAPTISM.

4 Then said Paul, John [verily] baptized with the Baptism of Repentance, saying unto the PEOPLE, that they should believe on HIM which should COME after him, that is, †on CHRIST Jesus.

5 When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the NAME of the LORD Jesus.

6 And when PAUL had laid *his* †HANDS upon them, the HOLY GHOST came on them; and they spake with Tongues, and prophesied.

7 And ALL the Men were about twelve.

8 And he went into the SYNAGOGUE, and spake boldly for the space of three Months, disputing and persuading [the THINGS] concerning the KINGDOM of GOD.

9 But when divers were hardened, and believed not, but spake evil of *that* WAY before the MULTITUDE, he departed from them, and separated the DISCIPLES, disputing daily in the SCHOOL of [one] Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two Years; so that ALL THEY which DWELT in ASIA heard the WORD of the LORD [Jesus], both Jews and Greeks.

11 And GOD wrought SPECIAL Miracles by the HANDS of Paul:

12 So that from his BODY were brought unto the SICK Handkerchiefs or Aprons, and the DISEASES departed from them, and the EVIL SPIRITS went out of them.

§ L.

13 Then certain of the VAGABOND Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over THEM which HAD EVIL SPIRITS the NAME of the LORD Jesus, saying, † We adjure you by JESUS whom PAUL preacheth.

14 And there were †SEVEN Sons of *one* Sceva, a Jew, *and* Chief of the Priests, which †DID So.

15 And the EVIL SPIRIT answered and †said, JESUS I know, and PAUL I know; but who are ye?

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. Ephesus, and found Certain Disciples; and he said unto them, Have ye. 2. *said*. 4. on JESUS. When. 6. Hands. 13. I adjure you. 14. Seven Sons of One Sceva. 14. did So. 15. said unto them, JESUS indeed I know and. See 3, 4, 8, 9, 10.

16 And the MAN in whom the EVIL SPIRIT was leaped on them, and overcame †them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that HOUSE naked and wounded.

17 And this was known to ALL the Jews and Greeks also DWELLING at EPHESUS; and Fear fell on them all, and the NAME of the LORD Jesus was magnified.

18 And MANY that BELIEVED came, and confessed, and shewed their DEEDS.

19 Many of THEM also which USED CURIOUS-ARTS brought their BOOKS together, and burned them before all *men*: and they counted the PRICE of them, and found *it* fifty thousand *pieces* of Silver.

20 So mightily grew the WORD of †GOD and prevailed.

21 After these things were ended, PAUL purposed in the SPIRIT, when he had passed through MACEDONIA and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, After I have BEEN there, I must also see Rome.

22 So he sent into MACEDONIA two of THEM that MINISTERED unto him, Timotheus and Erastus; but he himself stayed in ASIA for a Season.

23 And the same TIME there arose no small Stir about *that* WAY.

§ LI.

24 For a certain *man* named Demetrius, a Silversmith, which made [silver] Shrines for Diana, brought †no small Gain unto the CRAFTSMEN;

25 Whom he called together

with the WORKMEN of LIKE-OCCUPATION, and said, Sirs, ye know That by This CRAFT we have *our* WEALTH.

26 Moreover ye see and hear, That not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout All ASIA, this PAUL hath persuaded and turned away Much People, saying That THEY be no Gods, which are MADE with Hands:

26 So that not only This our CRAFT is in danger to be set at nought; but also that the TEMPLE of the GREAT Goddess Diana should be despised, and her MAGNIFICENCE should be destroyed, whom All ASIA and the WORLD worshippeth.

28 And when they heard *these sayings*, they were full of Wrath, and cried out, saying, Great *is* DIANA of the Ephesians.

29 And the [whole] CITY was filled with Confusion: and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, †PAUL'S Companions-in-travel, they rushed with one accord into the THEATRE.

30 And when †PAUL would have entered in unto the PEOPLE, the DISCIPLES suffered him not.

31 And certain of the CHIEF-OF-ASIA, which were his Friends, sent unto him, desiring *him* that he would not adventure himself into the THEATRE.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the ASSEMBLY was confused; and the MORE part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And they †drew Alexander out of the MULTITUDE, the JEWS

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. them both, and prevailed. 20. the LORD, and. 24. no Small Gain. 29. Paul's. 30. Paul. 33. led onward Alexander. See 24, 29.

putting him forward. And ALEXANDER beckoned with the HAND, and would have made his defence unto the PEOPLE.

34 But when they knew That he was a Jew, all with one Voice about the space of two Hours cried out, Great is DIANA of the † Ephesians.

35 And when the TOWNCLERK had appeased the PEOPLE, he said, Ye Men of Ephesus, What Man is there that knoweth not how that the CITY of the EPHESIANS is a Worshipper of the GREAT [Goddess] Diana, and of the *image* which FELL-DOWN-FROM-JUPITER?

36 Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly.

37 For ye have brought hither these MEN, which are neither Robbers-of-churches, nor yet Blasphemers of your GODDESS.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius, and the CRAFTSMEN which are with him, have a Matter against any man, the Law is open, and there are Deputies: let them implead one another.

39 But if ye enquire any thing † concerning other matters, it shall be determined in a LAWFUL Assembly.

40 For we are in danger to be called into question for THIS-DAY'S Uproar, there being no Cause whereby we may give an Account † of this CONCOURSE.

41 And when he had thus

spoken, he dismissed the ASSEMBLY.

CHAPTER XX.

§ LII.

1 And after the UPROAR was CEASED, Paul † called unto *him* the DISCIPLES, and embraced *them*, and departed for to go into MACEDONIA.

2 And when he had gone over those PARTS, and had given them much Exhortation, he came into GREECE,

3 And *there* abode three Months. And when the JEWS laid wait for him, as he was about to sail into SYRIA, he purposed to RETURN through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him [into ASIA] Sopater † of Berea; and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus and Secundus; and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus; and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.

5 † These going before tarried for us at Troas.

6 And *we* sailed away from Philippi after the DAYS of UNLEAVENED-BREAD, and came unto them to TROAS in five Days; where he abode seven Days.

7 And upon the FIRST *day* of the WEEK, when the DISCIPLES † came together to BREAK Bread, PAUL preached unto them, ready to depart on the MORROW; and continued his SPEECH until Mid-night.

8 And there were many Lights in the UPPER-CHAMBER, † where they were gathered together.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—34. Ephesians. Great is DIANA of the Ephesians. And when. 39. farther, it shall be determined. 40. concerning this CONCOURSE. 1. sent for the DISCIPLES, and when he had exhorted and embraced *them*, he departed for. 4. *the son of Pyrrhus, of Berea.* 5. And these going. 7. we were gathered together by us to break Bread. 8. where we were gathered together. See 35, 4.

9 And there sat in a WINDOW
 a Certain Young-man named Euty-
 chus, being fallen into a deep
 Sleep: and as PAUL was long
 preaching, he sunk down with
 SLEEP, and fell down from the
 THIRD-LOFT, and was taken up
 dead.

10 And PAUL went down, and
 fell on him, and embracing *him*
 said, Trouble not yourselves; for
 his LIFE is in him.

11 When he therefore was come
 up again, and had broken † Bread,
 and eaten, and talked a long while,
 even till Break-of-day, so he de-
 parted.

12 And they brought the YOUNG-
 MAN alive, and were not a little
 comforted.

13 And *we* went before to SHIP,
 and sailed unto ASSOS, there in-
 tending to take in PAUL: for so
 had he appointed, minding himself
 to go afoot.

14 And when he met with us at
 ASSOS, we took him in, and came
 to Mitylene.

15 And we sailed thence, and
 came the NEXT *day* over against
 Chios; and † the NEXT *day* we
 arrived at Samos, [and tarried at
 Trogyllium]; and the NEXT *day*
 we came to Miletus.

16 For PAUL had determined to
 sail by EPHEBUS, because he
 would not spend the time in
 ASIA: for he hasted, if it † were
 possible for him, to be at Jerusa-
 lem the DAY of PENTECOST.

17 And from MILETUS he sent
 to Ephesus, and called the ELDERS
 of the CHURCH.

18 And when they were come
 to him, he said unto them, *Ye*
 know, from the First Day that I
 came into ASIA, after what man-
 ner I have been with you at ALL
 Seasons,

19 Serving the LORD with All
 Humility of mind, and † with
 * Many Tears, and Temptations,
 which BEFELL me by the LYING-
 IN-WAIT of the JEWS:

20 *And* how I kept back NO-
 THING that was PROFITABLE *unto*
you, but have SHEWED you, and
 have taught you publickly, and
 from House to House,

21 Testifying both to the Jews,
 and also to the Greeks, RE-
 PENTANCE toward GOD, and
 * Faith toward our LORD Jesus
 Christ.

22 And now, behold, *I* go bound
 in the SPIRIT unto Jerusalem, not
 knowing the THINGS that shall
 BEFALL me there:

23 Save That the HOLY GHOST
 witnesseth † in every City, saying
 That Bonds and Afflictions abide
 Me.

24 But † none of these things
 move me, neither count I my LIFE
 dear unto myself, so that I might
 finish my COURSE [with Joy],
 and the MINISTRY, which I have
 received of the LORD Jesus, to
 testify the GOSPEL of the GRACE
 of GOD.

25 And now, behold, *I* know
 That all *ye*, among whom I have
 gone preaching the KINGDOM [of
 GOD], shall see my FACE no
 more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—19. THOSE Many Tears. 21. THAT Faith which is toward.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT—11. BREAD. 15. in the EVENING we arrived. 16. might
 be possible for. 19. with THOSE Tears and. 23. to me in every City. 24. on No
 Account make I LIFE dear unto myself, as I should finish my COURSE. See 15, 24, 25.

THIS Day, That †**I** am pure from the BLOOD of All men.

27 For I have not shunned to DECLARE † unto you All the COUNSEL of GOD.

28 Take heed [therefore] unto yourselves, and to All the FLOCK, over the which the HOLY GHOST hath made you Overseers, to feed the CHURCH of GOD, which he hath purchased with † HIS-OWN Blood.

29 For **I** know [this], That after my DEPARTING shall grievous Wolves enter in among you, not sparing the FLOCK.

30 Also † of your own selves shall Men arise, speaking perverse things, to DRAW-AWAY DISCIPLES after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember, That by the space of three years I ceased not to warn every one Night and Day with Tears.

32 And NOW, [Brethren], I commend you † to GOD, and to *the WORD of his GRACE, which is ABLE to build [you up], and to give † you an Inheritance among all THEM which are SANCTIFIED.

33 I have coveted no man's Silver, or Gold, or Apparel.

34 [Yea], ye yourselves know, That these HANDS have ministered unto my NECESSITIES, and to THEM that WERE with me.

35 I have shewed you All things, how That so labouring ye ought to support the WEAK, and to remember the WORDS of the LORD Jesus, How **he** said, It is more blessed to give than to receive.

36 And when he had thus

spoken, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all.

37 And they all wept sore, and fell on PAUL'S NECK, and kissed him.

38 Sorrowing most of all for the WORDS which he spake, That they should see his FACE no more. And they accompanied him unto the SHIP.

CHAPTER XXI.

§ LIII.

1 And it came to pass, that after we were gotten from them, and had launched, we came with a straight course unto COOS, and the *day* FOLLOWING unto RHODES, and from thence unto Patara:

2 And finding a Ship sailing over unto Phenicia, we went aboard, and set forth.

3 Now when we had discovered CYPRUS, we left it on the left hand, and sailed into Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the SHIP was to unlade her BURDEN.

4 And finding DISCIPLES, we tarried there seven Days: who said to PAUL through the SPIRIT, that he should not go up to Jerusalem.

5 And when we had accomplished *those* DAYS, we departed and went our way; and they all brought us on our way, with Wives and Children, till *we were* out of the CITY: and we kneeled down on the SHORE and prayed.

6 And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took SHIP; and **they** returned HOME again.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—32. THAT WORD.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—26. I am pure. 27. All the COUNSEL of GOD unto you.
28. HIS-OWN BLOOD. 30. of you shall Men arise. 32. to the LORD, and to THAT
WORD. 32. you. See 28, 29, 32 (twice), 34.

7 And when we had finished *our* COURSE from Tyre, we came to Ptolemais, and saluted the BRETHREN, and abode with them one Day.

8 And the NEXT *day* †WE that were of PAUL'S company departed, and came unto Cæsarea: and we entered into the HOUSE of *Philip the EVANGELIST, which WAS *one* of the SEVEN; and abode with him.

9 And the same man had four Daughters, Virgins, which did prophesy.

§ LIV.

10 And as we tarried *there* many Days, there came down from JUDÆA a Certain Prophet, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come unto us, he took PAUL'S GIRDLE, and bound His-own †HANDS and FEET, and said, Thus saith the HOLY GHOST, So shall the JEWS at Jerusalem bind the MAN that owneth this GIRDLE, and shall deliver *him* into the Hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we heard these things, both *we*, and THEY of that place, besought him not to GO-UP to Jerusalem.

13 Then PAUL answered, What mean ye to weep and to break Mine HEART? for **ƒ** am ready not to be bound only, but also to die at Jerusalem for the NAME of the LORD Jesus.

14 And when he could not be persuaded, we ceased, saying, The WILL of the LORD be done.

§ LV.

15 And after those DAYS we took up our carriages, and went up to Jerusalem.

16 There went with us also *certain* of the DISCIPLES of Cæsarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an Old Disciple, with whom we should lodge.

17 And when we were come to Jerusalem, the BRETHREN received us gladly.

18 And the *day* FOLLOWING PAUL went in with us unto James; and All the ELDERS were present.

19 And when he had saluted them, he declared particularly what things GOD had wrought among the GENTILES by his MINISTRY.

20 And *when they heard *it*, THEY glorified †the LORD, and said unto him, Thou seest, Brother, how Many *Thousands †of Jews there are which BELIEVE; and they are all zealous of the LAW:

21 And they are informed of thee, That thou teachest ALL the JEWS which are among the GENTILES to forsake Moses, saying that they ought not to circumcise *their* CHILDREN, neither to walk after the CUSTOMS.

22 What is it therefore? [the Multitude must needs come together: for] they will †hear That thou art come.

23 Do therefore This that we say to thee: We have four Men which have a Vow on them;

24 **Them** take, and purify thyself with them, and be at charges

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. THAT Philip. 20. THEY, when they heard it, glorified. 20. Thousands there are of THOSE Jews which BELIEVE.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. we departed, and came unto Cæsarea. 11. FEET and HANDS, and said. 20. GOD, and said. 20. there are, among the JEWS, of THEM which BELIEVE. 22. surely hear. See 22.

with them, that they may shave *their* HEADS: and all † may know That those things, whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing; but *that* thou thyself also walkest orderly, and keepest the LAW.

25 As touching the GENTILES which BELIEVE, we have † written *and* concluded [that they observe no Such thing, save only] that they keep themselves from THINGS OFFERED-TO-IDOLS, and from BLOOD, and from Strangled, and from Fornication.

§ LVI.

26 Then PAUL took the MEN, and the NEXT Day purifying himself with them entered into the TEMPLE, to signify the ACCOMPLISHMENT of the DAYS of PURIFICATION, until that an OFFERING should be offered for every one of them.

27 And when the SEVEN Days were almost ended, the JEWS, which were of ASIA, when they saw him in the TEMPLE, stirred up All the PEOPLE, and laid HANDS on him.

28 Crying out, Men of Israel, help: This is * the MAN, that TEACHETH all *men* every where against the PEOPLE, and the LAW, and this PLACE: and further brought Greeks also into the TEMPLE, and hath polluted this HOLY Place.

29 For they had seen before with him in the CITY Trophimus an EPHESIAN, whom they supposed That PAUL had brought into the TEMPLE.

30 And all the CITY was moved,

and the PEOPLE ran together: and they took PAUL, and drew him out of the TEMPLE: and forthwith the DOORS were shut.

31 And as they went about to kill Him, Tidings came unto the CHIEF-CAPTAIN of the BAND, That All Jerusalem was in an uproar.

32 Who immediately took Soldiers and Centurions, and ran down unto them: and when they saw the CHIEF-CAPTAIN and the SOLDIERS, they left beating of PAUL.

33 Then the CHIEF-CAPTAIN came near, and took him, and commanded *him* to be bound with two Chains; and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And some † cried one thing, some another, among the MULTITUDE: and when he could not know the CERTAINTY for the TUMULT, he commanded him to be carried into the CASTLE.

35 And when he came upon the STAIRS, so it was, that he was borne of the SOLDIERS for the VIOLENCE of the PEOPLE.

36 For the MULTITUDE of the PEOPLE followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as PAUL was to be led into the CASTLE, he said unto the CHIEF-CAPTAIN, May I speak unto thee? * WHO said, Canst thou speak Greek?

38 Art not *thou* THAT EGYPTIAN, which before These DAYS MADEST-AN-UPROAR, and leddest out into the WILDERNESS FOURTHOUSAND Men that were MURDERERS?

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—28. THAT MAN WHO TEACHETH. 37. And HE said.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—24. shall know. 25. sent forth, and concluded that they keep. 34. shouted one thing, some another. See 25.

39 But PAUL said, *I* am a Man *which am* a Jew of Tarsus, *a city* in CILICIA, a Citizen of no Mean City: and, I beseech thee, suffer me to speak unto the PEOPLE.

40 And when he had given him licence, PAUL stood on the STAIRS, and beckoned with the HAND unto the PEOPLE. And when there was made a Great Silence, he spake unto *them* in the HEBREW Tongue, saying,

CHAPTER XXII.

§ LVII.

1 Men, Brethren, and Fathers, hear ye My DEFENCE *which I make* now unto you.—

2 And when they heard That he spake in the HEBREW Tongue to them, they kept the more silence: and he saith,—

3 *I* am verily a Man *which am* a Jew, born in Tarsus, *a city* in CILICIA, yet brought up in this CITY at the FEET of Gamaliel, *and* taught according to the Perfect-manner of the LAW of the FATHERS, and was zealous toward GOD, as *ye* all are This-day.

4 And I persecuted This WAY unto the Death, binding and delivering into Prisons both Men and Women.

5 As also the HIGH-PRIEST † doth bear me witness, and All the ESTATE-OF-THE-ELDERS: from whom also I received Letters unto the BRETHREN, and went to Damascus, to bring THEM which WERE there bound unto Jerusalem, for to be punished.

6 And it came to pass, that, as I made my journey, and was come

nigh unto DAMASCUS about Noon, suddenly there shone from HEAVEN a great Light round about me.

7 And I fell unto the GROUND, and heard a Voice saying unto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou Me?

8 And *I* answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he said unto me, *I* am Jesus of NAZARETH, whom *thou* persecutest.

9 And THEY that WERE with me saw indeed the LIGHT, [and were afraid]; but they heard not the VOICE of HIM that SPAKE to me.

10 And I said, What shall I do, Lord? And the LORD said unto me, Arise, and go unto Damascus; and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to do.

11 And when I could not see for the GLORY of that LIGHT, being led by the hand of THEM that WERE with me, I came into Damascus.

§ LVIII.

12 And one Ananias, a devout Man according to the LAW, having a good report of All the JEWS which DWELT *there*.

13 Came unto me, and stood, and said unto me, Brother Saul, receive thy sight. And the Same HOUR *I* looked up upon him.

14 And HE said, The GOD of our FATHERS hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest know his WILL, and see *that* JUST-ONE, and shouldest hear the Voice of his MOUTH.

15 For thou shalt be his Witness

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—5. did bear me witness. See 9.

unto All Men of what thou hast seen and heard.

16 And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy SINS, calling on †the NAME of the LORD.

17 And it came to pass, that, when I was come again to Jerusalem, even while I prayed in the TEMPLE, I was in a Trance;

18 And I saw him saying unto me, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Jerusalem: for they will not receive †Thy TESTIMONY concerning me.

19 And **ƒ** said, Lord, **they** know That **ƒ** imprisoned and beat in every SYNAGOGUE THEM that BELIEVED on thee:

20 And when the BLOOD of *thy MARTYR Stephen was shed, **ƒ** also was standing by, and consenting [unto his DEATH], and kept the RAIMENT of THEM that SLEW him.

21 And he said unto me, Depart: For **ƒ** will send thee far hence unto the Gentiles.

22 And they gave him audience unto This WORD, and *then* lifted up their VOICES, and said, Away with SUCH a *fellow* from the EARTH: for it is not fit that he should live.

23 And as they cried out, and cast off *their* CLOTHES, and threw Dust into the AIR,

24 The CHIEF-CAPTAIN commanded him to be brought into the CASTLE, and bade that he should be examined by Scourging; that he might know wherefore they cried so against him.

25 And as they bound him with

THONGS, PAUL said unto the CENTURION that STOOD-BY, Is it lawful for you to scourge a Man that is a Roman, and uncondemned?

26 When the CENTURION heard *that*, he went and told the CHIEF-CAPTAIN, saying, †Take heed what thou doest: for this MAN is a Roman.

27 Then the CHIEF-CAPTAIN came, and said unto him, Tell me, art **thou** a Roman? HE said, Yea.

28 And the CHIEF-CAPTAIN answered, With a Great Sum obtained **ƒ** this FREEDOM. And PAUL said, But **ƒ** was *free* born.

29 Then straightway THEY departed from him which SHOULD have examined him: and the CHIEF-CAPTAIN also was afraid, after he knew That he was a Roman, and Because he had bound Him.

30 On the MORROW, because he would have known the CERTAINTY WHEREFORE he was accused of the JEWS, he loosed him [from *his* BANDS], and commanded the CHIEF-PRIESTS and All their COUNCIL to appear, and brought PAUL down, and set him before them.

CHAPTER XXIII.

§ LIX.

1 And PAUL earnestly beholding the COUNCIL, said, Men *and* Brethren, **ƒ** have lived in All good Conscience before GOD until This DAY.

2 And the HIGH-PRIEST Ananias commanded THEM that STOOD-BY him *to smite him on the MOUTH.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—20. Stephen thy MARTYR. 2. to smite His MOUTH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. his NAME. And it came. 18 Thy Testimony concerning me. 26. What art thou about to do? For this MAN is. See 20, 30.

3 Then said PAUL unto him, GOD shall smite thee, *thou* whited Wall: for sittest **thou** to judge me after the LAW, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to law?

4 And THEY that STOOD-BY said, Revilest thou GOD'S HIGH-PRIEST?

5 Then said PAUL, I wist not, Brethren, That he was the High-priest: for it is written, "Thou shalt not speak evil of the Ruler of thy PEOPLE."

6 But when PAUL perceived That the ONE Part were Sadducees, and the OTHER Pharisees, he cried out in the COUNCIL, Men, and Brethren, **I** am a Pharisee, the Son † of a Pharisee: of the Hope and Resurrection of the Dead † **I** am called in question.

7 And when he had so said, there † arose a Dissension between the PHARISEES and SADDUCEES: and the MULTITUDE was divided.

8 For the Sadducees say that there is no Resurrection, neither Angel nor Spirit: but the Pharisees confess BOTH.

9 And there arose a great Cry: and † the SCRIBES *that were* of the PHARISEES' PART arose, and strove, saying, We find no Evil in this MAN: but if a Spirit or an Angel hath spoken to him, [let us not fight against God]. †

10 And when there arose a Great Dissension, the CHIEF-CAPTAIN fearing lest PAUL should have been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the SOLDIERS to go down, and to take him by force

from among them, [and] to bring *him* into the CASTLE.

11 And the *Night FOLLOWING the LORD stood by him, and said, Be of good cheer, [Paul]: for as thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear witness also at Rome.

§ LX.

12 And when it was Day, [certain of] the JEWS banded together, and bound themselves under a curse, saying that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed PAUL.

13 And THEY were more than forty which [had] MADE This CONSPIRACY.

14 And they came to the CHIEF-PRIESTS and ELDERS, and said, We have bound ourselves under a great Curse, that we will eat nothing until we have slain PAUL.

15 Now therefore *ye* with the COUNCIL signify to the CHIEF-CAPTAIN that he bring him down unto you [To-morrow], as though *ye* would enquire something more perfectly concerning him: and **we**, or ever he COME-NEAR, are ready to KILL him.

16 And when Paul's SISTER'S SON heard of *their* LYING-IN-WAIT, he went and entered into the CASTLE, and told PAUL.

17 Then PAUL called one of the CENTURIONS unto *him*, and said, Bring this YOUNG-MAN unto the CHIEF-CAPTAIN: for he hath a certain thing to tell him.

18 So HE took him, and brought *him* to the CHIEF-CAPTAIN, and said, *Paul the PRISONER called

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—11. FOLLOWING Night. 18. the PRISONER Paul.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—6. of PHARISEES: of the Hope. 6. I am called in question. 7. fell a Dissension. 9. some of the SCRIBES *that were*. 9. *be it so*. And when there arose. See 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 15.

me unto *him*, and prayed me to bring This YOUNG-MAN unto thee, who hath something to say unto thee.

19 Then the CHIEF-CAPTAIN took him by the HAND, and went *with him* aside privately, and asked *him*, What is that thou hast to tell me?

20 And he said, The JEWS have agreed to DESIRE thee that thou wouldest bring down PAUL Tomorrow into the COUNCIL, as though † they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly.

21 But do not *thou* yield unto them: for there lie in wait for him of them more than forty Men, which have bound themselves with an oath, that they will neither eat nor drink till they killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a PROMISE from thee.

§ LXI.

22 So the CHIEF-CAPTAIN *then* let the YOUNG-MAN depart, and charged *him*, See *thou* tell No man That thou hast shewed These things to me.

23 And he called unto *him* † Two CENTURIONS, saying, Make ready two hundred Soldiers to go to Cæsarea, and Horsemen threescore and ten, and Spearmen two hundred, at the Third Hour of the NIGHT;

24 And provide *them* Beasts, that they may set PAUL on, and bring *him* safe unto Felix the GOVERNOR.

25 And he wrote a Letter after this MANNER:

26 Claudius Lysias unto the

MOST-EXCELLENT Governor Felix *sendeth* greeting.

27 This MAN was taken of the JEWS, and should have been killed of them: then came I with an ARMY, and rescued † him, having understood That he was a Roman.

28 And when I would have known the CAUSE wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their COUNCIL:

29 Whom I perceived to be accused of Questions of their LAW, but to have nothing laid to his Charge worthy of Death or of Bonds.

30 And when it was told me that † the JEWS laid wait for the MAN, I sent straightway to thee, and gave commandment to his ACCUSERS also to † say before thee WHAT *they had* against him. [Farewell.]

31 Then the SOLDIERS, as IT was COMMANDED them, took PAUL, and brought *him* by † NIGHT to ANTIPATRIS.

32 On the MORROW they left the HORSEMEN to † go with him, and returned to the CASTLE:

33 Who, when they came to CÆSAREA, and delivered the EPISTLE to the GOVERNOR, presented PAUL also before him.

34 And when † the GOVERNOR had read *the letter*, he asked of What Province he was. And when he understood That *he was* of Cilicia;

35 I will hear thee, said he, when thine ACCUSERS are also come. And he commanded him

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—20. it would enquire somewhat. 23. Certain Two of the CENTURIONS, saying. 27. *him*, having. 30. there was to be a Lying-in-wait for. 30. speak against him before thee. Then the SOLDIERS. 31. Night. 32. proceed with him. 34. he had read. See 30.

to be kept in HEROD'S JUDGMENT-HALL.

CHAPTER XXIV.

§ LXII.

1 And after Five Days *Ananias the HIGH-PRIEST descended with †the ELDERS, and *with* a certain Orator *named* Tertullus, who informed the GOVERNOR gainst PAUL.

2 And when he was called forth, TERTULLUS began to accuse *him*, saying, Seeing that by thee we enjoy Great Quietness, and that †very worthy Deeds are done unto this NATION by THY Providence,

3 We accept *it* always, and in all places, Most-noble Felix, with All Thankfulness.

4 Notwithstanding, that I be not further tedious unto thee, I pray thee that thou wouldest hear us of THY Clemency a few words.

5 For we have found this MAN a pestilent *fellow*, and a Mover of †Sedition among All *the JEWS throughout the WORLD, and a Ringleader of the SECT of the NAZARENES:

6 Who also hath gone about to profane the TEMPLE: whom we took, [and would have judged according to OUR Law.

7 But *the CHIEF-CAPTAIN Lysias came *upon us*, and with Great Violence took *him* away out of our HANDS,

8 Commanding his ACCUSERS to come unto thee]: by examining of whom thyself mayest take

knowledge of All these things, whereof ~~we~~ we accuse him.

9 And the JEWS also assented, saying that these things were so.

10 Then PAUL, after that the GOVERNOR had beckoned unto him to speak, answered, Forasmuch as I know that thou hast been of Many Years a Judge unto this NATION, I do [the more] cheerfully answer for myself:

11 Because that thou mayest understand, That there are but twelve Days since I went up to Jerusalem for to worship.

12 And they neither found me in the TEMPLE disputing with any man, neither †raising up the People, neither in the SYNAGOGUES, nor in the CITY:

13 Neither can they prove the things whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confess unto thee, That after the WAY which they call Heresy, so worship I the GOD of my FATHERS, believing †All THINGS which are WRITTEN in the LAW and in the PROPHETS:

15 And have Hope toward GOD, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a Resurrection [of the Dead], both of the Just and Unjust.

16 And herein do I exercise myself to have always a Conscience void of offence toward GOD, and toward MEN.

17 Now after many Years I came to bring Alms to my NATION, and Offerings.

18 Whereupon Certain Jews

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. the HIGH-PRIEST Ananias. 5. THOSE JEWS which are throughout. 7. Lysias the CHIEF-CAPTAIN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. certain Elders. 2. Reformatations are going on in this NATION by THY Providence. 5. Seditious among. 12. making an Obstruction of the People. 14. the THINGS which. See 6—8, 10, 15.

from ASIA found me purified in the TEMPLE, neither with Multitude, nor with Tumult.

19 Who ought to have been here before thee, and object, if they had Ought against me.

20 Or else let these same *here* say, †if they have found Any Evil-doing in me, while I stood before the COUNCIL,

21 Except it be for This One Voice, that I cried standing among them, Touching the Resurrection of the Dead I am called in question by you This-day.

22 And [when] FELIX [heard these things], having more perfect knowledge of *that way*, [he] deferred them, and said, When Lysias the CHIEF-CAPTAIN shall come down, I will know the uttermost of your MATTER.

23 And he commanded a CENTURION to keep †PAUL, and to let *him* have Liberty, and that he should forbid None of his ACQUAINTANCE to minister [or come] unto him.

§ LXIII.

24 And after certain Days, when FELIX came † with * his wife Drusilla, which was a Jewess, he sent for PAUL; and heard him concerning the FAITH in †Christ.

25 And as he reasoned of Righteousness, Temperance, and *JUDGMENT to COME, FELIX trembled, and answered, Go thy way for THIS TIME; when I have a convenient Season, I will call for thee.

26 He hoped also That Money

should have been given [him] of PAUL, that he might loose him: wherefore he sent for Him the oftener, and communed with him.

27 But after two Years Porcius Festus came into FELIX' room: and FELIX, willing to shew the JEWS a Pleasure, left PAUL bound.

CHAPTER XXV.

1 Now when Festus was come into the PROVINCE, after Three Days he ascended from Cæsarea to Jerusalem.

2 Then the HIGH-PRIEST and the CHIEF of the JEWS informed him against PAUL, and besought him,

3 And desired Favour against him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem, laying wait in the WAY to kill him.

4 But FESTUS answered, that PAUL should be kept at Cæsarea, and that he himself would depart shortly *thither*.

5 Let THEM therefore, said he, which among you are ABLE, go down with *me*, and †accuse this MAN, if there be any wickedness in him.

6 And when he had tarried among them † more than ten Days, he went down unto Cæsarea; and the NEXT-DAY sitting on the JUDGMENT-SEAT commanded PAUL to be brought.

7 And when he was come, the JEWS which CAME-DOWN from Jerusalem stood round †about and

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—24. Drusilla his WIFE.

25. THAT JUDGMENT which is to COME.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—20. What Evil-doing they found in me, while. 23. him, and to let. 24. with Drusilla, his-own Wife, who was. 24. Christ Jesus. And 5. if there be any harm in the Man, accuse him. And when. 6. not more than eight or ten Days. 7. about him, and laid. See 22 (thrice), 23, 26.

laid Many and Grievous Complaints against PAUL, which they could not prove.

8 While † he answered for himself, Neither against the LAW of the JEWS, neither against the TEMPLE, nor yet against Cæsar, have I offended any thing at all.

9 But FESTUS, willing to do the JEWS a Pleasure, answered PAUL, and said, Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these things before me?

10 Then said PAUL, I stand at Cæsar's JUDGMENT-SEAT, where I ought to be judged: to the Jews have I done no wrong, as *thou very well knowest.

11 † For if I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy of Death, I refuse not to DIE: but if there be none of these things whereof these accuse me, no man may deliver Me unto Them. I appeal unto Cæsar.

12 Then FESTUS, when he had conferred with the COUNCIL, answered, Hast thou appealed unto Cæsar? unto Cæsar shalt thou go.

§ LXIV.

13 And after certain Days *KING Agrippa and Bernice came unto Cæsarea to salute FESTUS.

14 And when they had been there Many Days, FESTUS declared PAUL'S CAUSE unto the KING, saying, There is a certain Man left in Bonds by Felix:

15 About whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the CHIEF-PRIESTS and the ELDERS of the JEWS in-

formed me, desiring to have † Judgment against him.

16 To whom I answered, It is not the Manner of the Romans to † deliver Any Man [to die], before that HE which is ACCUSED have the ACCUSERS Face to Face, and have Licence to answer for himself concerning the CRIME laid against him.

17 Therefore, when they were come hither, without any Delay on the MORROW I sat on the JUDGMENT-SEAT, and commanded the MAN to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the ACCUSERS stood up, they brought None Accusation of † such things as ‡ supposed:

19 But had certain Questions against him of their OWN Superstition, and of One Jesus which was dead, whom PAUL affirmed to be alive.

20 And because ‡ doubted of such manner of QUESTIONS, I asked him whether he would go to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these matters.

21 But when PAUL had appealed to be reserved unto the HEARING of AUGUSTUS, I commanded him to be kept till I might send him † to Cæsar.

22 Then Agrippa † said unto FESTUS, I would also hear the MAN myself. To-morrow, said † HE, thou shalt hear him.

23 And on the MORROW, when AGRIPPA was come, and BERNICE, with Great Pomp, and was entered into the PLACE-OF-HEARING, with

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—10. thou also very well knowest. 13. Agrippa the KING.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. PAUL answered for. 11. If then I be an offender. 15. Sentence given against him. 16. deliver up Any Man before. 18. such Evil things as. 21. up to Cæsar. 22. said. 22. he. See 16.

the † CHIEF-CAPTAINS, and * Principal Men of the CITY, at FESTUS' commandment PAUL was brought forth.

24 And FESTUS said, King Agrippa, and All MEN which ARE HERE PRESENT with us, ye see this man, about whom All the MULTITUDE of the JEWS have dealt with me, both at Jerusalem, and *also* here, crying that he ought not to live any longer.

25 But when I found that he had committed Nothing worthy of Death, and that he himself hath appealed to AUGUSTUS, I have determined to send † him.

26 Of whom I have no certain thing to write unto my LORD. Wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and specially before thee, O King Agrippa, that, after EXAMINATION had, I might have somewhat to write.

27 For it seemeth to Me unreasonable to send a Prisoner, and not withal to signify the CRIMES *laid* against him.

CHAPTER XXVI.

§ LXV.

1 Then Agrippa said unto PAUL, Thou art permitted to speak for thyself. Then PAUL stretched forth the HAND, and answered for himself:

2 I think myself happy, King Agrippa, because I shall answer for myself This-day before thee touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews:

3 Especially *because I know* thee to be expert in All CUSTOMS and Questions which are among the Jews: wherefore I beseech † thee to hear me patiently.

4 My MANNER-OF-LIFE from *my* Youth, * which WAS at the First among mine own NATION † at Jerusalem, know All † the JEWS;

5 Which knew me from the beginning, if they would testify, That after the MOST-STRAITEST Sect of OUR Religion I lived a Pharisee.

6 And now I stand and am judged for the Hope of the PROMISE made of GOD unto our FATHERS:

7 Unto which *promise* our TWELVE-TRIBES, instantly serving *God* Day and Night, hope to come. For Which Hope's sake, † King Agrippa, I am accused of the JEWS.

8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that GOD should raise the Dead?

9 I † verily thought with myself, that I ought to do Many things contrary to the NAME of Jesus of NAZARETH.

10 † Which thing I also did in Jerusalem: and Many of the SAINTS did I shut up in † Prison, having received AUTHORITY from the CHIEF-PRIESTS; and when they were put to death, I gave my Voice against *them*.

11 And I punished them oft in Every SYNAGOGUE, and compelled *them* to blaspheme: [and] being exceedingly mad against them, I

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—23. THOSE Men that were of Eminence. 4. THAT which WAS.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. Chief-captains and. 25. *him*. 3. *thee*. 4. and in Jerusalem. 4. the Jews. 7. O King, I am accused of the Jews. 9. then thought. 10. Wherefore also I did *them* in Jerusalem. 10. Prisons, having received. See 11.

persecuted *them* even unto STRANGE Cities.

12 Whereupon as I went to DAMASCUS with *Authority and Commission from the CHIEF-PRIESTS,

13 At Midday, O King, I saw in the WAY a Light from heaven, above the BRIGHTNESS of the SUN, shining round about me and THEM which JOURNEYED with me.

14 And when † we were all fallen to the EARTH, I heard a Voice † speaking unto me, [and saying] in the HEBREW Tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou Me? *it is hard* for thee to kick against the Pricks.

15 And ¶ said, Who art thou, Lord? And † HE said, ¶ am Jesus whom *thou* persecutest.

16 But rise, and stand upon thy FEET: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a Minister and a Witness both of these things † which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee:

17 Delivering thee from the PEOPLE, and † *from* the GENTILES, unto whom † now I send thee,

18 To open their Eyes, *and* to TURN *them* from Darkness to Light, and *from* the POWER of SATAN unto GOD, that they may RECEIVE Forgiveness of Sins, and Inheritance among THEM which are SANCTIFIED by *Faith that is in me.

19 Whereupon, O King Agrippa,

I was not disobedient unto the HEAVENLY Vision:

20 But shewed first unto THEM † of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout All the COASTS of JUDÆA, and *then* to the GENTILES, that they should repent and turn to GOD, and do Works meet for REPENTANCE.

21 For these causes the JEWS caught Me in the TEMPLE, and went about to kill *me*.

22 Having therefore obtained *Help † of GOD, I continue unto this DAY, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things than those which the PROPHETS and Moses did say should come:

23 That CHRIST should suffer, *and* that he should be the first that should rise from the Dead, and should shew Light unto the PEOPLE, and to the GENTILES.

§ LXVI.

24 And as he thus spake for himself, FESTUS said with a Loud VOICE, Paul, thou art beside thyself; MUCH Learning doth make Thee mad.

25 But HE said, I am not mad, Most-noble Festus; but speak forth the Words of Truth and Soberness.

26 For the KING knoweth of these things, before whom also I speak freely: for I am persuaded that none of these things are hidden from him; for this thing was not done in a Corner.

27 King Agrippa, believest thou

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—12. THAT Authority and Commission which was from. 18. THAT Faith which is. 22. THAT Help which is of GOD.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. all were fallen to the EARTH. 14. saying unto me. 15. the LORD said. 16. in the which thou hast seen me, and of those things. 17. from. 17. ¶ send thee. 20. in Damascus, and also in Jerusalem, and All the COASTS of JUDÆA. 22. from GOD. See 14.

he PROPHETS? I know That thou believest.

28 Then AGRIPPA †said unto PAUL, Almost thou †persuadest Me to be a Christian.

29 And PAUL †said, I would to GOD, that not only *thou*, but also All that HEAR me This-day, were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these BONDS.

30 And [when he had thus spoken], the KING rose up, and the GOVERNOR, and BERNICE, and THEY that SAT with them:

31 And when they were gone aside, they talked between themselves, saying, This MAN doeth nothing worthy of Death or of Bonds.

32 Then said Agrippa unto FESTUS, This MAN might have been set at liberty, if he had not appealed unto Cæsar.

CHAPTER XXVII.

§ LXVII.

1 And when it was determined that we should SAIL into ITALY, they delivered PAUL and Certain Other Prisoners unto *one* named Julius, a Centurion of Augustus' Band.

2 And entering into a Ship of Adramyttium, † we launched, meaning to sail by the COASTS of ASIA; *one* Aristarchus, a Macedonian of Thessalonica, being with us.

3 And the NEXT *day* we touched at Sidon. And JULIUS courteously entreated PAUL, and gave *him* liberty to go unto his Friends, to refresh himself.

4 And when we had launched from thence, we sailed under CYPRUS, because the WINDS WERE contrary.

5 And when we had sailed over *the SEA of CILICIA and Pamphylia, we came to †Myra, *a city* of LYCIA.

6 And there the CENTURION found a Ship of Alexandria sailing into ITALY; and he put us therein.

7 And when we had sailed slowly Many Days, and scarce were come over against CNIDUS, the WIND not suffering us, we sailed under CRETE, over against Salmone;

8 And, hardly passing it, came into a Place which is called The Fair Havens; nigh whereunto was the City of Lasea.

9 Now when Much Time was spent, and when SAILING was now dangerous, because the FAST was now already PAST, PAUL admonished *them*,

10 And said unto them, Sirs, I perceive That *this* VOYAGE will be with Hurt and Much Damage, not only of the LADING and SHIP, but also of our LIVES.

11 Nevertheless the CENTURION believed the MASTER and the OWNER-OF-THE-SHIP, more than *those* THINGS which were SPOKEN by PAUL.

12 And because the HAVEN was not commodious to winter in, the MORE part advised to depart thence also, if by any means they might attain to Phenice, *and there* to winter; *which is* an Haven of

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—5. THAT SEA which over against CILICIA.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—28. *said* unto PAUL, Almost thou persuadest to make Me a Christian. 29. *said*. 2. about to sail unto *some* PLACES along *the coast of* Asia we launched; *one* Aristarchus, a Macedonian. 5. Myrrha. See 30.

CRETE, and lieth toward the South-west and North-west.

13 And when the South-wind blew softly, supposing that they had obtained *their* PURPOSE, loosing *thence*, they sailed close by CRETE.

14 But not long after there arose against it *a tempestuous Wind, CALLED †Euroclydon.

15 And when the SHIP was caught, and could not bear up into the WIND we let *her* drive.

16 And running under a certain Island which is called †Clauda, we had much work to come by the BOAT:

17 Which when they had taken up, they used Helps, undergirding the SHIP; and, fearing lest they should fall into the QUICKSANDS, strake SAIL, and so were driven.

18 And we being exceedingly tossed with a tempest, the NEXT *day* they lightened the ship;

19 And the THIRD *day* † we cast out with our own hands the TACKLING of the SHIP.

20 And when neither Sun nor Stars in Many Days appeared, and no small Tempest lay on *us*, † All Hope that we should be SAVED was [then] taken away.

21 † But after Long Abstinence PAUL stood forth in the Midst of them, and said, Sirs, ye should have hearkened unto me, and not have loosed from CRETE, and to have gained this HARM and LOSS.

22 And NOW I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no Loss of *any man's* Life among you, but of the SHIP.

23 For there stood by me † this

NIGHT the Angel of GOD, whose I am, and whom I serve,

24 Saying, Fear not, PAUL; thou must be brought before Cæsar: and, lo, GOD hath given thee All THEM that SAIL with thee.

25 Wherefore, Sirs, be of good cheer: for I believe GOD, That it shall be even as it was told me.

26 Howbeit we must be cast upon a certain Island.

§ LXVIII.

27 But when the Fourteenth Night was come, as we were driven up and down in ADRIA, about MIDNIGHT the SHIPMEN deemed that they drew near to Some Country;

28 And sounded, and found *it* twenty Fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded again, and found *it* fifteen Fathoms.

29 Then fearing lest we should have fallen upon Rocks, they cast four Anchors out of the Stern, and wished for the Day.

30 And as the SHIPMEN were about to flee out of the SHIP, when they had let down the BOAT into the SEA, under Colour as though they would have cast Anchors out of the Foreship,

31 PAUL said to the CENTURION and to the SOLDIERS, Except these abide in the SHIP, *ye* cannot be saved.

32 Then the SOLDIERS cut off the ROPES of the BOAT, and let *her* fall off.

33 And while the Day was coming on, PAUL besought *them* all to take Meat, saying, This Day is

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14. THAT tempestuous Wind which is CALLED.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. Euraquilo. 16. Cauda. 19. they cast out with their own hands. 20. all Hope. 21. And after. 23. This NIGHT. See 20.

the Fourteenth Day that ye have tarried and continued fasting, having taken Nothing.

34 Wherefore I pray you to take *some* Meat: for this is for YOUR Health: for there shall not an Hair † fall from the HEAD of any of you.

35 And when he had thus spoken, he took Bread, and gave thanks to GOD in presence of them all: and when he had broken *it*, he began to eat.

36 Then were they all of good cheer, and *they* also took *some* Meat.

37 And we were in ALL in the SHIP [two hundred] threescore and sixteen Souls.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the SHIP, and cast out the WHEAT into the SEA.

39 And when it was Day, they knew not the LAND: but they discovered a certain Creek with a Shore, into the which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the SHIP.

40 And when they had taken up the ANCHORS, they committed *themselves* unto the SEA, and loosed the RUDDER BANDS, and hoised up the MAINSAIL to the WIND, and made toward SHORE.

41 And falling into a Place where two seas met, they ran the SHIP aground; and the FOREPART stuck fast, and remained unmoveable, but the HINDER-PART was broken by the VIOLENCE [of the WAVES].

42 And the SOLDIERS' Counsel was to kill the PRISONERS, lest any of them should swim out, and escape.

43 But the CENTURION, willing to save PAUL, kept them from *their* PURPOSE; and commanded that THEY which COULD †swim should cast *themselves* first into the sea, and get to LAND:

44 And the REST, SOME on Boards, and SOME on *broken pieces* of the SHIP. And so it came to pass, that they escaped all safe to LAND.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

1 And when †they were escaped, then they knew That the ISLAND was called Melita.

2 And the BARBAROUS people shewed us no LITTLE Kindness: for they kindled a Fire, and received us every one, because of the PRESENT RAIN, and because of the COLD.

3 And when PAUL had gathered a Bundle of Sticks, and laid *them* on the FIRE, there came a Viper †out of the HEAT, and fastened on his HAND.

4 And when the BARBARIANS saw the *venomous* BEAST hang on his HAND, they said among themselves, No doubt this MAN is a Murderer, whom, though he hath escaped the SEA, yet VENGEANCE suffereth not to live.

5 And HE shook off the BEAST into the FIRE and felt no harm.

6 Howbeit THEY looked when he should have swollen, or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they had had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they changed their minds, and said that he was a God.

7 In the same QUARTERS were Possessions of the CHIEF man of

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—34. be lost from the HEAD. 43. swim out should cast themselves. 1. we were escaped, then we knew. 3. from the HEAT. See 37, 41.

the ISLAND, whose Name was Publius; who received us, and lodged us † Three Days courteously.

8 And it came to pass, that the FATHER of PUBLIUS lay sick of a Fever and of a Bloody-flux: to whom PAUL entered in, and prayed, and laid his HANDS on him, and healed him.

9 So when this was done, OTHERS also, which HAD Diseases in the ISLAND, came, and were healed:

10 Who also honoured us with Many Honours; and when we departed, they laded *us* with such THINGS as were NECESSARY.

§ LXIX.

11 And after Three Months we departed in a Ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the ISLE, whose Sign was Castor and Pol-lux.

12 And landing at Syracuse, we tarried *there* three Days.

13 And from thence we fetched a compass, and came to Rhegium: and after One Day the South-wind blew, and we came the Next-day to Puteoli:

14 Where we found Brethren, and were desired to tarry with them seven Days: and so we went toward ROME.

15 And from thence, when the BRETHREN heard of us, they came to meet us as far as Appii Forum, and The Three Taverns: whom when PAUL saw, he thanked GOD, and took Courage.

16 And when we † came to Rome, [the CENTURION delivered the PRISONERS to the CAPTAIN-OF-THE-GUARD: but] PAUL was

suffered to dwell by himself with a SOLDIER that KEPT him.

17 And it came to pass, that after three Days † PAUL called the CHIEF of the JEWS together: and when they were come together, he said unto them, Men *and* Brethren, though ~~Æ~~ I have committed nothing against the PEOPLE, or CUSTOMS of our FATHERS, yet was I delivered Prisoner from Jerusalem into the HANDS of the ROMANS.

18 Who when they had examined me, would have let *me* go, because there WAS No Cause of Death in me.

19 But when the JEWS spake against *it*, I was constrained to appeal unto Cæsar; not that I had ought to accuse my NATION of.

20 For This CAUSE therefore have I called for you, to see *you*, and to speak with *you*: because that for the HOPE of ISRAEL I, am bound with this CHAIN.

21 And THEY said unto him, ~~THE~~ neither received Letters out of JUDÆA concerning thee, neither any of the BRETHREN that came shewed or spake Any Harm of thee.

22 But we desire to hear of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this SECT, we know That every where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a Day, there came many to him into *his* LODGING; to whom he expounded and testified the KINGDOM of GOD, persuading them concerning JESUS, both out of the LAW of Moses, and *out of* the PROPHETS, from Morning till Evening.

24 And SOME believed the

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—7. three Days courteously. 16. were entered into Rome. 17. he called the CHIEF *men* of the JEWS. See 16.

THINGS which were SPOKEN, and SOME believed not.

25 And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that PAUL had spoken one Word, Well spake the HOLY GHOST by Esaias the PROPHET unto our FATHERS,

26 Saying, "Go unto this PEOPLE, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive:

27 For the HEART of this PEOPLE is waxed gross, and their EARS are dull of hearing, and their EYES have they closed; lest they should see with *their* EYES, and hear with *their* EARS, and understand with *their* HEART, and

should be converted, and I should heal them." †

28 Be it known therefore unto you, That † the SALVATION of GOD is sent unto the GENTILES, and *that they* will hear it.

29 [And when he had said these words, the JEWS departed, and had Great Reasoning among themselves.]

30 And † PAUL dwelt two whole Years in his Own Hired-house, and received ALL that CAME-IN unto him,

31 Preaching the KINGDOM of GOD, and teaching *those* THINGS which concern the LORD Jesus Christ, with All Confidence, no man forbidding him. †

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—28. This SALVATION of GOD. 30. he dwelt. 31. *Sub-*
scription: THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES. See 29.

† 28. Isaiah vi. 9.

TO THE ROMANS.

CHAPTER I.

SECTION I.

1 Paul, a Servant of † Jesus Christ, * called *to be* an Apostle, separated unto the Gospel of God,

2 Which he had promised afore by his PROPHETS in the holy Scriptures,

3 Concerning * his SON Jesus Christ our LORD, which was MADE of the Seed of David according to the Flesh;

4 * And declared *to be* the Son of God with Power, according to the Spirit of Holiness, by the Resurrection from the Dead:

5 By whom we have received Grace and Apostleship, for Obedience to the Faith among All NATIONS, for his NAME:

6 Among whom are *ye* also the Called of Jesus Christ:

7 To ALL that BE in Rome, * Beloved of God, Called *to be* Saints. Grace to you and Peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

8 First, I thank my GOD through Jesus Christ † for you all, That

your FAITH is spoken of throughout the Whole WORLD.

9 For GOD is my Witness, whom I serve with my SPIRIT in the GOSPEL of his SON, that without ceasing I make Mention of you always in my PRAYERS;

10 Making request, if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the WILL of GOD to come unto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you Some spiritual Gift, to the end ye may be ESTABLISHED;

12 **That** is, that I may be comforted together with you by the MUTUAL Faith both of you and me.

13 Now I would not have you ignorant, Brethren, That oftentimes I purposed to come unto you, but was let HITHERTO, that I might have † some Fruit among you also, even as among OTHER Gentiles.

14 I am Debtor both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians; both to the Wise, and to the Unwise.

15 So, as MUCH as in me is, I

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. a Called Apostle. 3. THAT SON of his, Jesus Christ our LORD, who was MADE. 4. who was DECLARED. 7. the Beloved of God, the Called Saints.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—Title: TO THE ROMANS. 1. Christ Jesus. 8. concerning you all. 13. Some Fruit.

am ready to preach the gospel to YOU that are *at Rome also.

16 For I am not ashamed of the GOSPEL [of CHRIST]: for it is the Power of God unto Salvation to Every ONE that BELIEVETH; to the Jew [first], and also to the Greek.

17 For therein is the Righteousness of God revealed from Faith to Faith: as it is written, "The JUST shall live by Faith." †

§ II.

18 For the Wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against All Ungodliness and Unrighteousness of *Men, who HOLD the TRUTH in Unrighteousness;

19 Because THAT which may be KNOWN of GOD is manifest in them; for GOD hath shewed *it* unto Them.

20 For the INVISIBLE things of him from the Creation of the World are clearly seen, being understood by the THINGS that are MADE, *even* His ETERNAL Power and Godhead; so that they ARE without excuse:

21 Because that, when they knew GOD, they glorified *him* not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their IMAGINATIONS, and Their FOOLISH Heart was darkened.

23 Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,

24 And changed the GLORY of the UNCORRUPTIBLE God into an Image made like to Corruptible Man, and to Birds, and Four-footed-beasts, and Creeping-things.

24 Wherefore GOD also gave them up to Uncleaness through the LUSTS of their own HEARTS, to DISHONOUR their own BODIES between themselves:

25 Who changed the TRUTH of GOD into a LIE, and worshipped and served the CREATURE more than the CREATOR, who is blessed for EVER. Amen.

26 For this *cause* GOD gave them up unto vile Affections: for even their WOMEN did change the NATURAL Use into THAT which is AGAINST Nature:

27 And likewise also the MEN, leaving the NATURAL Use of the WOMAN, burned in their LUST one toward another; Men with Men working THAT which is UNSEEMLY, and receiving in themselves that RECOMPENCE of their ERROR which was meet.

28 And even as they did not like to retain GOD in *their* Knowledge, GOD gave them over to a Reprobate Mind, to do *those* THINGS which are not CONVENIENT:

29 Being filled with All Unrighteousness, [Fornication], Wickedness, Covetousness, Maliciousness; full of Envy, Murder, Debate, Deceit, Malignity; Whisperers,

30 Backbiters, Haters of God, Despiteful, Proud, Boasters, Inventors of Evil-things, Disobedient to Parents,

31 Without Understanding, Covenantbreakers, without Natural-affection, [Implacable], Unmerciful:

32 Who knowing the JUDGMENT

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—15. in Rome also. 18. THOSE Men who.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—See 16 (twice), 29, 31.

‡ 17. Habak. ii. 4.

of GOD, That THEY which COMMIT SUCH things are worthy of Death, not only † do the Same, but have pleasure in THEM that DO them.

CHAPTER II.

1 Therefore thou art inexcusable, O Man, Whosoever THOU art that JUDGEST: for wherein thou judgest ANOTHER, thou condemnest Thyself; for THOU that JUDGEST doest the SAME things.

2 But we are sure That the JUDGMENT of GOD is according to Truth against THEM which COMMIT SUCH things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O Man, *that JUDGEST THEM which DO SUCH things, and doest the same, That *thou* shalt escape the JUDGMENT of GOD?

4 Or despisest thou the RICHES of his GOODNESS and FORBEARANCE and LONGSUFFERING; not knowing That the GOODNESS of GOD leadeth Thee to Repentance?

5 But after thy HARDNESS and Impenitent Heart treasurest up unto thyself Wrath against the Day of Wrath and Revelation of the Righteous-judgment of GOD;

6 Who will render to every man according to his DEEDS:

7 To THEM who by Patient-continuance in Well-doing SEEK for Glory and Honour and Immortality, eternal Life:

8 But unto THEM that are CONTENTIOUS, and do not obey the TRUTH, but obey UNRIGHTEOUSNESS, † Indignation and Wrath,

9 Tribulation and Anguish,

upon EVERY Soul of Man that DOETH EVIL, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile;

10 But Glory, Honour, and Peace, to EVERY man that WORKETH GOOD, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile:

11 For there is no Respect-of-persons with GOD.

§ III.

12 For as many as have sinned without-law shall also perish without-law: and as many as have sinned in the Law shall be judged by the Law;—

13 For not the HEARERS of the †LAW *are* just before GOD, but the DOERS of the †LAW shall be justified.

14 For when *the Gentiles, which HAVE not the Law, do by Nature the THINGS contained in the LAW, these, having not the Law, are a Law unto themselves:

15 Which shew the WORK of the LAW written in their HEARTS, Their CONSCIENCE also bearing witness, and *their* THOUGHTS the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;—

16 In the Day when GOD shall judge the SECRETS of MEN by † Jesus Christ according to my GOSPEL.

17 † Behold, *thou* art called a Jew, and retest in the †LAW, and makest thy boast of God,

18 And knowest *his* will, and approvest the THINGS that are MORE-EXCELLENT, being instructed out of the LAW;

19 And art confident that thou thyself art a Guide of the Blind,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. THOU that JUDGEST. 14. THOSE Gentiles which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—32. are they who do the Same things, but are also they who have pleasure in. 8. Wrath and Indignation. 13. Law (a). 13. Law
16 Christ Jesus. 17. But if *thou*. 17. Law.

a Light of THEM *which are* in Darkness,

20 An Instructor of the Foolish, a Teacher of Babes, which hast the FORM of KNOWLEDGE and of the TRUTH in the †LAW.

21 THOU therefore which TEACHEST another, teachest thou not Thyself? THOU that PREACHEST a man should not steal, dost thou steal?

22 THOU that SAYEST a man should not commit-adultery, dost thou commit-adultery? THOU that ABHORREST IDOLS, dost thou commit-sacrilege?

23 Thou that makest thy boast of the Law, through BREAKING the LAW dishonourest thou GOD?

24 For the NAME of GOD is blasphemed among the GENTILES through you, as it is written.

25 For Circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the Law: but if thou be a Breaker of the Law, thy CIRCUMCISION is made Uncircumcision.

26 Therefore if the UNCIRCUMCISION keep the RIGHTEOUSNESS of the LAW, shall not his UNCIRCUMCISION be counted for Circumcision?

27 And shall not UNCIRCUMCISION which is by Nature, if it fulfil the LAW, judge THEE who by the Letter and Circumcision dost transgress the Law?

28 For HE is not a Jew, which is one OUTWARDLY; neither is *that* CIRCUMCISION, which is OUTWARD in the Flesh:

29 But HE *is* a Jew, which is one INWARDLY; and Circumcision

is that of the Heart, in the Spirit, and not in the Letter; Whose PRAISE is not of Men, but of GOD.

CHAPTER III.

§ IV.

1 What ADVANTAGE then hath the JEW? or What PROFIT *is there* of CIRCUMCISION?

2 Much, every Way: *chiefly, Because *that* unto them were committed the ORACLES of GOD.

3 For what if some did not believe? shall their UNBELIEF make the FAITH of GOD without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let GOD be true, but Every Man a Liar; † as it is written, "That thou mightest be justified in thy SAYINGS, and mightest overcome when thou art JUDGED." ‡

5 But if our UNRIGHTEOUSNESS commend the Righteousness of God, what shall we say? *Is* *GOD unrighteous who TAKETH VENGEANCE?—I speak as a Man—

6 God forbid: for then how shall GOD judge the WORLD?

7 For if the TRUTH of GOD hath more abounded through MY Lie unto his GLORY; why yet am I also judged as a Sinner?

8 And not *rather*,—as we be slanderously reported, [and] as some affirm that we say,—Let us do EVIL, that GOOD may come? Whose DAMNATION is just.

9 What then? are we better *than they*? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. First, indeed, That unto them. 5. THAT GOD unrighteous.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT—20. LAW; THOU. 4. even as.

‡ 4. Psalm li. 4.

and Gentiles, that they are all under Sin; *

10 As it is written, "There is none righteous, no, not one:

11 There is †NONE that UNDERSTANDETH, there is NONE that SEEKETH after GOD.

12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth Good, [no], not one. ‡

13 Their THROAT is an open Sepulchre; with their TONGUES they have used deceit; the Poison of Asps is under their LIPS: ‡

14 Whose MOUTH is full of Cursing and Bitterness: ‡

15 Their FEET are swift to shed Blood:

16 Destruction and Misery are in their WAYS:

17 And the Way of Peace have they not known: ‡

18 There is no Fear of God before their EYES." ‡

19 Now we know That what things soever the LAW saith, it saith to THEM *who are* under the LAW: that Every Mouth may be stopped, and All the WORLD may become guilty before GOD.

20 Therefore by the Deeds of the Law there shall No Flesh be justified in his sight: for by the Law is the Knowledge of Sin.

21 But now the Righteousness of God without the Law is manifested, being witnessed by the LAW and the PROPHETS;

22 Even the Righteousness of God *which is* by Faith of [Jesus] Christ unto All [and upon All]

THEM that BELIEVE: for there is no Difference:

23 For all have sinned, and come short of the Glory of God;

24 Being justified freely by HIS Grace through *the REDEMPTION that is in Christ Jesus:

25 Whom GOD hath set forth to be a Propitiation through FAITH in †HIS Blood, to declare his RIGHTEOUSNESS for the REMISSION of SINS that are PAST, through the FORBEARANCE of GOD;

26 To Declare, *I say*, at THIS Time his RIGHTEOUSNESS: that he might BE just, and the Justifier of HIM which BELIEVETH in Jesus.

27 Where is BOASTING then? It is excluded. By What Law? Of WORKS? Nay: but by the Law of Faith.

28 Therefore we conclude that a Man is justified by Faith without the Deeds of the Law.

29 *Is he* the GOD of the Jews only? *is he* not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also:

30 Seeing *it is* One GOD which shall justify the Circumcision by Faith, and Uncircumcision through FAITH.

31 Do we then make void the Law through FAITH? *God* forbid: yea, we establish the Law.

CHAPTER IV.

§ v.

1 What shall we say then that Abraham our †FATHER, as pertaining to the Flesh, hath found?

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—24. THAT REDEMPTION which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—11. none that understandeth. there is none that seeketh after GOD. 25. HIS-OWN Blood. 1. FOREFATHER as. See 8, 12, 22 (twice).

‡ 12. Psa. xiv. 1; liii. 1. † 13. Psa. v. 9; cxl. iii. ‡ 14. Psa. x. 7. ‡ 17. Isa. lix. 7. ‡ 18. Psa. xxxvi. 1.

2 For if Abraham were justified by Works, he hath *whereof* to glory; but not before GOD.

3 For what saith the SCRIPTURE? "Abraham believed GOD, and it was counted unto him for Righteousness." †

4 Now to HIM that WORKETH is the REWARD not reckoned of Grace, but of DEBT.

5 But to HIM that WORKETH not, but believeth on HIM that JUSTIFIETH the UNGODLY, his FAITH is counted for Righteousness.

6 Even as David also describeth the BLESSEDNESS of the MAN, unto whom GOD imputeth Righteousness without Works,

7 *Saying*, "Blessed are they Whose INIQUITIES are forgiven, and Whose SINS are covered.

8 Blessed is the Man, to whom the Lord will not impute Sin." †

9 *Cometh* this BLESSEDNESS then upon the CIRCUMCISION *only*, or upon the UNCIRCUMCISION also? for we say [That] FAITH was reckoned to ABRAHAM for Righteousness.

10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in Circumcision, or in Uncircumcision? Not in Circumcision, but in Uncircumcision.

11 And he received the Sign of Circumcision, a Seal of the RIGHTEOUSNESS of *the FAITH which *he had yet* being UNCIRCUMCISED: that he might BE the Father of All THEM that BELIEVE, *though they be not

circumcised; that RIGHTEOUSNESS might be IMPUTED unto them [also]:

12 And the Father of Circumcision to THEM *who are* not of the Circumcision only, but *who also WALK in the STEPS of *that* FAITH of our FATHER Abraham, which *he had* *being *yet* UNCIRCUMCISED.

13 For the PROMISE, that he should BE the Heir of the † WORLD, *was* not to ABRAHAM, or to his SEED, through the Law, but through the Righteousness of Faith.

14 For if THEY which are of the Law *be* Heirs, FAITH is made void, and the PROMISE made of none effect:

15 Because the LAW worketh Wrath: †for where no Law is, *there is* no Transgression.

16 Therefore *it is* of Faith, that *it might be* by Grace; to the end the PROMISE might BE sure to All the SEED; not to THAT only which is of the LAW, but to THAT also which is of the Faith of Abraham; who is the Father of us all,

17 As it is written, "I have made thee a Father of Many Nations," † before him whom he believed, *even* *God, who QUICKENETH the DEAD, and calleth *those* THINGS which BE not as though they WERE.

18 Who against Hope believed in Hope, that he might BECOME the Father of Many Nations, according to THAT which was

* EMPHATIC TEXT—11. THAT FAITH which he had in UNCIRCUMCISION. 11. by means of Uncircumcision; that. 12. to THEM also who WALK. 12. in UNCIRCUMCISION. 17. THAT God who.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—13. World.

15. but where. See 9, 11.

‡ 3. Gen. xv. 6. ‡ 8. Psa. xxxii. 1.

‡ 17. Gen. xvii. 5.

SPOKEN, "So shall thy SEED be." †

19 And being not weak in FAITH, he considered [not] HIS-OWN Body [now] dead, when he was about an Hundred-years old, †neither yet the DEADNESS of Sarah's WOMB:

20 *He staggered not at the PROMISE of GOD through UNBELIEF; but was strong in FAITH, giving Glory to GOD;

21 And being fully persuaded That, what he had promised, he was able also to perform.

22 †And therefore it was imputed to him for Righteousness.

23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, That it was imputed to him;

24 But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, *if we BELIEVE on HIM that RAISED-UP Jesus our LORD from the Dead;

25 Who was delivered for our OFFENCES, and was raised again for our JUSTIFICATION.

CHAPTER V.

§ VI.

1 Therefore being justified by Faith, we have Peace with GOD through our LORD Jesus Christ:

2 By whom also we have ACCESS [by FAITH] into this GRACE wherein we stand, and rejoice in Hope of the GLORY of GOD.

3 And not only *so*, but we glory in TRIBULATIONS also: knowing That TRIBULATION worketh Patience;

4 And PATIENCE, Experience; and EXPERIENCE, Hope:

5 And HOPE maketh not ashamed; Because the LOVE of GOD is shed abroad in our HEARTS by *the holy Ghost which is GIVEN unto us.

6 †For when we were [yet] without strength, in due Time Christ died for the Ungodly.

7 For scarcely for a Righteous man will one die; yet peradventure for a GOOD man some would even dare to die;

8 But †GOD commendeth HIS Love toward us, *in* That, while we were yet Sinners, Christ died for us:

9 Much more then, being now justified by his BLOOD, we shall be saved from WRATH through him.

10 For if, when we were Enemies, we were reconciled to GOD by the DEATH of his SON, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his LIFE.

11 And not only *so*, but we also joy in GOD through our LORD Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the ATONEMENT.

12 Wherefore, as by One Man SIN entered into the WORLD, and DEATH by SIN;—and so DEATH passed upon All Men, for that all have sinned:

13 For until the Law Sin was in the World: but Sin is not imputed when there is no Law.

14 Nevertheless DEATH reigned from Adam to Moses, even over

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—20. And he staggered not. 24. *even* to THEM who BELIEVE. 5. THAT holy Ghost.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—19. and the DEADNESS. 21. Wherefore it was imputed. 6. If then, when we were yet without strength, in due Time Christ died for the Ungodly;—For scarcely. 8. he commendeth. See 19 (twice), 2, 6.

† 18. Gen. xv. 5.

THEM that had not SINNED † after the SIMILITUDE of Adam's TRANSGRESSION, who is the Figure of HIM that was TO-COME.

15 But not as the OFFENCE, so [also] is the FREE-GIFT. For if through the OFFENCE of ONE MANY be dead, much more the GRACE of GOD, and the GIFT by * Grace, *which is* by ONE Man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto MANY.

16 And not as *it was* by One that sinned, *so is* the GIFT: for the JUDGMENT *was* by One to Condemnation, but the FREE-GIFT is of Many Offences unto Justification.

17 For if by * ONE *man's* OFFENCE DEATH reigned by ONE; much more THEY which RECEIVE ABUNDANCE of GRACE and [of the GIFT] of RIGHTEOUSNESS shall reign in Life by ONE, † Jesus Christ.

18 Therefore as by * the Offence of One *judgment came* upon All Men to Condemnation;—even so by the Righteousness of One *the free gift came* upon All Men unto Justification of Life.

19 For as by * ONE Man's DISOBEDIENCE MANY were made Sinners, so by the OBEDIENCE of ONE shall MANY be made Righteous.

§ VII.

20 Moreover the Law entered, that the OFFENCE might abound. But where SIN abounded, GRACE did much more abound:

21 That as SIN hath reigned unto DEATH, even so might GRACE

reign through Righteousness unto eternal Life by † Jesus Christ our LORD.

CHAPTER VI.

1 What shall we say then? † Shall we continue in SIN, that GRACE may abound?

2 God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to SIN, live any longer therein?

3 Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized * into [Jesus] Christ were baptized into his DEATH?

4 Therefore we are buried with him by BAPTISM into DEATH: that like as Christ was raised up from the Dead by the GLORY of the FATHER, even so *we* also should walk in Newness of Life.

5 For if we have been planted together in the LIKENESS of his DEATH, we shall be also *in the likeness* of *his* RESURRECTION:

6 † Knowing this, That our OLD Man is crucified with *him*, that the BODY of SIN might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not SERVE SIN.

7 For HE that is DEAD is freed from SIN.

8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe That we shall also live with him:

9 Knowing That Christ being raised from the Dead dieth no more; Death hath no more dominion over Him.

10 For in that he died, he died unto SIN once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto GOD.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—15. THAT Grace which is. 17. the OFFENCE of ONE, DEATH. 19. the DISOBEDIENCE of ONE Man MANY. 3. into Christ Jesus.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. in the SIMILITUDE. 17. Christ Jesus. 21. Christ Jesus our LORD. 1. Should we. 6. And knowing. See 15, 17, 3.

11 * Likewise reckon *ye* also yourselves to be dead indeed unto SIN, but alive unto GOD † through Jesus Christ [our LORD].

§ VIII.

12 Let not SIN therefore reign in your MORTAL Body, that ye should OBEY [it in] the LUSTS thereof.

13 Neither yield ye your MEMBERS *as* Instruments of Unrighteousness unto SIN: but yield yourselves unto GOD, † as those that are alive from the Dead, and your † MEMBERS *as* Instruments of Righteousness unto GOD.

14 For Sin shall not have dominion over You: for ye are not under the Law, but under Grace.

15 What then? † Shall we sin, Because we are not under the Law, but under Grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, That to whom ye yield yourselves Servants to obey, *his* Servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of Sin unto Death, or of Obedience unto Righteousness?

17 But GOD be thanked, That ye were the Servants of SIN, but ye have obeyed from the Heart that Form of Doctrine which was delivered you.

18 Being then made free from SIN, ye became the servants of RIGHTEOUSNESS.

19 I speak after the manner of men because of the INFIRMITY of your FLESH: for as ye have yielded your MEMBERS Servants to UNCLEANNESS and to INIQUITY [unto INIQUITY]; *even* so now

yield your MEMBERS Servants to RIGHTEOUSNESS unto Holiness.

20 For when ye were the Servants of SIN, ye were free from RIGHTEOUSNESS.

21 What Fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the END of those things *is* Death.

22 But now being made free from SIN, and become Servants to GOD, ye have your FRUIT unto Holiness, and the END everlasting Life.

23 For the WAGES of SIN *is* Death; but the GIFT of GOD *is* eternal Life * through Jesus Christ our LORD.

CHAPTER VII.

§ IX.

1 Know ye not, Brethren, for I speak to them that know the Law, *how* That the LAW hath dominion over a MAN as long as he liveth?

2 For the WOMAN which hath an HUSBAND is bound by the Law to *her* HUSBAND so long as he LIVETH; but if the HUSBAND be dead, she is loosed from the LAW of *her* HUSBAND.

3 So then if, while *her* HUSBAND liveth, she be married to another Man, she shall be called an Adulteress: but if her HUSBAND be dead, she is free from *that* LAW; so that she IS no Adulteress, though she be married to another Man.

4 Wherefore, my Brethren, *ye* also are become dead to the LAW by the BODY of CHRIST; that ye should be MARRIED to another,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—11. So also reckon *ye* yourselves to be dead indeed unto SIN. 23. through Christ Jesus our LORD.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—11. through Christ Jesus. 13. as if alive. 13. Members *as* Instruments. 15. Should we sin (*a*). See 11, 12, 19.

even to HIM who is RAISED from the Dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto GOD.

5 For when we were in the FLESH, the MOTIONS of SINS, which were by the LAW, did work in our MEMBERS to BRING-FORTH-FRUIT unto DEATH.

6 But * now we are delivered from the LAW, *that* being dead, wherein we were held; that we should serve in Newness of Spirit, and not *in* the Oldness of the Letter.

7 What shall we say then? *Is* the LAW Sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known SIN, but by the Law: for I had not known LUST, except the LAW had said, "Thou shalt not covet."

8 But SIN, taking Occasion by the COMMANDMENT, wrought in me All manner of Concupiscence. For without the Law Sin *was* dead.

9 For I was alive without the Law once: but when the COMMANDMENT came, SIN revived, and I died.

10 And * the COMMANDMENT, which *was ordained* to Life, * I found *to be* unto Death.

11 For SIN, taking Occasion by the COMMANDMENT, deceived me, and by it slew *me*.

12 Wherefore the LAW *is* holy, and the COMMANDMENT holy, and just, and good.

13 Was then THAT which is GOOD made Death unto me? God forbid. But *SIN, that it might appear Sin, working Death

in me by THAT which is GOOD; that SIN by the COMMANDMENT might become exceeding sinful.

14 For we know That the LAW is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under SIN.

15 For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, *that* do I not; but what I hate, *that* do I.

16 If then I do *that* which I would not, I consent unto the LAW That *it is* good.

17 Now then it is no more I that do it, but SIN that † DWELLETH in me.

18 For I know That in me, *that* is, in my FLESH, dwelleth no good thing: for to WILL is present with me; but *how* to PERFORM THAT which is GOOD I find not.

19 For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, *that* I do.

20 Now if I do † *that* I would not, it is no more I that do it, but SIN that DWELLETH in me.

21 I find then a LAW, That when I WOULD do GOOD, EVIL is present with me.

22 For I delight in the LAW of † GOD after the INWARD Man:

23 But I see Another Law in my MEMBERS, warring against the LAW of my MIND, and bringing me into captivity to * the LAW of SIN which IS in my MEMBERS.

24 O Wretched Man *that* I am! who shall deliver Me from the BODY of this DEATH?

25 † I thank GOD, through Jesus Christ our LORD. So then with

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—6. now, *the Law* being dead, we are delivered from the LAW, by which we were held, that. 10. THAT COMMANDMENT which. 10. the same I found. 13. SIN *was*; that. 23 THAT LAW.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—17. INDWELLETH in me. 20. *that* I would not. 22. the MIND after. 25. Thanks *be* to GOD.

the MIND & myself serve the Law of God; but with the FLESH the Law of Sin.

CHAPTER VIII.

1 *There is* therefore now No Condemnation to THEM which are in Christ Jesus, [who WALK not after the Flesh, but after the Spirit].

2 For the LAW of the SPIRIT of LIFE in Christ Jesus hath made †me free from the LAW of SIN and DEATH.

3 For what the LAW COULD not do, in that it was weak through the FLESH, GOD sending his OWN Son in the Likeness of *sinful Flesh, and for Sin, condemned SIN in the FLESH:

4 That the RIGHTEOUSNESS of the LAW might be fulfilled in US, who WALK not after the Flesh, but after the Spirit.

5 For THEY that ARE after the Flesh do mind the THINGS of the the FLESH; but THEY that are after the Spirit the THINGS of the SPIRIT.

6 For *to be CARNALLY-MINDED *is* Death; but to be SPIRITUALLY-MINDED *is* Life and Peace.

7 Because the *CARNAL MIND *is* Enmity against God: for it is not subject to the LAW of GOD, neither indeed can be.

8 So then THEY that ARE in the Flesh cannot please God.

9 But *ye* are not in the Flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, *he* is none of his.

10 And if Christ *be* in you, the BODY *is* dead, because of Sin; but the SPIRIT *is* Life, because of Righteousness.

11 But if the SPIRIT of HIM that RAISED-UP Jesus from the Dead dwell in you, HE that RAISED-UP †CHRIST from the Dead shall also quicken your MORTAL Bodies by †HIS Spirit that DWELLETH in you.

§ x.

12 Therefore, Brethren, we are Debtors, not to the FLESH, to LIVE after the Flesh.

13 For if ye live after the Flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the DEEDS of the BODY, ye shall live.

14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, *they* are the Sons of God.

15 For ye have not received the Spirit of Bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of Adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

16 The SPIRIT itself beareth witness with our SPIRIT, that we are the Children of God:

17 And if Children, then Heirs; Heirs of God, and Joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with *him*, that we may be also glorified together.

18 For I reckon That the SUFFERINGS of *this* PRESENT Time *are* not worthy *to be compared* with the GLORY which SHALL be revealed in us.

19 For the EARNEST-EXPECTATION of the CREATURE waiteth

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. the Flesh of Sin. 6. the MIND of the FLESH *is* Death; but the MIND of the SPIRIT *is*. 7. the MIND of the FLESH *is*.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—2. thee free (e). 11. Christ. 11. the SPIRIT that. [*This was ascertained to be the true reading by Dr. Tregelles*]. See 1.

for the MANIFESTATION of the SONS of GOD.

20 For the CREATURE was made subject to VANITY, not willingly, but by reason of HIM who hath SUBJECTED *the same* in Hope,

21 Because the CREATURE itself also shall be delivered from the BONDAGE of CORRUPTION into the GLORIOUS LIBERTY of the CHILDREN of GOD.

22 For we know That the Whole CREATION groaneth and travaileth in pain together until NOW.

23 And not only *they*, but ourselves also, which have the FIRST-FRUITS of the SPIRIT, even [*we*] ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the Adoption, *to wit*, the REDEMPTION of our BODY.

24 For we are saved by HOPE: but Hope that is seen is not Hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he [*yet*] hope for?

25 But if we hope for that we see not, *then* do we with Patience wait for *it*.

26 Likewise the SPIRIT also helpeth our † INFIRMITIES: for we know not WHAT we should pray for as we ought: but the SPIRIT itself maketh intercession [*for us*] with Groanings which cannot be uttered.

27 And HE that SEARCHETH the HEARTS knoweth what *is* the MIND of the SPIRIT, Because he maketh intercession for the Saints according to *the will of* God.

§ XI.

28 And we know That † all things work together for good to

THEM that LOVE GOD, to THEM who ARE the CALLED according to *his* Purpose.

29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate *to be* conformed to the IMAGE of his SON, that he might BE the Firstborn among Many Brethren.

30 Moreover whom he did predestinate, *them* he also called: and whom he called, *them* he also justified: and whom he justified, *them* he also glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these things? If GOD *be* for us, who *can be* against us?

32 He that spared not his OWN Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us ALL things?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's Elect? *It is* * God that JUSTIFIETH.

34 Who *is* HE that CONDEMNETH? *It is* * Christ that DIED, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the Right-hand of GOD, who also maketh intercession for us.

35 Who shall separate us from † the LOVE of CHRIST? *shall* Tribulation, or Distress, or Persecution, or Famine, or Nakedness, or Peril, or Sword?

36 As it is written, "For thy sake we are killed All the DAY long; we are accounted as Sheep for the Slaughter." †

37 Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through HIM that LOVED us.

38 For I am persuaded, that neither Death, nor Life, nor

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—33. THAT God who JUSTIFIETH. 34. THAT Christ who DIED.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—26. INFIRMITY: for. 28. GOD worketh together all things for good. 35. THAT LOVE of GOD which is in Christ Jesus? *shall*. See 23, 24, 26.

‡ 36. P^a. xlv. 22.

Angels, nor Principalities, † nor Powers, nor Things-present, nor Things-to-come,

39 Nor Height, nor Depth, nor any other Creature, shall be able to separate Us from *the LOVE of GOD, which is in Christ Jesus our LORD.

CHAPTER IX.

1 I say the Truth in Christ, I lie not, my CONSCIENCE also bearing me witness in the holy Ghost.

2 That I have great Heaviness and Continual Sorrow in my HEART.

3 For I could wish that *myself were accursed from CHRIST for my BRETHREN, my KINSMEN according to the Flesh:

4 Who are Israelites; to whom *pertaineth* the ADOPTION, and the GLORY, and † the COVENANTS, and the GIVING-OF-THE-LAW, and the SERVICE of God, and the PROMISES;

5 Whose *are* the FATHERS, and of whom as CONCERNING the Flesh CHRIST *came*, *who IS over all, God blessed for EVER. Amen.

§ XII.

6 *Not as Though the WORD of GOD hath taken none effect. For *they* *are* not ALL Israel, which are of Israel:

7 Neither, Because they are the Seed of Abraham, *are they* all Children: but, "In Isaac shall thy Seed be called." †

8 That is, † They which are

the CHILDREN of the FLESH, these *are* not the Children of GOD: but the CHILDREN of the PROMISE are counted for the Seed.

9 For this *is* the WORD of Promise, "At this TIME will I come, and SARAH shall have a Son." †

10 And not only *this*; but when Rebecca also had conceived by One, *even* by *our FATHER Isaac;

11 For *the children* being not yet born, neither having done any good or † evil, that the PURPOSE of GOD according to Election might stand, not of Works, but of HIM that CALLETH;

12 It was said unto her, "The ELDER shall serve the YOUNGER." †

13 † As it is written, "JACOB have I loved, but ESAU have I hated." †

14 What shall we say then? *Is there* Unrighteousness with GOD? God forbid.

15 For he saith to MOSES, "I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion." †

16 So then *it is* not of HIM that WILLETH, nor of HIM that RUNNETH, but of GOD that SHEWETH-MERCY.

17 For the SCRIPTURE saith unto PHARAOH, "Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my POWER in thee, and that my NAME might be declared throughout All the EARTH." †

18 Therefore hath he mercy on

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—39. THAT LOVE. 5. HE WHO IS. 6. But not *is it* as Though.

3. If myself were an accursed thing from 10. Isaac our FATHER.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—38. nor Things-present, nor Things-to-come, nor Powers. 4. the COVENANT. 8. That they which. 11. ill, that. 13. Even as.

‡ 7. Gen. xxi. 12. ‡ 9. Gen. xviii. 10, 14. ‡ 12. Gen. xxv. 23. ‡ 13. Mal. i. 2. 1 ‡ 15. Exod. xxxiii. 19. ‡ 17. Exod. ix. 16.

whom he will *have mercy*, and whom he will he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? [For] who hath resisted his WILL?

20 Nay but, O Man, who art THOU that REPLIEST against GOD? Shall the THING-FORMED say to HIM that FORMED *it*, Why hast thou made Me thus?

21 Hath not the POTTER Power over the CLAY, of the SAME Lump to make One Vessel unto Honour, and Another unto Dishonour?

22 *What* if GOD, willing to shew his WRATH, and to make his POWER known, endured with Much Longsuffering the Vessels of Wrath fitted to Destruction:

23 And that he might make known the RICHES of his GLORY on the Vessels of Mercy, which he had afore prepared unto Glory,

24 Even us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles?

25 As he saith also in OSEE, "I will call THEM my People, which were not my People; and HER beloved, which was not beloved. †

26 "And it shall come to pass, *that* in the PLACE where it was said [unto them], *Ye are* not my People; there shall they be called the Children of the living God." †

27 Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, "Though the NUMBER of the CHILDREN of Israel be as the SAND of the SEA, a REMNANT shall be saved:

28 "For † he will finish the

Work, and cut *it* short in Righteousness: Because a short Work will the Lord make upon the EARTH." †

29 And as Esaias said before, "Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a Seed, we had been as Sodoma, and been made like unto Gomorrha." †

30 What shall we say then? That *the Gentiles, which FOLLOWED not after Righteousness, have attained to Righteousness, even *the Righteousness which is of Faith.

31 But Israel, which followed after the Law [of Righteousness], hath not attained to the Law of Righteousness.

32 Wherefore? Because *they sought it* not by Faith, but † as it were by the Works of the Law. For they stumbled at *that* STUMBLINGSTONE;

33 As it is written, "Behold, I lay in Sion a Stumblingstone and Rock of Offence: and † WHOSEVER BELIEVETH on him shall not be ashamed." †

CHAPTER X.

1 Brethren, MY Heart's DESIRE † and *PRAYER to GOD for ISRAEL is, that they might be saved.

2 For I bear them record That they have a Zeal of God, but not according to Knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS, and going about to establish their OWN

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—30. THOSE Gentiles which. 30. THAT Righteousness which 1. THAT PRAYER *which I make* to GOD.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—28. finishing and cutting short, the LORD will make a Reckoning on the EARTH. 32. as by Works. For. 33. HE that BELIEVETH. 1. and PRAYER to GOD for them is, that. See 19, 2, 6, 31.

‡ 25. Hos. ii. 23. ‡ 26. Hos. i. 10. ‡ 28. Isa. x. 22. ‡ 29. Isa. i. 9. ‡ 33. Isa. viii. 14; xxviii. 16.

[Righteousness], have not submitted themselves unto the **RIGHTEOUSNESS** of **GOD**.

§ XIII.

4 For Christ is the End of the Law for Righteousness to Every ONE that BELIEVETH.

5 For Moses describeth *the **RIGHTEOUSNESS** which is of the **LAW**, That “The **MAN** which **DOETH** those things shall live by them.” †

6 But the **RIGHTEOUSNESS** which is of **FAITH** speaketh on this wise, Say not in thine **HEART**, “Who shall ascend into **HEAVEN**?” † that is, to bring Christ down from above :

7 Or, “Who shall descend into the **DEEP**?” † that is, to bring up Christ again from the Dead:

8 But what saith it? “The **WORD** is nigh thee, *even* in thy **MOUTH**, and in thy **HEART** :” † that is, the **WORD** of **FAITH**, which we preach;

9 That if thou shalt † confess with thy **MOUTH** the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine **HEART** That **GOD** hath raised Him from the Dead, thou shalt be saved.

10 For with the Heart man believeth unto Righteousness; and with the Mouth confession is made unto Salvation.

11 For the **SCRIPTURE** saith, “**WHOSOEVER** BELIEVETH on him shall not be ashamed.” †

12 For there is no Difference between the Jew and the Greek:

for the **SAME** Lord over all is rich unto **ALL** that **CALL** upon him.

13 For “Whosoever shall call upon the **NAME** of the Lord shall be saved.” †

14 How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a Preacher?

15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? † as it is written, “How beautiful are the **FEET** of **THEM** that **PREACH-THE-GOSPEL** [of Peace, and **BRING-GLAD-TIDINGS**] of **GOOD** things!” †

16 But they have not all obeyed the **GOSPEL**. For **Esaias** saith, “Lord, who hath believed our **REPORT**?” †

17 So then **FAITH** cometh by Hearing, and **HEARING** by the **Word** of † **GOD**.

18 But I say, Have they not heard? Yes verily, their **SOUND** went into **All** the **EARTH**, and their **WORDS** unto the **ENDS** of the **WORLD**.

19 But I say, Did not **Israel** know? First **Moses** saith, “**I** will provoke you to jealousy by *them that are* no People, and by a foolish Nation I will anger you.” †

20 But **Esaias** is very bold, and saith, “I was found † of **THEM** that **SOUGHT** Me not; I was made manifest unto **THEM** that **ASKED** not after Me.” †

21 But to **ISRAEL** he saith, “**All DAY** long have I stretched forth

* **EMPHATIC TEXT**.—5. THAT **RIGHTEOUSNESS**.

† **VATICAN MANUSCRIPT**.—9. confess the **DECLARATION** with thy **MOUTH** That **JESUS** is the Lord, and shalt believe. 15. *even as*. 17. **CHRIST**. 20. among **THEM** that **SOUGHT** not Me; I was made manifest among **THEM** that. See 3, 15.

‡ 5. Lev. xviii. 5. ‡ 6. Deut. xxx. 12. ‡ 7. xxx. 13. ‡ 8. Deut. xxx. 14.
‡ 11. Isa. xxviii. 16. ‡ 13. Joel ii. 32. ‡ 15. Isa. lii. 7. ‡ 16. Ps. liii. 1.
‡ 19. Deut. xxxii. 21. ‡ 20. Isa. lxxv. 1.

my HANDS unto a disobedient and gainsaying People." †

CHAPTER XI.

1 I say then, Hath GOD cast away his PEOPLE? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite, of the Seed of Abraham, of the Tribe of Benjamin.

2 GOD hath not cast away his PEOPLE which he foreknew. Wot ye not what the SCRIPTURE saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to GOD against ISRAEL, [saying],

3 "Lord, they have killed thy † PROPHETS, and digged down thine ALTARS; and I am left alone, and they seek my LIFE." †

4 But what saith the ANSWER-OF-GOD unto him? "I have reserved to myself Seven-thousand Men, who have not bowed the Knee to *the image of BAAL.*" †

5 Even so then at this PRESENT time also there is a Remnant according to the Election of Grace

6 † And if by Grace, then *is it* no more of Works: otherwise GRACE is no more Grace. But if *it be* of Works, then *is it* no more Grace: otherwise WORK is no more Work.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained *that* which he seeketh for; but the ELECTION hath obtained it, and the REST were blinded.

8 According as it is written, "GOD hath given them the Spirit of Slumber, Eyes that they should

not SEE, and Ears that they should not HEAR;—unto THIS Day." †

9 And David saith, "Let their TABLE be made a Snare, and a Trap, and a Stumblingblock, and a Recompence unto them:

10 "Let their EYES be darkened, that they may not SEE, and bow down their BACK alway." †

11 I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but *rather* through THEIR Fall SALVATION *is come* unto the GENTILES, for to PROVOKE them to JEALOUSY.

12 Now if the FALL of them *be* the Riches of the World, and the DIMINISHING of them the Riches of the Gentiles; how much more their FULNESS?

§ XIV.

13 † For I speak to You GENTILES, inasmuch as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine OFFICE;

14 If by any means I may provoke to emulation *them which are My FLESH*, and might save some of them.

15 For if the CASTING-AWAY of them *be* the Reconciling of the World, what *shall* the RECEIVING of them *be*, but Life from the Dead?

16 For if the FIRSTFRUIT *be* holy, the LUMP *is also holy*: and if the ROOT *be* holy, so *are* the BRANCHES.

17 And if some of the BRANCHES be broken off, and *thou*, being a Wild-olive-tree, wert grafted in

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. PROPHETS; they have digged down. 6. And if by Grace, *it is* no more of Works; seeing that GRACE is made no more Grace. But if of Works, *it is* no more Grace; seeing that WORK is no more Grace. 13. And I speak to You, GENTILES: inasmuch therefore as I am. See 2.

‡ 21. Isa. lxxv. 2. † 3. 1 Kings xix. 10. † 4. 1 Kings xix. 18. † 8. Deut. xxix. 4. † 9. Psa. lxxix. 22.

among them, and with them partakest of the ROOT and FATNESS of the OLIVE-TREE;

18 Boast not against the BRANCHES. But if thou boast, **thou** bearst not the ROOT, but the ROOT thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The BRANCHES were broken off, that **I** might be grafted in.

20 Well; because of UNBELIEF they were broken off, and **thou** standest by FAITH Be not high-minded, but fear:

21 For if GOD spared not the NATURAL Branches, † *take heed* lest he also spare not Thee.

22 Behold therefore the Goodness and * Severity of God: on THEM which FELL, † Severity; but toward thee, Goodness, if thou continue in *his* GOODNESS: otherwise **thou** also shalt be cut off.

23 And **they** also, if they abide not still in UNBELIEF, shall be grafted in: for GOD is able to graft them in again.

24 For if **thou** wert cut out of the OLIVE-TREE which is WILD by Nature, and wert grafted contrary to Nature into a Good-olive-tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural *branches*, be grafted into their OWN Olive-tree?

25 For I would not, Brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this MYSTERY, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; That Blindness in Part is happened to ISRAEL, until the FULNESS of the GENTILES be come in.

26 And so All Israel shall be saved: as it is written, "There

shall come out of Sion the DELIVERER, and shall turn away Ungodliness from Jacob:

27 "For this *is* MY Covenant unto them, when I shall take away their SINS." †

28 As concerning the GOSPEL, *they are* Enemies for your sakes: but as touching the ELECTION, *they are* Beloved for the FATHERS' sakes.

29 For the GIFTS and CALLING of GOD *are* without repentance.

30 For as **ye** in times past have not believed GOD, yet have now obtained mercy through THEIR Unbelief.

31 Even so have these also now not believed, that through YOUR Mercy **they** also † may obtain mercy.

32 For GOD hath concluded *them* ALL in Unbelief, that he might have mercy upon ALL.

33 O the Depth of the Riches both of the Wisdom and Knowledge of God! how unsearchable *are* his JUDGMENTS, and his WAYS past finding out!

34 For who hath known the Mind of the Lord? or who hath been his Counsellor?

35 Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him, *are* ALL things: to whom *be* GLORY for EVER. Amen.

CHAPTER XII.

§ XV.

1 I beseech you therefore, Brethren, by the MERCIES of GOD,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—22. the Severity.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—21. neither may he spare Thee. 22. the Severity; but on thee, the Goodness of God, if thou continue in *his* GOODNESS. 31. may now obtain mercy.

‡ 27. Isaiah lix. 20.

that ye present your BODIES a living Sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto GOD, *which is* your REASONABLE Service.

2 And † be not conformed to this WORLD: but † be ye transformed by the RENEWING of † your MIND, that ye may PROVE what *is that* GOOD, and acceptable, and perfect WILL of GOD.

3 For I say, through * the GRACE GIVEN unto me, to EVERY man that IS among you, not to think *of himself* more highly than he ought to think; but to think SOBERLY, according as GOD hath dealt to Every man the Measure of Faith.

4 For as we have many Members in One Body, and all MEMBERS have not the SAME Office:

5 So we *being* MANY, are One Body in Christ, and EVERY-ONE Members one of another.

6 Having then Gifts differing according to * the GRACE that is GIVEN to us, whether Prophecy, *let us prophesy* according to the PROPORTION of FAITH;

7 Or Ministry, *let us wait* on our MINISTERING: or HE that TEACHETH, on TEACHING;

8 Or HE that EXHORTETH, on EXHORTATION: HE that GIVETH, *let him do it* with Simplicity; HE that RULETH, with Diligence; HE that SHEWETH-MERCY, with Cheerfulness.

9 *Let* LOVE be without dissimulation. Abhor THAT which is EVIL; cleave to THAT which is GOOD.

10 *Be* kindly affectioned one to another with BROTHERLY-LOVE;

in HONOUR preferring one another;

11 Not slothful in BUSINESS; fervent in SPIRIT; serving the LORD;

12 Rejoicing in HOPE; patient in TRIBULATION; continuing instant in PRAYER;

13 Distributing to the NECESSITY of SAINTS; given to HOSPITALITY.

14 Bless THEM which PERSECUTE † you: bless, and curse not.

15 Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep.

16 *Be* of the SAME Mind one toward another. Mind not HIGH things, but condescend to men of LOW-ESTATE. Be not wise in your own conceits.

17 Recompense to no man Evil for Evil. Provide things honest in the sight of All Men.

18 If it be possible, as MUCH as lieth in you, live peaceably with All Men.

19 Dearly-beloved, avenge not Yourselves, but *rather* give Place unto WRATH: for it is written, "Vengeance *is* mine; I will repay, saith the Lord."

20 Therefore "if thine ENEMY hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap Coals of Fire on his HEAD. *Prov. XXV. 21, 22.*

21 Be not overcome of EVIL, but overcome EVIL with GOOD.

CHAPTER XIII.

§ XVI.

1 Let Every Soul be subject unto the higher Powers. For

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. THAT GRACE which is GIVEN.

6. THAT GRACE which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—2. that ye be not conformed.
2. the MIND. 14. *you.*

2. that ye be transformed.

there is no Power but of God: † the POWERS that BE are ordained of GOD.

2 Whosoever therefore resisteth the POWER, resisteth the ORDINANCE of GOD: and THEY that RESIST shall receive to themselves Damnation.

3 For RULERS are not a Terror to † GOOD Works, but to the EVIL. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the POWER? do THAT which is GOOD, and thou shalt have Praise of the same:

4 For he is the Minister of God to thee for † GOOD. But if thou do THAT which is EVIL, be afraid; for he beareth not the SWORD in vain: for he is the Minister of God, a Revenger to *execute* Wrath upon HIM that DOETH EVIL.

5 Wherefore *ye* must needs be subject, not only for WRATH, but also for CONSCIENCE sake.

6 For this *cause* pay *ye* Tribute also: for they are God's Ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.

7 Render [therefore] to all their DUES: TRIBUTE to WHOM TRIBUTE *is due*; CUSTOM to WHOM CUSTOM; FEAR to WHOM FEAR; HONOUR to WHOM HONOUR.

8 Owe no man Any thing, but to LOVE one another: for HE that LOVETH ANOTHER hath fulfilled the Law.

9 For THIS, "Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, [Thou shalt not bear false witness], Thou shalt not covet;" and if *there be* Any Other Commandment, it is

briefly comprehended in This SAYING, namely, "Thou shalt love thy NEIGHBOUR as thyself." †

10 LOVE worketh no Ill to his NEIGHBOUR: therefore LOVE *is* the Fulfilling of the Law."

11 And *that*, knowing the TIME, That now *it is* high Time to awake out of Sleep: for now *is* Our SALVATION nearer than when we believed.

12 The NIGHT is far spent, the DAY is at hand: let us therefore cast off the WORKS of DARKNESS, and let us put on the ARMOUR of LIGHT.

13 Let us walk honestly, as in the Day; not in Rioting and Drunkenness, not in Chambering and Wantonness, not in † Strife and Envyng.

14 But put *ye* on † the LORD Jesus Christ, and make not Provision for the FLESH, to *fulfil* the Lusts *thereof*.

CHAPTER XIV.

§ XVII.

1 HIM that is WEAK in the FAITH receive *ye*, *but* not to Doubtful Disputations.

2 For one believeth that he may eat all things: ANOTHER, who is WEAK, eateth Herbs.

3 Let not HIM that EATETH despise HIM that EATETH not; and let not HIM which EATETH not judge HIM that EATETH: for GOD hath received Him.

4 Who art THOU that JUDGEST Another-man's Servant? to his OWN Master he standeth or falleth.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. THEY which BE are. 3. a GOOD Work, but to an EVIL. 4. Good. 13. Strifes and Envyngs. 14. the CHRIST Jesus, and. See 7, 9.

‡ 9. Exod. xx. 13; Lev. xix. 18.

Yea, he shall be holden up: for † GOD is able to make him stand.

5 One man esteemeth one Day above another: another esteemeth Every Day *alike*. Let every man be fully persuaded in his OWN Mind.

6 HE that REGARDETH the DAY, regardeth *it* unto the Lord; [and HE that REGARDETH not the DAY, to the Lord he doth not regard *it*]. HE that EATETH, eateth to the Lord, for he giveth GOD thanks; and HE that EATETH not, to the Lord he eateth not, and giveth GOD thanks.

7 For none of us liveth to Himself, and no man dieth to Himself.

8 For whether we live, we live unto the LORD; and whether we die, we die unto the LORD: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the LORD'S.

9 For to this *end* Christ [both] died, and † rose, and revived, that he might *be lord both of the Dead and Living.

10 But why dost *thou* judge thy BROTHER? or why dost *thou* set at nought thy BROTHER? for we shall all stand before the JUDGMENT-SEAT of CHRIST.

11 For it is written, "As *ƒ* live, saith the Lord, Every Knee shall bow to Me, and Every Tongue shall confess to GOD." †

12 So [then] every one of us shall † give Account of himself to GOD.

13 Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge

This rather, that no man PUT a Stumblingblock [or an Occasion-to-fall] in *his* BROTHER'S way.

14 I know, and am persuaded by the Lord Jesus, That *there is* nothing unclean of itself: but to HIM that ESTEEMETH any thing to be unclean, to *him it is* unclean.

15 But if thy BROTHER be grieved with *thy* Meat, now walkest thou not charitably. Destroy not *him* with thy MEAT, for whom Christ died.

16 Let not then Your GOOD be evil spoken of:

17 For the KINGDOM of GOD is not Meat and Drink; but Righteousness and Peace, and Joy in the holy Ghost.

18 For HE that in † these things SERVETH CHRIST *is* acceptable to GOD, and approved of MEN.

19 Let us therefore follow after the THINGS which make for PEACE, and THINGS * wherewith one may EDIFY another.

20 For Meat destroy not the WORK of GOD. All things indeed *are* pure; but *it is* evil for THAT MAN who EATETH with Offence.

21 *It is* good neither to EAT Flesh, nor to drink Wine, nor *any thing* whereby thy BROTHER stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak.

22 † Hast *thou* Faith? have *it* to thyself before GOD. Happy *is* HE that CONDEMNETH not himself in that thing which he alloweth.

23 And HE that DOUBTETH *is* damned if he eat, Because *he*

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—9. exercise lordship over both the Dead. 19. of THAT EDIFICATION which is to one another.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—4. the LORD is able. 9. lived, that he might. 12. render an Account. 18. this SERVETH. 22. The Faith which thou hast, have *thou* to thyself before. See 6, 9, 12, 13.

‡ 11. Isaiah xlv. 23.

eateth not of Faith: for whatsoever is not of Faith is Sin.

CHAPTER XV.

§ XVIII.

1 **W**e then that are STRONG ought to bear the INFIRMITIES of the WEAK, and not to please Ourselves.

2 Let every one of us please *his* NEIGHBOUR for *his* GOOD to Edification.

3 For even CHRIST pleased not Himself; but, as it is written, "The REPROACHES of THEM that REPROACHED thee fell on me." †

4 For † whatsoever things were written [aforetime] were written for OUR Learning, that we through PATIENCE and † COMFORT of the SCRIPTURES might have HOPE.

5 Now the GOD of PATIENCE and *CONSOLATION grant you to be LIKEMINDED one toward another according to Christ Jesus:

6 That ye may with one mind *and* One Mouth glorify *GOD, even the Father of our LORD Jesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receive ye one another, as CHRIST also received us to the Glory of God.

8 † Now I say that [Jesus] Christ was a Minister of the Circumcision for the Truth of God, to CONFIRM the PROMISES *made* unto the FATHERS:

9 And that the GENTILES

might glorify GOD for *his* Mercy; as it is written, "For this *cause* I will confess to thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy NAME." †

10 And again he saith, "Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with his PEOPLE." †

11 And again, "Praise the LORD, All ye GENTILES; and † laud him, All ye PEOPLE." †

12 And again, Esaias saith, "There shall be a ROOT of JESSE, and HE that shall RISE to reign over the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust." †

13 Now the GOD of HOPE † fill you with All Joy and Peace in BELIEVING, || that ye may ABOUND in HOPE, through the Power of the holy Ghost.

14 And **I** myself also am persuaded of you, my Brethren, That **ye** also are full of Goodness, filled with † All Knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

15 Nevertheless, [Brethren], I have written the more boldly unto you in some Sort, as putting you in mind, because of *the GRACE that is GIVEN to me † of GOD,

16 That I should BE the Minister of † Jesus Christ [to the GENTILES], ministering the GOSPEL of GOD, that the OFFERING-UP of the GENTILES might † be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—5. COMFORT. 6. the GOD and Father. 15. THAT GRACE which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—4. all things whatsoever were written. 4. through COMFORT of the SCRIPTURES might have the HOPE of COMFORT. 8. For I say, that Christ. 11. let All the PEOPLE praise *him*. 13. fully establish you in All Joy. 14. ALL KNOWLEDGE. 15. from GOD. 16. Christ Jesus. 16. become acceptable. See 4, 8, 15, 16.

‡ 3. Psa. lix. 9. ‡ 9. Psa. xviii. 49. ‡ 10. Deut. xxxii. 43. ‡ 11. cxvii. 1. ‡ 12. Isa. xi. 1, 10.

|| The words, "that ye may ABOUND," are omitted in the Collations of Bentley and Bartolucci, but not in that of Birch. As they are necessary to complete the sense, the presumption is that they were omitted, if at all, from oversight by the ancient copyist.—Ed.

17 I have therefore whereof I may glory through Jesus Christ in those THINGS which pertain to God.

18 For I † will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought † by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by Word and Deed,

19 Through Mighty Signs and Wonders, by the Power of the Spirit [of God]; so that from Jerusalem, and round about unto ILLYRICUM, I have fully preached the GOSPEL of CHRIST.

20 Yea, so have I strived to preach the gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build upon Another-man's Foundation:

21 But as it is written, "To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that have not heard shall understand." †

22 For which *cause* also I have been † MUCH hindered from COMING to you.

23 But now having no more Place in these PARTS, and having a Great-desire these Many Years to COME unto you;

24 † Whensoever I take my journey into SPAIN, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my journey, and to be brought on my way thitherward † by you, if first I be somewhat filled with your *company*.

§ XIX.

25 But now I go unto Jerusalem to minister unto the SAINTS.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia to make a certain Contribution for * the POOR SAINTS which are at Jerusalem.

27 It hath pleased them verily; and their Debtors they are. For if the GENTILES have been made partakers of their SPIRITUAL things, their duty is also to minister unto them in CARNAL things.

28 When therefore I have performed this, and have sealed [to them] this FRUIT, I will come by you into † SPAIN.

29 And I am sure That, when I come unto you, I shall come in the Fulness of the Blessing [of the GOSPEL] of CHRIST.

§ XX.

30 Now I beseech you, [Brethren], for * the LORD Jesus Christ's sake, and for the LOVE of the SPIRIT, that ye strive together with me in *your* PRAYERS to GOD for me;

31 That I may be delivered from THEM that do not BELIEVE in JUDEA; and † that * my SERVICE which *I have* for Jerusalem may be accepted of the SAINTS;

32 That I may come unto you with Joy by the Will of † God, [and may with you be refreshed].

33 Now the GOD of PEACE *be* with you all. Amen.

CHAPTER XVI.

1 I commend unto you Phebe our SISTER, which is † a Servant

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—26. the POOR of THOSE SAINTS which are. 33. our LORD. 31. THAT SERVICE of mine which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—18 dare not speak. 18. by My Word. 22. often hindered. 24. As I take my journey into SPAIN, *I will do so*: for. 24. from you. 28. Spain. 31. *that* THAT GIFT-BEARING of mine which *I have* may be acceptable to the SAINTS in Jerusalem. 32. the Lord Jesus. Now. 1. also a Servant. See 19, 24, 28, 29, 30, 32.

‡ 21. Isaiah lii. 15.

of *the CHURCH which is at Cenchrea:

2 That ye receive her in the Lord, as becometh SAINTS, and that ye assist her in Whatsoever Business she hath need of you: for she hath been a Succourer of Many, and of myself also.

3 Greet Priscilla and Aquila my HELPERS in Christ Jesus:

4 Who have for my LIFE laid down their OWN Necks: unto whom not only I give thanks, but also All the CHURCHES of the GENTILES.

5 Likewise greet the CHURCH that is in their House. Salute *my WELLBELOVED Epænetus, who is the Firstfruits of † ACHAIA unto Christ.

6 Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour on us.

7 Salute Andronicus and Junia, my KINSMEN, and my Fellow-prisoners, who are of note among the APOSTLES, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Greet † Amplias my BELOVED in the Lord.

9 Salute Urbane, our HELPER in Christ, and Stachys my BELOVED.

10 Salute * Apelles APPROVED in Christ. Salute THEM which are of ARISTOBULUS'-household.

11 Salute Herodion my KINSMAN. Greet THEM that be of the household-of-NARCISSUS, *which ARE in the Lord.

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, *who LABOUR in the Lord. Salute *the BELOVED Persis, which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute * Rufus CHOSEN in the Lord, and his MOTHER and mine.

14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, † Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the BRETHREN which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus, and Julia, Nereus, and his SISTER, and Olympas, and ALL the Saints which are with them.

16 Salute one another with an holy Kiss. The CHURCHES of CHRIST salute you.

§ XXI.

17 Now I beseech you, Brethren, mark THEM which CAUSE DIVISIONS and OFFENCES contrary to the DOCTRINE which ye have learned; and avoid them.

18 For THEY that are SUCH serve not our LORD [Jesus] Christ, but their OWN Belly; and by GOOD-WORDS and Fair-speeches deceive the HEARTS of the SIMPLE.

19 For YOUR Obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on † YOUR behalf: but [yet] I would have you wise unto THAT which is GOOD, and simple concerning *EVIL.

20 And the GOD of PEACE shall bruise SATAN under your FEET shortly. The GRACE of our LORD Jesus [Christ] be with you. [Amen.]

21 Timotheus † my WORKFELLOW, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater, my KINSMEN, salute you.

22 I Tertius, who WROTE this EPISTLE, salute you in the Lord.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THAT CHURCH which is. 5. Epænetus my WELLBELOVED. 10. THAT Apelles who is APPROVED. 11. THEM which ARE. 12. THEM who LABOUR. 12. Persis the BELOVED. 13. THAT Rufus who was CHOSEN. 19. THAT which is EVIL.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—5. ASIA unto. 8. THAT Amplias who is BELOVED. 14. Hermes, Patrobas Hermas. 19. your behalf. 21. a WORKFELLOW. See 18, 19. 20 (twice).

23 Gaius mine HOST, and * of † the whole CHURCH, saluteth you. Erastus the CHAMBERLAIN of the CITY saluteth you, and Quartus a BROTHER.

24 [The GRACE of our LORD Jesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.]

25 Now to HIM that is of POWER to stablish You according to my GOSPEL, and the PREACHING of Jesus Christ, according to the Revelation of the Mystery, which

was kept secret since the World began,

26 But now is made manifest, and by * the Scriptures of the Prophets, according to the Commandment of the EVERLASTING God, made known to All NATIONS for the Obedience of Faith:

27 To * God Only Wise, *be* GLORY through Jesus Christ for EVER. Amen.†

¶ Written to the Romans from Corinthus, and sent by Phebe SERVANT of the CHURCH at Cenchrea.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—23. *the host* of. 27. the Only Wise God.

26. the prophetick Scriptures, according.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. the Whole CHURCH. See 24. 27. *Subscription*: UNTO THE ROMANS, WRITTEN FROM CORINTH.

TO THE CORINTHIANS.

CHAPTER I.

§ XXII.

1 Paul, * called *to be* an Apostle of † Jesus Christ through the Will of God, and Sosthenes *our* BROTHER,

2 Unto * the CHURCH of GOD which IS at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, * called *to be* Saints, with ALL that in Every Place CALL-UPON the NAME of * Jesus Christ our LORD, [both] their's and our's:

3 Grace *be* unto you, and Peace, from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank [my] GOD always on your behalf, for * the GRACE of GOD which is GIVEN you by Jesus Christ;

5 That in every thing ye are enriched by him, in All Utterance, and *in* All Knowledge;

6 Even as the TESTIMONY of CHRIST was confirmed in you:

7 So that ye come behind in No Gift; waiting for the COMING of our LORD Jesus Christ:

8 Who shall also confirm you unto the End, *that ye may be* Blameless in the DAY of our LORD Jesus Christ.

9 GOD *is* faithful, by whom ye were called unto the Fellowship of his SON Jesus Christ our LORD.

10 Now I beseech you, Brethren, by the NAME of our LORD Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the SAME thing, and *that* there be no Divisions among you; but *that* ye be perfectly joined together in the SAME Mind and in the SAME Judgment.

11 For it hath been declared unto me of you, my Brethren, by THEM *which are of the house* of Chloë, That there are Contentions among you.

12 Now this I say, That every one of you saith, ~~¶~~ I am of Paul; and ~~¶~~ of Apollos; and ~~¶~~ of Cephas; and ~~¶~~ of Christ.

13 Is CHRIST divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the NAME of Paul?

14 † I thank GOD That I baptized None of you, but Crispus and Gaius;

15 Lest any should say That † I had baptized in MINE OWN Name.

16 And I baptized also the HOUSEHOLD of STEPHANAS: besides, I know not whether I baptized Any Other.

17 For Christ sent me not to

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. a Called Apostle of. 2. THAT CHURCH of. 2. the Called Saints. 2. our LORD Jesus Christ. 4. THAT GRACE of.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: THE FIRST TO THE CORINTHIANS. 1. Christ Jesus. 14. I give thanks That I baptized. 15. ye were baptized in. See 2, 4.

baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with Wisdom of Words, lest the CROSS of CHRIST should be made of none effect.

18 For the PREACHING of the CROSS is to THEM that PERISH Foolishness; but unto US which are SAVED it is the Power of God.

19 For it is written, "I will destroy the WISDOM of the WISE, and will bring to nothing the UNDERSTANDING of the PRUDENT." †

20 Where is the Wise? where is the Scribe? where is the Disputer of this WORLD? hath not GOD made foolish the WISDOM of † this WORLD?

21 For after that in the WISDOM of GOD the WORLD by WISDOM knew not GOD, it pleased GOD by the FOOLISHNESS of PREACHING to save THEM that BELIEVE.

22 For the Jews require † a Sign, and the Greeks seek after Wisdom:

23 But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a Stumbling-block, and unto the † Greeks Foolishness;

24 But unto THEM which are CALLED, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the Power of God, and the Wisdom of God.

25 Because the FOOLISHNESS of GOD is wiser than MEN; and the WEAKNESS of GOD [is] stronger than MEN.

26 For ye see your CALLING, Brethren, how That not Many Wise men after the Flesh, not Many Mighty, not Many Noble, are called:

27 But GOD hath chosen the FOOLISH things of the WORLD to confound the WISE; and GOD hath chosen the WEAK things of the WORLD to confound the THINGS which are MIGHTY;

28 And BASE things of the WORLD, and THINGS which are DESPISED, hath GOD chosen, yea, and THINGS which ARE not, to bring to nought THINGS that ARE:

29 That No Flesh should glory † in his presence.

30 But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made † unto us Wisdom, and Righteousness, and Sanctification, and Redemption:

31 That, according as it is written, HE that GLORIETH, let him glory in the Lord.

CHAPTER II.

§ XXIII.

1 And I, Brethren, when I came to you, came not with Excellency of Speech or of Wisdom, declaring unto you the TESTIMONY of GOD.

2 For I determined not † to KNOW any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.

3 And I was with you in Weakness, and in Fear, and in much Trembling.

4 And my SPEECH and my PREACHING was not with Enticing Words of [Man's] Wisdom, but in Demonstration of the Spirit and of Power:

5 That your FAITH should not stand in the Wisdom of Men, but in the Power of God.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—20. the WORLD. 22. Signs, and. 23. Gentiles. 29. in the presence of GOD. But. 30. our Wisdom, and Righteousness, and Sanctification and Redemption. 2. to know Any thing. See 25, 4.

† 19. Isaiah xxix. 14.

6 Howbeit we speak Wisdom among THEM that are PERFECT: yet not the Wisdom of this WORLD, nor of *the PRINCES of this WORLD, that COME-TO-NOUGHT:

7 But we speak the Wisdom of God in a Mystery, *even* the HIDDEN wisdom, which GOD ordained before the WORLD unto our Glory:

8 Which none of the PRINCES of this WORLD knew: for had they known *it*, they would not have crucified the LORD of GLORY.

9 But as it is written, "Eye hath not seen, nor Ear heard, neither have entered into the Heart of Man, the things which GOD hath prepared for THEM that LOVE him." †

10 But GOD hath revealed *them* unto us by his SPIRIT: for the SPIRIT searcheth all things, yea, the DEEP things of GOD.

11 For What Man knoweth the THINGS of a MAN, save * the SPIRIT of MAN which is in him? even so the THINGS of GOD † knoweth no man, but the SPIRIT of GOD.

12 Now *we* have received, not the SPIRIT of the WORLD, but * the SPIRIT which is of GOD; that we might know the THINGS that are FREELY-GIVEN to us of GOD.

13 Which things also we speak, not in the Words which Man's Wisdom teacheth, † but * which

the holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

14 But the Natural Man receiveth not the THINGS of the SPIRIT of GOD: for they are Foolishness unto him: neither can he know *them*, Because they are spiritually discerned.

15 But HE that is SPIRITUAL judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man.

16 For who hath known the Mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? but *we* have the Mind of † Christ.

CHAPTER III.

§ XXIV.

1 And ¶, Brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, *even* as unto Babes in Christ.

2 I have fed you with Milk, and not with Meat: for hitherto ye were not able *to bear it*, neither [yet] now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet carnal: for whereas *there is* among you Envy-ing, and Strife, [and Divisions], are ye not carnal, and walk as Men?

4 For while one saith, ¶ am of Paul; and another, ¶ am of Apollos; are ye not † carnal?

5 † Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but Ministers by whom ye believed, even as the LORD gave to Every man?

6 ¶ have planted, Apollos watered; but GOD gave the increase.

7 So then neither is HE that

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—6. THOSE PRINCES of. SPIRIT which. 11. THAT SPIRIT of MAN. 12. THAT

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—11. hath no one known but the SPIRIT of GOD. 13. but by the Teaching of the Spirit; comparing spiritual things spiritually. 16. the Lord. 4. Men. 5. What then is Apollos, and what is Paul? Ministers. See 2, 3.

† 9. Isaiah lxiv. 4.

PLANTETH any thing, neither HE that WATERETH; but GOD that GIVETH-THE-INCREASE.

8 NOW HE that PLANTETH and HE that WATERETH are one: and every man shall receive his OWN Reward according to his OWN Labour.

9 For we are Labourers together with God: ye are God's Husbandry, *ye are* God's Building.

10 According to *the GRACE of GOD which is GIVEN unto me, as a Wise Masterbuilder, I have laid the Foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.

11 For other Foundation can no man lay than *THAT is LAID, which is †Jesus CHRIST.

12 NOW if any man build upon this FOUNDATION Gold, Silver, precious Stones, Wood, Hay, Stubble;

13 Every man's WORK shall be made manifest: for the DAY shall declare it, Because it shall be revealed by Fire; and the FIRE shall try every man's WORK of what sort †it is.

14 If any man's WORK abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a Reward.

15 If any man's WORK shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by Fire.

16 Know ye not That ye are the Temple of God, and *that* the SPIRIT of GOD dwelleth in you?

17 If any man defile the TEMPLE of GOD, *him* shall GOD de-

stroy; for the TEMPLE of GOD is holy, which *temple* *ye* are.

11 Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this WORLD, let him become a Fool, that he may be wise.

19 For the WISDOM of this WORLD is Foolishness with GOD. For it is written, “* HE TAKETH the WISE in their own CRAFTINESS.” †

20 And again, “The Lord knoweth the THOUGHTS of the WISE, That they are vain.” †

§ XXV.

21 Therefore let no man glory in Men. For all things are your's;

22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the World, or Life, or Death, or Things-present, or Things-to-come; all are your's;

23 And *ye* are Christ's; and Christ is God's.

CHAPTER IV.

1 Let a man so account of Us, as of the Ministers of Christ, and Stewards of the Mysteries of God.

2 Moreover it is required in STEWARDS, that a man be found faithful.

3 But with Me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of Man's Judgment: yea, I judge not mine Own-self.

4 For I know Nothing by myself; yet am I not hereby justified: but HE that JUDGETH me is the Lord.

5 Therefore judge Nothing before the Time, until the LORD

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—10. THAT GRACE of GOD which. 11. THAT which is LAID, which is Jesus the CHRIST. 19. *It is* HE that TAKETH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—11. Jesus Christ. 12. the FOUNDATION. 13. the same is.

‡ 19. Job v. 13. ‡ 20. Psa. xciv. 11.

come, who both will bring to light the HIDDEN things of DARKNESS, and will make manifest the COUNSELS of the HEARTS: and then shall every man have PRAISE of GOD.

6 And these things, Brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myself and to Apollos for your sakes; that ye might learn in us † not to THINK of men above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for ONE against ANOTHER.

7 For who maketh Thee to differ from another? and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings without us: and I would to God ye did reign, that we also might reign with you.

9 For I think [That] GOD hath set forth us the APOSTLES last, as it were appointed to death: For we are made a Spectacle unto the WORLD, *and to Angels, and to Men.

10 We are fools for Christ's sake, but ye are wise in Christ; we are weak, but ye are strong; ye are honourable, but we are despised.

11 Even unto this PRESENT Hour we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling-place;

12 And labour, working with our OWN Hands: being reviled,

we bless; being persecuted, we suffer it;

13 Being defamed, we intreat: we are made as the Filth of the WORLD, and are the Offscouring of all things unto this day.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved Sons I warn you.

15 For though ye have Ten-thousand Instructors in Christ, yet have ye not Many Fathers: for in Christ [Jesus] I have begotten you through the GOSPEL.

§ XXVI.

16 Wherefore I beseech you, be ye Followers of me.

17 For this cause have I sent unto you Timotheus, who is † my beloved Son, and faithful in the Lord, who shall bring You into remembrance of *my WAYS which be in Christ, as I teach every where in Every Church.

18 Now some are puffed up, as though I would not come to you.

19 But I will come to you shortly, if the LORD will, and will know, not the SPEECH of THEM which are PUFFED-UP, but the POWER.

20 For the KINGDOM of God is not in Word, but in Power.

21 What will ye? shall I come unto you with a Rod, or in Love, and in the Spirit of Meekness?

CHAPTER V.

1 It is reported commonly that there is Fornication among you, and Such Fornication as is not [so much as named] among the

* EMPHATIC TEXT—9. both to Angels.

17. THOSE WAYS of mine which be.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—6. NOT to be ABOVE what things are written. 17. My beloved Son. See 9, 15, 1.

GENTILES, that one should have his FATHER'S Wife.

2 And *ye* are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that HE that hath DONE this DEED might be taken [away] from among you.

3 For *Æ* verily, † as absent in BODY, but present in SPIRIT, have judged already, as though I were present, *concerning* HIM that hath so DONE this DEED,

4 In the NAME of our LORD Jesus [Christ], when ye are gathered together, and MY Spirit, with the POWER of our LORD Jesus [Christ],

5 To deliver SUCH-AN-ONE unto SATAN for the Destruction of the FLESH, that the SPIRIT may be saved in the DAY of the LORD [Jesus].

6 Your GLORYING is not good. Know ye not That a Little Leaven leaveneth the Whole LUMP?

7 Purge out therefore the OLD Leaven, that ye may be a New Lump, as ye are unleavened. For even *Christ our PASSOVER is sacrificed [for us]:

8 Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old Leaven, neither with the Leaven of Malice and Wickedness; but with the Unleavened *bread* of Sincerity and Truth.

9 I wrote unto you in an EPIS-TLE not to company with Fornicators:

10 [Yet] not altogether with the FORNICATORS of this WORLD, or with the COVETOUS, † or Extortioners, or with Idolators; for

then must ye needs go out of the WORLD.

11 But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a Brother be a Fornicator, or Covetous, or an Idolator, or a Railer, or a Drunkard, or an Extortioner; with SUCH-AN-ONE no not to eat.

12 For what have *Æ* to do to judge THEM [also] that are WITH-OUT? do not *ye* judge THEM that are WITHIN;

13 But THEM that are WITHOUT GOD judgeth? [Therefore] put away from among yourselves *that* WICKED person.

CHAPTER VI.

§ XXVII.

1 Dare any of you, having a Matter against ANOTHER, go to law before the UNJUST, and not before the SAINTS?

2 Do ye not know That the SAINTS shall judge the WORLD? and if the WORLD shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?

3 Know ye not That we shall judge Angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

4 If then ye have Judgments of things pertaining to this life, set THEM to judge who are LEAST-ESTEEMED in the CHURCH.

5 I speak to your Shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man among you[? no, not one] that shall be able to judge between his BRETHREN?

6 But Brother goeth to law

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—7. our PASSOVER Christ.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. being absent.
See 2, 4 (twice), 5, 7, 10, 12, 13, 5.

10. and Extortioners, or Idolators.

with Brother, and **that** before the Unbelievers.

7 Now therefore there is utterly a Fault † among you, Because ye go to Law one with another. Why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather *suffer yourselves* to be defrauded?

8 Nay, *ye* do wrong, and defraud, and **that** *your* Brethren.

9 Know ye not That the Unrighteous shall not inherit the Kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither Fornicators, nor Idolaters, nor Adulterers, nor Effeminate, nor Abusers of themselves with Mankind,

10 Nor Thieves, nor Covetous, nor Drunkards, nor Revilers, nor Extortioners, shall inherit the Kingdom of God.

11 And such were some *of you*: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the NAME of † the LORD Jesus, and by the SPIRIT of our GOD.

12 All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but **I** will not be brought under the power of any.

13 MEATS for the BELLY, and the BELLY for MEATS: but GOD shall destroy both **it** and **them**. Now the BODY *is* not for FORNICATION, but for the LORD; and the LORD for the BODY.

14 And GOD hath both raised up the LORD, and † will also raise up Us by his own POWER.

15 Know ye not That your BODIES are the Members of Christ?

shall I then take the MEMBERS of CHRIST, and make *them* the members of an Harlot? God forbid.

16 What? know ye not That HE which is JOINED to an HARLOT is One Body? for “TWO, saith he, shall be one Flesh.” †

17 But HE that is JOINED unto the LORD is One Spirit.

18 Flee FORNICATION. Every Sin that a Man doeth is without the BODY; but HE that COMMITTETH-FORNICATION sinneth against his OWN Body.

19 What? know ye not That your BODY is the Temple of the † HOLY Ghost *which is* in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?

20 For ye are bought with a Price: therefore glorify GOD in your BODY, [and in your SPIRIT, which are GOD'S].

CHAPTER VII.

§ XXVIII.

1 Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote [unto me]: *It is* good for a Man not to touch a Woman.

2 Nevertheless, *to avoid* FORNICATION, let every man have HIS-OWN Wife, and let every woman have her OWN Husband.

3 Let the HUSBAND render unto the WIFE † DUE Benevolence: and likewise also the WIFE unto the HUSBAND.

4 The WIFE hath not power of her OWN Body, but the HUSBAND: and likewise also the HUSBAND hath not power of his OWN Body, but the WIFE.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT—7. in you. 11. our LORD Jesus Christ, and. 14. raised up Us. 19. holy Ghost. 3. *her* DUE; and. See 20, 1.

‡ 16. Gen. ii. 24.

5 Defraud ye not one the other, except *it be* with Consent for a Time, that ye may give yourselves to [FASTING and] PRAYER; and † come TOGETHER again, that SATAN tempt you not for [your] INCONTINENCY.

6 But I speak this by Permission, *and* not of Commandment.

7 For I would that All Men were even as I myself. But every man hath his Proper Gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that.

8 I say therefore to the UNMARRIED and WIDOWS, It is good for them if they abide even as **ƒ**.

9 But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn.

10 And unto the MARRIED I command, *yet* not **ƒ**, but the LORD, Let not the Wife depart from *her* Husband:

11 But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to *her* HUSBAND: and let not the Husband put away *his* Wife.

12 But to the REST speak **ƒ**, not the LORD: If any Brother hath a Wife that believeth not, and *she* be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the Woman which hath an Husband that believeth not, and [if] **he** be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave † him.

14 For the UNBELIEVING HUSBAND is sanctified by the WIFE, and the UNBELIEVING WIFE is sanctified by the † HUSBAND: else were your CHILDREN unclean; but now are they holy.

15 But if the UNBELIEVING depart, let him depart. A BROTHER or a SISTER is not under bondage in such *cases*: but GOD hath called us to Peace.

16 For what knowest thou, O Wife, whether thou shalt save *thy* HUSBAND? or how knowest thou, O Man, whether thou shalt save *thy* WIFE?

17 But as † GOD hath distributed to every man, as the LORD hath called every one, so let him walk. And so ordain I in all CHURCHES.

18 Is any man called, being circumcised? let him not become uncircumcised. † Is any called in Uncircumcision? let him not be circumcised.

19 CIRCUMCISION is nothing, and UNCIRCUMCISION is nothing, but the Keeping of the Commandments of God.

20 Let every man abide in the same CALLING wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called *being* a Servant? care not for it: but if thou mayest be made free, use *it* rather.

22 For HE that is CALLED in the Lord, *being* a Servant, is the Lord's Freeman: likewise [also] HE that is CALLED, *being* free, is Christ's Servant.

23 Ye are bought with a Price; be not ye the Servants of Men.

24 Brethren, let every man, wherein he is called, therein abide with † GOD.

§ XXIX.

25 Now concerning VIRGINS I have no Commandment of the Lord: yet I give my Judgment,

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—5. be TOGETHER. 13. *her* Husband. For. 14. BROTHER: else were. 17. the LORD hath. 18. Hath any one been called in. 24. GOD. See 5 (twice), 13, 22.

as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful.

26 I suppose therefore that this is good for the PRESENT Distress, *I say*, That *it is* good for a Man so to BE.

27 Art thou bound unto a Wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a Wife? seek not a Wife.

28 But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a †VIRGIN marry, she hath not sinned. Nevertheless SUCH shall have Trouble in the FLESH: but † spare you.

29 But this I say, Brethren, the TIME *is* short: it remaineth, that both THEY that HAVE Wives be as though they had none;

30 And THEY that WEEP, as though they wept not; and THEY that REJOICE, as though they rejoiced not; and THEY that BUY, as though they possessed not;

31 And THEY that USE this WORLD, as not abusing *it*: for the FASHION of this WORLD passeth away.

32 But I would have you without carefulness. HE that is UNMARRIED careth for the THINGS that belong to the LORD, how he may please the LORD:

33 But HE that is MARRIED careth for the THINGS that are of the WORLD, how he may please *his* WIFE.

34 There is difference *also* between a WIFE and a VIRGIN. The UNMARRIED woman careth for the THINGS of the LORD, that she may be holy both †in Body and in Spirit: but SHE that is

MARRIED careth [for the THINGS of the WORLD], how she may please *her* HUSBAND.

35 And this I speak for YOUR OWN Profit; not that I may cast a Snare upon you, but for THAT which is COMELY, and that ye may attend upon the LORD without distraction.

36 But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his VIRGIN, if she pass the flower of *her* age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them marry.

37 Nevertheless he that standeth stedfast in his HEART, having no Necessity, but hath Power over his OWN Will, and hath so decreed in his HEART that he will †KEEP HIS Virgin, doeth well.

38 So then HE that †GIVETH-*her*-IN-MARRIAGE doeth well; but HE that GIVETH-*her*-NOT-IN-MARRIAGE doeth better.

39 The Wife is bound [by the Law] as long as her HUSBAND liveth; but if †her HUSBAND be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord.

40 But she is happier if she so abide, after MY Judgment: †and I think also that † have the Spirit of God.

CHAPTER VIII.

§ XXX.

I Now as touching THINGS OFFERED-UNTO-IDOLS, we know That we all have Knowledge. KNOWLEDGE puffeth up, but CHARITY edifieth.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—28. Virgin. 34. in the BODY and in the SPIRIT. 37. keep HIS Virgin, shall do well. 38. MARRIETH his VIRGIN shall do well; and HE that MARRIETH *her* not, shall do better. 39. the HUSBAND. 40. for I think also. See 34, 39.

2 [And] if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth †nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man love GOD, the same is known of him.

4 As concerning therefore the EATING of *those* THINGS that are OFFERED-IN-SACRIFICE-UNTO-IDOLS, we know That an Idol *is* nothing in the World, and That †*there is* none other God but one.

5 For though there be that are called Gods, whether in Heaven or †in EARTH, as there be Gods many, and Lords many,

6 [But] to us *there is but* One God, the FATHER, of whom *are* ALL things, and *we* in him; and One Lord Jesus Christ, †by whom *are* ALL things, and *we* by him.

7 Howbeit *there is* not in every man *that* KNOWLEDGE: for some with †CONSCIENCE of the IDOL unto this hour eat *it* as a thing offered unto an idol; and their CONSCIENCE being weak is defiled.

8 But Meat commendeth us not to GOD: [for] neither, if we †eat, are we the better; neither, if we eat not, are we the worse.

9 But take heed lest by any means this LIBERTY of your's become a Stumblingblock to THEM that are WEAK.

10 For if any man see †THEE which HAST Knowledge sit at meat in the Idol's-temple, shall not the CONSCIENCE of him which is weak be emboldened to EAT *those* THINGS which are OFFERED-TO-IDOLS;

11 †And through THY Know-

ledge shall the WEAK Brother perish, for whom Christ died?

12 But when ye sin so against the BRETHERN, and wound Their weak CONSCIENCE, ye sin against Christ.

13 Wherefore, if Meat make my BROTHER to offend, I will eat no Flesh while the WORLD standeth, lest I make my BROTHER to offend.

CHAPTER IX.

§ XXXI.

1 Am I not †an Apostle? am I not free? have I not seen Jesus [Christ] our LORD? are not *ye* my WORK in the Lord?

2 If I be not an Apostle unto others, yet doubtless I am to you: for the SEAL of †MINE Apostleship are *ye* in the Lord.

3 MINE Answer to THEM that do EXAMINE Me is this,

4 Have we not Power to eat and to drink?

5 Have we not Power to lead about a Sister, a Wife, as well as OTHER Apostles, and *as* the BRETHERN of the LORD, and Cephas?

6 Or *I* only and Barnabas, have not we Power to †FORBEAR-WORKING?

7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his Own Charges? who planteth a Vineyard, and eateth not [of] the FRUIT thereof? or who feedeth a Flock, and eateth not of the MILK of the FLOCK?

8 Say I These things as a Man? or saith not the LAW the Same also?

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—2. *it* not yet as. 4. none *is* God but one. 5. on Earth. 6. on Account of whom. 7. CUSTOM of the IDOL. 8. eat not, are we the worse; nor if we eat, are we the better. But. 10. HIM which HATH Knowledge. 11. For by the KNOWLEDGE the WEAK Brother perishes, for whom Christ died. 1. free? am I not an Apostle? have. 2. Mine APOSTLESHIP. 6. forbear-working? See 2, 6, 8, 1, 7.

9 For it is written in the LAW of MOSES, "Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the Ox that treadeth out the corn." † Doth GOD take care for OXEN?

10 Or saith he *it* altogether for our sakes? For our sakes, no doubt, *this* is written: That HE that PLOWETH should plow in Hope; and † That HE that THRESHETH in Hope should be partaker of his HOPE.

11 If **we** have sown unto you SPIRITUAL things, *is it* a great thing if **we** shall reap Your CARNAL things?

12 If others be partakers † of *this* POWER over you, *are not we* rather? Nevertheless we have not used this POWER; but suffer All things, lest we should hinder the GOSPEL of CHRIST.

13 Do ye not know That THEY which MINISTER about HOLY things live *of the things* of the TEMPLE? and THEY which WAIT at the ALTAR are partakers with the ALTAR?

14 Even so hath the LORD ordained that THEY which PREACH the GOSPEL should live of the GOSPEL.

15 But **I** have used none of these things: neither have I written these things, that it should be so done unto me: for *it were* better for me to die, than that any man should make my GLORYING void.

16 For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of:

for Necessity is laid upon Me; † yea, Woe is unto me, if I preach not the gospel!

17 For if I do This thing willingly, I have a Reward: but if against my will, a Dispensation *of the gospel* is committed unto me.

18 What is My REWARD then? *Verily* that, when I preach the gospel, I may make the GOSPEL [of CHRIST] without charge, that I ABUSE not my POWER in the GOSPEL.

19 For though I be free from all *men*, yet have I made Myself servant unto all, that I might gain the MORE.

20 And unto the JEWS I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to THEM that are UNDER the Law, as under the Law, † that I might gain THEM that are UNDER the Law;

21 To THEM that are WITHOUT-LAW, as without-law, being not † without-law to God, but under *the-law* to Christ, that I might gain † them that are without-law.

22 To the WEAK became I as weak, that I might gain the WEAK: I am made † ALL things to ALL *men*, that I might by all means save Some.

23 † And This I do for the GOSPEL'S sake, that I might be Partaker thereof with *you*.

24 Know ye not That THEY which RUN in a Race run all, but one receiveth the PRIZE? So run that ye may obtain.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—10. HE that THRESHETH should be a partaker in Hope. If, 12. of YOUR Power, should not **we** rather? 16. for Woe is. 20. being not myself under the Law, that I might gain. 21. without God's law, but under Christ's law, that I might gain THEM that are WITHOUT-LAW. 22. All things. 23. But I do all things for the GOSPEL'S sake. See 18.

† 9. Deut. xxv. 4.

25 And EVERY man that STRIVETH-FOR-THE-MASTERY is temperate in all things. Now *they do it* to obtain a Corruptible Crown; but *we* an Incorruptible.

26 ¶ therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I not as one that beateth the Air:

27 But I keep under My BODY, and bring *it* into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to Others, I myself should be a Castaway.

CHAPTER X.

§ XXXII.

1 † Moreover, Brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, *how* That all our FATHERS were under the CLOUD, and all passed through the SEA;

2 And were all baptized unto MOSES in the CLOUD and in the SEA;

3 And did all eat the SAME † spiritual Meat;

4 And did all drink the SAME † spiritual Drink: for they drank of *that* Spiritual Rock that followed them: and *that* ROCK was CHRIST.

5 But with MANY of them GOD was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the WILDERNESS.

6 Now these things were our Examples, to the intent we should not LUST after Evil things, as *they* also lusted.

7 Neither be ye Idolaters, as *were* some of them; as it is written, "The PEOPLE sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play." ‡

8 Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in One Day three and twenty thousand.

9 Neither let us tempt † CHRIST, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of SERPENTS.

10 Neither murmur ye, † as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the DESTROYER.

11 Now [all] these things happened unto *them* for Ensamples: and they are written for our Admonition, upon whom the ENDS of the WORLD † are come.

12 Wherefore let HIM that THINKETH he standeth take heed lest he fall.

13 There hath no Temptation taken You, but such as is common to Man: but GOD *is* faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the TEMPTATION also make a WAY-TO-ESCAPE, that ye may be ABLE to bear *it*.

§ XXXIII.

14 Wherefore, my *dearly* Beloved, flee from IDOLATRY.

15 I speak as to Wise men; judge *ye* what I say.

16 The CUP of BLESSING which we bless, is it not the Communion of the BLOOD of CHRIST? The BREAD which we break, is it not the Communion of the BODY of CHRIST?

17 For we *being* MANY are One Bread, *and* One Body: for we are ALL partakers of *that* ONE Bread.

18 Behold ISRAEL after the Flesh: are not THEY which EAT of the SACRIFICES Partakers of the ALTAR?

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. For, Brethren. 3. SPIRITUAL Meat. 4. SPIRITUAL Drink. 9. the LORD, as some. 10. even as. 11. have come. See 11.

‡ 7. Exod. xxxii. 6.

19 What say I then? † That the Idol is any thing, or * that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing?

20 But *I say*, That the things which † the GENTILES sacrifice, they sacrifice to Devils, and not to God: and I would not that ye should have Fellowship with DEVILS.

21 Ye cannot drink the Cup of the Lord, and the Cup of Devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's Table, and of the Table of Devils.

22 Do we provoke the LORD to jealousy? are we stronger than he?

23 All things are lawful [for me], but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful [for me], but all things edify not.

24 Let no man seek HIS-OWN, but but [every man] ANOTHER'S *wealth*.

25 WHATSOEVER is SOLD in the Shambles, *that* eat, asking no question for CONSCIENCE sake:

26 For "the EARTH *is* the LORD'S, and the FULNESS thereof." †

27 If any of THEM that BELIEVE not bid you *to a feast*, and ye be disposed to go; WHATSOEVER is SET before you, eat, asking no question for CONSCIENCE sake.

28 But if any man say unto You, This is offered in sacrifice [unto idols], eat not for HIS sake [that SHEWED it, and for CONSCIENCE sake: [for "the EARTH *is* the LORD'S, and the FULNESS thereof]:"

29 Conscience, I say, * not THINE-OWN, but of the OTHER: for why is my LIBERTY judged of Another *man's* Conscience?

30 [For] if £ by Grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that for which £ give thanks?

31 Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do All to the Glory of God.

32 † Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the CHURCH of GOD:

33 Even as £ please All *men* in all *things*, not seeking MINE-OWN Profit, but the * *profit* of MANY, that they may be saved.

CHAPTER XI.

§ XXXIV.

1 Be ye Followers of me, even as £ also *am* of Christ.

2 Now I praise you, [Brethren], That ye remember Me in all things, and keep the ORDINANCES, as I delivered *them* to you.

3 But I would have you know, That the HEAD of Every Man is CHRIST; and the Head of the Woman *is* the MAN; and the Head of Christ *is* GOD.

4 Every Man praying or prophesying, having *his* Head covered, dishonoureth his HEAD.

5 But Every Woman that prayeth or prophesieth with *her* HEAD uncovered dishonoureth her HEAD: for that is even all one as if she were SHAVEN.

6 For if the Woman be not

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—19. That what is offered. THAT of the OTHER. 33. THAT of MANY, that.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—19. That what is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing? or That the Idol is any thing? But. 20. they sacrifice, they. 32. Be ye void of offence both to the Jews, and to the Gentiles, and to the CHURCH of GOD. See 23 (twice), 24, 28 (twice), 30, 2.

‡ 26. Psa. xxiv. 1.

29. not THAT of thine ownself, but

covered, let her also be †shorn: but if it be a Shame for a Woman to be SHORN or shaven, let her be covered.

7 For a Man indeed ought not to cover *his* HEAD, forasmuch as he is the Image and Glory of God: but the Woman is the Glory of the Man.

8 For the Man is not of the Woman; but the Woman of the Man.

9 Neither was the Man created for the WOMAN; but the Woman for the MAN.

10 For this *cause* ought the WOMAN to have Power on *her* HEAD, because of the ANGELS.

11 Nevertheless neither is † the Man without the Woman, neither the Woman without the Man, in the Lord.

12 For as the WOMAN *is* of the MAN, even so *is* the MAN also by the WOMAN; but ALL things of GOD.

13 Judge in Yourselves: is it comely that a Woman pray unto GOD uncovered?

14 Doth not [even] NATURE itself teach you, That, if a Man hath long Hair, it is a Shame unto him?

15 But if a Woman have long Hair, it is a Glory to her: For *her* HAIR is given her for a Covering.

16 But if any man seem to be contentious, *we* have no Such Custom, neither the CHURCHES of GOD.

17 Now in this that I declare unto you I praise you not, That ye

come together not for the BETTER, but for the WORSE.

§ XXXV.

18 For first of all, when ye come together in the † CHURCH, I hear that there be Divisions among you; and I partly believe it.

19 For there must be also Heresies among you, that THEY which are APPROVED may be made manifest among you.

20 When ye come together therefore into ONE-PLACE, *this* is not to eat the Lord's Supper.

21 For in EATING every one taketh before *other* his OWN Supper: and one is hungry and another is drunken.

22 What? have ye not Houses to EAT and to drink in? or despise ye the CHURCH of GOD, and shame THEM that HAVE not? What shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not.

23 For ~~I~~ have received * of the LORD that which also I delivered unto you, That the LORD [Jesus] the *same* NIGHT in which he was betrayed took Bread:

24 And when he had given thanks, he brake *it*, and said, [Take, eat:] this is * My BODY, which is [BROKEN] for you: This do in Remembrance of Me.

25 After the same manner also *he took* the CUP, when he had SUPPED, saying, This CUP is the NEW Testament in MY Blood: This do ye, as oft as ye drink *it*, * in Remembrance of Me.

26 For as often as ye eat this BREAD, and drink † this CUP, ye

* EMPHATIC TEXT—23. from the LORD. for you: This do ye, in MY Remembrance.

24. THAT BODY of mine which is BROKEN 25. in MY Remembrance.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—6. shorn or shaven: but. Man, nor the Man without the Woman, in the Lord. See 14, 23, 24 (twice).

11. the Woman without the 18. Church, 26. the CUP.

do shew the LORD'S DEATH till he come.

27 Wherefore whosoever shall eat † this BREAD, and drink *this* CUP of the LORD, unworthily, shall be guilty of the BODY and Blood of the LORD.

28 But let a Man examine himself, and so let him eat of *that* BREAD, and drink of *that* CUP.

29 For HE that EATETH and drinketh [unworthily], eateth and drinketh Damnation to Himself, not discerning the [LORD'S] BODY.

30 For this *cause* Many *are* weak and sickly among you, and Many sleep.

31 † For if we would judge Ourselves, we should not be judged.

33 But when we are judged, we are chastened of the LORD, that we should not be condemned with the WORLD.

33 Wherefore, my Brethren, when ye come together to EAT, tarry one for another.

34 And if any man hunger, let him eat at Home; that ye come not together unto Condemnation. And the REST will I set in order when I come.

CHAPTER XII.

§ XXXVI.

1 Now concerning *SPIRITUAL gifts, Brethren, I would not have you ignorant.

2 Ye know That ye were Gentiles, carried away unto *these* DUMB IDOLS, even as ye were led.

3 Wherefore I give you to un-

derstand, That no man speaking by the Spirit of God † calleth Jesus accursed: and *that* no man can say [that] Jesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.

4 Now there are Diversities of Gifts, but the SAME Spirit.

5 And there are Differences of Administrations, *but the SAME Lord.

6 And there are Diversities of Operations, †but it is the SAME God which WORKETH ALL in all.

7 But the MANIFESTATION of the SPIRIT is given to Every man to PROFIT withal.

8 For to one is given by the SPIRIT the Word of Wisdom; to another the Word of Knowledge by the SAME Spirit;

9 To another Faith by the SAME Spirit; to another the Gifts of Healing by †the SAME Spirit;

10 To another the Working of Miracles; to another Prophecy; to another Discerning of Spirits; to another *divers* Kinds of Tongues; [to another the Interpretation of Tongues:]

11 But All these worketh *that* ONE and the SELFSAME Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.

12 For as the BODY is one, and hath many Members, and All the the MEMBERS of †*that* ONE BODY, being many, are One Body: so also *is* CHRIST.

13 For by One Spirit are *we* all baptized into One Body, whether *we be* Jews or Gentiles, whether *we be* bond or free; and have been all made to drink [into] One Spirit.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. SPIRITUAL things, Brethren. 5. and the SAME Lord.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—27. the BREAD, or drink the CUP. 31. But if. 3. saith Jesus is accursed. 6. and the SAME God is HE which. 9. the ONE Spirit. 12. the BODY being many. See 29 (twice), 3, 10, 13.

14 For the BODY is not One Member, but many.

15 If the FOOT shall say, Because I am not the Hand, I am not of the BODY; is it therefore not of the BODY?

16 And if the EAR shall say, Because I am not the Eye, I am not of the BODY; is it therefore not of the BODY?

17 If the Whole BODY *were* an Eye, where *were* the HEARING? If the Whole *were* Hearing, where *were* the SMELLING?

18 But now hath GOD set the MEMBERS every One of them in the BODY, as it hath pleased him.

19 And if they were † ALL One Member, where *were* the BODY?

20 But now *are they* Many Members, yet but One Body.

21 And the Eye cannot say unto the HAND, I have no Need of thee: nor again the HEAD to the FEET, I have no Need of you.

22 Nay, much more *those* MEMBERS of the BODY, which SEEM to be more feeble, are necessary:

23 And *those members* of the BODY, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant Honour; and our UNCOMELY *parts* have more abundant Comeliness.

24 For our COMELY *parts* have no Need: but GOD hath tempered the BODY together, having given † more Abundant Honour to THAT *part* which lacked:

25 That there should be no Schism in the BODY; but *that* the MEMBERS should have the SAME care one for another.

26 And whether One Member

suffer, All the MEMBERS suffer with it; or † One Member be honoured, All the MEMBERS rejoice with it.

27 Now *we* are the Body of Christ, and Members in particular.

28 And GOD hath set some in the CHURCH, first Apostles, secondarily Prophets, thirdly Teachers, after that Miracles, then Gifts of Healings, Helps, Governments, Diversities of Tongues.

29 *Are* all Apostles? *are* all Prophets? *are* all Teachers? *are* all Workers-of-miracles?

30 Have all the Gifts of Healing? do all speak with Tongues? do all interpret?

31 But covet earnestly the † BEST GIFTS: and yet shew I unto you a more Excellent Way.

CHAPTER XIII.

§ XXXVII.

1 Though I speak with the TONGUES of MEN and of ANGELS, and have not Charity, I am become *as* sounding Brass, or a tinkling Cymbal.

2 And though I have *the gift of* Prophecy, and understand all MYSTERIES, and All Knowledge; and though I have All FAITH, so that I could remove Mountains, and have not Charity, I am nothing.

3 And though I bestow All my GOODS to feed the *poor*, and though I give my BODY to be burned, and have not Charity, it profiteth me nothing.

4 CHARITY suffereth long, *and* is kind; CHARITY envieth not;

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—19. all One Member. that to THAT which WAS-IN-WANT: that there should be.

24. somewhat more abundantly
26. a Member be. 31. GREATEST GIFTS.

[CHARITY] vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up,

5 Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not †HER-OWN, is not easily provoked, thinketh no EVIL;

6 Rejoiceth not in INIQUITY, but rejoiceth in the TRUTH;

7 Beareth All things, believeth All things, hopeth All things, endureth All things.

8 CHARITY never faileth: but whether *there be* † Prophecies, they shall fail; whether *there be* Tongues, they shall cease; whether *there be* Knowledge, it shall vanish away.

9 For we know in Part, and we prophesy in Part.

10 But when THAT which is PERFECT is come, [then] THAT which is in PART shall be done away.

11 When I was a Child, I spake as a Child, I understood as a Child, I thought as a Child: but when I became a Man, I put away CHILDISH THINGS.

12 For now we see through a Glass, darkly; but then Face to Face: now I know in Part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.

13 And now abideth Faith, Hope, Charity, these THREE; but the greatest of these *is* CHARITY.

CHAPTER XIV.

1 Follow after CHARITY, and desire *SPIRITUAL *gifts*, but rather that ye may prophesy.

2 For HE that SPEAKETH in an *unknown* Tongue speaketh not un-

to Men, but unto † GOD: for no man understandeth *him*; howbeit in the Spirit he speaketh Mysteries.

3 But HE that PROPHESEIETH speaketh unto Men *to* Edification, and Exhortation, and Comfort.

4 HE that SPEAKETH in an *unknown* Tongue edifieth Himself; but HE that PROPHESEIETH edifieth the Church.

§ XXXVIII. ||

5 I would that ye all spake with Tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater *is* HE that PROPHESEIETH than HE that SPEAKETH with Tongues, except he interpret, that the CHURCH may receive Edifying.

6 Now, Brethren, if I come unto you speaking with Tongues, what shall I profit You, except I shall speak to You either by Revelation, or by Knowledge, or by Prophesying, or by Doctrine?

7 And even THINGS WITHOUT-LIFE giving Sound, whether Pipe or Harp, except they give a † Distinction in the SOUNDS, how shall it be known WHAT is PIPED or HARPED?

8 For if the Trumpet give an Uncertain Sound, who shall prepare himself to the Battle?

9 So likewise *ye*, except ye utter by the TONGUE Words easy to be understood, how shall it be known WHAT is SPOKEN? for ye shall speak into the Air.

10 There are, it may be, So many Kinds of Voices in the World, and none [of them] *is* without signification.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. SPIRITUAL things, but.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—5. THAT which is not HER-OWN. 8. Prophecy, it shall fail 2. God. 7. Difference of Sound, how. See 4, 10, 10.

|| *This number is in the Vatican Manuscript a repetition of the last number.*

11 Therefore if I know not the MEANING of the VOICE, I shall be unto HIM that SPEAKETH a Barbarian, and HE that SPEAKETH shall be a Barbarian unto Me.

12 Even so *ye*, forasmuch as ye are zealous of Spiritual *gifts*, seek that ye may excel to the EDIFYING of the CHURCH.

13 Wherefore let HIM that SPEAKETH in an *unknown* Tongue pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in an *unknown* Tongue, my SPIRIT prayeth, but my UNDERSTANDING is unfruitful.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the SPIRIT, and I will pray with the UNDERSTANDING also: I will sing with the SPIRIT, [and] I will sing with the UNDERSTANDING also.

16 Else when thou † shalt bless with the SPIRIT, how shall HE that OCCUPIETH the ROOM of the UNLEARNED say AMEN at THY Giving-of-thanks, seeing he understandeth not What thou sayest?

17 For *thou* verily givest thanks well, but the OTHER is not edified.

§ XXXIX.

18 I thank [my] GOD, I speak with Tongues more than ye all:

19 Yet in the Church I had rather speak Five Words with my UNDERSTANDING, that *by my voice* I might teach Others also, than Ten-thousand Words in an *unknown* Tongue.

20 Brethren, be not Children in UNDERSTANDING: howbeit in MALICE be ye children, but in UNDERSTANDING be men.

21 In the LAW it is written, "With *men of* other Tongues and † other Lips will I speak unto this PEOPLE; and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord." ‡

22 Wherefore TONGUES are for a Sign, not to THEM that BELIEVE, but to THEM that BELIEVE not: but PROPHESYING *serveth* not for THEM that BELIEVE not, but for THEM which BELIEVE.

23 If therefore the whole CHURCH be come [together] into ONE-PLACE, and all speak with Tongues, and there come in *those that are* unlearned, [or unbelievers], will they not say That ye are mad?

24 But if all prophesy, and there come in one that believeth not, or *one* unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all:

25 † And thus are the SECRETS of his HEART made manifest; and so falling down on *his* Face he will worship GOD, and report That GOD is in you of a truth.

26 How is it then, Brethren? when ye come together, every one [of you] hath a Psalm, hath a Doctrine, † hath a Tongue, hath a Revelation, hath an Interpretation. Let all things be done unto Edifying.

27 If any man speak in an *unknown* Tongue, *let it be* by two, or at the MOST *by* three, and *that* by Course; and let one interpret.

28 But if there be no Interpreter, let him keep silence in the Church; and let him speak to Himself, and to GOD.

29 Let the Prophets speak two

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. blessed with. 21. the Lips of others will I speak.
25. The SECRETS of his HEART are made. 26. hath a Revelation, hath a Tongue,
hath an Interpretation. See 15, 18, 23 (twice), 26.

‡ 21. Isaiah xxviii. 11, 12.

or three, and let the * OTHER judge.

30 If *any thing* be revealed to Another that sitteth by, let the FIRST hold his peace.

31 For ye may all prophesy one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted.

32 And the Spirits of the Prophets are subject to the Prophets.

33 For GOD is not *the author* of Confusion, but of Peace, as in All CHURCHES of the SAINTS.

34 Let [your] WOMEN keep silence in the CHURCHES: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but † *they are commanded* to be under obedience, as also saith the LAW.

35 And if they will learn Any thing, let them ask * THEIR Husbands at Home: for it is a Shame for † Women to speak in the Church.

36 What? came the WORD of GOD out from you? or came it unto you only?

37 If any man think himself to be a Prophet, or spiritual, let him † acknowledge That the things that I write unto you are the Commandments of the LORD.

38 But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 Wherefore, Brethren, covet to PROPHECY, and forbid not to † SPEAK with Tongues.

40 Let all things be done decently and in Order.

CHAPTER XV.

§ XL.

1 Moreover, Brethren, I declare unto you the GOSPEL which I

preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye ye stand;

2 By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory What I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain.

3 For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, *how* That Christ died for our SINS according to the SCRIPTURES;

4 And That he was buried, and That he rose again the THIRD Day according to the SCRIPTURES:

5 And That he was seen of Cephas, then of the TWELVE:

6 After that, he was seen of above Five-hundred Brethren at once; of whom the GREATER-PART remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.

7 After that, he was seen of James; then of all the APOSTLES.

8 And last of all he was seen of me also, as of ONE BORN-OUT-OF-DUE-TIME.

9 For I am the LEAST of the APOSTLES, that am not meet to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the CHURCH of GOD.

10 But by the Grace of God I am what I am: and * his GRACE which *was bestowed* upon Me was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly than they all: yet not I, † but * the GRACE of GOD which was with me.

11 Therefore whether *it were* I or *they*, so we preach, and so ye believed.

12 Now if Christ be preached That he rose from the Dead, how

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—29. OTHERS judge. GRACE of his which. 10. THAT GRACE. 35. their OWN Husbands at. 10. THAT

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—34. let them be under subjection, as also saith. 35. a Woman to speak. 37. know That what I write unto you is the Commandment of the LORD. 39. speak with Tongues. 10. but the GRACE. See 34.

say some among you That there is no Resurrection of the Dead?

13 But if there be no Resurrection of the Dead, then is Christ not risen:

14 And if Christ be not risen, then *is* our PREACHING vain, and your FAITH *is* [also] vain.

15 Yea, and we are found False-witnesses of GOD; Because we have testified of GOD That he raised up CHRIST: whom he raised not up, if so be that the Dead rise not.

16 For if the Dead rise not, then is not Christ raised:

17 And if Christ be not raised, your FAITH †*is* vain; ye are yet in your SINS.

18 Then THEY also which are FALLEN-ASLEEP in Christ are perished.

19 If in this LIFE only we have hope in Christ, we are of All Men most miserable.

20 But now is Christ risen from the Dead, [and become] the First-fruits of THEM that SLEPT.

§ XLI.

21 For since by Man *came* †DEATH, by Man *came* also the Resurrection of the Dead.

22 For as in ADAM All die, even so in CHRIST shall All be made alive.

23 But every man in his OWN Order: Christ the Firstfruits; afterward THEY that are Christ's at his COMING.

24 Then *cometh* the END, when he shall have delivered up the KINGDOM to * GOD, even the Father; when he shall have put

down All Rule and All Authority and Power.

25 For he must reign, till he hath put All ENEMIES under his FEET.

26 The Last Enemy *that* shall be destroyed *is* DEATH.

27 For he hath put All things under his FEET. But when he saith All things are put under *him*, *it is* manifest That HE is excepted, which did PUT ALL things under him.

28 And when ALL things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the SON [also] himself be subject unto HIM that PUT ALL things under him, that GOD may be ALL in all.

29 Else what shall THEY do which are BAPTIZED for the DEAD, if the Dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized for †the DEAD?

30 And why stand *we* in jeopardy Every Hour?

31 I protest by † YOUR Rejoicing which I have in Christ Jesus our LORD, I die daily.

32 If after the manner of Men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what ADVANTAGETH it Me, if the Dead rise not? let us eat and drink; for to-morrow we die.

33 Be not deceived: evil Communications corrupt good Manners.

34 Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the Knowledge of God: I speak *this* to your Shame.

35 But some *man* will say, How are the DEAD raised up? and with What Body do they come?

36 *Thou* Fool, that which *thou*

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—24. the GOD and Father.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—17. *is* vain. 21. Death. 22. *them*? And why. 31. *YOUR* Rejoicing, Brethren, which. See 14, 20, 28.

sowest is not quickened, except it die:

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not THAT BODY that shall BE, but Bare Grain, it may chance of Wheat, or of some OTHER grain :

38 But GOD giveth it a Body as it hath pleased him, and to Every SEED his †OWN Body.

39 All Flesh is not the SAME Flesh: but *there is* One [*kind of* Flesh] of Men, Another Flesh of Beasts, Another † of Fishes, and Another of Birds.

40 *There are* also celestial Bodies, and Bodies terrestrial: but the GLORY of the CELESTIAL is One, and the *glory* of the TERRESTRIAL is Another.

41 *There is* One Glory of the Sun, and Another Glory of the Moon, and Another Glory of the Stars: for *one* Star differeth from *another* Star in Glory.

42 So also *is* the RESURRECTION of the DEAD. It is sown in Corruption; it is raised in Incorruption:

43 It is sown in Dishonour; it is raised in Glory: it is sown in Weakness; it is raised in Power:

§ XLII.

44 It is sown a natural Body; it is raised a spiritual Body. † There is a natural Body, and there is a spiritual Body.

45 And so it is written, "The FIRST [Man] Adam was made a living Soul;" ‡ the LAST Adam was made a quickening Spirit.

46 Howbeit THAT *was* not first

which is SPIRITUAL, but THAT which is NATURAL; and afterward THAT which is SPIRITUAL.

47 The FIRST Man *is* of the Earth, earthy: the SECOND Man *is* [the LORD] from Heaven.

48 As *is* the EARTHY, such *are* THEY also that are EARTHY: and as *is* the HEAVENLY, such *are* THEY also that are HEAVENLY.

49 And as we have borne the IMAGE of the EARTHY, we shall also bear the IMAGE of the HEAVENLY.

50 Now this I say, Brethren, That Flesh and Blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God; neither doth CORRUPTION inherit INCORRUPTION.

51 Behold, I shew You a Mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed,

52 In a Moment, in the Twinkling of an Eye, at the LAST Trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the DEAD shall be raised incorruptible, and ~~we~~ shall be changed.

53 For this CORRUPTIBLE must put on Incorruption, and this MORTAL *must* put on Immortality.

54 So when this CORRUPTIBLE shall have put on Incorruption, and this MORTAL shall have put on Immortality, then shall be brought to pass * the SAYING that is WRITTEN, "DEATH is swallowed up in Victory." ‡

55 † O Death, where *is* Thy STING? O Grave, where *is* Thy VICTORY?

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—54. THAT SAYING which is WRITTEN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—38. Own Body. 39. of Birds and another of Fishes. 44. If there be a natural Body, there is also a spiritual Body. 55. O Death, where is Thy VICTORY? O Death, where is Thy STING? The STING. See 39, 45, 47.

‡ 45. Gen. ii. 7. ‡ 54. Isa. xxv. 8.

56 The STING of DEATH is SIN; and the STRENGTH of SIN is the LAW.

57 But Thanks *be* to * GOD, which GIVETH us the VICTORY through our LORD Jesus Christ.

58 Therefore, my beloved Brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the WORK of the LORD, forasmuch as ye know That your LABOUR is not in vain in the Lord.

CHAPTER XVI.

§ XLIII.

1 Now concerning * the COLLECTION for the SAINTS, as I have given order to the CHURCHES of GALATIA, even so do *ye*.

2 Upon the First *day* of the Week let every one of you lay by him in store, as *God* hath prospered him, that there be no Gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, Whomsoever ye shall *approve by *your* Letters, *them* will I send to bring your LIBERALITY unto Jerusalem.

4 And if it be meet that I GO also, they shall go with Me.

5 Now I will come unto you, when I shall pass through Macedonia: for I do pass through Macedonia.

6 And it may be that I will abide, †yea, and winter with You, that *ye* may bring Me on my journey whithersoever I go.

7 For I will not see You now by the Way; †but I trust to tarry

* a While with you, if the LORD permit.

8 But I will tarry at Ephesus until PENTECOST.

9 For a great Door and effectual is opened unto Me, and *there are* many Adversaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without fear: for he worketh the WORK of the Lord, as *I* [also] *do*.

11 Let no man therefore despise Him: but conduct him forth in Peace, that he may come unto me: for I look for him [with the BRETHREN].

12 As touching **our* BROTHER Apollos, I greatly desired him to come unto you with the BRETHREN: but his Will was not at all to come at this time; but he will come when he shall have convenient time.

13 Watch ye, stand fast in the FAITH, quit you like men, be strong.

14 Let all your things be done with Charity.

15 I beseech you, Brethren,—ye know the HOUSE of Stephanas, That it is the Firstfruits of ACHAIA, and *that* they have addicted themselves to the Ministry of the SAINTS,—

16 That *ye* submit yourselves unto SUCH, and to Every ONE that HELPETH with *us*, and laboureth.

17 I am glad of the COMING of Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaïcus: For THAT which was LACKING on YOUR part *they* have supplied.

18 For they have refreshed MY

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—57. THAT GOD which. 1. THAT COLLECTION which is for. 3. approve, *them* by Letters will I send to carry away your LIBERALITY unto Jerusalem. † for a Time. 12. Apollos *our* BROTHER, I greatly.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—6. or winter with you. 7. for I trust. See 10, 11.

Spirit and YOUR'S: therefore acknowledge ye THEM that are SUCH.

19 The CHURCHES of ASIA salute you. Aquila and †Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the CHURCH that is in their House.

20 All the BRETHREN greet you. Greet ye one another with an holy Kiss.

21 The SALUTATION of *me* Paul with MINE-OWN Hand.

22 If any man love not the LORD [Jesus Christ], let him be Anathema Maran-atha.

23 The GRACE of *our LORD Jesus [Christ] *be* with you.

24 My LOVE *be* with you all in Christ Jesus. [Amen.]

¶ The first *epistle* to the Corinthians was written from Philippi by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaïens, and Timotheus.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—23. the LORD Jesus Christ.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—19. Prisca. See 22, 23, 24. *Subscription*: THE FIRST TO THE CORINTHIANS, WRITTEN FROM EPHESUS.

TO THE CORINTHIANS.

CHAPTER I.

(§ XLIV.)

1 Paul, an Apostle of † Jesus Christ by the Will of God, and Timothy *our* BROTHER, unto *the CHURCH of GOD which IS at Corinth, with all *the SAINTS which ARE in All ACHAIA:

2 Grace *be* to you and Peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed *be* *GOD, even the Father of our LORD Jesus Christ, *the FATHER of MERCIES, and the God of All Comfort;

4 Who COMFORTETH us in All our TRIBULATION, that we may be ABLE to comfort THEM which are in Any Trouble, by the COMFORT wherewith we ourselves are comforted of GOD.

5 For as the SUFFERINGS of CHRIST abound in us, so our CONSOLATION also aboundeth by Christ.

6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is* † for YOUR Consolation [and Salvation], which is EFFECTUAL in the Enduring of the SAME Sufferings which *We* also suffer: *or* whether we be comforted, *it is*

for YOUR Consolation and Salvation.

7 And our HOPE of you *is* stedfast, knowing, That as ye are Partakers of the SUFFERINGS, so *shall ye be* also of the CONSOLATION.

8 For we would not, Brethren, have you ignorant of *our TROUBLE which CAME [to us] in ASIA, That † we were pressed out of Measure, above Strength, insomuch that we despaired even of LIFE:

9 But *We* had the SENTENCE of DEATH in Ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in *GOD which RAISETH the DEAD:

10 Who delivered us from so Great a Death, and † doth deliver: in whom we trust That he will yet deliver *us*;

11 Ye also helping together by PRAYER for us, that for the GIFT *bestowed* upon Us by the means of Many Persons thanks may be given by Many in our behalf.

12 For our REJOICING is this, the TESTIMONY of our CONSCIENCE, that in † Simplicity and godly Sincerity, not with fleshly Wisdom, but by the Grace of God,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THAT CHURCH of. 1. THOSE SAINTS which. 3. the GOD and Father of. 3. THAT FATHER of MERCIES and God of. 8. THAT TROUBLE of ours which. 9. THAT GOD who raiseth.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: THE SECOND TO THE CORINTHIANS. 1. Christ Jesus. 6. for THAT CONSOLATION of YOU which is EFFECTUAL in the Enduring of the SAME Sufferings which *We* also suffer; and our HOPE of you is stedfast; *or* whether we be comforted, *it is* for YOUR Consolation and Salvation: knowing, That as ye are. 8. out of Measure above Strength we were pressed, insomuch. 10. will deliver. 12. Pureness and godly Sincerity, and not with fleshly Wisdom. See 6, 8.

we have had our conversation in the WORLD, and more abundantly to you-ward.

13 For we write none Other things unto you, than what ye read [or acknowledge]; and I trust ye shall acknowledge even to the End;

14 As also ye have acknowledged us in Part, That we are your Rejoicing, even as ye also *are* our's, in the DAY of † the LORD Jesus.

15 And in This CONFIDENCE I was minded to come unto You before, that ye might have a † Second Benefit;

16 And to pass by You into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of You to be brought on my way toward JUDÆA.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I use LIGHTNESS? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose according to the Flesh, that with me there should be YEA yea, and NAY nay?

18 But **as* GOD *is* true, our WORD toward you † was not yea and nay.

19 For *the SON of GOD, Jesus Christ, who was PREACHED among You by Us, *even* by me and Silvanus and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in him was yea.

20 For All the Promises of God in him *are* YEA, † and in him AMEN, unto the Glory of GOD by us.

21 Now HE which STABLISHETH us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, **is* God;

22 Who hath also SEALED us,

and given the EARNEST of the SPIRIT in our HEARTS.

23 Moreover † I call GOD for a Record upon MY Soul, That to spare you I came not as yet unto Corinth.

24 Not *for* That we have dominion over Your FAITH, but are Helpers of your JOY: for by FAITH ye stand.

CHAPTER II.

1 But I determined this with myself, that I would not COME again to you in Heaviness.

2 For if † I make you sorry, who is HE then that MAKETH me GLAD, but the SAME which is MADE-SORRY by me?

3 And I wrote this same [unto you], lest, when I came, I should have Sorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoice; having confidence in you all, That MY Joy is *the joy* of you all.

4 For out of Much Affliction and Anguish of Heart I wrote unto you with Many Tears; not that ye should be grieved, but that ye might know the LOVE which I have more abundantly unto you.

5 But if any have caused grief, he hath not grieved Me, but in Part: that I may not overcharge you all.

6 Sufficient to SUCH a man *is* THIS PUNISHMENT, which *was* inflicted of MANY.

7 So that CONTRARIWISE ye *ought* [rather] to forgive *him*, and comfort *him*, lest perhaps SUCH a one should be swallowed up with OVERMUCH Sorrow.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—18. GOD is faithful, That THAT WORD of ours which was toward you. 19. THAT SON of GOD. 21. *is* THAT God who hath also SEALED us.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. our LORD Jesus. 15. a Second Joy. 18. is no yea and nay. 20. wherefore also by him AMEN, unto. See 3, 7.

8 Wherefore I beseech you that ye would confirm *your* Love toward him.

9 For to this *end* also did I write, that I might know the PROOF of you, whether ye be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgive any thing, **¶** *forgive* also: for if **¶** forgave any thing, to whom I forgave *it*, for your sakes *forgave I it* in the Person of Christ;

11 Lest SATAN should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of His DEVICES.

§ XLV. ||

12 Furthermore, when I came to TROAS to *preach* CHRIST'S GOSPEL, and a Door was opened unto me of the Lord,

13 I had no Rest in my SPIRIT, because I FOUND not Titus my BROTHER: but taking my leave of them, I went from thence into Macedonia.

14 Now Thanks *be* unto *GOD, which always CAUSETH us to TRIUMPH in CHRIST, and maketh manifest the SAVOUR of his KNOWLEDGE by us in Every Place.

15 For we are unto GOD a Sweet-savour of Christ, in THEM that are SAVED, and in THEM that PERISH:

16 To the one *we are* the Saviour of Death unto Death; and to the other the Saviour of Life unto Life. And who *is* sufficient for these things?

17 For we are not as MANY, which CORRUPT the WORD of

GOD: but as of Sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of GOD speak we in Christ.

CHAPTER III.

1 Do we begin again to commend Ourselves? or need we, as some *others*, Epistles of Commendation to you, or *letters* of Commendation from you?

2 **¶** *¶* are our EPISTLE written in our HEARTS, known and read of All Men:

3 *Forasmuch as ye are* manifestly declared to be the Epistle of Christ ministered by us, † written not with Ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in *Tables of stone, but in fleshy Tables of the Heart.

4 And such Trust have we through CHRIST *to GOD-WARD:

5 Not That we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our SUFFICIENCY *is* of GOD;

6 Who also hath made us *able Ministers of the New Testament; not of the Letter, but of the Spirit: for the LETTER killeth, but the SPIRIT giveth life.

7 But if the MINISTRATION of DEATH, written *and* engraven in Stones, was glorious, so that the CHILDREN of Israel could not stedfastly behold the FACE of Moses, for *the GLORY of his COUNTENANCE; which *glory* was to be DONE-AWAY:

8 How shall not the MINISTRATION of the SPIRIT be rather glorious?

9 For if the MINISTRATION of

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14. THAT GOD who always. 3. stony Tables, but. 4. toward GOD, 6. able to be Ministers. 7. THAT GLORY of.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. and written not.

|| *This Section is numbered 44 in the Vatican Manuscript.*

CONDEMNATION *be* Glory, much more doth the MINISTRATION of RIGHTEOUSNESS exceed in Glory.

10 For even THAT which was MADE-GLORIOUS had no glory in This RESPECT, by reason of the GLORY that EXCELLETH.

11 For if THAT which is DONE-AWAY *was* glorious, much more THAT which REMAINETH *is* glorious.

12 Seeing then that we have Such Hope, we use Great Plainness of speech :

13 And not as Moses, *which* put a Vail over his FACE, that the CHILDREN of Israel could not STEDFASTLY-LOOK to the END of THAT which is ABOLISHED :

14 But their MINDS were blinded : for until THIS-DAY remaineth the SAME Vail untaken away in the READING of the OLD Testament ; which *vail* is done away in Christ.

15 But even unto This-day, when Moses is read, the Vail is upon their HEART.

16 Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the VAIL shall be taken away.

17 Now the LORD is *that* SPIRIT : and where the SPIRIT of the Lord is, [there] is Liberty.

18 But *we* all, with Open Face beholding as in a glass the GLORY of the Lord, are changed into the SAME Image from Glory to Glory, *even* as by the Spirit of the Lord.

CHAPTER IV.

1 Therefore seeing we have this MINISTRY, as we have received mercy, we faint not ;

2 But have renounced the HIDDEN things of DISHONESTY, not walking in Craftiness, nor handling the WORD of GOD deceitfully ; but by MANIFESTATION of the TRUTH commending ourselves to Every Man's Conscience in the sight of GOD.

3 But if our GOSPEL be hid, it is hid to THEM that are LOST :

4 In whom the GOD of this WORLD hath blinded the MINDS of THEM which BELIEVE not, lest the LIGHT of the GLORIOUS GOSPEL of CHRIST, who is the Image of GOD, † should SHINE unto them.

§ XLVI.

5 For we preach not Ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord ; and ourselves your Servants for Jesus' sake.

6 For *GOD, who COMMANDED the Light to shine out of Darkness, hath shined in our HEARTS, to *give* the Light of the KNOWLEDGE of the GLORY of GOD in the Face of [Jesus] Christ.

7 But we have this TREASURE in Earthen Vessels, that the EXCELLENCY of the POWER may be of GOD, and not of us.

8 *We are* troubled on every side, yet not distressed ; *we are* perplexed, but not in despair ;

9 Persecuted, but not forsaken ; cast down, but not destroyed ;

10 Always bearing about in the BODY the DYING of † the LORD Jesus, that the LIFE also of JESUS might be made manifest in our BODY.

11 * For *we* which LIVE are alway delivered unto Death for Jesus' sake, that the LIFE also of

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—6. THAT GOD, who COMMANDED the Light. which LIVE, are.

11. For *we*, we

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—4. should SHINE-FORTH. For. 10. JESUS, that. See 17, 6.

JESUS might be made manifest in our MORTAL Flesh.

12 So then DEATH worketh in us, but LIFE in you.

13 *We*, having the SAME Spirit of FAITH, according as it is WRITTEN, "I believed, and therefore have I spoken;" † *we* also believe, and therefore speak;

14 Knowing That HE which RAISED-UP † the LORD Jesus shall raise up Us also † by Jesus, and shall present *us* with you.

15 For ALL things *are* for your sakes, that the abundant GRACE might through the THANKSGIVING of MANY redound to the GLORY of GOD.

16 For which *cause* we faint not; but though our OUTWARD Man perish, yet † the INWARD *man* is renewed Day by Day.

17 For † our LIGHT AFFLICTION, which is but for a MOMENT, worketh for us a far more exceeding *and* eternal Weight of Glory;

18 While we look not at the THINGS which are SEEN, but at the THINGS which are not SEEN: for the THINGS which are SEEN *are* temporal; but the THINGS which are not SEEN *are* eternal.

CHAPTER V.

1 For we know That if our EARTHLY House of *this* TABERNACLE were dissolved, we have a Building of God, an House not made with hands, eternal in the HEAVENS.

2 For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with

* our HOUSE which is from Heaven:

3 If so be that being clothed we shall not be found naked.

4 For WE that ARE in *this* TABERNACLE do groan, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that MORTALITY might be swallowed up of LIFE.

5 Now HE that hath WROUGHT us for the selfsame thing *is* * God, who [also] hath GIVEN unto us the EARNEST of the SPIRIT.

6 Therefore *we are* always confident, knowing That, whilst we are at home in the BODY, we are absent from the LORD:

7 For we walk by Faith, not by Sight:

8 We are confident, *I say*, and willing rather to be absent from the BODY, and to be present with the LORD.

9 Wherefore we labour, that, whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him.

10 For we must ALL appear before the JUDGMENT-SEAT of CHRIST; that every one may receive the THINGS *done* in *his* BODY, according to that he hath done, whether *it be* good or bad.

§ XLVII.

11 Knowing therefore the TERROR of the LORD, we persuade Men; but we are made manifest unto God; and I trust also are made manifest in your CONSCIENCES.

12 [For] we commend not Ourselves again unto you, but give you

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. THAT HOUSE of ours which. 5. THAT God who.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. JESUS shall. 14. with Jesus, and. 16. our INNER man. 17. the LIGHT AFFLICTION. 3. If so be that being clothed. See 5, 12.

‡ 13. Psalm cxvi. 10.

Occasion to glory on our behalf, that ye may have somewhat to *answer* THEM which GLORY in Appearance, and not in Heart.

13 For whether we be beside ourselves, *it is* to God: or whether we be sober, *it is* for your cause.

14 For the LOVE of CHRIST constraineth us; because we thus judge, That [if] one died for all, *then were ALL dead:

15 And *that* he died for all, that THEY which LIVE should not henceforth live unto Themselves, but unto HIM which DIED for them, and rose again.

16 Wherefore HENCEFORTH know *we* No man after the Flesh: yea, though we have known Christ after the Flesh, yet now henceforth know we *him* no more.

17 Therefore if any man *be* in Christ, *he is* a New Creature: OLD things are passed away; behold, † ALL things are become new.

18 And ALL things *are* of *GOD, who hath RECONCILED us to himself by [Jesus] Christ, and hath given to us the MINISTRY of RECONCILIATION;

19 To wit, That God was in Christ, reconciling the World unto himself, not imputing their TRESPASSES unto them; and hath committed unto us the WORD of RECONCILIATION.

20 Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though GOD did beseech *you* by us: we pray *you* in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to GOD.

21 [For] he hath made *HIM to

be Sin for us, who KNEW no Sin; that *we* might be made the Righteousness of God in him.

CHAPTER VI.

1 We then, *as* workers together *with him*, beseech *you* also that ye receive not the GRACE of GOD in vain.

2 For he saith, "I have heard thee in a Time accepted, and in the Day of Salvation have I succoured thee:" behold, now *is* the accepted Time; behold, now *is* the Day of Salvation.

3 Giving No Offence in any thing, that the MINISTRY be not blamed:

4 But in all *things* approving ourselves as the Ministers of God, in much Patience, in Afflictions, in Necessities, in Distresses,

5 In Stripes, in Imprisonments, in Tumults, in Labours, in Watchings, in Fastings;

6 By Pureness, by Knowledge, by Longsuffering, by Kindness, by the holy Ghost, by Love unfeigned,

7 By the Word of Truth, by the Power of God, by *the ARMOUR of RIGHTEOUSNESS on the RIGHT *hand* and on the Left,

8 By Honour and Dishonour, by Evil-report and Good-report: as deceivers, and *yet* true;

9 As unknown, and *yet* well known; as dying, and, behold, we live; as chastened, and not killed;

10 As sorrowful, yet alway rejoicing; as poor, yet making Many rich; as having Nothing, and *yet* possessing All things.

11 *O ye* Corinthians, our MOUTH

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14. accordingly ALL were dead. 18. THAT God who hath. 21. HIM who KNEW no Sin, *to be* Sin for us; that. 7. THAT ARMOUR of RIGHTEOUSNESS *which is* on the RIGHT *hand*.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—17. they are become new. See 14, 18, 21.

is open unto you, our HEART is enlarged.

12 Ye are not straitened in us, but ye are straitened in your-own BOWELS.

13 Now for a RECOMPENCE in the SAME, I speak as unto *my* Children, be *ye* also enlarged.

§ XLVIII.

14 Be ye not unequally yoked together with Unbelievers: for What Fellowship hath Righteousness with Unrighteousness? † and What Communion hath Light with Darkness?

15 And What Concord hath Christ with Belial? or What Part hath he that believeth with an infidel?

16 And What Agreement hath the Temple of God with Idols? for † *ye* are the Temple of the living God; as GOD hath said, “I will dwell in them, and walk in *them*; and I will be Their God, and *they* shall be My People.” ‡

17 Wherefore, “Come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean *thing*; and *I* will receive you,

18 “And will be a Father unto you, and *ye* shall be My Sons and Daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.” ‡

CHAPTER VII.

1 Having therefore These PROMISES, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all Filthiness of the Flesh and Spirit, perfecting Holiness in the Fear of God.

2 Receive us; we have wronged

No man, we have corrupted No man, we have defrauded No man.

3 I speak not *this* to condemn *you*: for I have said before, That † ye are in our HEARTS to DIE and live with *you*.

4 Great *is* My Boldness of speech toward you, great *is* My Glorying of you: I am filled with COMFORT, I am exceeding joyful in All our TRIBULATION.

5 For, when we were come into Macedonia, our FLESH had No Rest, but we were troubled on every side; without *were* Fightings, within *were* Fears.

6 Nevertheless *GOD that COMFORTETH THOSE that are CAST-DOWN, comforted us by the COMING of Titus;

7 And not by his COMING only, but by the CONSOLATION where-with he was comforted in you, when he told us YOUR Earnest-desire, YOUR Mourning, YOUR Fervent-mind toward me; so that I rejoiced the more.

8 For though I made you sorry with a LETTER, I do not † repent, though I did repent: for I perceive That the same EPISTLE hath made you sorry, though *it were* but for a Season.

9 Now I rejoyce, not That ye were made sorry, but That ye sorrowed to Repentance: for ye were made sorry after a Godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing.

10 For GODLY Sorrow worketh Repentance to Salvation not to be repented of: but the SORROW of the WORLD worketh Death.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—6. that GOD who COMFORTETH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. or What Communion. 16. *we* are. 3. *it is* in our HEARTS. 8. repent: and if even I did repent, I perceive That.

‡ 16. Lev. xxvi. 12. ‡ 18. Isa. lii. 11; Jer. xxxi. 1, 9.

11 For behold this selfsame thing, that ye SORROWED after a Godly sort, What Carefulness it wrought in you, yea, *what* Clearing of yourselves, yea, *what* Indignation, yea, *what* Fear, yea, *what* Vehement-desire, yea, *what* Zeal, yea, *what* Revenge! In all *things* ye have approved yourselves to be clear in *this* MATTER.

12 Wherefore, though I wrote unto you, *I did it* not for HIS cause that had DONE-THE-WRONG, † nor for HIS cause that SUFFERED-WRONG, but that * our CARE for you in the sight of GOD might APPEAR unto you.

13 † Therefore we were comforted in your COMFORT: yea, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the JOY of Titus, Because his SPIRIT was refreshed by you all.

14 For if I have boasted any thing to Him of you, I am not ashamed; but as we spake All things to you in Truth, *even so † our BOASTING, which *I made* before Titus, is found a Truth.

15 And his INWARD-AFFECTION is more abundant toward you, whilst he remembereth the OBE-DIENCE of you all, how with Fear and Trembling ye received him.

16 I rejoyce therefore That I have confidence in you in all *things*.

CHAPTER VIII.

§ XLIX.

1 Moreover, Brethren, we do you to wit of *the GRACE of GOD

BESTOWED on the CHURCHES of MACEDONIA;

2 *How* That in a Great Trial of Affliction the ABUNDANCE of their JOY and their DEEP Poverty abounded unto the RICHES of their LIBERALITY.

3 For to *their* Power, I bear record, yea, and beyond *their* Power *they were* willing of themselves;

4 Praying us with Much Intreaty That † we would receive the GIFT, and *take upon us* the FELLOWSHIP of *the MINISTERING to the SAINTS.

5 And *this they did*, not as we hoped, but first gave their Ownselves to the LORD, and unto us by the Will of God.

6 Insomuch that we DESIRED Titus, that as he had begun, so he would also finish in you the same GRACE also.

7 Therefore, as ye abound in every *thing*, in Faith, and Utterance, and Knowledge, and in All Diligence, and in YOUR Love to us, *see* that ye abound in This GRACE also.

8 I speak not by Commandment, but by occasion of the FORWARDNESS of OTHERS, and to prove the SINCERITY of YOUR Love.

9 For ye know the GRACE of our LORD Jesus [Christ], That, though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that *ye* through HIS Poverty might be rich.

10 And herein I give *my* Advice:

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—12. THAT CARE of ours which we have for you in the sight. 14. even so THAT BOASTING of ours which. 1. THAT GRACE of GOD which was BESTOWED. 4. THAT MINISTERING which is to the SAINTS.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—12. nor on the other hand for HIS cause. 13. Therefore we were comforted; and in our COMFORT, exceedingly the more joyed we. 14. the BOASTING of you *which I made* before (a). 4. *we would take upon us* the GIFT, and the FELLOWSHIP of. See 9.

for this is expedient for You, who have begun before, not only to DO, but also to BE-FORWARD a Year ago.

11 Now therefore perform the DOING of it; that as *there was a READINESS to WILL*, so *there may be a PERFORMANCE* also out of THAT which ye HAVE.

12 For if there be first a WIL-LING-MIND, *it is* accepted according to that a man hath, *and* not according to that he hath not.

13 For *I mean* not that other men be eased, and ye burdened:

14 But by an Equality, *that* now at THIS Time YOUR Abundance *may be a supply* for THEIR Want, that THEIR Abundance also may be a supply for YOUR Want: that there may be Equality:

15 As it is written, "HE that *had gathered MUCH* had nothing over; and HE that *had gathered LITTLE* had no lack." †

16 But Thanks *be* to *GOD, which PUT the SAME Earnest-care into the HEART of Titus for you.

17 For indeed he accepted the EXHORTATION; but being more forward, of his own accord he went unto you.

18 And we have sent with him the BROTHER, Whose PRAISE *is* in the GOSPEL throughout All the CHURCHES;

19 And not *that* only, but who was also chosen of the CHURCHES to travel with us with THIS GRACE, which is ADMINISTERED by us to

the GLORY of the [Same] LORD, and *declaration of* †your Ready-mind:

20 Avoiding this, that no man should blame Us in THIS ABUN-DANCE which is ADMINISTERED by us:

21 †Providing for honest things, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of Men.

22 And we have sent with them our BROTHER, whom we have oftentimes proved diligent in many things, but now much more †diligent, upon *the great Confidence which *I have* in you.

23 Whether *any do enquire* of Titus, *he is* my Partner and Fellow-helper concerning you: or our Brethren *be enquired of*, *they are* the Messengers of the Churches, *and* the Glory of Christ.

24 Wherefore shew ye to them, [and] before the CHURCHES, the PROOF of your LOVE, and of Our Boasting on your behalf.

CHAPTER IX.

§ L.

1 For as touching *the MINIS-TERING to the SAINTS, it is superfluous for me to WRITE to you:

2 For I know the FORWARD-NESS of your MIND, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, That Achaia was ready a Year ago; and YOUR Zeal hath provoked VERY-MANY.

3 Yet have I sent the BRE-THREN, lest *our BOASTING of you should be in vain in this

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—16. THAT GOD who PUT. 22. THAT great Confidence which *I have* in you. 1. THAT MINISTERING which is to the SAINTS. 3. THAT BOASTING of ours which is over you should be in vain.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—19. our Ready-mind. 21. For we provide for honest things. 22. diligent And upon THAT great Confidence which *I have* in you, whether *any do enquire*. See 19, 24.

‡ 15. Exod. xvi. 18.

BEHALF; that, as I said, ye may be ready:

4 Lest [haply] if they of Macedonia come with me, and find you unprepared, *wc*—that we say not, *ye*—should be ashamed † in this * same CONFIDENT BOASTING.

5 Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the BRETHREN, that they would go before unto you, and make up beforehand * your BOUNTY, † whereof ye HAD-NOTICE-BEFORE, that the same might be ready, as *a matter of Bounty*, and not as *of Covetousness*.

6 But this *I say*, HE which SOWETH sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and HE which SOWETH bountifully shall reap also bountifully.

7 Every man according as he purposeth in his HEART, *so let him give*; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for GOD loveth a Cheerful Giver.

8 And GOD *is* able to make All Grace abound toward you; that ye, always having All Sufficiency in all *things*, may abound to Every good Work:

9 As it is written, “He hath dispersed abroad; he hath given to the POOR: his RIGHTEOUSNESS remaineth for EVER.” †

10 Now HE that MINISTERETH Seed to the SOWER † both minister Bread for *your Food*, and multiply your SEED-SOWN, and increase the FRUITS of your RIGHTEOUSNESS;

11 Being enriched in every thing to All Bountifulness, which causeth through us Thanksgiving † to GOD.

12 For the ADMINISTRATION of this SERVICE not only supplieth the WANT of the SAINTS, but is abundant also by Many Thanksgivings to GOD;

13 Whiles by the EXPERIMENT of this MINISTRATION they glorify GOD for your PROFESSED SUBJECTION unto the GOSPEL of CHRIST, and for *your Liberal DISTRIBUTION* unto them, and unto all *men*;

14 And by Their Prayer for you, which long after you for the EXCEEDING Grace of GOD in you.

15 Thanks *be* unto GOD for his UNSPEAKABLE Gift.

CHAPTER X.

§ LI.

1 Now *¶* Paul myself beseech you by the MEEKNESS and Gentleness of CHRIST, who in Presence *am* base among you, but being absent *am* bold † toward you:

2 But I beseech *you*, that I may not be BOLD when I am present with *that* CONFIDENCE, wherewith I think to be bold against SOME, which THINK of us as if we walked according to the Flesh.

3 For though we walk in the Flesh, we do not war after the Flesh:

4 For the WEAPONS of our WARFARE *are* not carnal, but mighty through GOD to the pulling down of Strong-holds;

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—4. CONFIDENCE of BOASTING. 5. this BOUNTY of yours, whereof.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—4. in this CONFIDENCE. Therefore. 5. which hath been FORE-ANNOUNCED, that the same. 10. will both minister. 11. of God. 1. for your sakes. But I beseech. See 4.

‡ 9. Psalm. cxii. 9.

5 Casting down Imaginations, and Every High Thing that exalteth itself against the KNOWLEDGE of GOD, and bringing into captivity Every Thought to the OBEDIENCE of CHRIST;

6 And having in a Readiness to revenge All Disobedience, when Your OBEDIENCE is fulfilled.

7 Do ye look on THINGS after the Outward-appearance? If any man † trust to himself That he is Christ's, let him of himself think this again, That, as *he is* Christ's, even so *are we* [Christ's].

8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our AUTHORITY, which the LORD hath given [us] for Edification, and not for your Destruction, I should not be ashamed:

9 That I may not seem as if I would terrify you by LETTERS.

10 For *his* LETTERS, say they, *are* weighty and powerful; but *his* BODILY PRESENCE *is* weak, and *his* SPEECH contemptible.

11 Let SUCH an one think this, That, such as we are in WORD by Letters when we are absent, such *will we be* also in DEED when we are present.

12 For † we dare not make ourselves of the number, or compare ourselves with SOME that COMMEND Themselves: but *they* measuring Themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise.

13 But *we* will not boast of Things WITHOUT-*our*-MEASURE, but according to the MEASURE of the RULE which GOD hath dis-

tributed to us, a Measure to reach even unto you.

14 For we stretch not ourselves beyond *our measure*, as though we reached not unto You: for we are come as far as to You also in *preaching* the GOSPEL of CHRIST:

15 Not boasting of Things WITHOUT-*our*-MEASURE, *that is*, of Other-men's Labours; but having Hope, when your FAITH is increased, that we shall be enlarged by You according to our RULE abundantly,

16 To preach the gospel in the *regions* BEYOND you, *and* not to boast in Another-man's Line of Things MADE-READY to our hand.

17 But HE that GLORIETH, let him glory in the Lord.

18 For not HE that COMMENDETH Himself is approved, but Whom the LORD commendeth.

CHAPTER XI.

§ LII.

1 Would to God ye could bear with me † a little in *my* FOLLY: and indeed bear with me.

2 For I am jealous over you with Godly Jealousy: for I have espoused you to One Husband, that I may present *you as* a chaste Virgin to CHRIST.

3 But I fear, lest by any means, as the SERPENT beguiled Eve through his SUBTILTY, [so] your MINDS should be corrupted † from * the SIMPLICITY that is in CHRIST.

4 For if HE that COMETH preacheth Another Jesus, whom we have not preached, or *if* ye

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. THAT SIMPLICITY which is in CHRIST.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—7. seemeth to trust to himself. 12. I dare not. 1. some little in *my* Folly. 3. from THAT SIMPLICITY and THAT PURENESS which is in CHRIST. See 7 8, 3.

receive another Spirit, which ye have not received, or another Gospel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with *him*.

5 † For I suppose I was not a whit behind the VERY-CHIEFEST Apostles.

6 But though *I be* rude in SPEECH, yet not in KNOWLEDGE; but we have been throughly made manifest among you in all things.

7 Have I committed an Offence in abasing Myself that *ye* might be exalted, Because I have preached to you the GOSPEL of GOD freely?

8 I robbed Other Churches, taking Wages of *them* * to do YOU Service.

9 And when I was present with you, and wanted, I was chargeable to no man: for THAT which was LACKING to me the BRETHERN which came from Macedonia supplied: and in all *things* I have kept Myself from being burdensome unto you, and *so* will I keep *myself*.

10 As the Truth of Christ is in me, no man shall stop me of this BOASTING in the REGIONS of ACHAIA.

11 † Wherefore? Because I love you not? GOD knoweth.

12 But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off OCCASION from THEM which DESIRE Occasion; that wherein they glory, they may be found even as *we*.

13 For SUCH *are* False-apostles, deceitful Workers, transforming themselves into the Apostles of Christ.

14 And no Marvel; for SATAN

himself is transformed into an Angel of Light.

15 Therefore *it is* no great thing if his MINISTERS also be transformed as the Ministers of Righteousness; Whose END shall be according to their WORKS.

§ LIII.

16 I say again, Let no man think Me a Fool; if otherwise, yet as a Fool receive me, that *Æ* may boast myself a little.

17 That which I speak, I speak *it* not after the Lord, but as it were foolishly, in This CONFIDENCE of BOASTING.

18 Seeing that many glory after the FLESH, *Æ* will glory also.

19 For ye suffer FOOLS gladly, seeing ye *yourselves* are wise.

20 For ye suffer, if a man bring You into bondage, if a man devour *you*, if a man take of *you*, if a man exalt himself, if a man smite You on the Face.

21 I speak as concerning Reproach, as Though *we* had been weak. Howbeit whereinsoever any is bold,—I speak foolishly,—*Æ* am bold also.

22 Are they Hebrews? so *am* *Æ*. Are they Israelites? so *am* *Æ*. Are they the Seed of Abraham? so *am* *Æ*.

23 Are they Ministers of Christ?—I speak as a Fool,—*Æ am* more; in Labours more abundant, † in Stripes above measure, in Prisons more frequent, in Deaths oft.

24 Of the Jews five times received I forty *stripes* save one.

25 Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered shipwreck, a night and a day have I been in the DEEP;

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. for YOUR Service. And when. 16. *Æ* also may boast.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—5. And I suppose. 11. Wherefore I love you not? GOD knoweth. 23. in Prisons more frequent, in Stripes above measure, in Deaths oft.

26 In Journeyings often, in Perils of Waters, in Perils of Robbers, in Perils by *mine own* Countrymen, in Perils by the Heathen, in Perils in the City, in Perils in the Wilderness, in Perils in the Sea, in Perils among False-brethren;

27 In Weariness and Painfulness, in Watchings often, in Hunger and Thirst, in Fastings often, in Cold and Nakedness.

28 Beside *those* THINGS that are WITHOUT, THAT which COMETH upon me DAILY, the CARE of All the CHURCHES.

29 Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not?

30 If I must needs glory, I will glory of the THINGS which concern [mine] INFIRMITIES.

31 The GOD and Father of our LORD Jesus [Christ], *which IS blessed for EVERMORE, knoweth That I lie not.

32 In Damascus the GOVERNOR under Aretas the KING kept the CITY of the DAMASCENES with a garrison, [desirous] to apprehend me:

33 And through a Window in a Basket was I let down by the WALL, and escaped his HANDS.

CHAPTER XII.

1 It is not expedient [for me] doubtless to glory. †I will come to Visions and Revelations of the Lord.

2 I knew a Man in Christ above fourteen Years ago,—whether in the Body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the BODY, I can-

not tell: GOD knoweth;—SUCH an one caught up to the Third Heaven.

3 And I knew SUCH a Man,—whether in the Body, or out of the BODY, I cannot tell: GOD knoweth;—

4 *How* That he was caught up into PARADISE, and heard Un-speakable Words, which it is not lawful for a Man to utter.

5 Of SUCH an one will I glory: yet of myself will I not glory, but in [mine] INFIRMITIES.

6 For though I would desire to glory, I shall not be a Fool; for I will say the Truth: but *now* I forbear, lest any man should think of Me above that which he seeth me *to be*, or [*that he*] heareth of me.

7 And lest I should be exalted above measure through the ABUNDANCE of the REVELATIONS, there was given to me a Thorn in the FLESH, the Messenger of Satan to buffet Me, lest I should be exalted above measure.

8 For this thing I besought the LORD thrice, that it might depart from me.

9 And he said unto me, My GRACE is sufficient for thee: for [my] STRENGTH is made perfect in Weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in [my] INFIRMITIES, that the POWER of CHRIST may rest upon Me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in Infirmitics, in Reproaches, in Necessities, in Persecutions, in Distresses for Christ's sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong.

11 I am become a Fool [in

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—31. HE who IS the BLESSED-ONE for EVERMORE.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. But I will come. See 30, 31, 32, 1, 5, 6, 9 (twice).

glorying]; ye have compelled Me: for I ought to have been commended of You: for in nothing am I behind the VERY-CHIEFEST Apostles, though I be nothing.

12 Truly the SIGNS of an APOSTLE were wrought among you in All Patience, in Signs, and Wonders, and Mighty-deeds.

13 For what is it wherein ye were inferior to OTHER Churches, except *it be* That I myself was not burdensome to you? forgive me this WRONG.

14 Behold, †the third time I am ready to come to you; and I will not be burdensome [to you]: for I seek not YOUR'S but you: for the CHILDREN ought not to lay up for the PARENTS, but the PARENTS for the CHILDREN.

15 And I will very gladly spend and be spent for *you: though the more abundantly I love You, the less I be loved.

16 But be it so, I did not burden you: nevertheless, being crafty, I caught You with Guile.

17 Did I make a gain of you by any of them whom I sent unto you?

18 I desired Titus, and with *him* I sent a BROTHER. Did Titus make a gain of you? walked we not in the SAME Spirit? *walked we* not †in the SAME Steps?

19 Again, think ye That we excuse ourselves unto You? we speak before GOD in Christ:

§ LIV.

But *we do* ALL things, dearly beloved, for YOUR Edifying.

20 For I fear, lest, when I come,

I shall not find you such as I would, and *that* I shall be found unto you such as ye would not: lest *there be* Debates, †Envyings, Wrathes, Strifes, Backbitings, Whisperings, Swellings, Tumults:

21 *And* lest, when I come again, my GOD will humble me among you, and *that* I shall bewail MANY which have SINNED-ALREADY, and have not repented of the UNCLEANNESSE and Fornication and Lasciviousness which they have committed.

CHAPTER XIII.

1 This *is* the third *time* I am coming to you. In the Mouth of Two or three Witnesses shall Every Word be established.

2 †I told you before, and foretell you, as if I were present, the SECOND time; and being absent now I write to THEM which HERETOFORE HAVE SINNED, and to all OTHER, That, if I come AGAIN, I will not spare:

3 Since ye seek a Proof of CHRIST SPEAKING in me, *which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you.

4 For though he was crucified through Weakness, yet he liveth by the Power of God. For *we* also are weak in him, but we shall live with him by the Power of God [toward you].

5 Examine Yourselves, whether ye be in the FAITH; prove your Owselves. Know ye not your ownelves, *how* That Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be Reprobates?

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—15. your SOULS: though 3. who toward You is not weak.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. this is the third time. 18. of old in the SAME Steps? Think ye That. 20. Envy. 2. I foretold, and foretell the SECOND time as if I were present, though now absent, to THEM which. See 11, 14, 4.

6 But I trust That ye shall know That **wē** are are not Reprobates.

7 Now †I pray to GOD that ye do no Evil; not that **wē** should appear approved, but that **pē** should do THAT which is HONEST, though **wē** be as Reprobates.

8 For we can do nothing against the TRUTH, but for the TRUTH.

9 For we are glad, when **wē** are weak, and **pē** are strong: [and] this also we wish, *even* YOUR Perfection.

10 Therefore I write These things being absent, lest being present I should use Sharpness, according to the POWER which the LORD hath

given me to Edification, and not to Destruction.

11 Finally, Brethren, farewell. Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of ONE mind, live in peace; and the GOD of LOVE and Peace shall be with you.

12 Greet one another with an Holy Kiss.

13 All the SAINTS salute you.

14 The GRACE of the LORD Jesus Christ, and the LOVE of GOD, and the COMMUNION of the HOLY Ghost, *be* with you all. [Amen].

¶ The second *epistle* to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, a city of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—7. we pray. See 9, 14.

Subscription: THE SECOND TO

THE CORINTHIANS, WRITTEN FROM PHILIPPI.

TO THE GALATIANS.

CHAPTER I.

(§ LV.)

1 Paul, an Apostle,—not of Men, neither by Man, but by Jesus Christ, and *God the Father, who RAISED him from the dead:—

2 And ALL the Brethren which are with me, unto the CHURCHES of GALATIA:

3 Grace *be* to you and Peace from God the Father, and *from* *our Lord Jesus Christ,

4 Who GAVE himself for our SINS, that he might deliver us from this PRESENT evil World, according to the WILL of *GOD and our Father:

5 To whom *be* GLORY for EVER and EVER. Amen.

6 I marvel That ye are so soon removed from HIM that CALLED you into the Grace of Christ unto Another Gospel:

7 Which is not another; but there be SOME that TROUBLE you, and would pervert the GOSPEL of CHRIST.

8 But though ~~we~~, or an Angel from Heaven, preach any other gospel unto You than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now again, If any *man* preach any other gospel unto You than that ye have received, let him be accursed.

10 For do I now persuade Men, or GOD? or do I seek to please Men? for if I yet pleased Men, I should not be the Servant of Christ.

11 But I certify you, Brethren, That *the GOSPEL which was PREACHED of me is not after Man.

12 For ~~Æ~~ neither received it of Man, neither was I taught *it*, but by the Revelation of Jesus Christ.

13 For ye have heard of MY Conversation in time past in the JEWS'-RELIGION, *how* That beyond Measure I persecuted the CHURCH of GOD, and wasted it:

14 And profited in the JEWS'-RELIGION above Many my Equals in mine own NATION, being more exceedingly zealous of the TRADITIONS of my FATHERS.

15 But when †it pleased *GOD, who SEPARATED me from my Mother's Womb, and called *me* by his GRACE,

16 To reveal his SON in me, that I might preach him among the

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THAT God the Father who. 3. THAT Lord of ours Jesus Christ. 4. our GOD and Father: To whom. 11. THAT GOSPEL which was. 15. THAT God who.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT—*Title*: TO THE GALATIANS. 15. it pleased HIM who SEPARATED.

HEATHEN; immediately I conferred not with Flesh and Blood:

17 Neither went I [up] to Jerusalem to THEM which were APOSTLES before me; but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus.

18 Then after three Years I went up to Jerusalem to see † Peter, and abode with him fifteen Days.

19 But other of the APOSTLES saw I none, save James the LORD'S BROTHER.

20 Now the things which I write unto you, behold, before GOD, I lie not.

21 Afterwards I came into the REGIONS of SYRIA and CILICIA;

22 And was unknown by FACE unto *the CHURCHES of JUDÆA which were in Christ:

23 But they had heard only, That HE which PERSECUTED us in times past now preacheth the FAITH which once he destroyed.

24 And they glorified GOD in me.

CHAPTER II.

1 Then Fourteen Years after I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also.

2 And I went up by Revelation, and communicated unto them *that* GOSPEL which I preach among the GENTILES, but privately to THEM which were of REPUTATION, lest by any means I should run, or had run, in vain.

§ LVI. ||

3 † But *neither Titus, who

was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised:

4 And that because of FALSE-BRETHREN UNAWARES-BROUGHT-IN, who came in privily to spy out our LIBERTY which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring Us into bondage:

5 To whom we gave place by SUBJECTION, no, not for an Hour; that the TRUTH of the GOSPEL might continue with you.

6 But of THOSE who SEEMED to be somewhat, whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to Me: God accepteth no Man's Person: for THEY who SEEMED *to be somewhat* in conference added nothing to Me:

7 But CONTRARIWISE, when they saw That the GOSPEL of the UNCIRCUMCISION was committed unto me, as *the gospel* of the CIRCUMCISION *was* unto Peter:

8 For HE that WROUGHT-EFFECTUALLY in Peter to the Apostleship of the CIRCUMCISION, the same was mighty in me toward the GENTILES:

9 And when James, Cephas, and John, *who SEEMED to be Pillars, perceived *the GRACE that was GIVEN unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the Right-hands of Fellowship; that *we should go* unto the HEATHEN, and *they* unto the CIRCUMCISION.

10 Only *they would* that we should remember the POOR; the same which I also was forward to do.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—22. THOSE CHURCHES of JUDÆA which. 3. not even THAT Titus, *who was* with me, being a Greek. 9. THEY who SEEMED. 9. THAT GRACE which was GIVEN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—18. Cephas, and abode. 3 But not even Titus, *who was* with me, being a Greek. See 17.

|| *This Section is numbered 55 in the Vatican Manuscript.*

11 But when †Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood Him to the Face, Because he was to be blamed.

12 For before that certain CAME from James, he did eat with the GENTILES: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing THEM *which were* of the Circumcision.

13 And the OTHER Jews dissembled likewise with him; inso-much that Barnabas also was carried away with Their DISSIMULATION.

14 But when I saw That they walked not uprightly according to the TRUTH of the GOSPEL, I said unto †PETER before *them* all, If **thou**, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, †why compellest thou the GENTILES to live as do the Jews?

15 ~~We~~, *who are* Jews by Nature, and not Sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Knowing That a Man is not justified by the Works of the Law, but by the Faith of †Jesus Christ, even ~~we~~ have believed in †Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the Works of the Law: For by the Works of the Law shall No Flesh be justified.

17 But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found Sinners, *is* therefore Christ the Minister of Sin? God forbid.

18 For if I build again the

things which I destroyed, I make Myself a Transgressor.

19 For ~~I~~ through the Law am dead to the Law, that I might livē unto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not ~~I~~, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the Flesh I live †by * the Faith of the SON of GOD, who LOVED me, and gave himself for me.

21 I do not frustrate the GRACE of GOD: for if Righteousness *come* by the Law, then Christ is dead in vain.

CHAPTER III.

1 O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched You, [that ye should not obey the TRUTH], before whose Eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified [among you]?

2 This only would I learn of you, Received ye the SPIRIT by the Works of the Law, or by the Hearing of Faith?

3 Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the Flesh?

4 Have ye suffered so Many things in vain? if *it be* yet in vain.

5 HE therefore that MINISTERETH to you the SPIRIT, and worketh Miracles among you, *doeth he it* by the Works of the Law, or by the Hearing of Faith?

6 Even as Abraham believed GOD, and it was accounted to him for Righteousness.

7 Know ye therefore That THEY

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—20. THAT Faith which *I have* in THAT SON of GOD WHO.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—11. Cephas. 14. CEPHAS. 14. how compellest thou. 16. Christ Jesus, even. 16. Christ Jesus, that. 20. by THAT Faith which *I have* in THAT GOD and Christ who LOVED me. See 1 (twice).

which are of Faith, the same are the Children of Abraham. REV. 18. 2.

8 And the SCRIPTURE, foreseeing That GOD would justify the HEATHEN through Faith, *preached-before-the-gospel unto ABRAHAM, saying, "In thee shall All NATIONS be blessed." †

9 So then THEY *which be* of Faith are blessed with FAITHFUL Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the Works of the Law are under the Curse: for it is written, "Cursed is every one that continueth not in All THINGS which are WRITTEN in the BOOK of the LAW to do them." †

11 But That no man is justified by the Law in the sight of GOD, *it is* evident: For, "The JUST shall live by Faith." †

12 And the LAW is not of Faith: but, † "The MAN that DOETH them shall live in them." †

13 Christ hath redeemed Us from the CURSE of the LAW, being made a Curse for us: For it is written, "Cursed is EVERY-ONE that HANGETH on a Tree." †

14 That the BLESSING of ABRAHAM might come on the GENTILES through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the PROMISE of the SPIRIT through FAITH.

15 Brethren, I speak after the manner of Men; Though *it be* but a Man's Covenant, yet *if it be* confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto.

16 Now to ABRAHAM and his SEED were the PROMISES made.

He saith not, "And to SEEDS," as of many; but as of one, "And to thy SEED," † which is Christ.

17 And this I say, *that* the Covenant, that was confirmed before of GOD [in Christ], the LAW, which † was four-hundred and thirty Years after, cannot disannul, that it should MAKE the PROMISE of NONE-EFFECT.

18 For if the INHERITANCE *be* of the Law, *it is* no more of Promise: but GOD gave *it* to ABRAHAM by Promise.

19 Wherefore then *serveth* the LAW? It was added because of TRANSGRESSIONS, till the SEED should come to whom the promise was made; *and it was* ordained by Angels in the Hand of a Mediator.

20 Now a MEDIATOR is not *a mediator* of one, but GOD is one.

21 *Is* the LAW then against the PROMISES [of GOD]? God forbid: for if there had been *a Law given which COULD have given life, verily RIGHTEOUSNESS should have been by the Law.

22 But the SCRIPTURE hath concluded ALL under Sin, that the PROMISE by Faith of Jesus Christ might be given to THEM that BELIEVE.

23 But before FAITH CAME, we were kept under the Law, shut up unto the FAITH which SHOULD-AFTERWARDS be revealed.

24 Wherefore the LAW was our Schoolmaster *to bring us* unto Christ, that we might be justified by Faith.

25 But after that FAITH is come,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. preached the gospel beforehand unto. 21. THAT Law given which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—12. HE that DOETH them. 17. was Four-hundred and Thirty Years. See 21.

‡ 8. Gen. xii. 3. † 10. Dent. xxvii. 26. † 11. Hab. ii. 4. † 12. Lev. xviii. 5.

‡ 13. Dent. xxi. 23. † 16. Gen. xii. 7.

we are no longer under a School-master.

26 For ye are all the Children of God by FAITH in Christ Jesus.

27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

28 There is neither Jew nor Greck, there is neither Bond nor Free, there is neither Male nor Female: for *ye* are all one in Christ Jesus.

29 And if *ye be* Christ's, then are ye † ABRAHAM'S Seed, [and] Heirs according to the Promise.

CHAPTER IV.

1 Now I say, *That* the HEIR, as long as he is a Child, differeth nothing from a Servant, though he be Lord of all;

2 But is under Tutors and Governors until † the TIME-APPOINTED of the FATHER.

3 Even so *we*, when we were Children, were in bondage under the ELEMENTS of the WORLD:

4 But when the FULNESS of the TIME was come, GOD sent forth his SON, made of a Woman, made under the Law,

5 To redeem THEM that were under the Law, that we might receive the ADOPTION-OF-SONS.

6 And Because ye are Sons, † GOD hath sent forth the SPIRIT of his SON into your HEARTS, crying, Abba, FATHER.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a Servant, but a Son; and if a Son, then an Heir † of God through Christ.

8 Howbeit then, when ye knew not God, ye did service unto THEM which by Nature ARE no Gods.

9 But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the WEAK and Beggarly Elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage?

10 Ye observe Days, and Months, and Times, and Years.

11 I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.

§ LVII.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as *I am*; For *I am* as *ye are*: ye have not injured Me at all.

13 Ye know How through Infirmity of the FLESH I preached the gospel unto you AT-THE-FIRST.

14 † And * my TEMPTATION which was in my FLESH ye despised not, nor rejected; but received me as an Angel of God, *even* as Christ Jesus.

15 Where † is then the BLESSEDNESS ye spake of? for I bear you record, That, if *it had been* possible, ye would have plucked out your own EYES, and have given them to me.

16 Am I therefore become your Enemy, because I tell you the truth?

17 They zealously affect you, *but* not well; yea, they would † exclude you, that ye might affect Them.

18 But *it is* good to be † ZEALOUSLY-AFFECTED always in a good *thing*, and not only when I AM-PRESENT with you.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14. THAT TEMPTATION of mine which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—29. of the Seed of ABRAHAM, Heirs according. 2. THAT which was the TIME-APPOINTED. 6. he hath sent forth. 7. through God. Howbeit then. 14. And your TEMPTATION which was in my FLESH. 15. is then your Blessedness? for I bear. 17. that we were excluded, that ye might. 18. zealously-affected. See 29.

19 My Little-children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you.

20 I desire to be present with you now, and to change my VOICE; For I stand in doubt of you.

21 Tell me, YE that DESIRE to be under the Law, do ye not hear the LAW?

22 For it is written, That Abraham had Two Sons, the one by a BONDMAID, the other by a FREEWOMAN.

23 But HE *who was* of the BONDWOMAN was born after the Flesh; but HE of the FREEWOMAN *was* by PROMISE.

24 Which things are an allegory: for these are the TWO Covenants; the one from the Mount Sinai, which gendereth to Bondage, which is Agar.

25 For *this* AGAR is Mount Sinai in ARABIA, and answereth to JERUSALEM which NOW is, † and is in bondage with her CHILDREN.

26 But JERUSALEM which is ABOVE is free, which is the Mother of us [all].

27 For it is written, "Rejoice, THOU Barren that BEAREST not; break forth and cry, THOU that TRAVAILEST not: For the DESOLATE hath many more CHILDREN than SHE which HATH an HUSBAND." ‡

28 Now † we, Brethren, as Isaac was, are the Children of Promise.

29 But as then HE that was BORN after the Flesh persecuted HIM *that was born* after the Spirit, even so *it is* now.

30 Nevertheless what saith the SCRIPTURE? "Cast out the BONDWOMAN and her SON: for the SON of the BONDWOMAN shall not be heir with the SON of the FREEWOMAN." †

31 † So then, Brethren, we are not Children of the Bondwoman, but of the FREE.

CHAPTER V.

1 Stand *fast therefore in the LIBERTY wherewith Christ hath made Us free, and be not entangled again with the Yoke of Bondage.

2 Behold, † Paul say unto you, That if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit You nothing.

3 For I testify again to Every Man that is circumcised, That he is a Debtor to do the Whole LAW.

4 † CHRIST is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the Law; ye are fallen from GRACE.

5 For we through the Spirit wait for the Hope of Righteousness by Faith.

6 For in [Jesus] Christ neither Circumcision availeth any thing, nor Uncircumcision; but Faith which worketh by Love.

7 Ye did run well; who did hinder You, that ye should not obey the † TRUTH?

8 *This* PERSUASION cometh not of HIM that CALLETH you.

9 A Little Leaven leaveneth the Whole LUMP.

10 † I have confidence in you [through the Lord], That ye will be none otherwise minded: but HE that TROUBLETH you shall

* EMPHATIC TEXT—1. ye fast therefore.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—25. for she is in bondage. 28. ye, Brethren. 31. Wherefore, Brethren, we are not. 4. Christ. 7. Truth? See 6, 10.

‡ 27. Isa. liv. 1. ‡ 30. Gen. xxi. 10.

bear *his* JUDGMENT, whosoever he be.

11 And ¶, Brethren, if I yet preach Circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? then is the OFFENCE of the CROSS ceased.

12 I would THEY were even cut off which TROUBLE you.

13 For, Brethren, ye have been called unto Liberty; only *use* not LIBERTY for an Occasion to the FLESH, but by LOVE serve one another.

14 For ALL the Law is fulfilled in One Word, *even* in THIS; "Thou shalt love thy NEIGHBOUR as thyself." †

15 But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.

§ LVIII. ||

16 *This* I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the Lust of the Flesh. *see 19*

17 For the FLESH lusteth against the SPIRIT, and the SPIRIT against the FLESH: † and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.

18 But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the Law.

19 Now the WORKS of the FLESH are manifest, which are *these*; [Adultery], Fornication, Uncleanness, Lasciviousness,

20 Idolatry, Witchcraft, Hatred, Variance, † Emulations, Wrath, Strife, Seditions, Heresies,

21 Envyings, [Murders], Drunkenness, Revellings, and SUCH-LIKE: of the which I tell you

before, as I have [also] told *you* in time past, That THEY which DO SUCH-THINGS shall not inherit the Kingdom of God.

22 But the FRUIT of the SPIRIT is Love, Joy, Peace, Longsuffering, Gentleness, Goodness, Faith,

23 Meekness, Temperance: against SUCH there is no Law.

24 And THEY that are † CHRIST'S have crucified the FLESH with the AFFECTIONS and LUSTS.

25 If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

26 Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

CHAPTER VI.

1 Brethren, if a Man be overtaken in a Fault, YE which are SPIRITUAL restore SUCH-AN-ONE in the Spirit of Meekness; considering thyself, lest *thou* also be tempted.

2 Bear ye one another's BURDENS, and so fulfil the LAW of CHRIST.

3 For if a Man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself.

4 But † let every man prove his own WORK, and then shall he have REJOICING in himself alone, and not in ANOTHER.

5 For every man shall bear his OWN Burden.

6 Let HIM that is TAUGHT in the WORD communicate unto HIM that TEACHETH in All Good things.

7 Be not deceived; God is not

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—17. for these are. 20. Emulation. 24. of Christ Jesus have crucified. 4. let him prove. See 19, 21 (twice).

‡ 14. Lev. xix. 18.

|| *This Section is numbered 58 in the Vatican Manuscript. The continuation of these numbers is found in Hebrews i. and iii.*

mocked: for whatsoever a Man soweth, **that** shall he also reap.

8 For **HE** that **SOWETH** to his **FLESH** shall of the **FLESH** reap **Corruption**; but **HE** that **SOWETH** to the **SPIRIT** shall of the **SPIRIT** reap **Life everlasting**.

9 And let us not be weary in **WELL** Doing: for in due **Season** we shall reap, if we faint not.

10 As we have therefore **Opportunity**, let us do **GOOD** unto all *men*, especially unto **THEM** who are of the **HOUSEHOLD** of **FAITH**.

11 Ye see how large a **Letter** I have written unto **You** with **MINE-OWN** Hand.

12 As many as desire to make a fair shew in the **Flesh**, **they** constrain you to be circumcised; only lest they should suffer persecution for the **CROSS** of **CHRIST**.

13 For neither **THEY** themselves who are **CIRCUMCISED** keep the **Law**; but desire to have **You**

circumcised, that they may glory in **YOUR** **Flesh**.

14 But God forbid that **I** should glory, save in the **CROSS** of our **LORD** **Jesus** **Christ**, by whom the **World** is crucified unto **Me**, and **I** unto the †**WORLD**.

15 For [in **Christ** **Jesus**] neither †**Circumcision** availeth any thing, nor **Uncircumcision**, but a **New** **Creature**.

16 And as many as walk according to this **RULE**, *Peace be* on them, and *Mercy*, and upon the **ISRAEL** of **GOD**.

17 From **HENCEFORTH** let no man trouble me: for **I** bear in my **BODY** the **MARKS** of †the **LORD** **Jesus**.

18 Brethren, the **GRACE** of our **LORD** **Jesus** **Christ** *be* with your **SPIRIT**. **Amen**.

¶ Unto the Galatians, written from Rome.

† **VATICAN** **MANUSCRIPT**.—14. **World**. 15. is **Circumcision** any thing, nor **Uncircumcision**. 17. of **JESUS**. **Brethren**. See 15. *Subscription*: **TO THE GALATIANS**, **WRITTEN FROM ROME**.

TO THE EPHESIANS.

CHAPTER I.

(§ LXX.)

1 Paul, an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the Will of God, to * the SAINTS which ARE at Ephesus, and to the Faithful in Christ Jesus:

2 Grace *be* to you, and Peace, from God our Father, and *from* the Lord † Jesus Christ.

3 † Blessed *be* * the GOD [and Father] of our LORD Jesus Christ, who hath BLESSED us with All spiritual Blessings in HEAVENLY *places* in Christ:

4 According as he hath chosen us in him before the Foundation of the World, that we should be holy and without blame before him in Love:

5 Having predestinated us unto the Adoption of children by † Jesus Christ to himself, according to the GOOD-PLEASURE of his WILL,

6 To the Praise of the Glory of his GRACE, wherein he hath made us accepted in the BELOVED.

7 In whom we have REDEMPTION through his BLOOD, the FORGIVENESS of SINS, according to the RICHES of his GRACE;

8 Wherein he hath abounded

toward us in All Wisdom and Prudence;

9 Having made known unto us the MYSTERY of his WILL, according to his GOOD-PLEASURE which he hath purposed in himself:

10 That in the Dispensation of the FULNESS of TIMES he might gather together in one ALL things in CHRIST, both * which are in HEAVEN, and which are on EARTH; *even* in him:

11 In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the Purpose of HIM who WORKETH ALL things after the COUNSEL of his own WILL:

12 That we should BE to the Praise of his † GLORY, * who first TRUSTED in CHRIST.

13 In whom *ye* also *trusted*, after that ye heard the WORD of TRUTH, the GOSPEL of your SALVATION: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with *that* HOLY SPIRIT of PROMISE,

14 Which is the Earnest of our INHERITANCE until the Redemption of the PURCHASED-POSSESSION, unto the Praise of his GLORY.

15 Wherefore *I* also, after I heard of YOUR Faith in the LORD

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THOSE SAINTS which ARE. 3. THAT GOD and Father of. 10. THINGS which are in HEAVEN, and THINGS which are on EARTH. 12. WE who first TRUSTED.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: TO THE EPHESIANS. 2. Christ Jesus. 3. Blessed be THAT GOD of our LORD Jesus Christ who. 5. Christ Jesus. 12. Glory, WE who first TRUSTED. See 3.

Jesus, and *LOVE unto All the SAINTS,

16 Cease not to give thanks for you, making Mention [of you] in my PRAYERS;

17 That the GOD of our LORD Jesus Christ, the FATHER of GLORY, may give unto you the Spirit of Wisdom and Revelation in the Knowledge of him:

18 The EYES of your †UNDERSTANDING being enlightened; that ye may KNOW what is the HOPE of his CALLING, [and] what the RICHES of the GLORY of his INHERITANCE in the SAINTS,

19 And what is the EXCEEDING Greatness of his POWER to USWARD who BELIEVE, according to the WORKING of his MIGHTY POWER,

20 Which he wrought in CHRIST, when he raised him from the Dead, and set *him* at his own Right-hand in the †HEAVENLY *places*,

21 Far above All Principality, and Power, and Might, and Dominion, and Every Name that is named, not only in this WORLD, but also in THAT which is to COME:

22 And hath put All *things* under his FEET, and gave Him *to be* the Head over all *things* to the CHURCH,

23 Which is his BODY, the FULLNESS of HIM that FILLETH †All in all.

CHAPTER II.

1 And you *hath he quickened*,

who were dead in †TRESPASSES and SINS;

2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the COURSE of this WORLD, according to the PRINCE of the POWER of the AIR, *the SPIRIT that now WORKETH in the CHILDREN of DISOBEDIENCE:

3 Among whom also *we* all had our conversation in times past in the LUSTS of our FLESH, fulfilling the DESIRES of the FLESH and of the MIND; and were by Nature the Children of Wrath, even as OTHERS.

4 But GOD, who is rich in Mercy, for his GREAT Love where-with he loved us,

5 Even when we were dead †in *SINS, hath quickened us together with CHRIST,—by Grace ye are saved;—

6 And hath raised *us* up together, and made *us* sit together in HEAVENLY *places* in Christ Jesus:

7 That in *the AGES to COME he might shew the EXCEEDING Riches of his GRACE in *his* Kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.

§ LXXI. ||

8 For by GRACE are ye saved through FAITH; and *that* not of yourselves: *it is* the GIFT of God:

9 Not of Works, lest any man should boast.

10 For we are His Workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good Works, which GOD hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—15. THAT LOVE which *ye have* unto. 2. of THAT SPIRIT which now WORKETH. 5. in TRANSGRESSIONS, hath. 7. THOSE AGES which are to COME.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—18. HEART being enlightened. 20. HEAVENS, far above All Power, and Principality, and Might. 23. ALL in all. 1. SINS and your LUSTS; wherein. 5. in TRANSGRESSIONS and Lusts, hath quickened us together in CHRIST. See 18.

|| *This Section is numbered 71 in the Vatican Manuscript.*

11 Wherefore remember, That *ye being* in time past GENTILES in the Flesh, * who are CALLED Uncircumcision by THAT which is CALLED the Circumcision in the Flesh made by hands;

12 That at that TIME ye were without Christ, being Aliens from the COMMONWEALTH of ISRAEL, and Strangers from the COVENANTS of PROMISE, having no Hope, and without God in the WORLD:

13 But now in Christ Jesus YE who sometimes WERE far off * are made nigh by the BLOOD of CHRIST.

14 For *he* is our PEACE, * who hath MADE BOTH one, and hath broken down the MIDDLE-WALL of PARTITION *between us*;

15 Having abolished in his FLESH the ENMITY, *even* the LAW of COMMANDMENTS *contained* in Ordinances; for to make in himself of TWAIN One New Man so making Peace;

16 And that he might reconcile BOTH unto GOD in One Body by the CROSS, having slain the ENMITY thereby:

17 And came and preached Peace to YOU which were AFAR-OFF, and † to THEM that were NIGH.

18 For through him we BOTH have ACCESS by One Spirit unto the FATHER.

19 Now therefore ye are no more Strangers and Foreigners,

but † Fellowcitizens with the SAINTS, and of the Household of GOD;

20 And are built upon the FOUNDATION of the APOSTLES and Prophets, † Jesus Christ himself being the Chief corner *stone*;

21 In whom All the BUILDING fitly framed together groweth unto an holy Temple in the Lord:

22 In whom *ye* also are builded together for an Habitation of † GOD through the Spirit.

CHAPTER III.

1 For This Cause *I* Paul, * the PRISONER of Jesus CHRIST for you GENTILES,

2 If ye have heard of the DISPENSATION of * the GRACE of GOD which is GIVEN me to you-ward:

3 † *How* That by Revelation he made known unto me the MYSTERY;—as I wrote afore in few words,

4 Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my KNOWLEDGE in the MYSTERY of CHRIST—

5 Which in Other Ages was not made made known unto the SONS of MEN, as it is now revealed unto his † HOLY Apostles and Prophets by the Spirit;

6 That the GENTILES should be Fellowheirs, and of the Samebody, and Partakers of † his PROMISE in CHRIST by the GOSPEL:

7 Whereof I was made a Minister † according to * the GIFT

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—11. YE who are CALLED. 13. *ye* are made. 14. HE who hath MADE. 1. *am* the PRISONER of CHRIST Jesus for you. 2. THAT GRACE of GOD which. 7. THAT GIFT of the GRACE of GOD which was GIVEN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—17. Peace to THEM which were NIGH. 19. ye are Fellowcitizens. 20. Christ Jesus himself. 22. CHRIST through the Spirit. 3. By Revelation was made known unto me. 5. SAINTS and Prophets. 6. the PROMISE in Christ Jesus by the GOSPEL. 7. according to the GIFT of THAT GRACE of GOD which was GIVEN unto me.

of the GRACE of GOD GIVEN unto me by the EFFECTUAL-WORKING of his POWER.

8 Unto ME, who am LESS-THAN-THE-LEAST of All SAINTS, is this GRACE given, that I should preach among the GENTILES the UNSEARCHABLE Riches of CHRIST;

9 And to make all *men* see what *is* the †FELLOWSHIP of *the MYSTERY, which from the BEGINNING-OF-THE-WORLD hath been HID in *GOD, who CREATED ALL things [by Jesus Christ]:

10 To the intent that now unto the PRINCIPALITIES and POWERS in HEAVENLY *places* might be known by the CHURCH the MANIFOLD Wisdom of GOD,

11 According to the ETERNAL Purpose which he purposed in †Christ Jesus our LORD:

12 In whom we have BOLDNESS and †ACCESS with Confidence by the FAITH of him.

13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my TRIBULATIONS for you, which is your Glory.

14 For This Cause I bow my KNEES unto the FATHER [of our LORD Jesus Christ],

15 Of whom the Whole Family in Heaven and *Earth is named,

16 That he would grant you, according to the RICHES of his GLORY, to be strengthened with Might by his SPIRIT in the INNER Man;

17 That CHRIST may dwell in your HEARTS by FAITH; that ye, being rooted and grounded in Love,

18 May be able to comprehend with All SAINTS what *is* the BREADTH, and Length, † and Depth, and Height;

19 And to know the LOVE of CHRIST, which PASSETH KNOWLEDGE, that †ye might be filled with All the FULNESS of GOD.

20 Now unto HIM that is ABLE to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to *the POWER that WORKETH in us,

21 Unto him *be* GLORY in the CHURCH by Christ Jesus throughout All AGES, WORLD without END. Amen.

CHAPTER IV.

§ LXXII.

1 ¶ therefore, *the PRISONER of the LORD, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the VOCATION wherewith ye are called,

2 With All Lowliness and Meekness, with Longsuffering, forbearing one another in Love;

3 Endeavouring to keep the UNITY of the SPIRIT in the BOND of PEACE.

4 *There is* One Body, and One Spirit, even as ye are called in One Hope of your CALLING;

5 One Lord, One Faith, One Baptism,

6 One God and Father of all, *who *is* above all, and through all, and in [you] all.

7 But unto every one [of us] is given †GRACE according to the MEASURE of the GIFT of CHRIST.

8 Wherefore he saith, When

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—9. THAT MYSTERY which. 9. THAT GOD who CREATED. 20. THAT POWER which WORKETH. 15. on Earth. 1. *who am* the. 6. HE who *is*.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—9. DISPENSATION of that MYSTERY which. 11. CHRIST Jesus, our LORD. 12. Access with. 18. and Height and Depth. 19. All the FULNESS of GOD might be fulfilled. Now to HIM. 7. Grace according to. See 9, 14, 6, 7.

he ascended up on high, he led Captivity captive, and gave Gifts unto MEN.

9 Now THAT HE ASCENDED, what is it but That he also descended first into the LOWER Parts of the EARTH?

10 HE that DESCENDED is the SAME also that ASCENDED-UP far above All HEAVENS, that he might fill ALL things.

11 And ~~he~~ gave *SOME, Apostles; and SOME, Prophets; and SOME, Evangelists; and SOME, Pastors and Teachers;

12 For the PERFECTING of the SAINTS for the Work of the Ministry, for the Edifying of the BODY of CHRIST:

13 Till we ALL come in the UNITY of the FAITH, and of the KNOWLEDGE of the SON of GOD, unto a perfect Man, unto the Measure of the Stature of the FULLNESS of CHRIST:

14 That we *henceforth* be no more Children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with Every Wind of DOCTRINE, by the SLEIGHT of MEN, and Cunning-craftiness, whereby they LIE-IN-WAIT to DECEIVE;

15 But speaking the truth in Love, may grow up *into him in ALL things, which is the HEAD, *even* CHRIST:

16 From whom the Whole BODY fitly joined together and compacted by THAT which Every Joint SUPPLIETH, according to the Effectual-working in the Measure of Every Part, maketh INCREASE of

the BODY unto the Edifying of itself in Love.

§ LXXIII.

17 This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as †OTHER Gentiles walk, in the Vanity of their MIND,

18 Having the UNDERSTANDING darkened, being alienated from the LIFE of GOD through *the IGNORANCE that IS in them, because of the BLINDNESS of their HEART:

19 Who being past feeling have given Themselves over unto LASCIVIOUSNESS, to work all Uncleaness with Greediness.

20 But ~~ye~~ have not so learned CHRIST;

21 If so be that ye have heard Him, and have been taught, by Him, as the Truth is in JESUS:

22 That ye put off concerning the FORMER Conversation *the OLD Man, which is CORRUPT according to the DECEITFUL LUSTS;

23 And be renewed in the SPIRIT of your MIND;

24 And that ye put on *the NEW Man, which after God is CREATED in Righteousness and TRUE Holiness.

25 Wherefore putting away LYING, speak every man Truth with his NEIGHBOUR: For we are Members one of another.

26 Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the SUN go down upon your †WRATH:

27 Neither give Place to the DEVIL.

28 Let HIM that STOLE steal no

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—11. SOME *to be* Apostles. 15. in ALL things into him who is the HEAD, *even* CHRIST. 18. THAT IGNORANCE which IS in them. 22. THAT OLD Man which. 24. THAT NEW Man which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—17. the GENTILES walk. 26. Wrath.

more: but rather let him labour, working with *his* HANDS the THING which is GOOD, that he may have to give to HIM that NEEDED.

29 Let No corrupt Communication proceed out of your MOUTH, but that which is good to the USE of Edifying, that it may minister Grace unto the HEARERS.

30 And grieve not the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, whereby ye are sealed unto the Day of Redemption.

31 Let All Bitterness, and Wrath, and Anger, and Clamour, and Evil-speaking, be put away from you, with All Malice:

32 [And] be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as GOD for Christ's sake hath forgiven † you.

CHAPTER V.

1 Be ye therefore Followers of GOD, as dear Children;

2 And walk in Love, as CHRIST also hath loved us, and hath given himself for † us an Offering and a Sacrifice to GOD for a sweet-smelling Savour.

3 But Fornication, and All Uncleaness, or Covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh Saints;

4 Neither Filthiness, nor Foolish-talking, nor Jestings, * which are not CONVENIENT: but rather Giving-of-thanks.

5 For This ye know, That No Whoremonger, nor Unclean Person, nor Covetous man, who is an Idolater, hath any Inheritance in

the KINGDOM of * CHRIST and of God.

6 Let no man deceive you with Vain Words: for because of these things cometh the WRATH of GOD upon the CHILDREN of DISOBEDIENCE.

7 Be not ye therefore Partakers with them.

8 For ye were sometimes Darkness, but now *are ye* Light in the Lord: walk as Children of Light:

9 For the FRUIT of the † SPIRIT is in All Goodness and Righteousness and Truth;

10 Proving what is acceptable unto the LORD.

11 And have no fellowship with the UNFRUITFUL WORKS of DARKNESS, but rather reprovethem.

12 For it is a shame even to speak of *those* THINGS which are DONE of them in secret.

13 But ALL things that are REPROVED are made manifest by the LIGHT: for WHATSOEVER doth MAKE-MANIFEST is Light.

14 Wherefore he saith, "Awake THOU that SLEEPEST, and arise from the DEAD, and CHRIST shall give thee light." †

§ LXXIV.

15 † See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as Fools, but as Wise,

16 Redeeming the TIME, Because the DAYS are evil.

17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but † understanding what the WILL of the LORD is.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—4. THINGS which are not CONVENIENT. 5. the CHRIST and God.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—32. us. 2. you an Offering. 9. LIGHT is in all. 15. Take heed then diligently how ye walk, not as Fools, but. 17. understand ye what the WILL of our LORD is. See 32.

‡ 14. Isaiah lx. 1, 2.

18 And be not drunk with Wine, wherein is Excess; but be filled with the Spirit;

19 Speaking to yourselves in Psalms and Hymns and [Spiritual] Songs, singing and making melody in your HEART to the LORD;

20 Giving-thanks always for all things unto *GOD and the Father, in the Name of our LORD †Jesus Christ;

21 Submitting yourselves one to another in the Fear of †God.

22 WIVES, submit yourselves unto your OWN Husbands, as unto the LORD.

23 For the HUSBAND is the Head of the WIFE, even as CHRIST is the Head of the CHURCH: [and] *he* is the Saviour of the BODY.

24 †Therefore as the CHURCH is subject unto CHRIST, so *let* the WIVES *be* to †*their* [OWN] Husbands in every thing.

25 HUSBANDS, love †your WIVES, even as CHRIST also loved the CHURCH, and gave Himself for it;

26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the WASHING of WATER by the Word,

27 That †he might present *it to himself a glorious CHURCH, not having Spot, or Wrinkle, or Any SUCH-THING; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

28 So ought MEN to love *THEIR Wives as THEIR-OWN Bodies. HE that LOVETH *HIS Wife loveth Himself.

29 For no man ever yet hated

HIS-OWN Flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as †the LORD the CHURCH:

30 For we are Members of his BODY, [of his FLESH, and of his BONES].

31 For this cause shall a Man leave his †FATHER and MOTHER, and shall be joined unto his WIFE, and they TWO shall be one Flesh.

32 This is a great MYSTERY: but *†* speak concerning Christ and the CHURCH.

33 Nevertheless let every one of YOU in PARTICULAR so love *HIS Wife even as himself; and the WIFE *see* that she reverence *her* HUSBAND.

CHAPTER VI.

1 CHILDREN, obey your PARENTS [in the LORD]: for this is right.

2 "Honour thy FATHER and MOTHER;" which is the first Commandment with Promise;

3 "That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the EARTH." †

4 And, ye FATHERS, provoke not your CHILDREN to wrath: but bring them up in the Nurture and Admonition of the Lord.

5 SERVANTS, be obedient to THEM that are *your* MASTERS according to the Flesh, with Fear and Trembling, in Singleness of your HEART, as unto CHRIST;

6 Not with Eyeservice, as Men-pleasers; but as the Servants of

EMPHATIC TEXT.—20. the GOD and Father, in. 27. the same glorious to himself, a CHURCH not having. 28. THEIR-OWN. 28. HIS-OWN. 33. HIS-OWN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—20. Christ Jesus. 21. Christ. WIVES, *submitting yourselves* to your OWN Husbands, as. 24. But the CHURCH is. 24. *their* HUSBANDS in every thing. 25. *your* WIVES. 27. *he* might present the CHURCH glorious to himself, not having. 29. CHRIST the CHURCH. 31. Father and Mother. See 19, 23, 24, 30, 1.

‡ 3. Deut. v. 16.

† CHRIST, doing the WILL of GOD from the Heart;

7 With Good-will doing service, as to the LORD, and not to † Men:

8 Knowing That whatsoever good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receive of the † LORD, whether *he be* bond or free.

9 And, ye MASTERS, do the SAME things unto them, forbearing THREATENING: knowing That † Your MASTER also is in Heaven; neither is there Respect-of-persons with him.

§ LXXV.

10 FINALLY, [my BRETHREN], be strong in the Lord, and in the POWER of his MIGHT.

11 Put on the WHOLE-ARMOUR of GOD, that ye may BE-ABLE to stand against the WILES of the DEVIL.

12 For *we wrestle not against Flesh and Blood, but against PRINCIPALITIES, against POWERS, against the RULERS of † the DARKNESS of this WORLD, against SPIRITUAL WICKEDNESS in HIGH places.

13 Wherefore take unto you the WHOLE-ARMOUR of GOD, that ye may be able to withstand in the EVIL DAY, and having done All, to stand.

14 Stand therefore, having your LOINS girt about with Truth, and having on the BREASTPLATE of RIGHTEOUSNESS;

15 And your FEET shod with the Preparation of the GOSPEL of PEACE;

16 Above all, taking the SHIELD of FAITH, wherewith ye shall be able to quench All the † FIERY DARTS of the *WICKED.

17 And take the HELMET of SALVATION, and the SWORD of the SPIRIT, which is the Word of God:

18 Praying always with All Prayer and Supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with All Perseverance and Supplication for All SAINTS;

19 And for me that Utterance may be given unto Me, that I may open my MOUTH boldly, to make known the MYSTERY [of the GOSPEL],

20 For which I am an ambassador in Bonds: that † therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

21 But that ye also may know my AFFAIRS, *and* how I do, Tychicus, a BELOVED Brother and Faithful Minister in the Lord, shall make known to you All things:

22 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our AFFAIRS, and *that* he might comfort your HEARTS.

23 Peace *be* to the BRETHREN, and Love with Faith, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

24 GRACE *be* with all THEM that LOVE our LORD Jesus Christ in Sincerity. [Amen].

¶ Written from Rome unto the Ephesians by Tychicus.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—12. our WRESTLING is not. 16. WICKED *one*.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—6. Christ. 7. Man. 8. Lord. 9. both Their and Your MASTER is in Heaven. 12. this DARKNESS, against. 16. fiery DARTS. 20. I may speak the Same boldly, as. See 10, 19, 24. Subscription: TO THE EPHESIANS, WRITTEN FROM ROME.

TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

CHAPTER I.

(§ LXXVI.)

1 Paul and Timotheus, the Servants of † Jesus Christ, to All *the SAINTS in Christ Jesus which ARE at Philippi, with the Bishops and Deacons:

2 Grace *be* unto you, and Peace, from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 I thank my GOD upon Every REMEMBRANCE of you,

4 Always in Every Prayer of mine for you all making REQUEST with Joy,

5 For your FELLOWSHIP in the GOSPEL from † the First Day until NOW;

6 Being confident of this very thing, That HE which hath BEGUN a good Work in you will perform *it* until the Day of † Jesus Christ:

7 Even as it is meet for me to think This of you all, because I HAVE you in my HEART; inasmuch as both in my BONDS, and in the DEFENCE and Confirmation of the GOSPEL, ye all are Partakers of My GRACE.

8 For GOD is my Record, how greatly I long after you all in the Bowels of † Jesus Christ.

9 And This I pray, that your LOVE may abound yet more and more in Knowledge and *in* All Judgment;

10 That ye may APPROVE THINGS that are EXCELLENT; that ye may be sincere and without offence till the Day of Christ;

11 Being filled with *the † Fruits of Righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the Glory and Praise of God.

12 But I would ye should understand, Brethren, That the THINGS *which happened* unto me have fallen out rather unto the Furtherance of the GOSPEL;

13 So that my BONDS in Christ are manifest in All the PALACE, and in all OTHER *places*;

14 And MANY of the BRETHREN in the Lord, waxing confident by my BONDS, are much more bold to speak † the WORD without fear.

15 Some indeed preach CHRIST even of Envy and Strife; and some also of Good-will:

16 † The ONE preach CHRIST of Contention, not sincerely, supposing to add Affliction to my BONDS:

17 But the OTHER of Love, knowing That I am set for the Defence of the GOSPEL.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THOSE SAINTS in. 11. THOSE Fruits of.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: TO THE PHILIPPIANS. 1. Christ Jesus. 5. the FIRST Day. 6. Christ Jesus. 8. Christ Jesus. 11. Fruit of Righteousness which is by. 14. the WORD of GOD without fear. 16. SOME indeed of Love, knowing That I am set for the Defence of the GOSPEL: But SOME preach Christ of Contention, not sincerely, supposing to raise up Affliction to my BONDS.

18 What then? † notwithstanding, Every Way, whether in Pretence, or in Truth, Christ is preached; and I therein do rejoice, yea, and will rejoice.

19 † For I know That this shall turn to My Salvation through YOUR Prayer, and the Supply of the SPIRIT of Jesus Christ.

20 According to my EARNEST-EXPECTATION and *my* Hope, That in nothing I shall be ashamed, but *that* with All Boldness, as always, *so* now also, Christ shall be magnified in my BODY, whether *it be* by Life, or by Death.

21 For to Me to LIVE *is* Christ, and to DIE *is* Gain.

22 But if *I LIVE in the Flesh, this *is* the Fruit of my Labour: yet what I † shall choose I wot not.

24 † For I am in a strait betwixt TWO, having a DESIRE to DEPART, and to be with Christ; which is far better:

24 Nevertheless to ABIDE in the FLESH *is* more needful for you.

25 And having this confidence, I know That I shall abide and continue with you all, for YOUR Furtherance and Joy of FAITH;

26 That your REJOICING may be more abundant in Christ Jesus for me, by MY Coming to you again.

27 Only let your conversation be as it becometh the GOSPEL of CHRIST: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your AFFAIRS, That ye stand fast in One Spirit, with One

Mind striving together for the FAITH of the GOSPEL;

28 And in nothing terrified by your ADVERSARIES: which is to them an evident Token of Perdition, but to you of Salvation, and *that* of God.

29 For unto you it is given in the BEHALF of Christ, not only to BELIEVE on Him, but also to SUFFER for His sake;

30 Having the SAME Conflict which ye saw in me, and now hear *to be* in me.

CHAPTER II.

1 If *there be* therefore Any Consolation in Christ, if Any Comfort of Love, if Any Fellowship of the Spirit, if Any Bowels and Mercies,

2 Fulfil ye My JOY, that ye be LIKEMINDED, having the SAME Love, *being* of one accord, of ONE mind.

3 *Let* nothing *be done* through Strife † or Vainglory; but in LOW-LINESS-OF-MIND let each esteem other better than themselves.

4 Look not every man on HIS-OWN things, but every man also on the things of OTHERS.

5 Let this mind be in † you, which was also in Christ Jesus:

6 Who, being in the Form of God, thought it not Robbery to BE equal with God:

7 But made Himself of no reputation, and took *upon him* the Form of a Servant, and was made in the Likeness of Men:

8 And being found in Fashion as a Man, he humbled himself, and

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—22. to LIVE in the Flesh, this *is* to me a Fruit of Labour.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—18. Because in Every Way, whether in Pretence or in Truth, Christ is preached, I therein both do rejoice. 19. And I know. 22. should choose (*a*). 23. But I am. 3. nothing through Vainglory. 5. us, which was.

became obedient unto Death, even the Death of the Cross.

9 Wherefore GOD also hath highly exalted Him, and † given him * a Name which is above Every Name:

10 That at the NAME of Jesus Every Knee should bow, of *things* in heaven, and *things* in earth, and *things* under the earth;

11 And *that* Every Tongue should confess That Jesus Christ is Lord, to the Glory of God the Father.

§ LXXVII. ||

12 Wherefore, my Beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my PRESENCE only, but now much more in my ABSENCE, work out YOUR-OWN Salvation with Fear and Trembling.

13 For † it is GOD which WORKETH in you both to WILL and to DO of *his* GOOD-PLEASURE.

14 Do All things without Murmurings and Disputings:

15 That ye may be blameless and harmless, the Sons of God, without rebuke, in the Midst of a crooked and perverse Nation, among whom ye shine as Lights in the World;

16 Holding forth the Word of Life; that † I may rejoice in the Day of Christ, That I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain.

17 Yea, and if I be offered upon the SACRIFICE and Service of your FAITH, I joy, and rejoice with you all.

18 For the SAME cause also do *ye* joy, and rejoice with me.

19 But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timotheus shortly unto you, that † I also may be of good comfort, when I know your STATE.

20 For I have No man like-minded, who will naturally care for your STATE.

21 For ALL seek THEIR-OWN, not the THINGS which are † Jesus CHRIST'S.

22 But ye know the PROOF of him, That, as a Son with the Father, he hath served with me in the GOSPEL.

23 *Him* therefore I hope to send presently, so soon as I shall see how it will go with me.

24 But I trust in the Lord That I also myself shall come shortly.

25 Yet I supposed it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus, my BROTHER, and Companion-in-labour, and Fellowsoldier, but Your Messenger, and he that ministered to my WANTS.

26 For he longed after you all, and was full of heaviness, because that ye had heard That he had been sick.

27 For indeed he was sick nigh unto Death: but GOD had mercy on him; and not on him only, but on me also, lest I should have Sorrow upon Sorrow.

28 I sent him therefore the more carefully, that, when ye see him again, ye may rejoice, and that † I may be the less sorrowful.

29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with All Gladness; and hold SUCH in reputation:

30 Because for the WORK of † CHRIST he was nigh unto Death,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—9. THAT Name which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—9. given him THAT NAME which is above. 13. God is HE who WORKETH. 21. of Christ Jesus. 30. Christ.

|| This Section is numbered 77 in the Vatican Manuscript.

not regarding *his* LIFE, to supply YOUR Lack of SERVICE toward Me.

CHAPTER III.

§ LXXVIII.

1 FINALLY, my Brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the SAME things to you, to Me indeed *is* not grievous, but for You *it is* safe.

2 Beware of DOGS, beware of EVIL Workers, beware of the CONCISION.

3 For ~~we~~ are the CIRCUMCISION, *which WORSHIP God in the Spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the Flesh.

4 Though ~~I~~ might also have Confidence in the Flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the Flesh, ~~I~~ more:

5 Circumcised the eighth day, of the Stock of Israel, of the Tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the Law, a Pharisee;

6 Concerning Zeal, persecuting the CHURCH; touching * the Righteousness which is in the Law, blameless.

7 But what things were Gain unto me, Those I counted Loss for CHRIST.

8 Yea doubtless, and I count all things *but* Loss for the EXCELLENCE of the KNOWLEDGE of † Christ Jesus my LORD: for whom I have suffered the loss of ALL things, and do count them *but* Dung, that I may win Christ,

9 And be found in him, not

having * Mine-own Righteousness, which is of the Law, but THAT which is through the Faith of Christ, the RIGHTEOUSNESS which is of God by FAITH:

10 That I may KNOW him, and the POWER of his RESURRECTION, and the FELLOWSHIP of his SUFFERINGS, being made conformable unto his DEATH;

11 If by any means I might attain unto the RESURRECTION of the DEAD.

12 Not *as* Though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of † CHRIST [Jesus].

13 Brethren, ~~I~~ count not Myself to have apprehended: but *this* one thing *I do*, forgetting *those* THINGS which are BEHIND, and reaching forth unto *those* THINGS which are BEFORE,

14 I press toward the Mark † for the PRIZE of the HIGH Calling of GOD in Christ Jesus.

15 Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, GOD shall reveal even This unto you.

16 Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the SAME [Rule, let us mind the SAME thing].

17 Brethren, be Followers-together of me, and mark THEM which WALK so as ye have us for an Ensample.

18 For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. WE who WORSHIP.
9. THAT Righteousness of Mine-own which is.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. CHRIST Jesus my LORD.
14. unto the PRIZE. See 12, 16.

6. THAT Righteousness which is.

12. Christ. Brethren.

you even weeping, *that they are* the ENEMIES of the CROSS of CHRIST:

19 Whose END *is* Destruction, whose GOD *is* *their* BELLY, and whose GLORY *is* in their SHAME, * who MIND EARTHLY things.

20 For Our CONVERSATION *is* in Heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:

21 Who shall change * our VILE BODY, [that it may BE] fashioned like unto his GLORIOUS BODY, according to the WORKING whereby he is ABLE even to subdue ALL things unto himself.

CHAPTER IV.

1 Therefore, † my Brethren dearly beloved and longed for, my Joy and Crown, so stand fast in the Lord, † *my* dearly beloved.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that they be of the SAME mind in the Lord.

3 And I intreat thee also, † true Yokefellow, help those *women* which laboured with me in the GOSPEL, with Clement also, and *with* † OTHER my Fellowlabourers, Whose NAMES *are* in the Book of Life.

§ LXXIX.

4 Rejoice in the Lord always: *and* again I say, Rejoice.

5 Let your MODERATION be known unto All Men. The LORD *is* at hand.

6 Be careful for Nothing; but in every thing by PRAYER and

SUPPLICATION with Thanksgiving let your REQUESTS be made known unto GOD.

7 And * the PEACE of GOD, which PASSETH All Understanding, shall keep your HEARTS and * MINDS through Christ Jesus.

8 FINALLY, Brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things *are* honest, whatsoever things *are* just, whatsoever things *are* pure, whatsoever things *are* lovely, whatsoever things *are* of good report; if *there be* Any Virtue, and if *there be* Any Praise, think on These things.

9 Those things, which ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, do: and the GOD of PEACE shall be with you.

10 But I rejoiced in the Lord greatly, That now at the last your CARE of Me hath flourished again; wherein ye were also careful, but ye lacked opportunity.

11 Not That I speak in respect of Want: for **£** have learned, in whatsoever state I am, *therewith* to be content.

12 I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound. every where and in all things I am instructed both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.

13 I can do All things through † CHRIST which STRENGTHENETH me.

14 Notwithstanding ye have well done, that ye did communicate with My AFFLICTION.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—19. THEY who MIND. 21. the BODY of our HUMILIATION, being fashioned like unto his. 7. THAT PEACE of GOD which. 7. your MINDS.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. Brethren, my dearly beloved and longed for (*b*). 1. my dearly beloved (*a*). 3. True Yokefellow. 3. my OTHER Fellowlabourers. 13. HIM who STRENGTHENETH me. See 21.

15 Now ye Philippians know also, That in the Beginning of the GOSPEL, when I departed from Macedonia, No Church communicated with Me as concerning Giving and Receiving, but ye only.

16 For even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto my NECESSITY.

17 Not Because I desire a GIFT: but I desire *FRUIT that may ABOUND to your Account.

18 But I have all, and abound: I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the THINGS *which were sent* from you, an Odour of a Sweet-smell, a Sacrifice acceptable, wellpleasing to GOD.

19 But my GOD shall supply All your Need according to his RICHES in Glory by Christ Jesus.

20 Now unto *GOD and our Father *be* GLORY for EVER and EVER. Amen.

21 Salute Every Saint in Christ Jesus. The BRETHREN which are with Me greet you.

22 All the SAINTS salute you, chiefly THEY that are † of CÆSAR'S Household.

23 The GRACE of †our LORD Jesus Christ *be* with you all. [Amen.]

¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rome by Epaphroditus.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. THAT FRUIT which may. 20. our GOD and Father *be*.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—22. from CÆSAR'S Household. 23. the LORD. See 23. *Subscription*: TO THE PHILIPPIANS, WRITTEN FROM ROME.

TO THE COLOSSIANS.

CHAPTER I.

(§ LXXX.)

1 Paul, an Apostle of † Jesus Christ by the Will of God, and Timotheus *our* BROTHER,

2 To the SAINTS and Faithful Brethren in Christ which are at Colosse: Grace *be* unto you, and Peace, from God our Father [and the Lord Jesus Christ].

3 We give thanks to † GOD and the Father of our LORD Jesus [Christ], praying always for you,

4 Since we heard of your FAITH in Christ Jesus, and of *the LOVE *which ye have* to All the SAINTS,

5 For *the HOPE which is LAID-UP for you in HEAVEN, whereof ye heard before in the WORD of the TRUTH of *the GOSPEL;

6 Which is COME unto you, as *it is* in All the WORLD; and bringeth forth fruit, † as *it doth* also in you, since the Day ye heard of *it*, and knew the GRACE of GOD in Truth:

7 As ye [also] learned of Epaphras our DEAR Fellow-servant, who is for you *a Faithful Minister of CHRIST;

8 Who also DECLARED unto us YOUR Love in the Spirit.

9 For this cause *we* also, since the Day we heard *it*, do not cease to pray for You, [and to desire] that ye might be filled with the KNOWLEDGE of his WILL in All Wisdom and spiritual Understanding;

10 That ye might walk worthy of the LORD unto All Pleasing, being fruitful in Every good Work, and increasing in the KNOWLEDGE of GOD;

11 Strengthened with All Might, according to his GLORIOUS POWER, unto All Patience and Long-suffering with Joyfulness;

§ LXXXI. ||

12 Giving thanks † unto *the FATHER, which hath MADE us MEET to be PARTAKERS of the INHERITANCE of the SAINTS in LIGHT:

13 Who hath delivered us from the POWER of DARKNESS, and hath translated *us* into the KINGDOM of his DEAR SON:

14 In whom we have REDEMPTION [through his BLOOD], *even* the FORGIVENESS of SINS:

15 Who is the Image of the

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—4. THAT LOVE which. 5. THAT HOPE which. 5. THAT GOSPEL which. 7. THAT faithful Minister of CHRIST who. 12. THAT FATHER who hath.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—Title: TO THE COLOSSIANS. 1. Christ Jesus (*a*). 3. GOD, the Father of. 6. and increaseth, as *it doth*. 12. withal unto THAT FATHER who hath CALLED us and MADE us MEET to be. See 2, 3, 7, 9.

|| This Section is numbered 81 in the Vatican Manuscript.

INVISIBLE GOD, the Firstborn of Every Creature:

16 For by him were ALL things created, *that are in HEAVEN, and that are in EARTH, VISIBLE and INVISIBLE, whether *they be* Thrones, or Dominions, or Principalities, or Powers: ALL things were created by Him, and for Him:

17 And *he* is before all things, and by Him ALL things consist.

18 And *he* is the HEAD of the BODY, the CHURCH: who is the Beginning, the Firstborn from the DEAD; that in all *things he* might have the Preeminence.

19 For it pleased *the Father* that in Him should All FULNESS dwell;

20 And, having made peace through the BLOOD of his CROSS, by Him to reconcile ALL things unto himself; [by him, *I say*], || whether *they be* THINGS in EARTH, or THINGS in HEAVEN.

21 And You, that were some time alienated and Enemies in *your* MIND by WICKED WORKS, yet now †hath he reconciled,

22 In the BODY of his FLESH through DEATH, to present you holy and unblameable and unproveable in his sight:

23 If ye continue in the FAITH grounded and settled, and *be* not moved away from the HOPE of * the GOSPEL, which ye have heard, *and* which was PREACHED to EVERY †CREATURE which is under HEAVEN; whereof *he* Paul am made a Minister;

24 Who now rejoice in [my] SUFFERINGS for you, and fill up THAT which is BEHIND of the AFFLICTIONS of CHRIST in my FLESH for his BODY'S sake, which is the CHURCH:

25 Whereof *he* am made a Minister, according to *the DISPENSATION of GOD which is GIVEN to me for you, to fulfil the WORD of GOD;

26 *Even* *the MYSTERY which hath been HID from AGES and from GENERATIONS, but now is made manifest to his SAINTS:

27 To whom GOD would make known what *is* the RICHES of the GLORY of this MYSTERY among the GENTILES; which is Christ in you, the HOPE of GLORY:

28 Whom *we* preach, warning Every Man, and teaching Every Man in All Wisdom; that we may present Every Man perfect in Christ [Jesus]:

29 Whereunto I also labour, striving according to *his WORKING, which WORKETH in me mightily.

CHAPTER II.

1 For I would that ye knew what Great Conflict I have for you, and *for* THEM at Laodicea, and *for* as many as have not seen my FACE in the Flesh;

2 That their HEARTS might be comforted, being knit together in Love, and unto All Riches of the FULL-ASSURANCE of UNDER-

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—16. THINGS that are in HEAVEN, and THINGS that are on EARTH. 23. THAT GOSPEL, which ye have heard, which was PREACHED. 25. THAT DISPENSATION of GOD which. 26 THAT MYSTERY which. 29. THAT WORKING of his which WORKETH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—21. are ye reconciled, in the BODY of his FLESH through DEATH, that you should be presented holy. 23. Creature which. See 20, 24, 28.

|| 20. *Eartolocci and Tischendorf omit these words.*

STANDING, to the Acknowledgement of †the MYSTERY of *GOD, and of the Father, and of CHRIST;

3 In whom are hid All the TREASURES of WISDOM and †KNOWLEDGE.

4 [And] This I say, lest any man should beguile You with Enticing-words.

5 For though I be absent in in the FLESH, yet am I with you in the SPIRIT, joying and beholding Your ORDER, and the STEDFASTNESS of your FAITH in Christ.

§ LXXXII.

6 As ye have therefore received CHRIST Jesus the LORD, so walk ye in Him:

7 Rooted and built up in him, and stablished †in the FAITH, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with Thanksgiving.

8 Beware lest ANY man SPOIL You through PHILOSOPHY and Vain Deceit, after the TRADITION of MEN, after the RUDIMENTS of the WORLD, and not after Christ.

9 For in him dwelleth All the FULNESS of the GODHEAD bodily.

10 And ye are complete in Him which is the HEAD of All Principality and Power:

11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the Circumcision made without hands, in PUTTING-OFF the BODY [of the SINS] of the FLESH by the CIRCUMCISION of CHRIST:

12 Buried with him in BAPTISM, wherein also ye are risen with

him through the FAITH of the OPERATION of *GOD, who hath RAISED him from the DEAD.

13 And You, being dead in *your* SINS and the UNCIRCUMCISION of your FLESH, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you All TRESPASSES;

14 Blotting out the HANDWRITING of ORDINANCES that was AGAINST us, which was contrary to us, *and took it out of the WAY, nailing it to *his* CROSS;

15 And having spoiled PRINCIPALITIES and POWERS, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

16 Let no man therefore judge You in Meat, or in Drink, or in Respect of an Holyday, or of the New-moon, or of the Sabbath *days*:

17 † Which are a Shadow of THINGS to COME; but the BODY *is* of CHRIST.

18 Let no man beguile You of your reward in a Voluntary-humility and Worshipping of ANGELS, intruding into *those* things which he hath [not] seen, vainly puffed up by his FLESHLY MIND,

19 And not holding the HEAD, from which All the BODY by JOINTS and Bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the INCREASE of GOD.

20 [Wherefore] if ye be dead with CHRIST from the RUDIMENTS of the WORLD, why, as though living in the World, are ye subject to ordinances;

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. the GOD and Father, and of CHRIST, in whom are hid. 12. THAT GOD who hath, 14. he also took the Same out of.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—2. the MYSTERY of the God Christ; in whom are hid. 3. Knowledge. 7. by FAITH, as. 17. Which is a Shadow. See 4, 11, 18, 20.

21 Touch not, taste not, handle not;

22 Which all are to perish with the USING; after the COMMANDMENTS and Doctrines of MEN?

23 Which things have indeed a Shew of Wisdom in Will-worship, and Humility, †and Neglecting of the Body; not in any Honour to the Satisfying of the FLESH.

CHAPTER III.

§ LXXXIII.

1 If ye then be risen with CHRIST, seek *those* THINGS which are ABOVE, where CHRIST sitteth on the Right-hand of GOD.

2 Set your affection on THINGS ABOVE, not on THINGS on the EARTH.

3 For ye are dead, and your LIFE is hid with CHRIST in GOD.

4 When CHRIST, *who is* our LIFE, shall appear, then shall *ye* also appear with Him in Glory.

5 Mortify † therefore * your MEMBERS which are upon the EARTH; Fornication, Uncleanness, Inordinate-affection, evil Concupiscence, and COVETOUSNESS, which is Idolatry:

6 For which things' sake the WRATH of GOD cometh [on the CHILDREN of DISOBEDIENCE]:

7 In the which *ye* also walked some time, when ye lived in †them.

8 But now *ye* also put off ALL these; Anger, Wrath, Malice, Blasphemy, Filthy-communication out of your MOUTH.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the OLD Man with his DEEDS;

10 And have put on *the NEW *man*, which is RENEWED in Knowledge after the Image of HIM that CREATED him:

11 Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, Circumcision nor Uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond *nor* free: but Christ *is* ALL, and in all.

12 Put on therefore, as the Elect of GOD, †holy and beloved, Bowels of Mercies, Kindness, Humbleness-of-mind, Meekness, Longsuffering;

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a Quarrel against any: even as CHRIST forgave you, so also *do ye*.

14 And above all these things *put on* †CHARITY, which is the Bond of PERFECTNESS.

15 And let the PEACE of †GOD rule in your HEARTS, to the which also ye are called in †One Body; and be ye thankful.

§ LXXXIV.

16 Let the WORD of CHRIST dwell in you richly in All Wisdom; teaching and admonishing one †another in Psalms and hymns and spiritual Songs, singing with Grace in your HEARTS to the LORD.

17 And whatsoever ye do in Word or Deed, *do* all in the Name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks †to *GOD and the Father by him.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—5. THOSE MEMBERS of yours which. 10. that new *man* which. 17. the God and Father.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. by the Neglect of. 5. therefore THOSE MEMBERS which. 7. these things. But now. 12. beloved Saints, Bowels of Mercies. 14. CHARITY; it is the BOND of. 15. CHRIST rule. 15. the Body. 16. another; in Psalms, in Hymns, in spiritual Songs, singing with GRACE in your HEARTS to GOD. And. 17. to God the Father. See 6.

18 WIVES, submit yourselves unto † your [OWN] Husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

19 HUSBANDS, love *your* WIVES, and be not bitter against them.

20 CHILDREN, obey *your* PARENTS in all things: for this is well pleasing unto the LORD.

21 FATHERS, provoke not your CHILDREN to anger, lest they be discouraged.

22 SERVANTS, obey in all things *your* MASTERS according to the Flesh; not with Eyeservice, as Menpleasers; but in Singleness of Heart, fearing † GOD:

23 [And] whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the LORD, [and] not unto Men;

24 Knowing That of the Lord ye shall receive the REWARD of the INHERITANCE: For ye serve the LORD Christ.

25 † But HE that DOETH-WRONG shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no Respect-of-persons.

CHAPTER IV.

1 MASTERS, give unto *your* SERVANTS THAT which is JUST and * EQUAL; knowing that ye also have a Master in Heaven.

§ LXXXV.

2 Continue in PRAYER, and watch in the same with Thanksgiving;

3 Withal praying also for us, that GOD would open unto us a Door of UTTERANCE, to speak the

MYSTERY of CHRIST, for † which I am also in bonds:

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak.

5 Walk in Wisdom toward THEM that are WITHOUT, redeeming the TIME.

6 Let your SPEECH *be* always with Grace, seasoned with Salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man.

7 All my STATE shall Tychicus declare unto you, *who is* a BELOVED Brother, and a Faithful Minister and Fellow-servant in the Lord:

8 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that † he might know your ESTATE, and comfort your HEARTS;

9 With Onesimus, a FAITHFUL and Beloved Brother, who is *one* of you. || They shall make known unto You all THINGS which *are done* here.

10 Aristarchus my FELLOW-PRISONER saluteth you, and Marcus, SISTER'S-SON to Barnabas, touching whom ye received Commandments: if he come unto you, receive him:

11 And * Jesus, which is CALLED Justus, who are of the Circumcision. These only *are my* Fellow-workers unto the KINGDOM of GOD, which have been a Comfort unto me.

12 Epaphras, who is *one* of you, || a Servant † of Christ, saluteth you, always labouring fervently

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THAT which is EQUAL. 11. THAT Jesus which is CALLED Justus. These only *are* THEY who of the Circumcision ARE *my* Fellow-workers.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—18. your HUSBANDS, as. 22. the LORD. 25. For HE that. 3. whom I am. 8. ye might know our ESTATE, and. 12. of Christ Jesus. See 18, 23 (twice).

|| 9. "one of you," namely, of the Uncircumcision. || 12. "THAT Epaphras who is one of you," namely, of the Uncircumcision.

for you in PRAYERS, that ye may †stand perfect and complete in All the Will of GOD.

13 For I bear him record, That he hath †a great Zeal for you, and THEM *that are* in Laodicea, and THEM in Hierapolis.

14 Luke, the BELOVED PHYSICIAN, and Demas, greet you.

15 Salute the BRETHREN which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the CHURCH which is in †his House.

16 And when *this* [EPISTLE] is read among you, cause that it be

read also in the CHURCH of the LAODICEANS; and that ye likewise read *the *epistle* from Laodicea. ||

17 And say to Archippus, Take heed to the MINISTRY which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfil it.

18 The SALUTATION *by the HAND of ME Paul. Remember My BONDS. GRACE *be* with you. [Amen.]

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians by Tychicus and Onesimus.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—16. THAT from Laodicea. 18. of *me* Paul, with MINE-OWN Hand. Remember.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—12. be established perfect. 13. Much Care for you. 15. her House. See 13, 16. *Subscription*: TO THE COLOSSIANS, WRITTEN FROM ROME.

|| *This may mean the Epistle to Philemon, who probably lived at Laodicea.*

TO THE THESSALONIANS.

CHAPTER I.

(§ LXXXVI.)

1 Paul, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the CHURCH of the Thessalonians *which is* in God the Father and *in* the Lord Jesus Christ: Grace *be* unto you, and Peace, [from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ].

2 We give thanks to GOD always for you all, making Mention of you in our PRAYERS;

3 Remembering without ceasing Your WORK of FAITH, and LABOUR of LOVE, and PATIENCE of HOPE in our LORD Jesus Christ, in the sight of *GOD and our Father;

4 Knowing, Brethren beloved, your ELECTION of God.

5 For our GOSPEL came not unto you in Word only, but also in Power, and in the holy Ghost, and [in] much Assurance; as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake.

6 And *ye* became Followers of us, and of the LORD, having received the WORD in much Affliction, with Joy of the holy Ghost:

7 So that ye were † Ensamples to ALL that BELIEVE in MACEDONIA and ACHAIA.

8 For from you sounded out the WORD of the LORD, not only in MACEDONIA and Achaia; but [also] in Every *Place your FAITH to GOD-WARD is spread abroad, so that we need not to speak any thing.

9 For they themselves shew of us What manner of Entering-in we had unto you, and how ye turned to GOD from IDOLS to serve the living and true God;

10 And to wait for his SON from HEAVEN, whom he raised from the † Dead, *even* *Jesus, which DELIVERED us from the WRATH to COME.

CHAPTER II.

1 For yourselves, Brethren, know *our ENTRANCE-IN unto you, That it was not in vain:

2 But [even] after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our GOD to speak unto you the GOSPEL of GOD with Much Contention.

3 For our EXHORTATION *was*

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. our GOD and Father. 8. Place, THAT FAITH of yours which *ye have* toward GOD is spread abroad, so that. 10. THAT Jesus who DELIVERED us from THAT WRATH which is to COME. 1. THAT ENTRANCE-IN of ours which we had unto you.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: THE FIRST TO THE THESSALONIANS. 7. an Example. 10. the DEAD. See 1, 5, 8, 2.

not of Deceit, nor of Uncleanness, nor in Guile:

4 But as we were allowed of GOD to be put in trust with the GOSPEL, even so we speak; not as pleasing Men, * but † GOD, which TRIETH our HEARTS.

5 For neither at any time used we flattering Words, as ye know, nor a Cloke of Covetousness; God is Witness:

6 Nor of Men sought we Glory, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might have been burdensome, as the Apostles of Christ.

7 But we were gentle among you, even as a Nurse cherisheth * HER Children:

8 So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the GOSPEL of GOD only, but also OUR-OWN Souls, because ye were dear unto us.

9 For ye remember, Brethren, our LABOUR and TRAVAIL: for labouring Night and Day, because we would not BE CHARGEABLE unto any of you, we preached unto you the GOSPEL of GOD.

10 We are Witnesses, and GOD also, how holily and justly and unblameably we behaved ourselves among YOU that BELIEVE:

11 As ye know how we exhorted and comforted and charged every One of you, as a Father doth his Children,

12 That ye would WALK worthy of * GOD, who hath CALLED you unto HIS Kingdom and Glory.

§ LXXXVII. ||

13 † For this cause also thank we GOD without ceasing, Because, when ye received the Word of GOD which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the Word of Men, but as it is in truth, the Word of God, which effectually worketh also in YOU that BELIEVE.

14 For we, Brethren, became Followers of * the CHURCHES of GOD which in JUDÆA ARE in Christ Jesus: For we also have suffered † Like things of your OWN Countrymen, even as they have of * the JEWS:

15 Who both KILLED the LORD Jesus, and † their OWN Prophets, and have persecuted Us; and they please not God, and are contrary to All Men:

16 Forbidding us to speak to the GENTILES that they might be saved, † to FILL-UP Their SINS alway: for the WRATH is come upon them to the Uttermost.

17 But we, Brethren, being taken from you for a short Time in Presence, not in Heart, endeavoured the more abundantly to see your FACE with Great Desire.

18 Wherefore we would have come unto you, even I Paul, once and again; but SATAN hindered us.

19 For what is Our Hope, or Joy, or Crown of Rejoicing? Are not even we in the presence of our LORD Jesus Christ at HIS Coming?

20 For we are our GLORY and JOY.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—4. but THAT GOD which TRIETH. 7. HER-OWN. 12. THAT GOD who hath. 14. THOSE CHURCHES of GOD which. 14. THOSE JEWS who both.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—4. THAT God which TRIETH. 13. And for this cause also. 14. the Same things of. 15. the PROPHETS, and have. 16. to the FILLING-UP of them always.

¶ This Section is numbered 87 in the Vatican Manuscript.

CHAPTER III.

1 Wherefore when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone;

2 And sent Timotheus, our BROTHER, [and Minister of GOD], and [our] Fellowlabourer in the GOSPEL of CHRIST, to ESTABLISH you, and to comfort † you concerning your FAITH:

3 That no man should be MOVED by these AFFLICTIONS: for yourselves know That we are appointed thereunto.

4 For verily, when we were with you, we told you before That we should suffer tribulation; even as it came to pass, and ye know.

5 For this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent to KNOW † your FAITH, lest by some means the TEMPTER have tempted you, and our LABOUR be in vain.

6 But now when Timotheus came from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your FAITH and CHARITY, and That ye have good Remembrance of us always, desiring greatly to see Us, as *we* also to see You:

7 Therefore, Brethren, we were comforted over you in All our † AFFLICTION and Distress by YOUR Faith:

8 For now we live, if *ye* stand fast in the Lord.

9 For What Thanks can we render to GOD again for you, for All the JOY wherewith we joy for your sakes before our GOD;

10 Night and Day praying exceedingly that we might SEE Your FACE, and might perfect THAT which is LACKING in your FAITH?

11 Now *GOD himself and our Father, and our LORD Jesus [Christ], direct our WAY unto you.

12 And the LORD make you to increase and abound in LOVE one toward another, and toward all *men*, even as *we* do toward you:

13 To the end he may STABLISH Your HEARTS unblameable in Holiness before *GOD, even our Father, at the COMING of our LORD Jesus [Christ] with All his SAINTS.

CHAPTER IV.

§ LXXXVIII.

1 † FURTHERMORE then we beseech you, Brethren, and exhort *you* by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us HOW ye ought to walk and to please God, † *so* ye would abound more and more.

2 For ye know What Commandments we gave you by the LORD Jesus.

3 For this is the Will of GOD, *even* your SANCTIFICATION, that ye should abstain from FORNICATION:

4 That every one of you should know how to possess *HIS Vessel in Sanctification and Honour;

5 Not in the Lust of Concupiscence, even as *the GENTILES which KNOW not God:

6 That no *man* GO-BEYOND and defraud his BROTHER in *any* MATTER: because that † the LORD is

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—11. our GOD and Father himself, and our LORD Jesus, direct. 13. our GOD and Father, at the COMING. 4. HIS-OWN. 5. THOSE GENTILES which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—2. *you*. 5. YOUR FAITH. 7. DISTRESS and Affliction by. 1. Furthermore, we beseech you (*b*). 1. as also ye walk, *so* ye-would abound. 6. the Lord. See 2 (twice), 11, 13.

the Avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified.

7 For GOD hath not called us unto Uncleanness, but unto Holiness.

8 He therefore that DESPISETH, despiseth not Man, but *GOD, who hath also GIVEN unto us his HOLY SPIRIT.

9 But as touching BROTHERLY-LOVE, †ye need not that I write unto you: for *ye* yourselves are taught of God to LOVE one another.

10 And indeed ye do it †toward All *the BRETHREN which are in All MACEDONIA: but we beseech you, Brethren, that ye increase more and more;

11 And that ye study to be quiet, and to do your OWN business, and to work with †your OWN Hands, as we commanded You;

12 That ye may walk honestly toward THEM that are WITHOUT, and *that* ye may have Lack of nothing.

13 But †I would not have you to be ignorant, Brethren, concerning THEM which are ASLEEP, that ye sorrow not, even as *OTHERS which HAVE no Hope.

14 For if we believe That Jesus died and rose again, even so THEM also which SLEEP in JESUS will GOD bring with him.

15 For This we say unto you by the Word of the Lord, That *WE which are ALIVE *and* REMAIN unto the COMING †of the

LORD shall not prevent THEM which are ASLEEP.

16 For the LORD himself shall descend from Heaven with a Shout, with the Voice of the Archangel, and with the Trump of God: and the DEAD in Christ shall rise first:

17 Then *WE which are ALIVE *and* REMAIN shall be caught up together with them in the Clouds, to meet the LORD in the Air: and so shall we ever be †with the Lord.

18 Wherefore comfort one another with these WORDS.

CHAPTER V.

1 But of the TIMES and the SEASONS, Brethren, ye have no Need that I write unto you.

2 For yourselves know perfectly That the †DAY of the Lord so cometh as a Thief in the Night.

3 For when they shall say, Peace and Safety; then Sudden Destruction cometh upon them, as TRAVAIL upon *a woman with child; and they shall not escape.

4 But *ye*, Brethren, are not in Darkness, that *that* DAY should overtake You as a Thief.

§ LXXXIX.

5 †*We* are all the Children of Light, and the Children of the Day: we are not of Night, nor of Darkness.

6 Therefore let us not sleep, as *do* OTHERS; but let us watch and be sober.

7 For THEY that SLEEP sleep in the Night; and THEY that be

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. THAT GOD who hath. 10. THOSE BRETHREN which. 13. THOSE OTHERS which. 15. *we*, WE which are ALIVE, WE which REMAIN. 17. *we*, WE which are ALIVE, WE which REMAIN. 3. HER that is with child.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—9. we have no Need to write unto you. 10. even toward. 11. YOUR HANDS. 13. we would not. 15. of JESUS shall not. 17. in the Lord. 2. Day. 5. For *we* are (*b*).

DRUNKEN are drunken in the Night.

8 But let **us**, who are of the Day, be sober, putting on the Breastplate of Faith and Love; and for an Helmet, the Hope of Salvation.

9 For **GOD** hath not appointed us to Wrath, but to obtain Salvation † by * our **LORD** Jesus [Christ],

10 Who **DIED** for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with Him.

11 Wherefore comfort yourselves together, and edify one **ANOTHER**, even as also ye do.

12 And we beseech you, Brethren, to know **THEM** which **LABOUR** among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you;

13 And to esteem them very highly in Love for their **WORK'S** sake. *And* be at peace among yourselves.

14 Now we exhort you, Brethren, warn **THEM** that are **UNRULY**, comfort the **FEEBLE-MINDED**, support the **WEAK**, be patient toward all *men*.

15 See that none render Evil for

Evil unto Any *man*; but ever follow **THAT** which is **GOOD**, both among yourselves, and to all *men*.

16 Rejoice evermore.

17 Pray without ceasing.

18 In every thing give thanks: for this is the Will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.

19 Quench not the **SPIRIT**.

20 Despise not Prophesyings.

21 Prove all things; hold fast **THAT** which is **GOOD**.

22 Abstain from All Appearance of Evil.

23 And the Very **GOD** of **PEACE** sanctify you wholly; and *I pray God* Your Whole **SPIRIT** and **SOUL** and **BODY** be preserved blameless unto the **COMING** of our **LORD** Jesus Christ.

24 Faithful *is* **HE** that **CALLETH** you, who also will do *it*.

25 Brethren, pray † for us.

26 Greet all the **BRETHREN** with an holy Kiss.

27 I charge you by the **LORD** that *this* **EPISTLE** be read unto All † the **HOLY** Brethren.

28 The **GRACE** of our **LORD** Jesus Christ *be* with you. [Amen.]

¶ The first *epistle* unto the Thessalonians was written from Athens.

* **EMPHATIC TEXT.**—9. **THAT** **LORD** of ours, Jesus Christ, who.

† **VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.**—9. by **THAT** **LORD** of ours, Jesus, who. 25. also for us. 27. the **BRETHREN**. See 9, 28. *Subscription:* **THE FIRST TO THE THESSALONIANS, WRITTEN FROM ATHENS (b).**

TO THE THESSALONIANS.

CHAPTER I.

(§ XC.)

1 Paul, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the CHURCH of the Thessalonians in God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ:

2 Grace unto you, and Peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We are bound to thank GOD always for you, Brethren, as it is meet, Because that your FAITH groweth exceedingly, and the CHARITY of every One of you All toward each other aboundeth;

4 So that we ourselves glory in You in the CHURCHES of GOD, for your PATIENCE and Faith in All your PERSECUTIONS and TRIBULATIONS that ye endure:

5 *Which is* a Manifest-token of the RIGHTEOUS Judgment of GOD, that ye may be COUNTED-WORTHY of the KINGDOM of GOD, for which ye also suffer:

6 Seeing *it is* a righteous thing with God to recompense Tribulation to THEM that TROUBLE you;

7 And to YOU who are TROUBLED Rest with us, when the LORD Jesus shall be REVEALED from Heaven with his mighty Angels,

8 In †Flaming Fire taking Vengeance on THEM that KNOW not God, and *that OBEY not the GOSPEL of our LORD Jesus [Christ]:

9 Who shall be punished with everlasting Destruction from the Presence of the LORD, and from the GLORY of his POWER;

10 When he shall come to be glorified with his SAINTS, and to be admired in All THEM that BELIEVE, Because our TESTIMONY among you was believed, in that DAY.

11 Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our GOD would count You worthy of *this* CALLING, and fulfil All the Good-pleasure of *his* Goodness, and the Work of Faith with Power:

12 That the NAME of our LORD Jesus [Christ] may be glorified in you, and *ye* in him, according to the GRACE of our GOD and the Lord Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER II.

§ XCI. ||

1 Now we beseech you, Brethren, by the COMING of †our LORD Jesus Christ, and *by* Our Gathering-together unto him,

2 That ye be not soon SHAKEN in MIND, †or be troubled, neither

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. on THEM that OBEY not.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: THE SECOND TO THE THESSALONIANS. 8. a Flame of Fire. 1. the LORD Jesus Christ. 2. nor be troubled. See 8, 12.

|| *This Section is numbered 91 in the Vatican Manuscript.*

by Spirit, nor by Word, nor by Letter as from us, as That the DAY of †CHRIST is at hand.

3 Let no man deceive You by any means: For *that day shall not come*, except there come a FAL-LING-AWAY first, and †THAT MAN of SIN be revealed, *the SON of PERDITION;

4 Who OPPOSETH and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he [as God] sitteth in the TEMPLE of GOD, shewing himself That he is God.

5 Remember ye not, That, when I was yet with you, I told you These things?

6 And now ye know WHAT WITHHOLDETH, that he might be REVEALED in *HIS Time.

7 For the MYSTERY of INIQUITY doth already work: only HE who now LETTETH *will let*, until he be taken out of the Way.

8 And then shall **that* WICKED be revealed, whom the LORD shall consume with the SPIRIT of his MOUTH, and shall destroy with the BRIGHTNESS of his COMING:

9 *Even him*, Whose COMING is after the Working of SATAN, with All Power and Signs and lying Wonders,

10 And with All Deceiveableness of †UNRIGHTEOUSNESS in THEM that PERISH; because they received not the LOVE of the TRUTH, that they might be SAVED.

11 And for this cause GOD †shall

send them Strong Delusion, that they should BELIEVE a LIE:

12 That *THEY All might be damned who BELIEVED not the TRUTH, but had pleasure in UN-RIGHTEOUSNESS.

13 But *we* are bound to give thanks alway to GOD for you, Brethren beloved of the Lord, Because GOD hath †from the Beginning chosen you to Salvation through Sanctification of the Spirit and Belief of the Truth:

14 Whereunto he called you by our GOSPEL, to the obtaining of the Glory of our LORD Jesus Christ.

§ XCII.

15 Therefore, Brethren, stand fast, and hold the TRADITIONS which ye have been taught, whether by Word, or our Epistle.

16 Now our LORD †Jesus Christ himself, and *GOD, even our Father, which hath LOVED us, and hath given *us* everlasting Consolation and good Hope through Grace,

17 Comfort Your HEARTS, and stablish †you in Every good Word and Work.

CHAPTER III.

§ XCIII.

1 FINALLY, Brethren, pray for us, that the WORD of the LORD may have *free* course, and be glorified, even as *it is* with you:

2 And that we may be delivered from UNREASONABLE and

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. THAT SON of PERDITION, who. 6. HIS-OWN. 8. the WICKED-ONE be. 12. All THEY might. 16. THAT GOD and Father of ours who hath.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—2. the LORD is at hand. 3. THAT MAN of INIQUITY be revealed. 10. Unrighteousness to THEM that. 11. sends them. 13. chosen you a First-fruit unto Salvation. 16. Christ Jesus himself, and THAT God our FATHER who hath LOVED us. 17. *you* in Every good Work and Word. See 4.

Wicked Men: for all *men* have not FAITH.

3 But the LORD is faithful, who shall stablish you, and keep you from *EVIL.

4 And we have confidence in the Lord touching you, That ye both †do and will do the things which we command [you].

5 And the LORD direct Your HEARTS into the LOVE of GOD, and into the PATIENT-WAITING for CHRIST.

6 Now we command you, Brethren, in the Name of †our LORD Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw yourselves from Every Brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the TRADITION which †he received of us.

7 For yourselves know how ye ought to follow us: For we behaved not ourselves disorderly among you;

8 Neither did we eat any man's Bread for nought; but wrought with Labour and Travail, Night and Day, that we might not BE CHARGEABLE to any of you:

9 Not Because we have not Power, but to make Ourselves an Ensample unto you to FOLLOW us.

10 For even when we were with

you, This we commanded you, That if any would not work, neither should he eat.

11 For we hear that there are some † which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busybodies.

12 Now THEM that are SUCH we command and exhort † by our LORD Jesus Christ, that with Quietness they work, and eat THEIR-OWN Bread.

13 But ¶, Brethren, be not weary in well-doing.

14 And if any man obey not our WORD by *this* EPISTLE, note that man, [and] have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.

15 Yet count *him* not as an Enemy, but admonish *him* as a Brother.

16 Now the LORD of PEACE himself give you PEACE always by all means. The LORD *be* with you all.

17 The SALUTATION of * Paul with MINE-OWN Hand, which is the Token in Every Epistle: so I write.

18 The GRACE of our LORD Jesus Christ *be* with you all. [Amen.]

¶ The second *epistle* to the Thessalonians was written from Athens.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. the EVIL one. 17. *me* Paul with.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—4. have done, and do, and will do. 6. the Lord Jesus Christ. 6. ye received from us. 11. among you which walk disorderly. 12. in the Lord Jesus Christ. See 4, 14, 18. *Subscription* THE SECOND TO THE THESSALONIANS, WRITTEN FROM ATHENS (b).

TO TIMOTHY.

CHAPTER I.

1 Paul, an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the Commandment of God our Saviour, and † Lord Jesus Christ, *which is* our HOPE;

2 Unto Timothy, *my* Own Son in the Faith: Grace, Mercy, and Peace, from God † our Father and * Jesus Christ our LORD.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither give heed to Fables and endless Genealogies, which minister Questions, rather than * Godly Edifying which is in Faith: *so do*.

5 Now the END of the COMMANDMENT is Charity out of a Pure Heart, and *of* a good Conscience, and *of* Faith unfeigned:

6 From which some having swerved have turned aside unto Vain-jangling;

7 Desiring to be Teachers-of-the-law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.

8 But we know That the LAW

is good, if a man use it lawfully;

9 Knowing this, That the Law is not made for a Righteous man, but for the Lawless and Disobedient, for the Ungodly and for Sinners, for Unholy and Profane, for Murderers-of-fathers and Murderers-of-mothers, for Manslayers,

10 For Whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for Menstealers, for Liars, for Perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to SOUND Doctrine;

11 According to the GLORIOUS GOSPEL of the BLESSED God, which was committed to my trust.

12 [And] I thank CHRIST Jesus our LORD, who hath ENABLED me, *for* That he counted Me faithful, putting ME into the Ministry;

13 Who was BEFORE a Blasphemer, and a Persecutor, and Injurious: but I obtained mercy, Because I did *it* ignorantly in Unbelief.

14 And the GRACE of our LORD was exceeding abundant with * Faith and Love which is in Christ Jesus.

15 This *is* a Faithful SAYING, and worthy of All Acceptation, That Christ Jesus came into the

☞ The various Readings of this Epistle (which is wanting in the Vatican Manuscript), are taken from Dr. Woide's Collation of the Alexandrian Manuscript, in the British Museum.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. Christ Jesus our LORD. 4. THAT Edification of God which is. 14. THAT Faith and Love which.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—Title: THE FIRST TO TIMOTHY. 1. Christ Jesus our HOPE. 2. the Father, and Christ Jesus our LORD. See 12.

WORLD to save Sinner ; of whom I am chief.

16 Howbeit for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first † Jesus Christ might shew forth ALL Longsuffering, for a Pattern to THEM which SHOULD-HERE-AFTER believe on him to Life everlasting.

17 Now unto the KING ETERNAL, * Immortal, Invisible, the Only [Wise] God, be Honour and Glory for EVER and EVER. Amen.

18 This CHARGE I commit unto thee, Son Timothy, according to the PROPHECIES which WENT-BEFORE on thee, that thou by them mightest war a GOOD Warfare;

19 Holding Faith, and a Good Conscience; which some having put away concerning FAITH have † made shipwreck :

20 Of whom is Hymenæus and Alexander; whom I have delivered unto SATAN, that they may learn not to blaspheme.

CHAPTER II.

1 I exhort therefore, that, first of all, Supplications, Prayers, Intercessions, and Giving-of-thanks, be made for All Men;

2 For Kings, and for ALL that ARE in Authority; that we may lead a Quiet and Peaceable Life in All Godliness and Honesty.

3 [For] this is good and acceptable in the sight of * God our SAVIOUR;

4 Who will have All Men to be saved, and to come unto the Knowledge of the Truth.

5 For *there is* One God, and One Mediator between God and Men, * the Man Christ Jesus;

6 Who GAVE himself a Ransom for all, [to be TESTIFIED] in due Time.

7 † Whereunto I am ordained a Preacher, and an Apostle; I speak the Truth [in Christ], † and lie not; a Teacher of the Gentiles in † Faith and Verity.

8 I will therefore that MEN pray every where, lifting up Holy Hands, without Wrath and Doubting.

9 In like manner [also], that † WOMEN adorn themselves in modest Apparel with Shamefacedness and Sobriety; not with † Broidered-hair, or Gold, or Pearls, or costly Array;

10 But, which becometh Women professing Godliness, with good Works.

11 Let the Woman learn in Silence with All Subjection.

12 But I suffer not a Woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the Man, but to be in Silence.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve.

14 And Adam was not deceived, but the WOMAN being † deceived was in the Transgression.

15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in CHILDBEARING, if they continue in Faith and Charity and Holiness with Sobriety.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. the Immortal, the Invisible, the Only. 3. our SAVIOUR God, who. 5. THAT Man, Christ Jesus, who GAVE.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. Christ Jesus. 19. suffered shipwreck. 7. Whereof I was entrusted to be a Preacher. 7. I lie not. 7. Spirit and in Truth. I will. 9. Women adorn, 9. Plaited-hair and Gold, or Pearls. 14. wholly-deceived was in. See 17, 3, 6, 7, 9.

CHAPTER III.

1 *This is* a True SAYING, If a man desire the Office-of-a-bishop, he desireth a Good Work.

2 A BISHOP then must be blameless, the Husband of One Wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach;

3 Not given to wine, no striker, [not greedy of filthy lucre];- but but patient, not a brawler, not covetous;

4 One that ruleth well his OWN House, having his Children in Subjection with All Gravity;

5 For if a man know not how to rule his OWN House, how shall he take care of the Church of God?

6 Not a Novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the Condemnation of the DEVIL.

7 Moreover he must have a good Report of THEM which are WITHOUT; lest he fall into Reproach and the Snare of the DEVIL.

8 Likewise *must* the Deacons *be* grave, not doubletongued, not given to much Wine, not greedy of filthy lucre;

9 Holding the MYSTERY of the FAITH in a Pure Conscience.

10 And let These also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being *found* blameless.

11 Even so *must their* Wives *be* grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things.

12 Let the Deacons be the Husbands of One Wife, ruling their

Children and their OWN Houses well.

13 For THEY that have USED-THE-OFFICE-OF-A-DEACON well purchase to themselves a good Degree, and Great Boldness in *the Faith which is in Christ Jesus.

14 These things write I unto Thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly:

15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the House of God, which is the Church of the living God, the Pillar and Ground of the TRUTH.

16 And without controversy great is the MYSTERY of GODLINESS: † God was manifest in the Flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of Angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the World, received up into Glory.

CHAPTER IV.

1 Now the SPIRIT speaketh expressly, That in the Latter Times some shall depart from the FAITH, giving heed to seducing Spirits, and Doctrines of Devils;

2 Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having THEIR Conscience seared with a hot iron;

3 Forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to abstain from Meats, which GOD hath created to be received with Thanksgiving of THEM which BELIEVE and know the TRUTH.

4 For Every Creature of God *is* good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with Thanksgiving:

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—13. THAT Faith which is.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. *It is doubtful whether this word in the Alexandrian Manuscript was originally* ΩΣ *or* ΘΣ *(“who” or “God”). See 3.*

5 For it is sanctified by the Word of God and Prayer.

6 If thou put the BRETHREN in remembrance of These things, thou shalt be a Good Minister of † Jesus Christ, nourished up in the WORDS of FAITH and of GOOD Doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

7 But refuse PROFANE and Old-wives' Fables, and exercise thyself *rather* unto Godliness.

8 For BODILY Exercise profiteth little: but GODLINESS is profitable unto all things, having Promise of *the Life that NOW is, and of THAT which is to COME.

9 *This is* a Faithful SAYING and worthy of All Acceptation.

10 For therefore we [both] labour and † suffer reproach, Because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of All Men, specially of those that believe.

11 These things command and teach.

12 Let no man despise Thy YOUTH; but be thou an Example of the BELIEVERS, in Word, in Conversation, in Charity, [in Spirit], in Faith, in Purity.

13 Till I come, give attendance to READING, to EXHORTATION, to DOCTRINE.

14 Neglect not the GIFT that is in thee, which was given thee by Prophecy, with the Laying-on of the HANDS of the PRESBYTERY.

15 Meditate upon These things; give thyself wholly to *them*; that Thy PROFITING may appear to all.

16 Take heed unto thyself, and

unto the DOCTRINE; continue in them: for in doing This thou shalt both save Thyself, and THEM that HEAR thee.

CHAPTER V.

1 Rebuke not an Elder, but intreat *him* as a Father; *and* the Younger-men as Brethren;

2 The Elder-women as Mothers; the Younger as Sisters, with All Purity.

3 Honour *Widows that are WIDOWS indeed.

4 But if Any Widow have Children or Nephews, let them learn first to shew piety at HOME, and to requite their PARENTS: for *that* is [good and] acceptable before GOD.

5 Now SHE that is a WIDOW indeed, and desolate, trusteth in GOD, and continueth in SUPPLICATIONS and PRAYERS Night and Day.

6 But SHE that LIVETH-IN-PLEASURE is dead while she liveth.

7 And These things give in charge, that they may be blameless.

8 But if any provide not for his OWN, and specially for †THOSE of his own HOUSE, he hath denied the FAITH, and is worse than an Infidel.

9 Let not a Widow be taken into the number under threescore Years old, having been the Wife of One Man,

10 Well reported of for good Works; if she have brought up children, if she have lodged

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. THAT Life which NOW is.

3. THOSE Widows that are.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—6. Christ Jesus. trust. 8 his Household, he hath. See 10, 12, 4.

10. earnestly strive, Because we

strangers, if she have washed the Saints' Feet, if she have relieved the Afflicted, if she have diligently followed Every good Work.

11 But the Younger Widows refuse: for when they have begun to wax wanton against CHRIST, they will marry;

12 Having Damnation, Because they have cast off their FIRST Faith.

13 And withal they learn *to be* idle, wandering about from HOUSE-TO-HOUSE; and not only idle, but Tattlers also and Busybodies, speaking THINGS which they OUGHT not.

14 I will therefore that the Younger-women marry, bear children, guide the house, give None Occasion to the ADVERSARY to speak reproachfully.

15 For some are already turned aside after SATAN.

16 If any [man or] woman that believeth have Widows, let †them relieve them, and let not the CHURCH be charged; that it may relieve THEM that are Widows INDEED.

17 Let the ELDERS that RULEWELL be counted worthy of Double Honour, especially THEY who LABOUR in the Word and Doctrine.

18 For the SCRIPTURE saith, "Thou shalt not muzzle the Ox that treadeth out the corn." ‡ And, "The LABOURER *is* worthy of his REWARD." †

19 Against an Elder receive not an Accusation, but before Two or Three Witnesses.

20 †THEM that SIN rebuke before All, that OTHERS also may fear.

21 I charge *thee* †before *GOD, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the ELECT Angels, that thou observe These things without preferring one before another, doing Nothing by Partiality.

22 Lay Hands suddenly on No man, neither be Partaker of Other men's Sins: keep Thyself pure.

23 Drink no longer water, but use a little Wine for †thy STOMACH'S sake and thine OFTEN Infirmities.

24 Some Men's SINS are open beforehand, going before to Judgment; and some *men* they follow after.

25 † Likewise also the GOOD Works of *some* are manifest beforehand; and THEY that ARE OTHERWISE cannot be hid.

CHAPTER VI.

1 Let as many Servants as are under the Yoke count their OWN Masters worthy of All Honour, that the NAME of GOD and *his* DOCTRINE be not blasphemed.

2 And THEY that HAVE Believing Masters, let them not despise *them*, Because they are Brethren; but rather do *them* service, Because they are faithful and beloved, PARTAKERS of the BENEFIT. These things teach and exhort.

3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to *Wholesome Words, *even the words* of our LORD

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—21. the GOD and Lord Jesus Christ, and the ELECT Angels. 3. THOSE Wholesome Words which are *the words* of our LORD Jesus Christ.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. her relieve them. 20. But THEM that SIN. 21. before the GOD and Christ Jesus, and the ELECT Angels. 23. the STOMACH'S sake. 25. And likewise GOOD WORKS also *are* manifest beforehand. See 16.

‡ 18. Deut. xxv. 4. ‡ 18. Lev. xix. 13.

Jesus Christ, and to the DOCTRINE which is according to Godliness;

4 He is proud, knowing Nothing, but doting about Questions and Strifes-of-words, whereof cometh Envy, Strife, Railings, evil Surmisings,

5 Perverse-disputings of Men of corrupt MINDS, and destitute of the TRUTH, supposing that Gain is GODLINESS: [from SUCH withdraw thyself].

6 But GODLINESS with Contentment is great Gain.

7 For we brought Nothing into *this* WORLD, and [it is certain] we can carry Nothing out.

8 And having Food and Raiment let us be Therewith content.

9 But THEY that WILL be rich fall into Temptation and a Snare, and *into* many foolish and hurtful Lusts, which drown MEN in Destruction and Perdition.

10 For the LOVE-OF-MONEY is the Root of All Evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the FAITH, and pierced Themselves through with many Sorrows.

11 But *thou*, O Man of †GOD, flee These things; and follow after Righteousness, Godliness, Faith, Love, Patience, Meekness.

12 Fight the GOOD Fight of FAITH, lay hold on ETERNAL Life, whercunto thou art [also] called, and hast professed a GOOD Profession before Many Witnesses.

13 I give thee charge in the sight † of * God, who QUICKEN-

ETH ALL things, and *before* Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate WITNESSED a GOOD Confession;

14 That thou keep *this* COMMANDMENT without spot, unrebukeable, until the APPEARING of our LORD Jesus Christ:

15 Which in his Times HE shall shew, who is the BLESSED and only Potentate, * the KING of KINGS, and Lord of LORDS,

16 Who only HATH Immortality, dwelling in the Light which no man can approach unto; whom no Man hath seen, nor can see: to whom *be* Honour and Power everlasting. Amen.

17 Charge THEM that are RICH in THIS World, that they be not highminded, nor trust in uncertain Riches, but †in * the LIVING GOD, who GIVETH us richly all things to enjoy;

18 That they do good, that they be rich in good Works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate;

19 Laying up in store for themselves a good Foundation against the time to COME, that they may lay hold on † ETERNAL Life.

20 O Timothy, keep THAT which is COMMITTED-TO-THY-TRUST, avoiding PROFANE and Vain Babblings, and Oppositions of SCIENCE FALSELY SO-CALLED:

21 Which some professing have erred concerning the FAITH. GRACE *be* with † thee. [Amen].

¶ The first to Timothy was written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest city of Phrygia Pacatiana.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—13. THAT GOD who QUICKENETH ALL things, and THAT Christ Jesus who before. 15. THAT KING. 17. THAT LIVING GOD who.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—11. God. 13. of THAT GOD who bringeth into existence ALL things, and THAT Christ Jesus who before. 17. in THAT GOD who GIVETH us ALL things richly to enjoy. 19. Life INDEED. 21. you *all*. See 5, 7, 12, 21. *Subscription*:—THE FIRST TO TIMOTHY, WRITTEN FROM LAODICEA.

TO TIMOTHY.

CHAPTER I.

1 Paul, an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the Will of God, according to the Promise of *Life which is in Christ Jesus,

2 To Timothy, *my* Dearly-beloved Son : Grace, Mercy, *and* Peace, from God the Father and Christ Jesus our LORD.

3 I thank GOD, whom I serve from *my* Forefathers with Pure Conscience, that without ceasing I have REMEMBRANCE of thee in my PRAYERS Night and Day;

4 Greatly desiring to see Thee, being mindful of Thy TEARS, that I may be filled with Joy;

5 When I call to Remembrance the UNFEIGNED Faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy GRANDMOTHER Lois, and thy MOTHER Eunice; and I am persuaded That *in thee also.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance that thou stir up the GIFT of †GOD, which is in thee by the PUTTING-ON of my HANDS.

7 For GOD hath not given us the Spirit of Fear; but of Power, and of Love, and of a Sound-mind.

8 Be not thou therefore ashamed

of the TESTIMONY of our LORD, nor of me his PRISONER: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the GOSPEL according to the Power of *God;

9 Who hath SAVED us, and called *us* with an holy Calling, not according to our WORKS, but according to his Own Purpose and *Grace, which was GIVEN us in Christ Jesus before the World began,

10 But is now made manifest by the APPEARING of our SAVIOUR † Jesus Christ, who hath abolished DEATH, and hath brought Life and Immortality to light through the GOSPEL:

11 Whereunto ¶ am appointed a Preacher and an Apostle, and a Teacher [of the Gentiles].

12 For the Which Cause I also suffer These things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded That he is able to keep THAT which I have COMMITTED unto him against That DAY.

13 Hold fast the Form of Sound Words, which thou hast heard of me, in *Faith and Love which is in Christ Jesus.

☞ The various Readings of this Epistle (which is wanting in the Vatican Manuscript), are taken from the Alexandrian Manuscript.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THAT Life which is. 5. *it dwells* in thee also. 8. THAT God who hath SAVED. 9. THAT Grace which was GIVEN in. 13. THAT Faith and Love which is.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: THE SECOND TO TIMOTHY. 6. CHRIST, which is in thee. 10. Christ Jesus, who hath. See 11.

14 *That* GOOD Thing which was committed unto thee keep by *the holy Ghost which DWELLETH in us.

15 This thou knowest, That All THEY which are in ASIA be turned away from me; of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16 The LORD give Mercy unto the HOUSE of ONESIPHORUS; For he oft refreshed Me, and was not ashamed of my CHAIN:

17 But, when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found *me*.

18 The LORD grant unto him that he may find Mercy of the Lord in That DAY: and in how many things he ministered unto me at Ephesus, *thou* knowest very well.

CHAPTER II.

1 *Thou* therefore, my Son, be strong in *the GRACE that is in Christ Jesus.

2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among Many Witnesses, the Same commit thou to Faithful Men, who shall be able to teach Others also.

3 *Thou* therefore endure †hardness, as a Good Soldier of Jesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with the AFFAIRS of *this* LIFE; that he may please HIM who hath CHOSEN him to be a soldier.

5 And if a man [also] strive for masteries, *yet* is he not crowned, except he strive lawfully.

6 The HUSBANDMAN that LABOURETH must be first partaker of the FRUITS.

7 Consider what I say; †and the LORD give thee Understanding in all things.

8 Remember that Jesus Christ of the Seed of David was raised from the Dead according to my GOSPEL:

9 Wherein I suffer trouble, as an Evil-doer, *even* unto Bonds; but the WORD of GOD is not bound.

10 Therefore I endure All things for the ELECT'S sakes, that *they* may also obtain *the Salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal Glory.

11 *It is* a Faithful SAYING: For if we be dead with *him*, we shall also live with *him*:

12 If we suffer, we shall also reign with *him*: if we deny *him*, *he* also will deny us:

13 If we believe not, *yet he* abideth faithful: †he cannot deny Himself.

14 Of These things put *them* in remembrance, charging *them* before the LORD that they strive not about words to No Profit, *but* to the Subverting of the HEARERS.

15 Study to shew Thyself approved †unto GOD, a Workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the WORD of TRUTH.

16 But shun PROFANE *and* Vain Babblings: for they will increase unto more Ungodliness.

17 And their WORD will eat as

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14. THAT holy Ghost which. 1. THAT GRACE which is in Christ Jesus. 10. THAT Salvation which is.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. with *me* hardness, as a Good Soldier of Christ Jesus. 7. for the LORD shall give thee. 13. for he cannot. 15. unto CHRIST, a Workman. See 5.

doth a Canker: of whom is Hymenæus and Philetus;

18 Who concerning the TRUTH have erred, saying that the RESURRECTION is past already; and overthrow the FAITH of SOME.

19 Nevertheless * the FOUNDATION of GOD standeth SURE, having this SEAL, The Lord knoweth THEM that ARE his. And, Let EVERY-ONE that NAMETH the NAME of † Christ depart from Iniquity.

20 But in a Great House there are not only Vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood and of earth; and some to Honour, and some to Dishonour.

21 If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a Vessel unto Honour, sanctified, [and] meet for the MASTER'S use, and prepared unto Every good Work.

22 Flee also YOUTHFUL Lusts: but follow Righteousness, Faith, Charity, Peace, † with THEM that CALL on the LORD out of a Pure Heart.

23 But FOOLISH and Unlearned Questions avoid, knowing That they do gender Strifes.

34 And the Servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all *men*, apt to teach, patient,

25 In Meekness instructing THOSE that OPPOSE themselves; if GOD peradventure † will give them Repentance to the Acknowledging of the Truth;

26 And *that* they may recover

themselves out of the SNARE of the DEVIL, * who are taken captive by him at HIS Will.

CHAPTER III.

1 This † know also, That in the Last Days perilous Times shall come.

2 For MEN shall be Lovers-of-their-own-selves, Covetous, Boasters, Proud, Blasphemers, Disobedient to Parents, Unthankful, Unholy,

3 Without - natural - affection, Trucebreakers, False-accusers, Incontinent, Fierce, Despisers-of-those-that-are-good,

4 Traitors, Heady, Highminded, Lovers-of-pleasures more than Lovers-of-God;

5 Having a Form of Godliness, but denying the POWER thereof: from Such turn away.

6 For of this sort are THEY which CREEP into HOUSES, and lead captive SILLY-WOMEN laden with Sins, led away with divers † Lusts,

7 Ever learning, and never able to come to the Knowledge of the Truth.

8 Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the TRUTH: Men of corrupt MINDS, reprobate concerning the FAITH.

9 But they shall proceed no further: for their † FOLLY shall be manifest unto all *men*, as THEIR'S also was.

10 But *thou* hast fully known

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—19. the SURE Foundation of God standeth, having. 26. being taken captive.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—19. the Lord depart from Iniquity. 22. with All THEM that LOVE the LORD out of a Pure Heart. 25. might give them Repentance to come to the Acknowledging. 1. know ye also. 6. Lusts and Pleasures, ever-learning. 9. UNDERSTANDING shall be manifest. See 21.

My DOCTRINE, MANNER-OF-LIFE, PURPOSE, FAITH, LONGSUFFERING, [CHARITY], PATIENCE,

11 PERSECUTIONS, AFFLICTIONS, which came unto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; What Persecutions I endured: but out of *them* all the LORD delivered Me.

12 Yea, and ALL that WILL live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

13 But Evil Men and Seducers shall wax WORSE-AND-WORSE, deceiving, and being deceived.

14 But continue **thou** in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of † whom thou hast learned *them*;

15 And That from a Child thou hast known *the HOLY Scriptures, which are ABLE to make Thee wise unto Salvation through * Faith which is in Christ Jesus.

16 All Scripture *is* given by inspiration of God, and *is* profitable for Doctrine, for Reproof, for Correction, for * Instruction in Righteousness:

17 That the MAN of GOD may be perfect, throughly furnished unto All good Works.

CHAPTER IV.

1 † I charge *thee* therefore before GOD, and * the LORD Jesus Christ, who SHALL judge the Quick and the Dead at his APPEARING and his KINGDOM;

2 Preach the WORD; be instant in season, out of season; reprove,

rebuke, exhort with All Long-suffering and Doctrine.

3 For the Time will come when they will not endure SOUND Doctrine; but after † their OWN LUSTS shall they heap to Themselves Teachers, having itching EARS;

4 And they shall turn away *their* EARS from the TRUTH, and shall be turned unto FABLES.

5 But watch **thou** in all things, endure † afflictions, do the Work of an Evangelist, make full proof of thy MINISTRY.

6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the TIME † of MY Departure is at hand.

7 I have fought † a GOOD FIGHT, I have finished *my* COURSE, I have kept the FAITH:

8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a CROWN of RIGHTEOUSNESS which the LORD, the RIGHTEOUS Judge, shall give me at That DAY: and not to me only, but unto All THEM also that LOVE his APPEARING.

9 Do thy diligence to come shortly unto me:

10 For Demas hath forsaken Me, having loved *this* PRESENT World, and is departed unto Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto † Dalmatia.

11 Only Luke is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with thee: for he is profitable to Me for the Ministry.

12 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.

13 The CLOKE that I left at

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—15. THOSE HOLY Scriptures which. 16. THAT Faith which is. 16. THAT Instruction which is in Righteousness. 1. THAT LORD Jesus Christ who SHALL.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. what *per. ons.* 1. I charge thee before THAT God and Christ Jesus who SHALL judge. 3. their OWN Lusts. 5. afflictions as a Good Soldier of Christ Jesus, do the Work of. 6. of my DEPARTURE is at hand. 7. a good Fight. 10. Dalmatia. See 10.

Troas with Carpus, when thou comest bring *with thee*, and the BOOKS, *but* especially the PARCHMENTS.

14 Alexander the COPPERSMITH did Me Much Evil: the LORD †reward him according to his WORKS:

15 Of whom be **thou** ware also; for he hath greatly withstood OUR Words.

16 At my FIRST Answer no man †stood with Me, but all *men* forsook Me: *I pray God* that it may not be laid to Their charge.

17 Notwithstanding the LORD †stood with Me, and strengthened me; that by me the PREACHING might be fully known, and *that* All the GENTILES might hear: and I was delivered out of the Mouth of the Lion.

18 [And] the LORD shall deliver

me from Every evil Work, and will preserve *me* unto his HEAVENLY KINGDOM: †to whom *be* GLORY for EVER and EVER. Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the HOUSEHOLD of ONESIPHORUS.

20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus have I left at †Miletum sick.

21 Do thy diligence to come before Winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the BRETHREN.

22 The LORD Jesus [Christ] *be* with thy SPIRIT. GRACE *be* with you. [Amen.]

¶ The second *epistle* unto Timotheus, ordained the first Bishop of the Church of the Ephesians, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. will reward him. 16. came to Me, but all forsook Me. 17. was present, and strengthened me. 18. to him *be*. 20. Melotus. See 18, 22 (twice). *Subscription*: THE SECOND TO TIMOTHY, WRITTEN FROM LAODICEA.

TO TITUS.

CHAPTER I.

1 Paul, a Servant of God, and an Apostle of † Jesus Christ, according to the Faith of God's Elect, and the Acknowledging of * the Truth which is after Godliness;

2 In Hope of eternal Life, which GOD, that CANNOT-LIE, promised before the World began;

3 But hath in due Times manifested his WORD through Preaching, which is committed unto Me according to the Commandment of * God our SAVIOUR;

4 To Titus, *mine* Own Son after the Common Faith: Grace, Mercy, *and* Peace, from God the Father † and the Lord Jesus Christ our SAVIOUR.

5 For This Cause left I thee † in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the THINGS that are WANTING, and ordain Elders in every City, as £ had appointed thee:

6 If any be blameless, the Husband of One Wife, having faithful Children not accused of Riot or unruly.

7 For a BISHOP must be blameless, as the Steward of God; not selfwilled, not soon angry, not

given to wine, no Striker, not given to filthy lucre;

8 But a Lover of hospitality, a Lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate;

9 Holding fast the FAITHFUL Word as he hath been taught, that he may be able † by SOUND DOCTRINE both to exhort and to convince the GAINSAYERS.

10 For there are Many Unruly [and] Vain-talkers and Deceivers, specially THEY of the Circumcision:

11 Whose mouths must be stopped, who subvert Whole Houses, teaching things which they ought not, for Filthy Lucre's Sake.

12 One of themselves, *even* a Prophet of their Own, said, "The Cretians *are* always Liars, Evil Beasts, slow Bellies." †

13 This WITNESS is true. Wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the FAITH;

14 Not giving heed to Jewish Fables, and Commandments of Men, that turn from the TRUTH.

15 Unto the PURE all things *are* pure: but unto THEM that are DEFILED and Unbelieving *is* nothing pure; but even Their MIND and CONSCIENCE is defiled.

☞ The various Readings of this Epistle (which is wanting in the Vatican Manuscript), are taken from Dr. Woide's Collation of the Alexandrian Manuscript.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THAT Truth which is. 3. our SAVIOUR God; To Titus.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: TO TITUS. 1. Christ Jesus, according to. 4. and Christ Jesus our SAVIOUR. 5. behind in Crete. 9. both to comfort THEM that are in Any Affliction, and to convince the GAINSAYERS. See 10.

‡ 12. EPIMENIDES, in a work "Concerning Oracles," which is no longer extant.

16 They profess that they know God; but in WORKS they deny *him*, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto Every good Work reprobate.

CHAPTER II.

1 But speak *thou* the things which become SOUND Doctrine:

2 That the Aged-men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in FAITH, in CHARITY, in PATIENCE.

3 The Aged-women likewise, that *they be* in Behaviour as becometh Holiness, not False-accusers, †not given to much Wine, Teachers of good things;

4 That they may teach the YOUNG-WOMEN to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children,

5 *To be* discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their OWN Husbands, that the WORD of GOD be not blasphemed.

6 YOUNG-MEN likewise exhort to be sober minded.

7 In all things shewing Thyself a Pattern of Good Works: in DOCTRINE *shewing* Uncorruptness, Gravity, [Sincerity],

8 Sound Speech that cannot be condemned; that HE that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.

9 *Exhort* Servants to be obedient unto their Own Masters, *and* to please *them* well in all *things*; not answering again;

10 Not purloining, but shewing

All good Fidelity; that they may adorn †the DOCTRINE *of God our SAVIOUR in all things.

11 *For †the GRACE of GOD that BRINGETH-SALVATION hath appeared to All Men,

12 Teaching us that, denying UNGODLINESS and WORLDLY Lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in *this* PRESENT World;

13 Looking for *that* BLESSED Hope, and *the GLORIOUS Appearing of the GREAT God and our Saviour Jesus Christ;

14 Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from All Iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar People, zealous of Good Works.

15 These things †speak; and exhort, and rebuke with All Authority. Let no man despise Thee.

CHAPTER III.

1 †Put them in mind to be subject to Principalities and Powers, to obey magistrates, †to be ready to Every good Work,

2 To speak evil of No man, to be no brawlers, *but* gentle, shewing All Meekness unto All Men.

3 For *we* ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers Lusts and Pleasures, living in Malice and Envy, hateful, *and* hating one another.

4 But after that the KINDNESS and LOVE of *God our SAVIOUR toward man appeared—

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—10 our SAVIOUR God in all things. 11. For THAT GRACE of GOD which BRINGETH-SALVATION. 13. the Appearing of the GLORY of our GREAT God and SAVIOUR Jesus Christ. 4. our SAVIOUR God toward man appeared.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. and not given. 10. THAT DOCTRINE which is of our SAVIOUR God in all things. 11. the GRACE of GOD, which bringeth salvation, hath. 15. teach; and exhort and. 1. And put them in mind. 1. and to be ready. See 7.

5 Not *by Works of Righteousness which we have done, but according to HIS Mercy—he saved us, by †the Washing of Regeneration, and Renewing of the holy Ghost;

6 Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our SAVIOUR;

7 That being justified by HIS Grace, we should be made Heirs according to the Hope of eternal Life.

8 *This is* a Faithful SAYING, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that THEY which have BELIEVED in †GOD might be careful to maintain Good Works. These things †are *good and profitable unto MEN.

8 But avoid Foolish Questions, and Genealogies, and Contentions, and Strivings about the Law; for they are unprofitable and vain.

10 A Man that is an Heretick

after the First and Second Admonition reject;

11 Knowing That HE that is SUCH is subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself.

12 When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis: for I have determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the LAWYER and Apollos on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them.

14 And let OURS also learn to maintain Good Works for NECESSARY Uses, that they be not unfruitful.

15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet THEM that LOVE us in the Faith. GRACE *be* with you all. [Amen].

¶ It was written to Titus, ordained the first Bishop of the Church of the Cretians, from Nicopolis of Macedonia.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—5. by THOSE Works in Righteousness which we have done. 8. THOSE which are good and profitable.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—5. the WASHING of. 8. God. 8. are good and profitable. See 15. *Subscription*: TO TITUS, WRITTEN FROM NICOPOLIS.

TO PHILEMON.

1 Paul, a Prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy *our* BROTHER, unto Philemon our DEARLY-BELOVED, and Fellowlabourer,—

2 And † to **our* BELOVED Apphia, and Archippus our FELLOW-SOLDIER,—and to the CHURCH in thy House:

3 Grace to you, and Peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my GOD, making Mention of thee always in my PRAYERS,

5 Hearing of Thy LOVE and FAITH, which thou hast † toward the LORD Jesus, and toward All SAINTS;

6 That the COMMUNICATION of thy FAITH may become effectual by the Acknowledging † of EVERY Good thing which is in you in Christ [Jesus].

7 For we have great Joy and Consolation in thy LOVE, Because the BOWELS of the SAINTS are refreshed by thee, Brother.

8 Wherefore, though I might be much bold in Christ to enjoin thee THAT which is CONVENIENT,

9 Yet † for LOVE's sake I rather beseech *thee*, being such an one as Paul the aged, and now also a Prisoner † of Jesus Christ.

10 I beseech thee for † MY Son *Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my BONDS:

11 Which in time past was to Thee UNPROFITABLE, but now profitable to Thee and to Me:

12 Whom I have sent † again: *thou* therefore receive Him, that is, MINE-OWN Bowels:

13 Whom I would have retained with Me, that in thy stead he might have ministered unto me in the BONDS of the GOSPEL:

14 But without THY Mind would I do Nothing; that thy BENEFIT should not be as it were of Necessity, but willingly.

15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a Season, that thou shouldest receive Him for ever;

16 Not now as a Servant, but above a Servant, a Brother beloved, specially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the Flesh, and in the Lord?

17 If thou count Me therefore a Partner, receive him as myself.

☞ The various Readings of this Epistle (which is wanting in the Vatican Manuscript), are taken from Dr. Woide's Collation of the Alexandrian Manuscript.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. Apphia the BELOVED, and Archippus. 10. whom I have begotten in my BONDS, THAT Onesimus who in time past.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: TO PHILEMON. 2. to Apphia, *our* SISTER, and to Archippus *our*. 5. unto the LORD Jesus, and unto All SAINTS. 6. of Every Good thing which is in us through Christ. For I have great joy. 9. for NECESSITY's sake I rather. 9. of Christ Jesus. 10. MY Son, whom I have begotten in BONDS, THAT Onesimus who in time past. 12. again to thee. *Receive Him*, that is. See 6.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth *thee* ought, put **that** on Mine account;

19 ¶ Paul have written *it* with MINE-OWN Hand, ¶ will repay *it*: albeit I do not say to thee How thou owest unto Me even Thine own self besides.

20 Yea, Brother, let me have joy of Thee in the Lord: refresh My BOWELS in †the Lord.

21 Having confidence in thy OBEDIENCE I wrote unto thee, knowing That thou wilt also do more than I say.

22 But withal prepare me also a Lodging: for I trust That through your PRAYERS I shall be given unto you.

23 There †salute thee Epaphras, my FELLOWPRISONER in Christ Jesus;

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my FELLOWLABOURERS.

25 The GRACE of our LORD Jesus Christ *be* with your SPIRIT. [Amen].

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus a Servant.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—20. Christ. Having confidence. 23. saluteth thee. See 25.

The Subscription to this Epistle in the Alexandrian Manuscript has been cut off.

TO THE HEBREWS.

CHAPTER I.

(§ LIX.) ||

1 GOD, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in times past unto the FATHERS by the PROPHETS,

2 Hath in † these Last DAYS spoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he hath appointed Heir of all things, by whom also he made the WORLDS;

3 Who being the Brightness of *his* GLORY, and the Express-image of his PERSON, and † upholding ALL things by the WORD of his POWER, when he had [by himself] purged our SINS, sat down on the Right-hand of the MAJESTY on high;

4 Being made so much better than the † ANGELS, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more Excellent Name than they.

5 For unto which of the ANGELS said he at any time, “**T**hou art my Son, This-day have **I** begotten thee?” † And again, “**I** will be to him a Father, and **he** shall be to me a Son?” †

6 And again, when he bringeth

in the FIRSTBEGOTTEN into the WORLD, he saith, “And let All the Angels of God worship him.” †

7 And of the ANGELS he saith, * “Who MAKETH his ANGELS Spirits, and his MINISTERS a Flame of Fire.” †

8 But unto the SON *he saith*, “Thy THRONE, O GOD, *is* for EVER [and EVER]: † a Sceptre of Righteousness *is* the SCEPTRE of thy KINGDOM.

9 “Thou hast loved Righteousness, and hated Iniquity; therefore GOD, *even* thy GOD, hath anointed thee with the Oil of Gladness above thy FELLOWS.” †

10 And, “**T**hou, Lord, in the Beginning hast laid the foundation of the EARTH; and the HEAVENS are the Works of thine HANDS:

11 “**T**hey shall perish; but **thou** remainest; and they all shall wax old as doth a Garment;

12 “And as a Vesture shalt thou fold † them up, and they shall be changed: but **thou** art the SAME, and thy YEARS shall not fail.” †

13 But to which of the ANGELS said he at any time, Sit on my Right *hand*, until I make thine ENEMIES thy FOOTSTOOL?” †

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—7. *It is* HE who MAKETH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: TO THE HEBREWS. 2. the last of these DAYS. 3. making-manifest ALL things by. 4. Angels. 8. and a SCEPTRE of RIGHTEOUSNESS is the Sceptre of (*b*). 8. his kingdom (*a*). 12. *them* up, as a Garment also they shall be changed. See 3, 8.

‡ 5. Psa. ii. 7. ‡ 5. 2 Sam. vii. 14. ‡ 6. Psa. xcvii. 7. ‡ 7. civ. 4. ‡ 9. Psa. xlv. 6, 7. ‡ 12. Psa. cii. 25—27. ‡ 13. Psa. cx. 1.

|| *This Section is numbered 60 by Hug, but Bentley affixes no number here. It is properly numbered 59, as this Book followed Galutians in the Vatican Manuscript.*

14 Are they not all Ministering Spirits, sent forth to minister for THEM who SHALL-BE heirs of Salvation?

CHAPTER II.

1 Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the THINGS which we have HEARD, lest at any time we should let *them* slip.

2 For if the WORD spoken by Angels was steadfast, and Every Transgression and Disobedience received a Just Recompence-of-reward;

3 How shall we escape, if we neglect So-great Salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the LORD, and was confirmed unto Us by THEM that HEARD *him*;

4 GOD also bearing † *them* witness, both with Signs and Wonders, and with Divers Miracles, and Gifts of the holy Ghost, according to his OWN Will?

5 For unto the Angels hath he not put into subjection the WORLD to COME, whereof we speak.

6 But one in a certain place testified, saying, "What is Man, That thou art mindful of him? or the Son of Man, That thou visitest him?"

7 "Thou hast made him a little lower than the Angels; thou crownedst him with Glory and Honour, [and didst set him over the WORKS of thy HANDS]:

8 "Thou hast put All things in subjection under his FEET." † For in that he PUT ALL IN SUBJECTION [under him], he left No-

thing *that is* not put under Him. But now we see not yet ALL things put under Him.

9 But we see JESUS, who was MADE-A-LITTLE-LOWER than the Angels for the SUFFERING of DEATH, crowned with Glory and Honour; that he by the Grace of God should taste Death for every man.

10 For it became him, for whom *are* ALL things, and by whom *are* ALL things, in bringing Many Sons unto Glory, to make the CAPTAIN of their SALVATION perfect through Sufferings.

11 For both HE that SANCTIFIETH and THEY who are SANCTIFIED *are* all of one: for Which Cause he is not ashamed to call Them Brethren,

12 Saying, "I will declare thy NAME unto my BRETHERN, in the Midst of the Church will I sing praise unto thee." †

13 And again, "I will put my trust in him." † And again, "Behold I and the CHILDREN which GOD hath given Me." †

14 Forasmuch then as the CHILDREN are partakers of † Flesh and Blood, he also himself likewise took part of the SAME; that through DEATH he might destroy HIM that HAD the POWER of DEATH, ~~that~~ is, the DEVIL;

15 And deliver *them* who through Fear of Death were All their LIFETIME subject to Bondage.

16 For verily he took not on *him* the nature of Angels; but he took on *him* the Seed of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. witness with *them*, both by Signs and Wonders and. 14. Blood and Flesh, he also. See 7, 8.

‡ 8. Psa. viii. 4.

‡ 12. Psa. xxii. 22.

‡ 13. Psa. xviii. 2.

‡ 13. Isa. viii. 18.

behoved him to be made like unto *his* BRETHREN, that he might be a Merciful and Faithful High-priest in THINGS *pertaining* to GOD, to MAKE-RECONCILIATION for the SINS of the PEOPLE.

18 For in that he himself hath suffered being tempted, he is able to succour THEM that are TEMP-TED.

CHAPTER III.

§ LX. ||

1 Wherefore, holy BRETHREN, Partakers of the Heavenly Calling, consider the APOSTLE and High-priest of our PROFESSION, Christ [Jesus];

2 Who was faithful to HIM that APPOINTED him, as also Moses *was faithful* in [All] his HOUSE.

3 For this *man* was counted worthy of More Glory than Moses, inasmuch as HE who hath BUILDED the house hath More Honour than the HOUSE.

4 For Every House is builded by some *man*; but HE that BUILT ALL things is God.

5 And Moses verily *was faithful* in All his HOUSE, as a Servant, for a Testimony of *those* THINGS which were to be SPOKEN-AFTER;

6 But Christ as a Son over his own HOUSE; Whose House are *we*, if we hold fast the CONFIDENCE and the REJOICING of the HOPE [firm unto the End].

7 Wherefore, as the HOLY GHOST saith, "To-day if ye will hear his VOICE—

8 "Harden not your HEARTS,

as in the PROVOCATION, in the DAY of TEMPTATION in the WILDERNESS:

9 "When your FATHERS tempted † me, proved me, and saw my WORKS Forty Years.

10 "Wherefore I was grieved with † that GENERATION, and said, They do alway err in *their* HEART; and ~~they~~ have not known my WAYS."

11 * So "I swear in my WRATH They shall not enter into my REST." ‡

12 Take heed, Brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil Heart of Unbelief, in DEPARTING from the living God.

13 But exhort one another daily, while it is called TO-DAY; lest any of you be hardened through the Deceitfulness of SIN.

14 For we are made Partakers of CHRIST, if we hold the BEGINNING of *our* CONFIDENCE stedfast unto the End.

15 While it is SAID, "To-day if ye will hear his VOICE—harden not your HEARTS, as in the PROVOCATION."

16 For some, when they had heard, did provoke: howbeit not ALL that CAME out of Egypt by Moses.

17 But with whom was he grieved Forty Years? *was it* not with THEM that had SINNED, Whose CARCASSES fell in the WILDERNESS?

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his REST, but to THEM that BELIEVED NOT?

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—11. As "I swear in my WRATH They shall not enter into my REST," ‡ Take heed.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—9. *me*, by Proof, and saw. 10. this GENERATION. See 1, 2, 6.

‡ 11. Psa. xciv. 7—11.

|| *This Section is numbered 60 in the Vatican Manuscript, as having originally followed Galatians.*

19 So we see That they could not enter in because of Unbelief.

CHAPTER IV.

1 Let us therefore fear, lest, a Promise being left *us* of entering into his REST, any of you should seem to come short of it.

2 For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto *them*: but the WORD PREACHED did not profit *them*, not being mixed with FAITH in THEM that HEARD *it*.

3 For WE which have BELIEVED do enter into REST, as he said, "As I have sworn in my WRATH, if they shall enter into my REST:" although the WORKS were finished from the Foundation of the World.

4 For he spake in a certain place of the SEVENTH *day* on this wise, "And GOD did rest the SEVENTH DAY from All his WORKS." †

5 And in this *place* again, "If they shall enter into my REST."

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and THEY to whom it was first PREACHED entered not in because of Unbelief,

7 Again he limiteth a Certain Day, saying in David, "To-day," after So-long a Time; as † it is said, "To-day if ye will hear his VOICE, harden not your HEARTS."

8 For if * Jesus had given Them rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of Another Day.

9 There remaineth therefore a Rest to the PEOPLE of GOD.

10 For HE that is ENTERED into

his REST, *he* also hath ceased from his own WORKS, as GOD *did* from HIS.

11 Let us labour therefore to enter into That REST, lest any man fall after the SAME Example of UNBELIEF.

12 For the WORD of GOD *is* quick, and powerful, and sharper than Any twoedged Sword, piercing even to the Dividing-asunder of Soul and Spirit, and of the Joints and Marrow, and *is* a Discerner of the Thoughts and Intentions of the Heart.

13 Neither is there any Creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things *are* naked and opened unto the EYES of him with whom we have to do.

§ LXI.

18 Seeing then that we have a great High-priest, that is passed into the HEAVENS, Jesus the SON of GOD, let us hold fast *our* PROFESSION.

15 For we have not an High priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our INFIRMITIES; but * was in all points tempted, like as *we are*, yet without Sin.

16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the THRONE of GRACE, that we may obtain Mercy, and [find] Grace to help in time of need.

CHAPTER V.

1 For Every High-priest taken from among Men, is ordained for Men in THINGS *pertaining* to GOD, that he may offer both Gifts and Sacrifices for Sins:

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. Joshua had given. 15. one who has been in all points.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—7. he had said before, "To-day.

‡ 4. Gen. ii. 2.

2 Who can have compassion on the IGNORANT, and on them that are out of the way; for that he himself also is compassed with Infirmity.

3 And by reason hereof he ought, as for the PEOPLE, so also for himself, to offer † for Sins.

4 And no man taketh *this* HONOUR unto Himself, but HE that is CALLED of GOD, as *was* AARON.

5 So also CHRIST glorified not himself to be made an High-priest; but HE that SAID unto him, “**T**hou art my Son, To-day have I begotten thee.” ‡

6 As he saith also in another *place*, “**T**hou art a Priest for EVER, after the ORDER of Melchisedec.” ‡

7 Who,—in the DAYS of his FLESH, when he had offered up Prayers and Supplications with strong Crying and Tears unto HIM that was ABLE to save him from Death, and was heard in that he FEARED,—

8 Though he were a Son, yet learned he OBEDIENCE by the things which he suffered;

9 And being made perfect, he became the Author of eternal Salvation unto All THEM that OBEY him;

10 Called of GOD an High-priest after the ORDER of Melchisedec.

11 Of whom we have Many THINGS to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of HEARING.

12 For when for the TIME ye

ought to be Teachers, ye have Need * that one TEACH you again which *be* the FIRST PRINCIPLES of the ORACLES of GOD; and are become such as have Need of Milk, [and] not of Strong Meat.

13 For EVERY-ONE that USETH Milk *is* unskilful in the Word of Righteousness: for he is a Babe.

14 But STRONG Meat belongeth to them that are of full age, *even* THOSE who by reason of USE HAVE their SENSES exercised to discern both Good and Evil.

CHAPTER VI.

1 Therefore leaving the PRINCIPLES of the DOCTRINE of CHRIST, let us go on unto PERFECTION; not laying again the Foundation of Repentance from Dead Works, and of Faith toward God,

2 [Of] the Doctrine of Baptisms, and of Laying-on of Hands, and of Resurrection of the Dead, and of eternal Judgment.

3 And This will we do, if GOD permit.

4 For *it is* impossible * for THOSE who were once ENLIGHTENED, and have tasted of the HEAVENLY GIFT, and were made Partakers of the holy Ghost,

5 And have tasted the Good Word of God, and the Powers of the World to Come,

6 If they shall fall away, to renew *them* again unto Repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the SON of GOD afresh, and put *him* to an open shame.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—12. again that one TEACH you which. 4. as to THEM who were.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. Concerning Sins. See 12 (b), 2.

‡ 5. Psa. ii. 7. ‡ 6. Psa. cx. 4.

7 For *the Earth which DRINK-ETH-IN the RAIN that COMETH oft upon it, and bringeth forth Herbs meet for *them* by whom it is dressed, receiveth Blessing from GOD:

8 But that which beareth Thorns and Briers *is* rejected, and *is* nigh unto Cursing; Whose END *is* to be burned.

§ LXII.

9 But, Beloved, we are persuaded BETTER things of you, and things that accompany Salvation, though we thus speak.

10 For GOD *is* not unrighteous to forget your WORK and [LABOUR of] LOVE, which ye have shewed toward his NAME, in that ye have ministered to the SAINTS, and do minister.

11 And we desire that every one of you do shew the SAME Diligence to the FULL-ASSURANCE of HOPE unto the End:

12 That ye be not slothful, but Followers of THEM who through Faith and Patience INHERIT the PROMISES.

13 For when GOD made promise to ABRAHAM, because he could swear by no greater, he sware by himself,

14 Saying, "Surely blessing I will bless thee, and multiplying I will multiply thee." †

15 And so, after he had patiently endured, he obtained the PROMISE.

16 For Men [verily] swear by the GREATER; and an OATH for Confirmation *is* to them an End of All Strife.

17 Wherein GOD, willing more abundantly to shew unto the HEIRS

of PROMISE the IMMUTABILITY of his COUNSEL, confirmed *it* by an Oath:

18 That by Two immutable Things, in which *it was* impossible for God to lie, WE might have a Strong Consolation, who have FLED-FOR-REFUGE to lay hold upon the HOPE SET-BEFORE us:

19 Which *hope* we have as an Anchor of the SOUL, both sure and stedfast, and which entereth into THAT WITHIN the VEIL;

20 Whither the Forerunner is for us entered, *even* Jesus, made an High-priest for EVER after the ORDER of Melchisedec.

CHAPTER VII.

1 For This MELCHISEDEC, King of Salem, Priest of the MOST-HIGH GOD, *who MET Abraham returning from the SLAUGHTER of the KINGS, and blessed him;

2 To whom also Abraham gave a Tenth-part of all; first being by interpretation King of Righteousness, and after that also King of Salem, which is, King of Peace;

3 Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither Beginning of Days, nor End of Life; but made like unto the SON GOD; abideth a Priest CONTINUALLY.

4 Now consider how great this man *was*, unto whom even *the PATRIARCH Abraham gave the Tenth of the SPOILS.

5 And verily THEY that are of the SONS of Levi, who RECEIVE the OFFICE-OF-THE-PRIESTHOOD, have a Commandment to take

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—7. THAT Earth which. PATRIARCH gave.

1. HE who MET.

4. Abraham the

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—See 10, 16.

‡ 14. Gen. xxii. 17.

tithes of the PEOPLE according to the LAW, **that** is, of their BRETHREN, though they come out of the LOINS of Abraham:

6 But HE whose DESCENT-IS-NOT-COUNTED from them received tithes of † ABRAHAM, and blessed HIM that HAD the PROMISES.

7 And without All Contradiction the LESS is blessed of the BETTER.

8 And here Men that die receive Tithes; but there he *receiveth them*, of whom it is witnessed, That he liveth.

9 And as I may so say, * Levi also, who RECEIVETH Tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the LOINS of his FATHER, when MELCHISEDEC met him.

11 If therefore Perfection were by the LEVITICAL Priesthood,—for under it the PEOPLE received the law,—What further Need *was there* that Another Priest should rise after the ORDER of Melchisedec, and not be called after the ORDER of Aaron?

12 For *the PRIESTHOOD being changed, there is made of Necessity a Change [also of the Law].

13 For he of whom these things are spoken pertaineth to another Tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the ALTAR.

14 For *it is* evident That our LORD sprang out of Juda; of Which Tribe Moses spake Nothing concerning Priesthood.

15 And it is yet far more evi-

dent: for that after the † SIMILITUDE of Melchisedec there ariseth another Priest,

16 Who is made, not after the Law of a carnal Commandment, but after the Power of an endless Life.

17 For † he testifieth, “**Thou art** a Priest for EVER after the ORDER of Melchisedec.” †

18 For there is verily a Disannulling of the Commandment Going-before for the WEAKNESS and Unprofitableness thereof.

§ LXIII.

19 For the LAW made Nothing perfect, but the Bringing-in of a Better Hope *did*; by the which we draw nigh unto GOD.

20 And inasmuch as not without an Oath *he was made priest*:

21 For **those* PRIESTS were made without an Oath; but THIS with an Oath by HIM that SAID unto him, The Lord sware and will not repent, “**Thou art** a Priest for EVER [after the ORDER of Melchisedec]:”

22 By so much was Jesus made a Surety of a Better * Testament.

23 And THEY truly were Many * Priests, because they were not SUFFERED to continue by reason of Death:

24 But THIS *man*, because he CONTINUETH EVER, hath * an Unchangeable PRIESTHOOD.

25 Wherefore he is able also to save THEM to the UTMOST that COME unto GOD by him, seeing he ever liveth to MAKE-INTERCESSION for them.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—9. THAT Levi also who. 12. when the PRIESTHOOD is changed, there is made. 21. THEY without an Oath were made Priests; but he with an Oath. 22. Covenant. And. 23. who were made Priests, because. 24. the PRIESTHOOD Unchangeable.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—6. Abraham. 15. Similitude. 17. it is testified, “**Thou art.** See 12, 21,

‡ 17. Psa. cx 4.

26 For Such an High-priest † became Us, *who is* holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from SINNERS, and made higher than the HEAVENS;

27 Who needeth not daily, as *those* HIGH-PRIESTS, to offer up Sacrifice, first for his OWN Sins, and then for *the PEOPLE'S: for This he did once, when he offered up Himself.

28 For the LAW maketh Men High-priests which have Infirmary; but the WORD of *the OATH, which was since the LAW, *maketh* the Son, who is consecrated for EVERMORE.

CHAPTER VIII.

1 Now of the THINGS which we have SPOKEN *this is* the Sum: We have Such an High-priest, who is set on the Right-hand of the THRONE of the MAJESTY in the HEAVENS;

2 A Minister of the SANCTUARY, and of the TRUE TABERNACLE, which the LORD pitched, [and] not Man.

3 For Every High-priest is ordained to OFFER Gifts and Sacrifices: wherefore *it is* of necessity that this *man* have somewhat also to offer.

4 † For if he were on Earth, he should not be a Priest, seeing that there † are *PRIESTS that OFFER GIFTS according to the LAW:

5 Who serve unto the Example

and Shadow of HEAVENLY things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the TABERNACLE: for, "See, saith he, *that* thou make all things according to *the PATTERN SHEWED to thee in the MOUNT." †

6 But now hath he obtained a More-excellent Ministry, by how much also he is the Mediator of a Better Covenant, which was established upon Better Promises.

7 For if that FIRST *covenant* had been faultless, then should no Place have been sought for the Second.

8 For finding fault with them, he saith, "Behold, the Days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new Covenant with the HOUSE of Israel and with the HOUSE of Judah:

9 "Not according to the COVENANT that I made with their FATHERS in the Day when I took them by the HAND to lead them out of the Land of Egypt; Because *they* continued not in my COVENANT, and † regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 "For this *is* the COVENANT that I will make with the HOUSE of *Israel after those DAYS, saith the Lord; I will put my Laws into their MIND, and write them in their † Hearts: and I will be to them a God, and *they* shall be to me a People:

11 "And they shall not teach every man his † NEIGHBOUR, and

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—27. THOSE of the PEOPLE: for This he did once for all, when. 28. THAT OATH which was since the LAW. 4. THOSE PRIESTS who OFFER GIFTS.

5. THAT PATTERN which was SHEWED. 10. Israel: After those DAYS, saith the Lord, I will put.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—26. also became Us. 4. If then he were (*a*). 4. are THOSE who OFFER GIFTS. 10. Heart. 11. FELLOWCITIZEN, and every. See 2.

‡ 5. Exod. xxv. 40.

every man his BROTHER, saying, Know the LORD: For all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

12 "For I will be merciful to their UNRIGHTEOUSNESS, and their SINS [and their Iniquities] will I remember no more." †

13 In that he SAITH, A new covenant, he hath made the FIRST old. Now THAT which DECAYETH and waxeth old *is* ready to vanish away.

CHAPTER IX.

1 Then verily the FIRST covenant had [also] Ordinances of Divine-service, and a worldly SANCTUARY.

2 For there was a Tabernacle made; the FIRST, wherein *was* the CANDLESTICK, and the TABLE, and the † SHEWBREAD; which is called the Sanctuary.

3 And after the SECOND Veil, *the Tabernacle which is CALLED the † Holiest of All;

4 Which had [the Golden Censer, and] the ARK of the COVENANT overlaid round about with Gold, wherein *was* the golden Pot that had MANNA, and Aaron's ROD that BUDDED, and the TABLES of the COVENANT;

5 And over it the Cherubims of Glory shadowing the MERCY-SEAT; of which we cannot now speak particularly.

6 NOW when these things were thus ordained, the PRIESTS went

always into the FIRST Tabernacle, accomplishing the SERVICE of God.

7 But into the SECOND *went* the HIGH-PRIEST alone once EVERY-YEAR, not without Blood, which he offered for himself, and *for* the ERRORS of the PEOPLE:

8 The HOLY GHOST This signifying, that the WAY into the HOLIEST-OF-ALL was not yet made manifest, while as the FIRST Tabernacle was yet standing:

9 Which *was* a Figure for *the TIME then PRESENT, in which were offered both Gifts and Sacrifices, that could not make HIM that DID-THE-SERVICE perfect, as pertaining to the Conscience;

10 Which stood only in Meats and Drinks, and Divers Washings, and carnal Ordinances, imposed on them until the Time of Reformation.

§ LXIV.

11 But Christ being come an High-priest of GOOD things to COME, by a GREATER and More-perfect Tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of This BUILDING;

12 Neither by the Blood of Goats and Calves, but by his OWN Blood he entered in *once into the HOLY place, having obtained Eternal Redemption *for us*.

13 For if the BLOOD of † Bulls and of Goats, and the Ashes of an Heifer sprinkling the UNCLEAN, sanctifieth to the PURIFYING of the FLESH:

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. THAT Tabernacle which is CALLED. 9. THAT TIME which was then PRESENT. 12. once for all into.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—2. SHEWBREAD, and the GOLDEN Altar-of-incense; which is called the SANCTUARY. 3. HOLIEST OF ALL. 13. Goats and of Bulls. See 12, 1 (a), 4.

‡ 12. Jer. xxxi. 31—34.

14 How much more shall the BLOOD of CHRIST, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to GOD, † purge † your CONSCIENCE from Dead Works to SERVE the † living God?

15 And for this *cause* he is the Mediator of the new Testament, that by means of Death, for the Redemption of the TRANSGRESSIONS *that were* under the FIRST Testament, THEY which are CALLED might receive the PROMISE of ETERNAL Inheritance.

16 For where a Testament *is*, there must also of Necessity be the Death of the TESTATOR.

17 For a Testament *is* of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all while the TESTATOR liveth.

18 Whereupon neither the FIRST *testament* was dedicated without Blood.

19 For when Moses had spoken Every Precept to All the PEOPLE according to the † Law, he took the BLOOD of CALVES and of † Goats, with Water, and scarlet Wool, and Hyssop, and sprinkled both the BOOK, and All the PEOPLE,

20 Saying, "This *is* the BLOOD of the TESTAMENT which GOD hath enjoined unto you." ‡

21 Moreover he sprinkled with BLOOD both the TABERNACLE, and All the VESSELS of the MINISTRY.

22 And almost all things are by

the LAW purged with Blood; and without Shedding-of-blood is no Remission.

23 *It was* therefore necessary that the PATTERNS of THINGS in the HEAVENS should be purified with These; but the HEAVENLY things themselves with Better Sacrifices than these.

24 For † CHRIST is not entered into the Holy places made with hands, *which are* the Figures of the TRUE; but into HEAVEN itself, now to appear in the PRESENCE of GOD for us:

25 Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the HIGH-PRIEST entereth into the HOLY place every Year with Blood of Others;

26 For then must he often have suffered since the Foundation of World: but now once in the End of the WORLD hath he appeared to put away † Sin by the SACRIFICE of himself.

27 And as it is appointed unto MEN once to die, but after this the Judgment:

28 So † CHRIST was once offered to BEAR the Sins of Many; and unto THEM that LOOK for Him shall he appear the Second time without Sin unto † Salvation.

CHAPTER X.

1 For the LAW having a Shadow of GOOD things to COME, *and* not the Very IMAGE of the THINGS, can never with THOSE Sacrifices which they offered Year-by-year

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. purge. [*From this word to the end of the Epistle to the Hebrews the Vatican Manuscript is defective. The various Readings from this point to the end of the Epistle are taken from Dr. Woide's Collation of the Alexandrian Manuscript.*]

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. OUR CONSCIENCE. 14. living and true God? 19. LAW. 19. GOATS. 24. Christ. 26. SIN. 28. also CURIST. 28. Salvation by Faith. For.

‡ 20. Exod. xxiv. 8.

CONTINUALLY make the COMERS-THEREUNTO perfect.

2 For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the WORSHIPPERS once purged should have HAD no more Conscience of Sins.

3 But in *those sacrifices there is* a Remembrance again *made* of Sins Every-year.

4 For *it is* not possible that the Blood of Bulls and of Goats should take away Sins.

5 Wherefore when he cometh into the WORLD, he saith, "Sacrifice and Offering thou wouldest not, but a Body hast thou prepared me.

6 "In Burnt-offerings and *sacrifices* for Sin thou hast had no pleasure.

7 "Then said I, Lo, I come, in the Volume of the Book it is written of me, to DO thy WILL O GOD." †

8 Above when he said, † "Sacrifice and Offering and Burnt-offerings and *offering* for Sin thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure *therein*; which are offered by the † LAW;

9 "Then said he, Lo, I come to DO thy WILL, [O GOD]." He taketh away the FIRST, that he may establish the SECOND.

10 By the Which Will WE are sanctified through the OFFERING of the BODY of † JESUS Christ *once for all.

11 And Every † Priest standeth daily ministering and offering

oftentimes the SAME Sacrifices, which can never take away Sins:

12 But this *man*, after he had offered One Sacrifice for Sins FOREVER, sat down on the Right-hand of GOD;

13 From HENCEFORTH expecting till his ENEMIES be made his FOOTSTOOL.

14 For by One Offering he hath perfected FOREVER THEM that are SANCTIFIED.

15 *Whereof* the HOLY GHOST also is a witness to us: for after that he had † SAID-BEFORE,

16 "This is the COVENANT that I will make with *them after those DAYS, saith the Lord, I will put my Laws into their Hearts, and in their † MINDS will I write them;

17 "And their SINS and *INIQUITIES will I remember no more." †

18 Now where Remission of these *is, there is* no more Offering for Sin.

19 Having therefore, Brethren, Boldness to ENTER into the HOLIEST by the BLOOD of Jesus,

20 By a new and living Way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the VEIL, *that* is to say, his FLESH;

21 And *having* an high Priest over the HOUSE of GOD;

22 Let us draw near with a True Heart in Full-assurance of Faith, having our HEARTS sprinkled from an evil Conscience, and our BODIES washed with pure Water.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—10. once for all. INIQUITIES.

16. them: After those DAYS.

17. their

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. Sacrifices and Offerings and. 9. Law. 10. Jesus Christ. 11. High-priest standeth. 15. SAID, This is. 16. MIND. See 9.

‡ 7. Psa. xl. 6—8.

‡ 17. Jer. xxxi. 33, 34.

23 Let us hold fast the PRO-FESSION of *our* FAITH without wavering; for HE is faithful that PROMISED;

24 And let us consider one another to provoke unto Love and to Good Works:

25 Not forsaking the ASSEMBLING of ourselves together, as the Manner of some *is*; but exhorting *one another*: and so much the more, as ye see the DAY approaching.

26 For if we sin wilfully after that we have RECEIVED the KNOWLEDGE of the TRUTH, there remaineth no more Sacrifice for Sins,

27 But a certain Fearful Looking-for of Judgment and Fiery Indignation, which shall devour the ADVERSARIES.

28 He that despised Moses' Law, died without Mercy under Two or Three Witnesses:

29 Of how much Sorer Punishment, suppose ye, shall HE be thought worthy, who hath TRODDEN-UNDER-FOOT the SON of GOD, and hath counted the BLOOD of the COVENANT, [wherewith he was sanctified], an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the SPIRIT of GRACE?

30 For we know HIM that hath SAID, "Vengeance *belongeth* unto Me, **Ē** will recompense," † saith the Lord. And again, "The Lord shall judge his PEOPLE." †

31 *It is* a fearful thing to FALL into the Hands of the living God.

32 But call to remembrance the FORMER Days, in which, after ye

were illuminated, ye endured a Great Fight of Afflictions;

33 Partly, whilst ye were made a gazingstock both by Reproaches and Afflictions; and partly, whilst ye became Companions of THEM that were so USED.

34 For ye had compassion of me in my BONDS, and took joyfully the SPOILING of your GOODS, knowing † in yourselves that ye have [in Heaven] a Better and an Enduring Substance.

35 Cast not away therefore your CONFIDENCE, which hath Great Recompence-of-reward.

36 For ye have Need of Patience, that, after ye have done the WILL of GOD, ye might receive the PROMISE.

37 For yet a little while, and HE that shall COME will come, and will not tarry.

38 Now † "the JUST shall live by Faith:" † but if *any man* draw back, my SOUL shall have no pleasure in him.

39 But **we** are not of them who draw back unto Perdition; but of them that believe to the Saving of the Soul.

CHAPTER XI.

1 Now Faith is the Substance of things hoped for, the Evidence of Things not seen.

2 For by it the ELDERS obtained a good report.

3 Through Faith we understand that the WORLDS were framed by the Word of God, so that † THINGS which are SEEN were not MADE of THINGS which do APPEAR.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—34. that yourselves have a Better and. 38. my "JUST one shall live by Faith." 3. THAT which is SEEN was not MADE. See 29, 34.

‡ 30. Deut. xxxii. 35.

‡ 30. Deut. xxxii. 36.

‡ 38. Hab. ii. 4.

4 By Faith Abel offered unto GOD a More-excellent Sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, GOD testifying of his GIFTS: and *by it he being dead yet speaketh.

5 By Faith Enoch was translated that he should not SEE Death; and was not found, because GOD had translated him: for before [his] TRANSLATION he had this testimony, that he pleased GOD.

6 But without Faith *it is* impossible to please *him*: for HE that COMETH to GOD must believe That he is, and *that* he is a Rewarder of THEM that DILIGENTLY-SEEK him.

7 By Faith Noah, being warned of God of THINGS not SEEN as yet, moved with fear, prepared an Ark to the Saving of his HOUSE; by the which he condemned the WORLD, and became Heir of the RIGHTEOUSNESS which is by Faith.

8 By Faith Abraham, †when he was called to go out into a PLACE which he should after receive for an Inheritance, obeyed: and he went out, not knowing whither he went.

9 By Faith he sojourned in the †LAND of PROMISE, as *in* a Strange-country, dwelling in Tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the HEIRS with him of the SAME PROMISE:

10 For he looked for a CITY which HATH FOUNDATIONS, Whose Builder and Maker *is* GOD.

11 Through Faith also Sara herself received Strength to conceive Seed, †and [was delivered of a child] when she was past Age, because she judged HIM faithful who had PROMISED.

12 Therefore †sprang there even of one, and *him* as good as dead, *so many* as the STARS of the SKY in MULTITUDE, and †as *the Sand which is by the SEA SHORE INNUMERABLE.

13 These all died in Faith, not having received the PROMISES, but having seen them afar off, [and were persuaded of *them*], and embraced *them*, and confessed That they were Strangers and Pilgrims on the EARTH.

14 For THEY that SAY Such things declare plainly That they seek a Country.

15 And truly, if they had been mindful of that *country* from whence they came out, they might have had Opportunity to have returned.

16 But now they desire a better *country*, *that* is, an heavenly: wherefore GOD is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a City.

17 By Faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up ISAAC: and HE that had RECEIVED the PROMISES offered up his ONLY-BEGOTTEN son,

18 Of whom it was said, That “in Isaac shall Thy Seed be called:” †

19 Accounting That GOD *was*

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—4. by the same he being. 12. THAT Sand which is.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—8. HE that was CALLED to go out into a Place which. 9. Land of PROMISE. 11. even when she was past Age. 12. was there made even of one. 12. as THAT SAND which is. See 5, 11, 13.

‡ 18. Gen. xxi. 12.

able to raise *him* up, even from the Dead; from whence also he received Him in a Figure.

20 †By Faith Isaac blessed JACOB and ESAU concerning things to come.

21 By Faith Jacob, when he was a dying, blessed both the SONS of Joseph; and worshipped, *leaning* upon the TOP of his STAFF.

22 By Faith Joseph, when he died, made mention of the DEPARTING of the CHILDREN of Israel; and gave commandment concerning his BONES.

23 By Faith Moses, when he was born, was hid three Months of his PARENTS, because they saw *he was* a Proper CHILD; and they were not afraid of the KING'S COMMANDMENT.

24 By Faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the Son of Pharaoh's Daughter;

25 Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the PEOPLE of GOD, than to enjoy the Pleasures of Sin for a Season;

26 Esteeming the REPROACH of CHRIST Greater Riches than the TREASURES †in Egypt: for he had respect unto the RECOMPENCE-OF-THE-REWARD.

27 By Faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the WRATH of the KING: for he endured, as seeing HIM who is INVISIBLE.

28 Through Faith he kept the PASSOVER, and the SPRINKLING of BLOOD, lest HE that DESTROYED the FIRSTBORN should touch them.

29 By Faith they passed through the RED Sea as by †dry *land*:

which the EGYPTIANS assaying to do were drowned.

30 By Faith the WALLS of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about Seven Days.

31 By Faith *the HARLOT Rahab perished not with THEM that BELIEVED not, when she had received the SPIES with Peace.

32 And what shall I more say? for the TIME would fail me to tell of Gedeon, [and *of*] Barak, [and *of*] Samson, [and *of*] Jephthae; *of* David also, and Samuel, and *of* the PROPHETS:

33 Who through Faith subdued Kingdoms, wrought Righteousness, obtained Promises, stopped the Mouths of Lions,

34 Quenched the Violence of Fire, escaped the Edge of the Sword, out of Weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in Fight, turned to Flight the Armies of the Aliens.

35 Women received their DEAD raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting DELIVERANCE; that they might obtain a Better Resurrection:

36 And others had Trial of *cruel* Mockings and Scourgings, yea, moreover of Bonds and Imprisonment:

37 They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the Sword: they wandered about in Sheepskins and Goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented;

38 Of whom the WORLD was not worthy: they wandered in Deserts, and *in* Mountains, and *in* Dens and CAVES of the EARTH.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—31. Rahab the HARLOT perished not.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—20. And by Faith Isaac. 26. of Egypt. 29. Dry Land. See 32 (thrice).

39 And these all, having obtained a good report through FAITH, received not the † PROMISE:

40 GOD having provided some better thing for Us, that they without Us should not be made perfect.

CHAPTER XII.

1 Wherefore seeing *we* also are compassed about with So-great a Cloud of Witnesses, let us lay aside every Weight, and the SIN which doth so EASILY-BESET *us*, and let us run with Patience the RACE that is SET-BEFORE *us*,

2 Looking unto * Jesus the AUTHOR and Finisher of *our* FAITH; who for the JOY that was SET-BEFORE him endured the Cross, despising the Shame, and is set down at the Right-hand of the THRONE of GOD.

3 For consider HIM that ENDURED Such Contradiction of SINNERS against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your MINDS.

4 Ye have not yet resisted unto Blood, striving against SIN.

5 And ye have forgotten the EXHORTATION which speaketh unto you as unto Children, "My Son, despise not thou the Chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him:

6 "For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth Every Son whom he receiveth." ‡

7 If ye endure Chastening, GOD dealeth with you as with Sons; for What Son is he whom the Father chasteneth not?

8 But if ye be without Chastisement, whereof all are Partakers, then are ye Bastards and not Sons.

9 Furthermore we have had FATHERS of our FLESH which corrected *us*, and we gave *them* reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the FATHER of SPIRITS, and live?

10 For THEY verily for a Few Days chastened *us* after their own PLEASURE; but HE for *our* PROFIT, that we might BE-PARTAKERS of his HOLINESS.

11 Now No Chastening for the PRESENT seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable Fruit of Righteousness unto THEM which are EXERCISED thereby.

12 Wherefore lift up the HANDS which HANG-DOWN, and the FEEBLE Knees;

13 And make straight Paths for your FEET, lest THAT which is LAME be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed.

14 Follow Peace with all *men*, and HOLINESS, without which no man shall see the LORD:

15 Looking diligently lest any man fail of the GRACE of GOD; lest any Root of Bitterness springing up trouble *you*, and thereby † many be defiled;

16 Lest there *be* any Fornicator, or Profane person, as Esau, who for one Morsel of Meat sold his BIRTHRIGHT.

17 For ye know *how* That afterward, when he would have inherited the BLESSING, he was rejected: for he found no Place

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. the AUTHOR and Finisher of *our* FAITH, Jesus, who.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT. 39. PROMISES. 15. MANY be defiled.

‡ 6. Prov. iii. 11.

of Repentance, though he sought it carefully with Tears.

18 For ye are not come unto † the Mount that might be touched, and that burned with Fire, nor unto Blackness, and Darkness, and Tempest,

19 And the Sound of a Trumpet, and the Voice of Words; which *voice* THEY that HEARD intreated that the Word should not be spoken to Them any more:

20 For they could not endure THAT which was COMMANDED, "And if so much as a Beast touch the MOUNTAIN, it shall be stoned, [or thrust through with a Dart]:

21 "And so terrible was the SIGHT, *that* Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake:" ‡

22 But ye are come unto Mount Sion, and unto the City of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an Innumerable-company of Angels,

23 To the General-assembly and Church of the Firstborn, which are written in Heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the Spirits of Just men made perfect,

24 And to Jesus the Mediator of the new Covenant, and to the Blood of Sprinkling, that speaketh Better things than *that* of ABEL.

25 See that ye refuse not HIM that SPEAKETH. For if *they* escaped not who refused HIM that SPAKE on † EARTH, much more *shall not we escape*, *if we TURN-AWAY from HIM that *speaketh* from Heaven:

26 Whose VOICE then shook

the EARTH: but now he hath promised, saying, "Yet once more † † shake not the EARTH only, but also HEAVEN." ‡

27 And THIS *word*, "Yet once more, signifieth the REMOVING of *those* THINGS that are SHAKEN, as of things that are made, [that *those* THINGS which cannot be SHAKEN may remain].

28 Wherefore we receiving a Kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have Grace, whereby we may serve GOD acceptably with Reverence and Godly-fear:

29 For our GOD *is* a consuming Fire.

CHAPTER XIII.

1 Let BROTHERLY-LOVE continue.

2 Be not forgetful to entertain STRANGERS: for thereby some have entertained Angels unawares.

3 Remember THEM that are in BONDS, as bound with them; *and* THEM which SUFFER-ADVERSITY, as being yourselves also in the Body.

4 MARRIAGE *is* honourable in all, and the BED undefiled: † but Whoremongers and Adulterers GOD will judge.

5 *Let your* CONVERSATION be without covetousness; *and be* content with *such* THINGS as ye HAVE: for *he* hath said, "I will never leave Thee, nor forsake Thee." ‡

6 So that we may boldly say, "The Lord *is* My Helper, and I will not fear what Man shall do unto me." ‡

7 Remember THEM which

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—25. WE WHO TURN-AWAY.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—18. *that Mount* which might be touched. 25. Earth. 26. † will shake. 4. for Whoremongers. See 20, 27.

‡ 21. Exod. xix. 13. ‡ 26. Hag. ii. 6.

‡ 5. Gen. xxviii. 15. ‡ 6. Psa. lvi. 4.

HAVE-THE-RULE over you, who have spoken unto you the WORD of GOD: Whose FAITH follow, considering the END of *their* CONVERSATION.

8 Jesus Christ the SAME Yesterday, and To-day, and for EVER.

9 Be not carried about with divers and strange Doctrines. For *it* is a good thing that the HEART be established with Grace; not with Meats, which have not profited THEM that have been OCCUPIED therein.

10 We have an Altar, whereof THEY have no Right to eat which SERVE the TABERNACLE.

11 For the BODIES of those Beasts, whose BLOOD is brought into the SANCTUARY by the HIGH-PRIEST [for Sin], are burned without the CAMP.

12 Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the PEOPLE with his OWN Blood, suffered without the GATE.

13 Let us go forth therefore unto him without the CAMP, bearing his REPROACH.

14 For here have we no Continuing City, but we seek ONE to COME.

15 By him therefore let us offer the Sacrifice of Praise to GOD continually, *that* is, the Fruit of *our* Lips giving thanks to his NAME.

16 But to DO-GOOD and to communicate forget not: for with Such Sacrifices GOD is well pleased.

17 Obey THEM that HAVE-THE-

RULE over you, and submit yourselves: for *they* watch for your SOULS, as they that must give Account, that they may do it with Joy, and not with grief: for *that* is unprofitable for you.

18 Pray for us: for we trust we have a Good Conscience, in all things willing to live honestly.

19 But I beseech *you* the rather to do This, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

20 Now *the GOD of PEACE, that BROUGHT-AGAIN from the Dead our LORD Jesus, *that* GREAT SHEPHERD of the SHEEP, through the Blood of the everlasting Covenant,

21 Make you perfect in Every good † Work to DO his WILL, working in you THAT which is WELL-PLEASING in his sight, through Jesus Christ; to whom *be* GLORY for EVER and EVER. Amen.

22 And I beseech you, Brethren, suffer the WORD of EXHORTATION: for I have written a letter unto you in few words.

23 Know ye that † *our* BROTHER Timothy is set at liberty; with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you.

24 Salute All THEM that HAVE-THE-RULE over you, and All the SAINTS. THEY of ITALY salute you.

25 GRACE *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrews from Italy by Timothy.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—20. THAT GOD of PEACE who BROUGHT-AGAIN.

† ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT.—21. Work and Word, to do his will, working in you by Him THAT. 23. OUR BROTHER. See 11. *Subscription: TO THE HEBREWS, WRITTEN FROM ROME.*

† THE [GENERAL] EPISTLE
OF JAMES.

CHAPTER I.

SECTION I.

1 James, a Servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to *the TWELVE Tribes which are SCATTERED-ABROAD, greeting.

2 My Brethren, count it All Joy when ye fall into divers Temptations;

3 Knowing *this*, That the TRYING of Your FAITH worketh Patience.

4 But let PATIENCE have *her* perfect Work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting Nothing.

5 If any of you lack Wisdom, let him ask of GOD, that GIVETH to all *men* liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him.

6 But let him ask in Faith, Nothing wavering. For HE that WAVERETH is like a Wave of the Sea driven with the wind and tossed.

7 For let not that MAN think That he shall receive any thing of the LORD.

8 A double minded Man is unstable in All his WAYS.

9 Let the BROTHER of LOW-DEGREE rejoice in that he is EXALTED:

10 But the RICH, in that he is MADE-LOW: Because as the Flower of the Grass he shall pass away.

11 For the SUN is no sooner risen with a BURNING-HEAT, but it withereth the GRASS, and the FLOWER thereof falleth, and the GRACE of the FASHION of it perisheth: so also shall the RICH man fade away in his WAYS.

12 Blessed is the Man that endureth Temptation: For when he is tried, he shall receive the CROWN of LIFE, which †the LORD hath promised to THEM that LOVE him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of † GOD: for GOD cannot be tempted with Evil, neither tempteth *he* any man:

14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his OWN Lust, and enticed.

15 Then when LUST hath conceived, it bringeth forth Sin: and SIN, when it is finished, bringeth forth Death.

16 Do not err, my beloved Brethren.

17 Every good Gift and Every perfect Gift is from above, and cometh down from the FATHER of LIGHTS, with whom is No Variableness, neither Shadow of Turning.

18 Of his own will begat he us with the Word of Truth, that we should BE a kind of Firstfruits of HIS Creatures.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. THOSE TWELVE Tribes which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: THE EPISTLE OF JAMES. 12. he hath promised.
13. God.

§ II.

19 Wherefore, my beloved Brethren, let Every Man be swift to HEAR, slow to SPEAK, slow to Wrath:

20 For the Wrath of Man worketh not the Righteousness of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart All Filthiness and Superfluity of Naughtiness, and receive with Meekness *the ENGRAFTED Word, which is ABLE to save your SOULS.

22 But be ye Doers of the Word, and not Hearers only, deceiving your own selves.

23 For if any be a Hearer of the Word, and not a Doer, *he* is like unto a Man Beholding his NATURAL FACE in a Glass:

24 For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.

25 But WHOSO LOOKETH into *the perfect Law of LIBERTY, and continueth *therein*, [*he*] being not a forgetful Hearer, but a Doer of the Work, this *man* shall be blessed in his DEED.

§ III.

26 If any *man* [among you] seem to be religious, and bridleth not his Tongue, but deceiveth his own Heart, this man's RELIGION is vain.

27 Pure Religion and undefiled before *GOD and the Father is this, To visit the Fatherless and Widows in their AFFLICTION, and to keep Himself unspotted from the WORLD.

CHAPTER II.

1 My Brethren, *have not the FAITH of our LORD Jesus Christ, *the Lord* of GLORY, with Respect-of-persons.

2 For if there come unto your ASSEMBLY a Man with a gold ring, in goodly Apparel, and there come in also a Poor man in Vile Raiment;

3 And ye have respect to HIM that WEARETH the GAY CLOTHING, and say [unto him], Sit *thou* here in a good place; and say to the POOR, Stand †*thou* there, or sit [here] under my FOOT-STOOL:

4 Are ye not [then] partial in yourselves, and are become Judges of evil Thoughts?

5 Harken, my beloved Brethren, Hath not GOD chosen the POOR of this WORLD rich in Faith, and Heirs of the KINGDOM which he hath promised to THEM that LOVE him?

5 But *ye* have despised the POOR. Do not RICH men oppress you, and *draw you before the Judgment-seats?

7 Do not *they* blaspheme THAT WORTHY Name by the which ye are CALLED?

8 If ye fulfil the royal Law according to the SCRIPTURE, "Thou shalt love thy NEIGHBOUR as thyself," ‡ ye do well:

9 But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit Sin, and are convinced of the LAW as Transgressors.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—21. THAT ENGRAFTED Word which. 25. THAT which is the perfect Law of LIBERTY. 27. the GOD and Father is this. 1. *see ye* have not. 6. do not *they* draw you.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. *thou*. or sit there, upon my FOOTSTOOL. *See* 25, 26, 3 (twice), 4.

‡ 8. Lev. xix. 18

10 For whosoever shall keep the Whole LAW, and yet offend in one *point*, he is guilty of all.

11 For HE that SAID, "Do not commit adultery," said also, "Do not kill." Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a Transgressor of the Law.

12 So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the Law of Liberty.

13 For HE shall have JUDGMENT without mercy, that hath SHEWED no Mercy; and Mercy rejoiceth against Judgment.

§ IV. ||

14 What †*doth it* PROFIT, my Brethren, though a man say he hath Faith, and have not Works? can FAITH save him?

15 If a Brother or Sister be naked, and destitute of DAILY Food,

16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in Peace, be *ye* warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not *those* THINGS which are NEEDFUL to the BODY; what †*doth it* PROFIT?

17 Even so FAITH, if it hath not Works, is dead, being alone.

18 Yea, a man may say, **Thou** hast Faith, and **I** have Works: shew me thy FAITH without [thy] WORKS, and **I** will shew †thee My FAITH by [my] WORKS.

19 **Thou** believest That there is †one GOD; thou doest well: the DEVILS also believe, and tremble.

20 But wilt thou know, O vain

Man, That FAITH without WORKS is †dead?

21 Was not Abraham our FATHER justified by Works, when he had offered Isaac his SON upon the ALTAR?

22 Seest thou How FAITH wrought with his WORKS, and by WORKS was FAITH made perfect?

23 And *the SCRIPTURE was fulfilled which SAITH, "Abraham believed GOD, and it was imputed unto him for Righteousness:" † and he was called the "Friend of God." †

24 Ye see [then] *how* That by Works a Man is justified, and not by Faith only.

25 Likewise also was not Rahab the HARLOT justified by Works, when she had received the MESSENGERS, and had sent *them* out Another Way?

26 [For] as the BODY without the Spirit is dead, so FAITH without WORKS is dead also.

CHAPTER III.

§ V.

1 My Brethren, *be not Many Masters, knowing That we shall receive the Greater Condemnation.

2 For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in Word, the same *is* a Perfect Man, *and* able also to bridle the Whole BODY.

3 Behold, we put BITS in the HORSES' MOUTHS, that they may OBEY us; and we turn about their Whole BODY.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—23. THAT SCRIPTURE WAS. 1. be ye not.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—14. *is the* Profit. 16. *is the* Profit (*b*). 18. Thee. 19. ONE God. 20. barren? Was not. See 18 (twice), 24, 26.

‡ 23. Gen. xv. 6. † 23. 2 Chron. xx. 7.

|| *This Sectional number, in the Vatican Manuscript, is placed opposite the preceding clause in verse 13, "And Mercy rejoiceth," etc.*

4 Behold also the SHIPS, which † though *they be* so great, and *are* driven of Fierce Winds, yet are they turned about with a very Small Helm, whithersoever the GOVERNOR listeth.

5 Even so the TONGUE is a Little Member, and boasteth great things. Behold, How-great a Matter † a Little Fire kindleth!

6 And the TONGUE *is* a Fire, a World of INIQUITY: so * is the TONGUE among our MEMBERS, that it DEFILETH the Whole BODY, and setteth on fire the COURSE of NATURE; and * it is set on fire of HELL.

7 For Every Kind of Beasts, and of Birds, and of Serpents, and of Things in the Sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of MAN KIND:

8 But the TONGUE can no Man tame; *it is* an Unruly Evil full of deadly Poison.

9 Therewith † bless we * GOD, even the Father; and therewith curse we MEN, which are MADE after the Similitude of God.

10 Out of the SAME Mouth proceedeth Blessing and Cursing. My Brethren, these things ought not so to be.

11 Doth a FOUNTAIN send forth at the SAME Place SWEET *water* and BITTER?

12 Can the Fig-tree, my Brethren, bear Olive-berries? either a Vine, Figs? † so *can* No Fountain both yield Salt Water and Fresh.

§ VI.

13 Who *is* a wise man and en-

dued with knowledge among you? let him shew out of a GOOD Conversation his WORKS with Meekness of Wisdom.

14 But if ye have bitter Envyng and Strife in your HEARTS, glory not, and lie not against the TRUTH.

15 THIS WISDOM descendeth not from above, but *is* earthly, sensual, devilish.

16 For where Envyng and Strife *is*, there *is* Confusion and Every Evil Work.

17 But the WISDOM that is from ABOVE, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, *and* easy to be intreated, full of Mercy and good Fruits, without partiality, [and] without hypocrisy.

18 And the Fruit of † RIGHTEOUSNESS is sown in Peace of THEM that MAKE Peace.

CHAPTER IV.

1 From whence *come* Wars and † Fightings among you? *come they* not hence, *even* of * your LUSTS that WAR in your MEMBERS?

2 Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ASK not.

3 Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume *it* upon your LUSTS.

4 Ye [Adulterers and] Adulteresses, know ye not That the FRIENDSHIP of the WORLD is Enmity with GOD? whosoever therefore will be a Friend of the WORLD is the Enemy of GOD.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—6. *is* THAT TONGUE set among our MEMBERS which DEFILETH. 6. *is* set on fire of HELL. 9. the GOD and Father; and therewith curse we THOSE MEN who are MADE. 1. THOSE LUSTS of yours which WAR.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—4. *be* SO-GREAT, and (*b*). 5. How-great a Fire it kindleth! 9. bless we the LORD and Father. 12. neither can Salt Water yield Fresh. 18. Righteousness. 1. from whence Fightings. See 17, 4.

5 Do ye think That the SCRIPTURE saith in vain, "The SPIRIT that dwelleth in us lusteth to Envy?" †

6 But he giveth More Grace. Wherefore he saith, "GOD resisteth the Proud, but giveth Grace unto the Humble." †

§ VII.

7 Submit yourselves therefore to GOD. Resist the DEVIL, and he will flee from you.

8 Draw nigh to GOD, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse *your* Hands, *ye* Sinners; and purify *your* Hearts, *ye* double minded.

9 Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your LAUGHTER be turned to Mourning, and *your* JOY to Heaviness.

10 Humble yourselves in the sight of the LORD, and he shall lift you up.

11 Speak not evil one of another, Brethren. HE that SPEAKETH EVIL of *his* Brother, † and judgeth his BROTHER, speaketh-evil of the Law, and judgeth the Law: but if thou judge the Law, thou art not a Doer of the Law, but a Judge.

12 † There is One LAWGIVER, who is ABLE to save and to destroy: who art *thou* that judgest ANOTHER?

13 Go to now, YE that SAY, To-day or To-morrow we will go into Such a CITY, and continue there a Year, and buy and sell and get gain:

14 Whereas ye know not WHAT

shall be on the MORROW. [For] what is your † LIFE? It is even *a Vapour, that APPEARETH for a little time, and then vanisheth away.

15 For that ye *ought* to SAY, If the LORD will, we † shall live, and do this, or that.

16 But now ye rejoice in your BOASTINGS: All such Rejoicing is evil.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do Good, and doeth *it* not, to him it is Sin.

CHAPTER V.

§ VIII.

1 Go to now, *ye* RICH men, weep and howl for *your MISERIES that shall COME upon *you*.

2 Your RICHES are corrupted, and your GARMENTS are moth-eaten.

3 Your GOLD and SILVER is cankered; and the RUST of them shall be a Witness against you, and shall eat your FLESH as it were Fire. Ye have heaped treasure together for the Last Days.

4 Behold, *the HIRE of the LABOURERS who have REAPED-DOWN your FIELDS, which is of you KEPT-BACK-BY-FRAUD, crieth: and the CRIES of THEM which have REAPED are entered into the EARS of the Lord of Sabbaoth.

5 Ye have lived in pleasure on the EARTH, and been wanton; ye have nourished your HEARTS, [as] in a Day of Slaughter.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—14. THAT Vapour which APPEARETH. 1. THOSE MISERIES of yours which shall COME. 4. THAT HIRE of THOSE LABOURERS who have,

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—11. or judgeth. 12. One is THAT LAWGIVER and Judge who is ABLE to save and to destroy: and who art *thou*, THOU that JUDGEST thy NEIGHBOUR? Go to now. 14. Life. 15. both live, and. See 5, 14.

‡ 5. Prov. xxi. 10. † 6. Prov. iii. 34.

6 Ye have condemned *and* killed the JUST; *and* he doth not resist you.

§ IX.

7 Be patient therefore, Brethren, unto the COMING of the LORD. Behold, the HUSBANDMAN waiteth for the PRECIOUS Fruit of the EARTH, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and †latter [rain].

8 Be ye also patient; stablish your HEARTS: For the COMING of the LORD draweth nigh.

9 Grudge not one against another, Brethren, lest ye be †condemned: behold, the JUDGE standeth before the DOOR.

10 Take, [my] Brethren, the PROPHEETS, who have spoken in the NAME of the † Lord, for an Example of SUFFERING-AFFLICTION, and of PATIENCE.

11 Behold, we count THEM happy which ENDURE. Ye have heard of the PATIENCE of Job, and have seen the END of the Lord; That the LORD is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.

12 But above all things, my Brethren, swear not, neither by HEAVEN, neither by the EARTH, neither by any Other Oath: but let your YEA be Yea; and *your* NAY, Nay; lest ye fall †into Condemnation.

§ X.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing psalms.

14 Is any sick among you? let him call for the ELDERS of the CHURCH; and let them pray over him, anointing [him] with Oil in the NAME [of the LORD]:

15 And the PRAYER of FAITH shall save the SICK, and the LORD shall raise him up; and if he have committed Sins, they shall be forgiven him.

16 Confess †*your* FAULTS one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual Fervent-prayer of a Righteous man availeth much.

17 Elias was a Man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not RAIN: and it rained not on the EARTH by the space of three Years and six Months.

18 And he prayed again, and the HEAVEN gave Rain, and the EARTH brought forth her FRUIT.

19 †Brethren, if any of you do err from the TRUTH, and one convert him:

20 †Let him know, That HE which CONVERTETH the Sinner from the Error of his Way shall save a Soul from †Death, and shall hide a Multitude of Sins.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—7. latter *harvest*. 9. judged; behold. 10. LORD (*b*). 12. under Judgment. 16. therefore *your* SINS one to. 19. My Brethren (*b*). 20. Know ye, That. 20. its Death. See 7, 10, 14 (twice). *Subscription*: OF JAMES.

OF PETER.

CHAPTER I.

SECTION I.

1 Peter, an Apostle of Jesus Christ, to the Strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,

2 Elect according to the Foreknowledge of God the Father, through Sanctification of the Spirit, unto Obedience and Sprinkling of the Blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and Peace, be multiplied.

3 Blessed *be* *the GOD and Father of our LORD Jesus Christ, which according to his ABUNDANT Mercy hath BEGOTTEN us again unto a lively Hope by the Resurrection of Jesus Christ from the Dead,

4 To an Inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in Heaven for YOU,

5 Who are KEPT by the Power of God through Faith unto Salvation ready to be revealed in the last Time.

6 Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a season, if need be, ye are in heaviness through Manifold Temptations:

7 That the TRIAL of Your FAITH, being much more precious

than of *Gold that PERISHETH, though it be tried with Fire, might be found unto Praise and †Honour and Glory at the Appearing of Jesus Christ:

8 Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom, though now ye see *him* not, yet believing, ye rejoice with Joy unspeakable and full of glory:

9 Receiving the END of [your] FAITH, *even* the Salvation of *your* Souls.

10 Of Which Salvation *the Prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who PROPHESED of the GRACE *that should come* unto you:

11 Searching what, or What manner of Time the SPIRIT [of Christ] which was IN THEM did signify, when it testified beforehand the SUFFERINGS of Christ, and the GLORY which should follow.

12 Unto whom it was revealed, That not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by THEM that have PREACHED-THE-GOSPEL unto you with the holy Ghost sent down from Heaven; which things the Angels desire to look into.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. THAT GOD and Father of. 7. THAT Gold which PERISHETH. 10. THOSE Prophets have.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: THE FIRST OF PETER. 7. Glory and Honour at the. See 9, 11.

§ II.

13 Wherefore gird up the LOINS of your MIND, be sober, and hope to the end for the GRACE that is to be BROUGHT unto you at the Revelation of Jesus Christ;

14 As obedient Children, not fashioning yourselves according to the FORMER Lusts in your IGNORANCE:

15 But as HE which hath CALLED you is holy, so be ye holy in All manner of Conversation;

16 Because it is written, †“Be ye holy; For I am holy.” ‡

17 And if ye call on *the Father, who without respect of persons JUDGETH according to EVERYMAN’S Work, pass the TIME of your SOJOURNING here in Fear:

18 Forasmuch as ye know That ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as Silver and Gold, from your VAIN Conversation received by tradition from your fathers;

19 But with the Precious Blood of Christ, as of a Lamb without blemish and without spot:

20 Who verily was foreordained before the Foundation of the World, but was manifest in these Last TIMES for YOU,

21 Who by Him †do BELIEVE in *God, that RAISED him up from the Dead, and gave Him Glory; that your FAITH and Hope might be in God.

§ III. ||

22 Seeing ye have purified your SOULS in OBEYING the TRUTH [through the Spirit] unto unfeigned Love of the Brethren, see that ye love one another with †a Pure Heart fervently:

23 Being born again, not of corruptible Seed, but of incorruptible, by the Word of God, which liveth and abideth [for EVER].

24 For All Flesh is as Grass, and all the Glory of †Man as the Flower of Grass. The GRASS withereth, and the FLOWER thereof falleth away:

25 But the WORD of the Lord endureth for EVER. And this is *the WORD which by the gospel is PREACHED unto you.

CHAPTER II.

1 Wherefore laying aside All Malice, and All Guile, and Hypocrisies, and †Envy, and All Evil-speaking,;

2 As Newborn Babes, desire the SINCERE Milk of the Word, that ye may grow †thereby:

3 If [so be] ye have tasted That the LORD is gracious.

4 To whom coming, as unto a living Stone, disallowed indeed of Men, but chosen of God, and precious,

5 We also, as lively Stones, are built up a spiritual House, †an holy Priesthood, to offer up

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. THAT Father who. 21. THAT God who RAISED. 25. THAT WORD which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. That ye shall be holy. 21. are FAITHFUL UNTO THAT God who RAISED. 22. the Heart fervently. 24. the same as the Flower of Grass. 1. (By a mistake of the transcriber, φονους is put for φθονους—“Murders” for “Envy”). 2. thereby unto Salvation. If ye have. 5. for an holy Priesthood. See 22, 23, 3.

‡ 16. Lev. xi. 44.

|| This Section has its number placed, in the Vatican Manuscript, opposite the words, “See that ye love one another,

Spiritual Sacrifices, acceptable to †GOD by Jesus Christ.

6 Wherefore [also] it is contained in the †SCRIPTURE, "Behold, I lay in Sion †a chief-corner Stone, elect, precious: and HE that BELIEVETH on him shall not be confounded." †

7 Unto YOU therefore which BELIEVE *he is* PRECIOUS: but unto them which †be disobedient, the Stone which the BUILDERS disallowed, the same is made the Head of the Corner,

8 And a Stone of Stumbling, and a Rock of Offence, *even to them* which stumble at the WORD, being †disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed.

9 But *ye are* a chosen Generation, a Royal Priesthood, an holy Nation, a peculiar People; that ye should shew forth the PRAISES of HIM who hath CALLED You out of Darkness into His MARVELLOUS Light:

10 Which in time past *were* not a People, but *are* now the People of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

11 Dearly beloved, I beseech *you* as Strangers and Pilgrims, abstain from FLESHLY Lusts, which war against the SOUL;

12 †Having your CONVERSATION honest among the GENTILES: that, whereas they speak against you as Evildoers, they may by *your* GOOD Works, which they [shall] behold, glorify GOD in the Day of Visitation.

§ IV.

13 Submit yourselves to Every Ordinance of Man for the LORD'S sake: whether it be to the King, as supreme;

14 Or unto Governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the Punishment of Evildoers, and for the Praise of Them that do well.

15 For so is the WILL of GOD, that with well doing ye may put to silence the IGNORANCE of FOOLISH Men:

16 As free, and not using *your* LIBERTY for a Cloke of MALICIOUSNESS, but as the Servants of God.

17 Honour All *men*. Love the BROTHERHOOD. Fear GOD. Honour the KING.

18 SERVANTS, *be* subject to *your* MASTERS with All Fear; not only to the GOOD and Gentle, but also to the FROWARD.

19 For this *is* Thankworthy, if a man for Conscience toward God endure Grief, suffering wrongfully.

20 For What Glory *is it*, if, when be ye buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if, when ye do well, and suffer *for it*, ye take it patiently, this *is* acceptable with God.

21 For even hereunto were ye called: Because Christ also suffered for us, leaving Us an Example, that ye should follow his STEPS:

22 Who did no Sin, neither was Guile found in his MOUTH:

23 Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—5. God. 6. Scripture. 6. an elect Stone, a precious chief-corner *stone*, and HE that. 7. be unbelieving, the Stone. 8. unbelieving: whereunto. 12. *Having* your CONVERSATION. See 6, 12.

‡ 6. Isa. xxviii. 16.

committed *himself* to HIM that JUDGEth righteously:

24 Who his own self bare our SINS in his own BODY on the TREE, that we, being dead to SINS, should live unto RIGHTEOUSNESS: by Whose STRIPES ye were healed.

25 [For] ye were as Sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the SHEPHERD and Bishop of your SOULS.

CHAPTER III.

1 Likewise, ye †WIVES, *be* in subjection to your OWN Husbands; that, if any obey not the WORD, they [also] †may without the Word be won by the CONVERSATION of the WIVES;

2 While they behold your CHASTE Conversation *coupled* with Fear.

3 Whose ADORNING let it not be *that* OUTWARD *adorning* of Plaiting the Hair, and of Wearing of Gold, or of Putting-on of Apparel;

4 But *let it be* the HIDDEN Man of the HEART, in THAT which is not CORRUPTIBLE, *even the ornament* of a †Meek and Quiet Spirit, which is in the sight of GOD of great price.

5 For after this manner in the old time *the HOLY Women also, who TRUSTED in †GOD, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their OWN Husbands:

6 Even as Sara obeyed ABRAHAM, calling Him Lord: Whose Daughters ye are, as long as ye do well and are not afraid with Any Amazement.

7 Likewise, ye †HUSBANDS, dwell with *them* according to Knowledge, giving Honour unto the WIFE, as unto the Weaker Vessel, and as being Heirs-together of the Grace of Life; that your PRAYERS be not HINDERED.

§ v.

8 FINALLY, *be ye* all of one mind, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, *be* pitiful, *be* †courteous:

9 Not rendering Evil for Evil, or Railing for Railing: but contrariwise blessing; †knowing That ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a Blessing.

10 For HE that WILL love Life, and see good Days, let him refrain †his TONGUE from Evil, and †his Lips that they SPEAK no Guile:

11 Let him eschew Evil, and do Good; let him seek Peace, and ensue it.

12 For the EYES of the Lord *are* over the Righteous, and his Ears *are open* unto their Prayers: but the Face of the Lord *is* against them that do Evil.

13 And who *is* HE that will HARM you, if ye be †Followers of THAT which is GOOD?

14 But and if ye suffer for Righteousness' sake, happy *are ye*: and be not afraid of their TERROR, neither be troubled;

15 But sanctify the Lord †GOD in your HEARTS: and *be* ready always to *give* an Answer to EVERY man that ASKETH you a Reason of the HOPE that is IN YOU with Meekness and Fear:

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—5. THOSE HOLY women also.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—1. Wives (*a*). 1. shall without the Word. 4. Quiet and Meek Spirit. 5. God. 7. Husbands. 8. humble-minded: Not rendering. 9. Because ye are thereunto called. 10 *his* TONGUE. 10. *his*. 13. zealous of THAT which. 15. CHRIST in your HEARTS. See 25.

16 Having a good Conscience; that, † whereas they speak evil of you, [as of Evildoers], THEY may be ashamed that FALSELY-ACCUSE Your GOOD Conversation in Christ.

17 For *it is* better, if the WILL of GOD be so, that ye suffer for Well-doing, than for Evil-doing.

18 For Christ also hath once suffered for Sins, the just for the unjust, that he might † bring Us to GOD, being put to death in the Flesh, but quickened by the † SPIRIT:

19 By which also he went and preached unto the SPIRITS in Prison;

20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once the LONG-SUFFERING of GOD waited in the Days of Noah, while the Ark was a preparing, wherein Few, that is, Eight Souls were saved by Water.

21 The like Figure whereunto *even* Baptism doth also now save Us; not the Putting-away of the Filth of the Flesh, but the Answer of a good Conscience toward God; by the Resurrection of Jesus Christ,

22 Who is gone into Heaven, and is on † the Right-hand of GOD; Angels and Authorities and Powers being made subject unto him.

CHAPTER IV.

§ VI.

1 Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered [for us] in the Flesh, arm Yourselves likewise with the

SAME Mind: For HE that hath SUFFERED in the Flesh hath ceased from † Sin;

2 That he no longer should LIVE the REST of *his* Time in the Flesh to the Lusts of Men, but to the Will of God.

3 For the TIME PAST [of *our* LIFE] may suffice [us] to have wrought the WILL of the GENTILES, when we walked in Lasciviousness, Lusts, Excess of wine, Revellings, Banquetings, and Abominable Idolatries:

4 Wherein they think it strange that ye run not with *them* to the SAME Excess of RIOT, speaking evil of *you* :

5 Who shall give Account to HIM that is READY to judge the Quick and the Dead.

6 For for this cause was the gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might be judged according to Men in the Flesh, but live according to God in the Spirit.

7 But the END of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, and watch unto PRAYER.

8 And above all things have fervent CHARITY among yourselves: For “CHARITY † shall cover the Multitude of Sins.” ‡

9 Use hospitality one to another without Grudging.

10 As every man hath received the Gift, *even so* minister the Same one to another as Good Stewards of the Manifold Grace of God.

11 If any man speak, *let him speak* as the Oracles of God; if any man minister, *let him do it* as

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. in what ye are spoken evil of, THEY may be ashamed that. 18. advance you, being put to death. 18. Spirit. 22. *his* Right-hand; Angels and. 1. Sins. 8. covereth the Multitude. See 16, 1, 3 (twice).

‡ 8. Prov. x. 12; xvii. 9.

of the Ability which GOD giveth: that GOD in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be PRAISE and DOMINION for EVER and EVER. Amen.

§ VII.

12 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the FIERY-TRIAL which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you:

13 But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of CHRIST'S SUFFERINGS; that, *when his GLORY shall be REVEALED, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

14 If ye be reproached for the Name of Christ, happy *are ye*; For the SPIRIT of GLORY and *of GOD resteth upon you: [on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified].

15 But let none of you suffer as a Murderer, or as a Thief, or as an Evildoer, or as a Busybody in other men's matters.

16 Yet if *any man suffer* as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify GOD †on this BEHALF.

17 For the TIME *is come* that JUDGMENT must BEGIN at the HOUSE of GOD: and if *it* first *begin* at us, what shall the END *be* of THEM that OBEY not the GOSPEL of GOD?

18 And if the RIGHTEOUS scarcely be saved, where shall the UNGODLY and the Sinner appear?

19 Wherefore let THEM that SUFFER according to the WILL of GOD commit the keeping of their

SOULS [to him] in Well-doing, [as] unto a Faithful Creator.

CHAPTER V.

§ VIII.

1 * The Elders † which are among you, I exhort, who am also an ELDER, and a Witness of the SUFFERINGS of CHRIST, and also a PARTAKER of the GLORY that SHALL be revealed:

2 Feed the FLOCK of GOD which is among you, [taking the oversight *thereof*], not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind;

3 [Neither as being lords over God's HERITAGE, but being Examples to the FLOCK].

4 And when the CHIEF-SHEPHERD shall appear, ye shall receive a CROWN of GLORY that FADETH-NOT-AWAY.

5 Likewise, ye Younger, submit yourselves unto the Elder. Yea, †all [of you be subject] one to another, and be clothed with HUMILITY: For GOD resisteth the Proud, and giveth Grace to the Humble.

6 Humble yourselves therefore under the MIGHTY Hand of GOD, that he may exalt You in due Time:

7 Casting All your CARE upon him; For he careth for you.

8 Be sober, be vigilant; [Because] your ADVERSARY the Devil, as a roaring Lion, walketh about, seeking †whom he may devour:

9 Whom resist stedfast in the FAITH, knowing that the SAME AFFLICTIONS are accomplished in

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—13. at the REVELATION of his GLORY, ye may be. 14. THAT of GOD resteth. 1. THOSE Elders which are.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—16. in this NAME. For the TIME. 1. therefore which are. 5. all submit one to another. Be clothed with HUMILITY: For GOD. 8. to devour. See 14, 19 (twice), 2, 3, 5, 8.

YOUR *Brethren that are in the World.

10 *But the GOD of All Grace, who hath CALLED †us unto His ETERNAL Glory by Christ [Jesus], after that ye have suffered a while, †make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, [settle] you.

11 To him *be* [GLORY and] DOMINION for EVER [and EVER]. Amen.

12 By Silvanus, a FAITHFUL

Brother unto you, as I suppose, I have written briefly, exhorting, and testifying that this is the True Grace of GOD wherein ye stand.

13 *The *church that is* at Babylon, ELECTED-TOGETHER with you, saluteth you; and *so doth* Marcus my SON.

14 Greet ye one another with a Kiss of Charity. Peace *be* with *YOU All that are in Christ [Jesus. Amen].

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—9. Brotherhood that are. 10. And THAT GOD of All Grace who. 13. THAT *church which is* at Babylon. 14. All YOU that are.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—10. you unto His ETERNAL Glory by CHRIST, after. 10. will himself make you perfect. See 10 (twice), 11 (twice), 14. *Subscription*. THE FIRST OF PETER.

OF PETER.

CHAPTER I.

§ IX.

1 Simon Peter, a Servant and an Apostle of Jesus Christ, to THEM that have OBTAINED Like-precious Faith with us through the Righteousness of *GOD and our Saviour Jesus Christ:

2 Grace and Peace be multiplied unto You through the Knowledge of GOD, and of Jesus our LORD,

3 According as his DIVINE Power hath given unto us All THINGS that *pertain* unto Life and Godliness, through the KNOWLEDGE of HIM that hath CALLED us to Glory and Virtue:

4 Whereby are given unto us EXCEEDING-GREAT and Precious Promises: that by these ye might be Partakers of the Divine Nature, having escaped the CORRUPTION that is in the †World through Lust.

5 And beside this, giving all Diligence, add to your FAITH VIRTUE; and to VIRTUE KNOWLEDGE;

6 And to KNOWLEDGE TEMPERANCE; and to TEMPERANCE PATIENCE; and to PATIENCE GODLINESS;

7 And to GODLINESS BRO-

THERLY-KINDNESS; and to BROTHERLY-KINDNESS CHARITY.

8 For if these things be in You, and abound, they make *you that ye shall* neither be barren nor unfruitful in the KNOWLEDGE of our LORD Jesus Christ.

9 But he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten that he was PURGED from his OLD Sins.

10 Wherefore the rather, Brethren, give diligence to make Your CALLING and Election sure: for if ye do These things, ye shall never fall:

11 For so an ENTRANCE shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the EVERLASTING Kingdom of our LORD and Saviour Jesus Christ.

12 Wherefore I will †not be negligent to put You always in remembrance of these things, though ye know *them*, and be established in the PRESENT Truth.

13 Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in This TABERNACLE, to stir you up by putting *you* in Remembrance;

14 Knowing That shortly I must PUT-OFF *this* my TABERNACLE, even as our LORD Jesus Christ hath shewed me.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. our GOD and Saviour Jesus Christ.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: THE SECOND OF PETER. 4. WORLD through Lust. 12. be ready to put You.

15 Moreover I will endeavour that ye may be able after MY Decease to have these things always in REMEMBRANCE.

16 For we have not followed Cunningly-devised Fables, when we made known unto you the POWER and Coming of our LORD Jesus Christ, but were Eyewitnesses of HIS Majesty.

17 For he received from God the Father Honour and Glory, when there came such a Voice to him from the EXCELLENT Glory, "This is †my BELOVED SON, in whom ‡ I am well pleased." †

18 And This VOICE which came from Heaven we heard, when we were with him in the † HOLY MOUNT.

19 We have also a more Sure * Word of PROPHECY; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a Light that shineth in a Dark Place, until the Day dawn, and the Day-star arise in your HEARTS:

20 Knowing This first, That No Prophecy of the Scripture is of any Private Interpretation.

21 For the Prophecy came not in old time by the Will of Man: but † HOLY Men of God spake as they were moved by the holy Ghost.

CHAPTER II.

(§ x.)

1 But there were False-prophets also among the PEOPLE, even as there shall be False-teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable Heresies, even denying

the LORD that BOUGHT them, and bring upon themselves Swift Destruction.

2 And many shall follow Their † PERNICIOUS-WAYS; by reason of whom the WAY of TRUTH shall be evil spoken of.

3 And through Covetousness shall they with Feigned Words make merchandise of You: whose JUDGMENT now of a long time lingereth not, and their DAMNATION slumbereth not.

4 For if GOD spared not the Angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into Chains of Darkness, to be reserved [unto Judgment];

5 And spared not the Old World, but saved Noah the Eighth person, a Preacher of Righteousness, bringing in the Flood upon the World of the Ungodly;

6 And turning the Cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes condemned them [with an Overthrow], making them an Ensamble unto those that after should live ungodly;

7 And delivered Just Lot, vexed with the filthy CONVERSATION of the WICKED:

8 For that RIGHTEOUS man dwelling among them, in Seeing and Hearing, vexed his righteous Soul from Day to Day with their Unlawful Deeds:

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the Godly out of Temptations, and to reserve the Unjust unto the Day of Judgment to be punished:

10 But chiefly THEM that WALK

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—19. PROPHECIC Word; whereunto.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—17. my SON, my BELOVED, in whom. 18. HOLY Mount. 21. Men from God spake. 2. LASCIVIOUSNESS; by reason of. See 4, 6.

‡ 17. Matt. xvii. 5.

after the Flesh in the Lust of Uncleaness, and despise Government. Presumptuous *are they*, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of Dignities.

11 Whereas Angels, which are greater in Power and Might, bring not Railing Accusation against them before the Lord.

12 But these, as natural Brute Beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall [utterly] perish in their own CORRUPTION;

13 † And shall receive the Reward of Unrighteousness, *as* they that count it Pleasure to RIOT in the Day time. Spots *they are* and Blemishes, sporting themselves with their own DECEIVINGS while they feast with you;

14 Having Eyes full of Adultery, and that cannot cease from Sin; beguiling unstable Souls: an Heart they have exercised with Covetous-practices; Cursed Children:

15 Which have forsaken the † RIGHT Way, and are gone astray, following the WAY of BALAAM *the son* of BOSOR, who loved the Wages of Unrighteousness;

16 But was rebuked for His Iniquity: the dumb Ass speaking with † Man's Voice forbad the MADNESS of the PROPHET.

17 These are Wells without water, † Clouds that are carried with a Tempest; to whom the MIST of DARKNESS is reserved [for Ever].

18 For when they speak great swelling *words* of Vanity, they

allure through the Lusts of the Flesh, *through much* Wantonness, THOSE that were † clean ESCAPED from THEM who LIVE in Error.

19 While they promise them Liberty, they themselves are the Servants of CORRUPTION: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.

20 For if after they have escaped the POLLUTIONS of the WORLD through the Knowledge of the LORD and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the LATTER end is worse with them than the BEGINNING.

21 For it had been better for them not to have known the WAY of RIGHTEOUSNESS, than, after they have known *it*, to † turn from the HOLY Commandment DELIVERED unto them.

22 [But] it is happened unto them according to the TRUE Proverb, "The Dog *is* turned to his OWN Vomit again;" † and the Sow that was washed to her Wallowing in the Mire.

CHAPTER III.

§ XI.

1 This Second Epistle, Beloved, I now write unto you; in *both* which I stir up Your PURE Minds by way of Remembrance:

2 That ye may be mindful of the WORDS which were SPOKEN-BEFORE by the HOLY Prophets, and of the COMMANDMENT of us the APOSTLES of the LORD and Saviour:

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—13. Unrighteous, *they have* the Reward of Unrighteousness. 15. Forsaking the Right Way, they are gone astray: following the WAY of BALAAM *the son* of BEOR, they loved the Reward of Unrighteousness; But he was rebuked. 16. Men's Voice. 17. and Fogs that are carried. 18. almost ESCAPED. 21. turn back again from. See 12, 17, 22.

‡ 22. Prov. xxvi. 11.

3 Knowing This first, That there shall come in the Last DAYS Scoffers, † walking after their OWN Lusts,

4 And saying, Where is the PROMISE of his COMING? for since the FATHERS fell asleep, all things continue as *they were* from the Beginning of the Creation.

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, That by the WORD of GOD the Heavens were of old, and the Earth standing out of the Water and in the Water:

6 Whereby the WORLD that THEN was, being overflowed with Water, perished:

7 But the HEAVENS and the EARTH which are NOW, by the † Same Word are kept in store, reserved unto Fire against the Day of Judgment and Perdition of UNGODLY Men.

8 But, Beloved, be not ignorant of this One thing, That One Day is with the Lord as a Thousand Years, and a Thousand Years as one Day.

9 The † LORD is not slack concerning his PROMISE, as some men count Slackness; but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to Repentance.

10 But the DAY of the Lord will come as a Thief [in the Night]; in the † which the HEAVENS shall pass away with a Great Noise, and the Elements shall melt with fervent heat, the Earth also, and the WORKS that are therein shall be † burned up.

11 Seeing † then *that* all These

things shall be dissolved, what manner of *persons* ought † ye to be in *all* Holy Conversation and Godliness.

12 Looking for and hastening unto the COMING of the DAY of GOD, wherein the HEAVENS being on fire shall be dissolved, and the Elements shall melt with fervent heat?

13 Nevertheless we, according to his PROMISE, look for New Heavens and a new Earth, wherein dwelleth Righteousness.

14 Wherefore, Beloved, seeing that ye look for Such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in Peace, without spot, and blameless.

15 And account *that* the LONG-SUFFERING of our LORD is Salvation; even as our BELOVED Brother Paul also according to the WISDOM GIVEN unto him hath written unto you;

16 As also in All *his* † EPISTLES, speaking in them of these things; in † which are some things hard to be understood, which THEY that are UNLEARNED and Unstable wrest, as *they do* also the OTHER Scriptures, unto Their OWN Destruction.

17 ¶ therefore, Beloved, seeing ye know *these things* before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the ERROR of the WICKED, fall from your OWN Steadfastness.

18 But grow in Grace, and *in* the Knowledge of our LORD and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be GLORY both now and for Ever. [Amen.]

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—3. scoffingly walking after. 7. SAME Word (*b*). 9. Lord. 10. which *day* the HEAVENS. 10. discovered. 11. *that* all These things shall thus be dissolved. 11. *ye* to be. 16. Epistles. 16. which *epistles* are some things. See 10, 18. *Subscription*: THE SECOND OF PETER.

OF JOHN.

CHAPTER I.

SECTION I.

1 That which was from the Beginning, † which we have heard, which we have seen with our EYES, which we have looked upon, and our HANDS have handled, of the WORD of LIFE;

2 For the LIFE was manifested, † and we have seen *it*, and bear witness, and shew unto you *that* ETERNAL LIFE, which was with the FATHER, and was manifested unto us:

3 That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that *ye* also may have Fellowship with us: and truly OUR FELLOWSHIP *is* with the FATHER, and with his SON Jesus Christ.

4 And These things write † we [unto you], that your JOY may be full.

5 This then is the MESSAGE which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, That GOD is Light, and in him is no Darkness at all.

6 If we say That we have Fellowship with him, and walk in DARKNESS, we lie, and do not the TRUTH:

7 But if we walk in the LIGHT,

as *he* is in the LIGHT, we have Fellowship one with another, and the BLOOD of Jesus [Christ] his SON cleanseth us from All Sin.

8 If we say That we have *no Sin, we deceive Ourselves, and the TRUTH is not in us.

9 If we confess our SINS, he is faithful and just to forgive us *our* SINS, and to cleanse us from All Unrighteousness.

10 If we say That we have not sinned, we make him a Liar, and his WORD is not in us.

CHAPTER II.

§ II.

1 My Little-children, These things write I unto you, that *ye* sin not. And if any man sin, we have an Advocate with the FATHER, Jesus Christ the righteous:

2 And *he* is the Propitiation for our SINS: and not for OUR'S only, but also for *the sins of* the Whole WORLD.

3 And hereby we do know That we know him, if we keep his COMMANDMENTS.

4 HE that SAITH, I know him, and keepeth not his COMMANDMENTS, is a Liar, and the TRUTH is not in *him*.

5 But whoso keepeth His WORD, in *him* verily is the LOVE of GOD

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. that which we have heard, that which we have seen with our Eyes, that which. 8. not Sin.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: THE FIRST OF JOHN. 2. and that which we have seen and witnessed declare we also unto you, *even* the ETERNAL LIFE, which was. 4. *ur*, that your JOY. See 4, 7.

perfected: hereby know we That we are in Him.

6 HE that SAITH he abideth in Him ought himself also [so] to walk, even as ~~he~~ walked.

§ III.

7 † Brethren, I write no new Commandment unto you, but an old Commandment which ye had from the Beginning. The OLD COMMANDMENT is the WORD which ye have heard [from the beginning].

8 Again, a new Commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in him and in you: Because the DARKNESS is past, and the TRUE LIGHT now shineth.

9 HE that SAITH he is in the LIGHT, and hateth his BROTHER, is in DARKNESS even until now.

10 HE that LOVETH his BROTHER abideth in the LIGHT, and there is none Occasion of Stumbling in Him.

11 But HE that HATETH his BROTHER is in DARKNESS, and walketh in DARKNESS, and knoweth not whither he goeth, Because *that* DARKNESS hath blinded his EYES.

12 I write unto you, Little-children, Because *your* SINS are forgiven you for his NAME'S sake.

13 I write unto you, Fathers, Because ye have known HIM that is from the Beginning. I write unto you, Young-men, Because ye have overcome the WICKED one. I write unto you, Little-children, Because ye have known the FATHER.

14 I have written unto you, Fathers, Because ye have known

HIM that is from the Beginning. I have written unto you, Young-men, Because ye are strong, and the WORD [of GOD] abideth in You, and ye have overcome the WICKED one.

15 Love not the WORLD, neither the THINGS *that are* in the WORLD. If any man love the WORLD, the LOVE of the FATHER is not in him.

16 For ALL that *is* in the WORLD, the LUST of the FLESH, and the LUST of the EYES, and the PRIDE of LIFE, is not of the FATHER, but is of the WORLD.

17 And the WORLD passeth away, and the LUST thereof: but HE that DOETH the WILL of GOD abideth for EVER.

§ IV.

18 Little-children, it is the Last Time: and as ye have heard That ANTICHRIST shall come, even now are there many Antichrists; whereby we know That it is the Last Time.

19 They went out from Us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of Us, they would *no doubt* have continued with us: but *they went out*, that they might be made manifest That they were not all of us.

20 But ~~ye~~ have an Unction from † the HOLY one, and ye know all things.

21 I have not written unto you Because ye know not the TRUTH, but Because ye know it, and That No Lie is of the TRUTH.

22 Who is a LIAR, but HE that DENIETH That Jesus is the

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—7. Beloved, I write. it. I have not written. See 6, 7, 14.

20. the HOLY one: ye all know

CHRIST? **He** is ANTICHRIST, *that DENIETH the FATHER and the SON.

23 WHOSOEVER DENIETH the SON *the same hath not the FATHER: †[*but*] *he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also.*

§ v.

24 Let that [therefore] abide in You, which **ye** have heard from the Beginning. If that which ye have heard from the Beginning shall remain in You, **ye** also shall continue in the SON, and [in] the FATHER.

25 And this is the PROMISE that **he** hath promised †us, *even ETERNAL LIFE.*

26 These *things* have I written unto you concerning THEM that SEDUCE you.

27 But the †ANOINTING which **ye** have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but [as] the SAME Anointing teacheth you of all things, and is *truth, and is no Lie, and even as it hath taught you, †ye shall abide in him.

28 And now, Little-children, abide in him; that, when he shall appear, ye may have Confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his COMING.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, ye know That EVERY-ONE that DOETH RIGHTEOUSNESS is born of Him.

CHAPTER III.

1 Behold, What manner of Love the FATHER hath bestowed

upon us, that we should be called the Sons of †God: therefore the WORLD knoweth us not, Because it knew him not.

§ VI.

2 Beloved, now are we the Sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know, That, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; For we shall see him as he is.

3 And EVERY-MAN that HATH this HOPE in him purifieth himself, even as **he** is pure.

4 WHOSOEVER COMMITTETH SIN *transgresseth also the LAW: for SIN is the TRANSGRESSION-OF-THE-LAW.

5 And ye know That **he** was manifested to take away [our] SINS; and in Him is no Sin.

6 WHOSOEVER ABIDETH in Him sinneth not: WHOSOEVER SINNETH hath not seen him, neither known him.

7 Little-children, let no man deceive you: HE that DOETH RIGHTEOUSNESS is righteous, even as **he** is righteous.

8 HE that COMMITTETH SIN is of the DEVIL; For the DEVIL sinneth from the Beginning. For this purpose the SON of GOD was manifested, that he might destroy the WORKS of the DEVIL.

9 WHOSOEVER is BORN of GOD doth not commit Sin; For his Seed remaineth in Him: and he cannot sin, Because he is born of GOD.

10 In this the CHILDREN of

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—22. HE who DENIETH. 23. neither hath he the FATHER. 27. true, and is not a Lie. 4. committeth also TRANSGRESSION-OF-THE-LAW.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—23. HE that ACKNOWLEDGETH the SON hath the FATHER also. 25. you, ETERNAL LIFE. 27. FREE-GIFT which **ye** have. 27. abide ye in him (b). 1. God, and *such* we are: therefore the WORLD. See 24 (twice), 27 (a), 5.

GOD are manifest, and the CHILDREN of the DEVIL: WHOSOEVER DOETH not Righteousness is not of GOD, neither HE that LOVETH not his BROTHER.

11 For this is the MESSAGE that ye heard from the Beginning, that we should love one another.

12 Not as Cain, *who* was of *that* WICKED one, and slew his BROTHER. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own WORKS were evil, and his BROTHER'S righteous.

§ VII.

13 Marvel not, [my] Brethren, if the WORLD hate you.

14 **W**e know That we have passed from DEATH unto LIFE, Because we love the BRETHREN. HE that LOVETH not [*his* BROTHER] abideth in DEATH.

15 WHOSOEVER HATETH his BROTHER is a Murderer: and ye know That No Murderer hath eternal Life abiding in Him.

16 Hereby perceive we the LOVE of *God*, Because *he* laid down his LIFE for Us: and *we* ought to lay down *our* LIVES for the BRETHREN.

17 But whoso hath *this* WORLD'S GOOD, and seeth his BROTHER have Need, and shutteth up his BOWELS of *compassion* from him, how dwelleth the LOVE of GOD in him?

18 My Little-children, let us not love in Word, neither in † Tongue; but in Deed and in Truth.

19 [And] hereby we † know That we are of the TRUTH, and shall assure our † HEARTS before Him.

20 For if *our* HEART condemn us, GOD is greater than our HEART, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloved, if † our HEART condemn us not, *then* have we Confidence toward GOD.

22 And whatsoever we ask, we receive † of him, Because we keep his COMMANDMENTS, and do *those* THINGS that are PLEASING in His sight.

23 And this is his COMMANDMENT, That we should believe on the NAME of his SON Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us Commandment.

24 And HE that KEEPETH his COMMANDMENTS dwelleth in Him, and *he* in him. And hereby we know That he abideth in us, by the SPIRIT which he hath given Us.

CHAPTER IV.

§ VIII.

1 Beloved, believe not Every Spirit, but try the SPIRITS whether they are of GOD: Because Many False-prophets are gone out into the WORLD.

2 Hereby know ye the SPIRIT of GOD: Every Spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ † is come in the Flesh is of GOD:

3 And Every Spirit that confesseth not † that JESUS Christ is come in the Flesh is not of GOD: and this is THAT *spirit* of ANTI-CHRIST, whereof ye have heard That it should come; and even now already is it in the WORLD.

4 **W**e are of GOD, Little-children, and have overcome them: Because greater is HE that is in you, than HE that is in the WORLD.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—18. TONGUE. 19. shall know. 19. HEART. 21. the HEART condemn not, it hath Confidence toward GOD. 22. from him. 2. hath come in. 3. JESUS, is not of GOD. See 13, 14, 19.

5 **They** are of the **WORLD**: therefore speak they of the **WORLD**, and the **WORLD** heareth Them.

6 **We** are of **GOD**: **HE** that **KNOWETH** **GOD** heareth us; he that is not of **GOD** heareth not us. Hereby know we the **SPIRIT** of **TRUTH**, and the **SPIRIT** of **ERROR**.

§ IX.

7 Beloved, let us love one another: For **LOVE** is of **GOD**; and **EVERY-ONE** that **LOVETH** is born of **GOD**, and knoweth **GOD**.

8 **HE** that **LOVETH** not knoweth not **GOD**; For **GOD** is **Love**.

9 In this was manifested the **LOVE** of **GOD** toward us, Because *that* **GOD** sent his **ONLY-BEGOTTEN** **SON** into the **WORLD**, that we might live through him.

10 Herein is **LOVE**, not That **we** †loved **GOD**, but That **he** loved us, and sent his **SON** *to be* the Propitiation for our **SINS**.

11 Beloved, if **GOD** so loved us, **we** ought also to love one another.

12 No man hath seen **GOD** at any time. If we love one another, **GOD** dwelleth in **Us**, and his **LOVE** is perfected in us.

13 Hereby know we That we dwell in Him, and **he** in **Us**, Because he hath given us of his **SPIRIT**.

14 And **we** have seen and do testify That the **FATHER** sent the **SON** *to be* the Saviour of the **WORLD**.

15 Whosoever shall confess That †Jesus is the **SON** of **GOD**, **GOD** dwelleth in Him, and **he** in **GOD**.

16 And **we** have known and believed the **LOVE** that **GOD** hath to us. **GOD** is **Love**; and **HE** that

DWELLETH in **LOVE** dwelleth in **GOD**, and **GOD** †in Him.

17 Herein is our **LOVE** made perfect, that we may have **Boldness** in the **DAY** of **JUDGMENT**: Because as **he** is so are **we** in this **WORLD**.

18 There is no **Fear** in **LOVE**; but **PERFECT** **Love** casteth out **FEAR**: Because **FEAR** hath **Torment**. **HE** that **FEARETH** is not made perfect in **LOVE**.

19 **We** love [him], Because **he** first loved us.

20 If a man say, I love **GOD**, and hateth his **BROTHER**, he is a **Liar**: for **HE** that **LOVETH** not his **BROTHER** whom he hath seen, †how can he love **GOD** whom he hath not seen?

21 And This **COMMANDMENT** have we from him, That **HE** who **LOVETH** **GOD** love his **BROTHER** also.

CHAPTER V.

§ X.

1 **WHOSOEVER** **BELIEVETH** That **Jesus** is the **CHRIST** is born of **GOD**: and **EVERY-ONE** that **LOVETH** **HIM** that **BEGAT** loveth **HIM** [also] that is **BEGOTTEN** of him.

2 By this we know That we love the **CHILDREN** of **GOD**, when we love **GOD**, and †keep his **COMMANDMENTS**.

3 For this is the **LOVE** of **GOD**, that we keep his **COMMANDMENTS**: and his **COMMANDMENTS** are not grievous.

4 For **WHATSOEVER** is **BORN** of **GOD** overcometh the **WORLD**: and this is *the **VICTORY** that

* **EMPHATIC TEXT**.—4. THAT **VICTORY** which **OVERCOMETH**.

† **VATICAN MANUSCRIPT**.—10. have loved **GOD**. 15. **Jesus** **Christ** is. 16. dwelleth in Him. 20. cannot love **GOD**. 2. do his **COMMANDMENTS**. See 19, 1.

OVERCOMETH the WORLD, *even* our FAITH.

5 † Who is HE that OVERCOMETH the WORLD, but HE that BELIEVETH That Jesus is the SON of GOD?

6 This is HE that CAME by Water and Blood, *even* Jesus *CHRIST; not by WATER only, but by WATER and †BLOOD. And *it is the SPIRIT that BEARETH-WITNESS, Because the SPIRIT is TRUTH.

7 For there are THREE that *BEAR-RECORD [in HEAVEN, the FATHER, the WORD, and the HOLY Ghost: and These THREE are One.

8 And there are THREE that BEAR-WITNESS in EARTH], the SPIRIT, and the WATER, and the BLOOD: and *these* THREE agree in ONE.

9 If we receive the WITNESS of MEN, the WITNESS of GOD is greater: For this is the WITNESS of GOD † which he hath testified of his SON.

10 HE that BELIEVETH on the SON of GOD hath the WITNESS in himself: HE that BELIEVETH not GOD, hath made him a Liar; Because he believeth not the RECORD that GOD gave of his SON.

11 And this is the RECORD, That GOD hath given to us eternal Life, and This LIFE is in his SON.

12 HE that HATH the SON hath LIFE; *and* HE that HATH not the SON of GOD hath not LIFE.

§ XI.

13 These things have I written unto YOU that BELIEVE on the NAME of the SON of GOD; That ye may know that ye have eternal Life, [and that ye may believe on the NAME of the SON of GOD].

14 And this is the CONFIDENCE that we have in him, That, if we ask Any thing according to his WILL, he heareth us:

15 And if we know That he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know That we have the PETITIONS that we desired † of him.

16 If any man see his BROTHER sin a Sin *which is* not unto Death, he shall ask, and he shall give him Life for THEM that SIN not unto Death. There is a Sin unto Death: I do not say that he shall pray for it.

17 All Unrighteousness is Sin: and there is a Sin not unto Death.

18 We know That WHOSOEVER is BORN of GOD sinneth not; but HE that is BEGOTTEN of GOD †keepeth himself, and *that* WICKED one toucheth him not.

19 *And* we know That we are of GOD, and the whole WORLD lieth in WICKEDNESS.

20 And we know that the SON of GOD is come, and hath given us an Understanding, that we may know HIM that is TRUE, and we are in HIM that is TRUE, *even* in his SON Jesus Christ. This is the TRUE God, and eternal LIFE.

21 Little-children, keep yourselves from IDOLS. [Amen.]

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—6. the CHRIST. 6. the SPIRIT is THAT which BEARETH-WITNESS, Because. 7. BEAR-WITNESS.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—5. And who is (a). 6. by BLOOD (a). 9. That he hath testified. 15. from him. 18. observeth him; and the WICKED one. See 7—8, 13, 21. *Subscription*: THE FIRST OF JOHN.

OF JOHN.

§ XII.

1 The ELDER unto the Elect Lady and her CHILDREN, whom **Ɛ** love in the Truth; and not **Ɛ** only, but also All **THEY** that have KNOWN the TRUTH;

2 For *the TRUTH'S sake, which DWELLETH in us, and shall be with us for EVER.

3 Grace be with you, Mercy, and Peace, from God the Father, and from [the Lord] Jesus Christ, the SON of the FATHER, in Truth and Love.

4 I rejoiced greatly That I found of thy CHILDREN *walking in Truth, as we have received a Commandment from the †FATHER.

5 And now I beseech thee, Lady, not as though I wrote a new Commandment unto thee, but that which we had from the Beginning, that we love one another.

6 And this is LOVE, that we walk after his COMMANDMENTS. †This is the COMMANDMENT, that, as ye have heard from the Beginning, ye should walk in it.

7 For Many Deceivers †are entered into the WORLD, *who CONFESS not that Jesus Christ is come in the Flesh. This is a DECEIVER and an ANTICHRIST.

8 Look to yourselves, that †we lose not *those* things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full Reward.

9 WHOSOEVER †TRANSGRESSETH, and abideth not in the DOCTRINE of CHRIST, hath not God. HE that ABIDETH in the DOCTRINE [of CHRIST], **ƥ** hath both the FATHER and the SON.

10 If there come any unto you, and bring not This DOCTRINE, receive him not into *your* House, neither bid Him God speed:

11 For HE that BIDDETH him God speed is partaker of his EVIL DEEDS.

§ XIII.

12 Having Many things to write unto You, I would not *write* with Paper and Ink: but I trust to come unto you, and speak Face to Face, that †our JOY may be full.

13 The CHILDREN of thy ELECT SISTER greet thee. [Amen]

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—THAT TRUTH'S sake which. 4. them that were walking in the Truth. 7. THEY who CONFESS not.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—*Title*: THE SECOND OF JOHN. 4. Father. 6. This COMMANDMENT is, as ye have heard from the Beginning, that ye should walk in the Same. 7. have gone forth into the WORLD. 8. ye lose not the things which we have wrought, but that ye receive (*a*). 9. EXCEEDETH, and abideth not. 12. your JOY (*a*). See 3, 9, 13. *Subscription*: THE SECOND OF JOHN.

† THE THIRD [EPISTLE]

OF JOHN.

1 The ELDER unto *the WELL-BELOVED Gaius, whom † I love in the Truth.

2 Beloved, I wish *above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as Thy SOUL prospereth.

3 For I rejoiced greatly, when the Brethren came and testified of the TRUTH that is in thee, even as thou walkest † in the Truth

4 I have no greater † Joy than to hear that MY Children walk † in Truth.

5 Beloved, thou doest faithfully whatsoever thou doest to the BRETHREN, and † to STRANGERS;

6 Which have borne witness of Thy CHARITY before the Church: whom if thou bring forward on their journey after a GODLY sort, thou shalt do well:

7 Because that for his NAME'S sake they went forth, taking Nothing of the † GENTILES.

8 ~~We~~ therefore ought to † receive SUCH, that we might be Fellow-helpers to the TRUTH.

9 I wrote † unto the CHURCH: but DIOTREPHES, who loveth to HAVE-THE-PREMINENCE among them, receiveth us not.

10 Wherefore, if I come, I will remember His DEEDS which he doeth, prating against us with malicious Words: and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the BRETHREN, and forbiddeth THEM that WOULD, and casteth *them* out of the CHURCH.

11 Beloved, follow not THAT which is EVIL, but THAT which is GOOD. HE that DOETH-GOOD is of GOD: [but] HE that DOETH-EVIL hath not seen GOD.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all *men*, and of the TRUTH Itself: yea, and ~~we~~ also bear record; and † ye know That our RECORD is true.

13 I had Many things to † write, but I will not with Ink and Pen write unto thee:

14 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak Face to Face. Peace *be* to thee. Our FRIENDS salute thee. Greet the FRIENDS by Name.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—1. Gaius the WELLBELOVED, whom. 2. concerning all things.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—Title: THE THIRD OF JOHN. 3. in the TRUTH (a).

4. Pleasure than to hear. 4. in the TRUTH (b). 5. this to Strange Brethren.

7. HEATHEN. 8. entertain SUCH, that. 9. something unto the CHURCH. 12. thou knowest That.

13. write unto thee, but. See 11. Subscription: THE THIRD OF JOHN.

OF JUDE.

SECTION I.

1 Jude, the Servant of Jesus Christ, and Brother of James, to THEM that are †SANCTIFIED by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, *and* called:

2 Mercy unto you, and Peace, and Love, be multiplied.

3 Beloved, when I gave All Diligence to write unto you of †the COMMON Salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort *you* that ye should earnestly contend for the FAITH which was once DELIVERED unto the SAINTS.

4 For there are Certain Men crept in unawares, * who were before of old ORDAINED to This CONDEMNATION, ungodly men, turning the GRACE of our GOD into Lasciviousness, and †denying * the ONLY Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew †this, *how* That the LORD, having saved the People out of the Land of Egypt, AFTERWARD destroyed THEM that BELIEVED not.

6 And * the Angels which

KEPT not THEIR First-estate, but left their OWN Habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting Chains under Darkness unto the Judgment of the Great Day.

7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the CITIES about them in LIKE Manner, giving Themselves over to fornication, and going after strange Flesh, are set forth for an Example, suffering the Vengeance of eternal Fire.

8 Likewise also These *filthy* Dreamers defile the Flesh, despise Dominion, and speak evil of Dignities.

9 †Yet MICHAEL the ARCH-ANGEL, when contending with the DEVIL he disputed about the Body of MOSES, durst not bring against him a railing Accusation, but said, "The Lord rebuke thee." ‡

10 But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as BRUTE Beasts, in Those things they corrupt themselves.

11 Woe unto them! For they have gone in the WAY of CAIN, and ran greedily after the ERROR of BALAAM for Reward, and

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—4. THEY who were of old ORDAINED. 4. OUR ONLY Absolute-ruler, the God and Lord, Jesus Christ. 6. THOSE Angels which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—Title: OF JUDE. 1. BELOVED by God. 3. OUR COMMON Salvation (*a*). 4. denying our ONLY Absolute-ruler and Lord, Jesus Christ. 5. all things, *how* That Jesus, having saved. || 9. When Michael the ARCHANGEL, then contending with the DEVIL, disputed about the Body of MOSES, he durst not.

‡ 9. Zech. iii. 2.

|| See 1 Cor. x. 9.

perished in the GAINSAYING of CORE.

§ II.

12 These are SPOTS in your FEASTS-OF-CHARITY, when they feast with you, feeding Themselves without fear: Clouds *they are* without water, †carried about of Winds; Trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots;

13 Raging Waves of the Sea, foaming out THEIR-OWN Shame; wandering Stars, to whom is reserved the †BLACKNESS of DARKNESS for EVER.

14 And Enoch also, the Seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, "Behold, the Lord cometh with Ten-thousands of his Saints,

15 "To execute Judgment upon all, and to convince ALL that are UNGODLY [among them] of All their ungodly DEEDS which they have ungodly-committed, and of All their HARD *speeches* which ungodly Sinners have spoken against him." †

16 These are Murmurers, Complainers, walking after their own LUSTS; and their MOUTH speaketh great swelling *words*, having men's Persons in admiration because of Advantage.

17 But, Beloved, remember *ye* *the WORDS which were SPOKEN-BEFORE of the APOSTLES of our LORD Jesus Christ;

18 *How* That they told you there should be Mockers †in the Last Time, who should walk after THEIR-OWN UNGODLY LUSTS.

19 These be THEY who SEPARATE themselves, sensual, having not the Spirit.

20 But *ye*, beloved, building up yourselves on YOUR MOST-HOLY Faith, praying in the holy Ghost.

21 Keep Yourselves in the Love of God, looking for the MERCY of our LORD Jesus Christ unto eternal Life.

22 And of Some have compassion, †making a difference:

23 And Others save with Fear, pulling *them* out of the FIRE; hating even the GARMENT SPOTTED by the FLESH.

24 Now unto HIM that is ABLE to keep you from falling, and to present *you* faultless before the presence of his GLORY with exceeding Joy,

25 To the Only [Wise] God our Saviour, †*be* Glory, [and] Majesty, Dominion and Power, both now and EVER. [Amen.]

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. THOSE WORDS which were.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT.—12. carried away of Winds. 13. Blackness of Darkness (*a*). 18. during the Last Time. 22. in whom there is a difference. 25. through Jesus Christ our LORD, be Glory, Majesty, Dominion, and Power, for All Eternity, both now and EVER. See 15, 25 (thrice). *Subscription: OF JUDE.*

‡ 14. Gen. v. 18.

THE REVELATION

OF [St.] JOHN [THE DIVINE].

CHAPTER I.

1 The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which GOD gave unto him, to shew unto his SERVANTS things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified *it* by his ANGEL unto his SERVANT John:

2 Who bare record of the WORD of GOD, and of the TESTIMONY of Jesus Christ, † and of all things that he saw.

3 Blessed *is* HE that READETH, and THEY that HEAR the WORDS of *this* PROPHECY, and keep *those* THINGS which are WRITTEN therein: for the TIME *is* at hand.

4 John to *the SEVEN Churches which are in ASIA: Grace *be* unto you, and Peace, † from *HIM which IS, and which WAS, and which IS TO COME; and from the SEVEN Spirits which are before his THRONE;

5 And from Jesus Christ, *who is* the FAITHFUL WITNESS, *and* the FIRST-BEGOTTEN of the DEAD,

and the PRINCE of the KINGS of the EARTH. Unto HIM that † LOVED us, and washed us from our SINS in his own BLOOD,

6 And hath made † us Kings and Priests unto *GOD and his Father; to Him *be* GLORY and DOMINION for EVER and EVER. Amen.

7 Behold, he cometh with CLOUDS; and Every Eye shall see him, and they *also* which pierced Him: and All KINDREDS of the EARTH shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen.

8 ¶ am ALPHA and OMEGA, [the Beginning and the Ending], saith † the LORD, * which IS, and which WAS, and which IS TO COME, the ALMIGHTY.

9 ¶ John, [who also am] your BROTHER, and † Companion in TRIBULATION, and in the KINGDOM and Patience † of Jesus Christ, was in *the ISLE that is CALLED Patmos, for the WORD of GOD, and for the TESTIMONY of Jesus Christ.

☞ The various Readings subjoined are taken from Dr. Birch's Collation of the VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160, which is attributed by him to the eleventh century. Wherever these Readings agree with those of any of the three earliest MSS., A, B, or C, the letter denoting that MS., is inserted; or if there are two or three MSS. which have the same Reading, the two earliest are referred to.

N.B. The *Title* in the VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160 is not given by Dr. Birch:—that in the ALEXANDRIAN MANUSCRIPT is THE REVELATION OF JOHN.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—4. THOSE SEVEN Churches which are. 4. HIM, the HE who IS, and HE who WAS, and HE who IS TO COME. 6. his GOD and Father. 8. HE who IS, and HE who WAS, and HE who IS TO COME, the ALMIGHTY. 9. THAT ISLE which is CALLED.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—2. *as to* whatsoever things he saw (A B). 4. from God, the HE who IS, and HE who WAS, and HE who IS TO COME (B). 5. loveth us, and hath washed us (A B). 6. us a Kingdom, *even* Priests (A C). 8. the Lord GOD, the HE who IS, and HE who WAS, and HE who IS TO COME (A B) 9. Partaker in the TRIBULATION and Kingdom and. 9. of Christ Jesus (B). See 8 (A B), 9 (A B).

10 I was in the Spirit on the LORD'S Day, and heard behind me a great Voice, as of a Trumpet,

11 Saying, [I am ALPHA and OMEGA, the FIRST and the LAST: and], What thou seest, write in a Book, and send *it* unto *the SEVEN Churches [which are in ASIA]; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Lardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.

12 And I turned to see the VOICE that spake with me. And being turned, I saw Seven golden Candlesticks;

13 And in the Midst of the SEVEN Candlesticks *one* like unto the Son of Man, clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the PAPS with a golden Girdle.

14 His HEAD and *his* HAIRS *were* white †like Wool, as white as Snow; and his EYES *were* as a Flame of Fire;

15 And his FEET like unto fine Brass, as if they burned in a Furnace; and his VOICE as the Sound of many Waters.

16 And he had in his RIGHT Hand seven Stars: and out of his MOUTH went a sharp two-edged Sword: and his COUNTENANCE *was* as the SUN shineth in his STRENGTH.

17 And when I saw him, I fell at his FEET as dead. And he laid his †RIGHT Hand upon me, saying [unto me], Fear not; I am the FIRST and the LAST:

18 *I am* HE that LIVETH, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for EVERMORE, Amen; and have the KEYS of †HELL and of DEATH.

19 Write †the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter;

20 The MYSTERY of the SEVEN Stars which thou sawest in my RIGHT-HAND, and the SEVEN GOLDEN Candlesticks. The SEVEN Stars are the Angels of the SEVEN Churches: and the †SEVEN Candlesticks which thou sawest are the Seven Churches.

CHAPTER II.

1 Unto the ANGEL of the CHURCH †of EPHESUS write; THESE-THINGS saith HE that HOLDETH the SEVEN Stars in his RIGHT-HAND, *who WALKETH in the Midst of the SEVEN GOLDEN Candlesticks;

2 I know thy WORKS, and thy LABOUR, and thy PATIENCE, and How thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried THEM which SAY they are Apostles, and are not, and hast found them Liars:

3 And hast †borne, and hast Patience, and for my NAME'S sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4 Nevertheless I have *somewhat* against thee, Because thou hast left thy FIRST LOVE.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the FIRST Works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—11. THOSE SEVEN Churches which are. 1. HE who WALKETH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—14. even as Wool (B). 17. RIGHT-HAND (A B). 18. DEATH and of HELL (A B). 19. therefore the things (A B). 20. SEVEN CANDLESTICKS are the Seven Churches (A B). 1. in Ephesus write (A B). 3. Patience, and hast borne for my NAME'S sake, and hast not wearied (B). Nevertheless. See 11 (A B) (twice), 17 (A B).

will remove thy CANDLESTICK out of his PLACE, except thou repent.

6 But This thou hast, That thou hatest the DEEDS of the NICOLAITANES, which \ddagger also hate.

7 HE that HATH an Ear, let him hear what the SPIRIT saith unto the CHURCHES; To HIM that OVERCOMETH will I give to eat of the TREE of LIFE, which is in \dagger the Midst of the PARADISE of GOD.

8 And unto the ANGEL of the CHURCH in Smyrna write; THESE-THINGS saith the FIRST and the LAST, which was dead, and is alive;

9 I know Thy WORKS, and TRIBULATION, and POVERTY, but thou art rich; and *I know* the BLASPHEMY of THEM which SAY they are Jews, and are not, but *are* the Synagogue of SATAN.

10 Fear None of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the DEVIL shall \dagger cast *some* of you into Prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have Tribulation ten Days: be thou faithful unto Death, and I will give thee a CROWN of LIFE.

11 HE that HATH an Ear, let him hear what the SPIRIT saith unto the CHURCHES: HE that OVERCOMETH shall not be hurt of the SECOND DEATH.

12 And to the ANGEL of the CHURCH in Pergamos write; THESE-THINGS saith HE which HATH the SHARP SWORD with TWO-EDGES;

13 I know thy WORKS, and where thou dwellest, *even* where SATAN'S SEAT *is*: and thou holdest fast my NAME, and hast not denied my FAITH, [even] in *those* DAYS wherein Antipas *was* my FAITHFUL MARTYR, who was slain among you, where SATAN dwelleth.

14 But I have a few things against thee, Because thou hast there them that hold the DOCTRINE of Balaam, who taught BALAC to cast a Stumblingblock before the CHILDREN of Israel, \dagger to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication.

15 So hast *thou* also them that hold the DOCTRINE of the \dagger NICOLAITANES, which thing I hate.

16 Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the SWORD of my MOUTH.

17 HE that HATH an Ear, let him hear what the SPIRIT saith unto the CHURCHES; To HIM that OVERCOMETH will I give [to eat] of the HIDDEN MANNA, and will give him a white Stone, and in the STONE a new Name written, which no man knoweth saving HE that RECEIVETH *it*.

18 And unto the ANGEL of the CHURCH in Thyatira write; THESE-THINGS saith *the SON of GOD, who HATH his EYES like unto a Flame of Fire, and his FEET *are* like fine Brass;

19 I know Thy WORKS, and CHARITY, and \dagger SERVICE, and FAITH, and thy PATIENCE, and

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—18. THAT SON OF GOD who HATH.

\dagger VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—7. the PARADISE of my GOD (B). 10. now cast *some* of you (B). 14. even to eat (B). 15. Nicolaitanes likewise. Repent therefore; or else (A B). 19. FAITH, and SERVICE, and thy PATIENCE (A B). See 13 (B), 17 (A B).

thy WORKS; [and] the LAST to be more than the FIRST.

20 Notwithstanding I have [a few things] against thee, †Because thou sufferest THAT WOMAN Jezebel, which CALLETH herself a Prophetess, †to teach and to seduce My Servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.

21 And I gave her Space to repent of her FORNICATION, and she †repented not.

22 Behold, †I will cast her into a Bed, and THEM that COMMIT-ADULTERY with her into great Tribulation, except they repent of †their DEEDS.

23 And I will kill her CHILDREN with Death; and All the CHURCHES shall know That I am HE which SEARCHETH the Reins and Hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your WORKS.

24 But unto You I say, †and unto the REST in Thyatira, as many as have not this DOCTRINE, [and] which have not known the DEPTHS of SATAN, as they speak; I [will] put upon you none Other Burden.

25 But that which ye have *already* hold fast till †I come.

26 And HE that OVERCOMETH, and *KEEPETH my WORKS unto the End, to him will I give Power over the NATIONS:

27 And he shall rule them with a Rod of Iron; as the VESSELS of

a POTTER shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of my FATHER.

28 And I will give him the MORNING STAR.

29 HE that HATH an Ear, let him hear what the SPIRIT saith unto the CHURCHES.

CHAPTER III.

1 And unto the ANGEL of the CHURCH in Sardis write; THESE-THINGS saith HE that HATH the SEVEN Spirits of GOD, and the SEVEN Stars; I know Thy WORKS, That thou hast a †NAME That thou livest, and art dead.

2 Be watchful, and †strengthen the THINGS which REMAIN, †that are ready to die: for I have not found Thy WORKS perfect before †GOD.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast received [and heard, and hold fast], and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a Thief, and thou shalt not know What Hour I will come upon thee.

4 †Thou hast a Few Names [even] in Sardis which have not defiled their GARMENTS; and they shall walk with me in white: For they are worthy.

5 HE that OVERCOMETH, †the same shall be clothed in white Raiment; and I will not blot out his NAME out of the BOOK of LIFE, but I will confess his NAME

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—26. HE that KEEPETH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—20. That thou sufferest thy WIFE Jezebel (B) 20. and she teacheth and seduceth my Servants, to commit (B). 21. would not repent (B C). 22. I will cast (A B). 22. her DEEDS (B C). 24. YOU OTHERS which are in Thyatira (A B). 25. I shall open (B). 1. a Name (A B) and livest, and art dead (B). 2. keep the THINGS which remain. 2. which thou wast ready to cast away: for (B). 2. my GOD (A B). 4. But thou hast (B). 5. shall be thus clothed (A C). See 19 (A B), 20 (A B), 24 (A C), 24 (A C), 3 (B), 4 (B).

before my FATHER, and before his ANGELS.

6 HE that HATH an Ear, let him hear what the SPIRIT saith unto the CHURCHES.

7 And to the ANGEL of the CHURCH in Philadelphia write; THESE-THINGS saith HE that is HOLY, HE that is TRUE, HE that HATH the KEY of DAVID, HE that OPENETH, and no man †shutteth; and shutteth, and no man †openeth;

8 I know Thy WORKS: behold, I have set before thee an open Door, and no man can shut it: For thou hast a Little Strength, and hast kept My WORD, and hast not denied my NAME.

9 Behold, I will make THEM of the SYNAGOGUE of SATAN; which SAY they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy FEET, and to know That †I have loved thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the WORD of my PATIENCE, I also will keep Thee from *the HOUR of TEMPTATION, which SHALL come upon all the WORLD, to try THEM that DWELL upon the EARTH.

11 [Behold], I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy Crown,

12 HIM that OVERCOMETH will I make a Pillar in the TEMPLE of my GOD, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the NAME of my GOD, and the

NAME of the [CITY of my GOD which is] NEW Jerusalem, which cometh down †out of HEAVEN from my GOD: and I will write upon him †my NEW NAME.

13 HE that HATH an Ear, let him hear what the SPIRIT saith unto the CHURCHES.

14 And unto the ANGEL of the CHURCH †of the Laodiceans write; THESE-THINGS saith the AMEN, the FAITHFUL and true WITNESS, the BEGINNING of the CREATION of GOD;

15 I know Thy WORKS, That thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot.

16 So then Because thou art lukewarm, and neither †cold nor hot, I will spue Thee out of my MOUTH.

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have Need of Nothing; and knowest not That thou art WRETCHED, and †miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked:

18 I counsel thee to buy of me Gold tried in the Fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white Raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the SHAME of thy NAKEDNESS do not appear; and †anoint thine EYES with Eyesalve, that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

20 Behold, I stand at the DOOR, and knock: if any man hear my

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—10. THAT HOUR of TEMPTATION which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—7. shall shut; and he that shutteth and no man shall open. I know. 9. I have loved thee (B). 12. from HEAVEN. 12. a NEW NAME (B). 14. in Laodicea write (A B). 16. hot nor cold, I will (B C). 17. MISERABLE (A B) and POOR, and blind and naked. 18. Eyesalve, to anoint thine EYES, that thou mayest see (B). See 11 (A B), 12.

VOICE, and open the DOOR, I will † come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

21 To HIM that OVERCOMETH will I grant to sit [with me] in my THRONE, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my FATHER in his THRONE.

22 HE that HATH an Ear, let him hear what the SPIRIT saith unto the CHURCHES.

CHAPTER IV.

1 After this I looked, and, behold, a Door *was* opened in HEAVEN: and the FIRST VOICE which I heard *was* as it were of a Trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which † must be hereafter.

2 And immediately I was in the Spirit: and, behold, a Throne *was* set in HEAVEN, and *one* sat on the † THRONE.

3 And HE that SAT *was* to look upon like a Jasper and a Sardine-stone: and *there was* a Rainbow round about the THRONE, † in Sight like unto an Emerald.

4 And round about the THRONE *were* four and twenty Seats: and upon the SEATS [I saw] † FOUR-AND-TWENTY Elders sitting, clothed in white Raiment; and [they had] on their HEADS Crowns of Gold.

5 And out of the THRONE pro-

ceeded Lightnings and † Thunderings and Voices: and *there were* Seven Lamps of Fire burning before the THRONE, which are the † SEVEN Spirits of GOD.

6 And before † the THRONE *there was* a Sea of Glass like unto Crystal: and in the Midst of the THRONE, and round about the THRONE, *were* Four Beasts full of Eyes before and behind.

7 [And] the FIRST BEAST *was* like a Lion, and the SECOND Beast like a Calf, and the THIRD Beast had † a FACE as a Man, and the FOURTH Beast *was* like a flying Eagle.

8 And the Four Beasts had † each of them six Wings about *him*; and *they were* full of Eyes within: and they rest not Day and Night, saying, Holy, holy, † holy, * Lord GOD ALMIGHTY, which *WAS*, and *IS*, † and *is* to COME.

9 And when *those* BEASTS give Glory and Honour and Thanks to HIM that SAT on the THRONE, * who LIVETH for EVER and EVER,

10 The FOUR-AND-TWENTY Elders fall down before HIM that SAT on the THRONE, and worship HIM that LIVETH for EVER and EVER, and cast their CROWNS before the THRONE, saying,

11 Thou art worthy, † O Lord, to receive GLORY and HONOUR and POWER: For *thou* hast created ALL things, and for thy

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. *is* the Lord GOD, the ALMIGHTY, HE who WAS, and HE who IS, and HE who IS TO COME. 9. to HIM who LIVETH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—20. both come in (B). 1. must come to pass. Immediately after These things, I was in the Spirit (A B). 2. THRONE, to look upon like a Jasper and. 3. like a Vision of Emeralds (B). 4. Four-and-twenty Elders (A). 5. Voices and Thunderings (A B). 5. Seven Spirits of. 6. his THRONE *there was* as a Sea (B). 7. the Face of a Man (B). 8. every one of them (B). 8. holy, holy, holy, holy, *is* the Lord GOD. 8. *and is*. 11. O LORD, even our GOD, the HOLY one, to receive (B). See 21, 4 (A), 4 (A), 7.

PLEASURE they †are, and were created.

CHAPTER V.

1 And I saw in the RIGHT-HAND of HIM that SAT on the THRONE a Book written within and on the †backside, sealed with seven Seals.

2 And I saw a strong Angel proclaiming with a loud Voice, Who is worthy to open the BOOK, and to loose the SEALS thereof?

3 And no man in †HEAVEN, nor in EARTH, neither under the EARTH, was able to open the BOOK, neither to look thereon.

4 And I wept much, Because no man was found worthy to open [and to read] the BOOK, neither to look thereon.

5 And one of the ELDERS saith unto me, Weep not: behold, *the LION of the TRIBE of Juda, the ROOT of David, hath †prevailed to open the BOOK, and [to loose] the SEVEN Seals thereof.

6 And I beheld, [and, lo], in the Midst of the THRONE and of the FOUR Beasts, and in the Midst of the ELDERS, stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven Horns and seven Eyes, †which are *the SEVEN Spirits of GOD SENT-FORTH into All the EARTH.

7 And he came and took †the BOOK out of the RIGHT-HAND of HIM that SAT upon the THRONE.

8 And when he had taken the

BOOK, the FOUR Beasts and FOUR-and-TWENTY Elders fell down before the LAMB, having every one of them †Harps, and golden Vials full of Odours, which are the †PRAYERS of SAINTS.

9 And they sung †a new Song, saying, Thou art worthy to †take the BOOK, and to open the SEALS thereof: For thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to GOD by thy BLOOD out of Every Kindred, and Tongue, and People, and Nation;

10 And hast made †us unto our GOD Kings and Priests: and †we shall reign on the EARTH.

11 And I beheld, and I heard †the Voice of many Angels round about the THRONE and the BEASTS and the ELDERS: and the NUMBER of them was Ten-thousand times Ten-thousand, and Thousands of Thousands;

12 Saying with a loud Voice, Worthy is *the LAMB that was SLAIN to receive POWER, and †Riches, and Wisdom, and Strength, and Honour, and Glory, and Blessing.

13 And Every Creature which is in HEAVEN, and on the EARTH, and under the EARTH, and [such as are] in the SEA, and †ALL that are in them, heard I saying, BLESSING, and HONOUR, and GLORY, and POWER, *be* unto HIM that SITTETH upon the THRONE, and unto the LAMB for EVER and †EVER.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—5. THAT LION which is of the TRIBE. 6. THOSE SEVEN Spirits of GOD which are SENT-FORTH. 12. THAT LAMB which was SLAIN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—11. were (A), and were created. 1. outside, sealed (B). 3. HEAVEN above, nor in (B). 5. prevailed: *HE it is* that OPENETH the BOOK, and the SEVEN (B). 6. which are the SEVEN Spirits of God sent-forth (B) 7. *the Book* out of (A). 8. a Harp and (A B). 8. Prayers of. 9. a New Song. 9. open the BOOK, and to open. 10. them unto our (A B). 10. they shall reign. 11. as the Voice (B). 12. RICHES, and (B). 13. ALL THINGS that are in them, I heard All saying. 13. EVER. AMEN (B). See 4 (B), 5 (A B), 6 (B), 13 (A).

14 And the **FOUR** Beasts said, † Amen. And † the **FOUR-and-TWENTY** Elders fell down and worshipped [him that liveth for **EVER** and **EVER**].

CHAPTER VI.

1 And I saw † when the **LAMB** opened one of the † **SEALS**, and I heard, as † it were the Noise of Thunder, one of the **FOUR** Beasts saying, Come and † see.

2 † And [I saw, and] Behold, a white Horse: and **HE** that **SAT** on him had a Bow; and a Crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

3 And when he had opened the **SECOND** Seal, I heard the **SECOND** Beast say, Come and † see.

4 And there went out Another Horse *that was* red: and † *power* was given to **HIM** that **SAT** thereon to take **PEACE** from the **EARTH**, [and] that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great Sword.

5 And when he had opened the † **THIRD** Seal, I heard the **THIRD** Beast say, Come and † see. And [I beheld, and] lo, a black Horse; and **HE** that **SAT** on him had a Pair-of-Balances in his **HAND**.

6 And I heard a Voice in the Midst of the † **FOUR** Beasts say, A Measure of Wheat for a Penny, and Three Measures of Barley for a Penny; and *see* thou hurt not the **OIL** and the **WINE**.

7 And when he had opened the **FOURTH SEAL**, I heard [the Voice of] the **FOURTH** Beast say, Come and † see.

8 And † I looked, and behold a pale Horse: and **HIS** Name that **SAT** on him was **DEATH**, and **HELL** followed [with] him. And Power was given unto them over the **FOURTH** part of the **EARTH**, to kill with Sword, and with Hunger, and with Death, and with the **BEASTS** of the **EARTH**.

9 And when he had opened the **FIFTH** Seal, I saw under the **ALTAR** the **SOULS** of **THEM** that were **SLAIN** for the **WORD** of **GOD**, and for the **TESTIMONY** † which they held:

10 And they cried with a loud Voice, saying, How long, *O* **LORD**, **HOLY** and † **TRUE**, dost thou not judge and avenge our **BLOOD** on **THEM** that **DWELL** on the **EARTH**?

11 And † white Robes were given unto every one of them: and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a [little] Season, until *their **FELLOWSERVANTS** also and their **BRETHREN**, that **SHOULD** be killed as *they were*, should be † fulfilled.

12 And [I beheld] when he had opened the **SIXTH SEAL**, [and lo], there was a great Earthquake; and the **SUN** became black as Sackcloth of Hair, and the **MOON** became as Blood;

13 And the **STARS** of **HEAVEN**

* **EMPHATIC TEXT**.—11. **THOSE FELLOWSERVANTS** of theirs, and **THOSE BRETHREN** of theirs which **SHOULD**.

† **VATICAN MANUSCRIPT**, No. 1160.—14. And the **FOUR** Beasts said **AMEN** (B). 14. And the **ELDERS** fell down and (A B). 1. That the **LAMB**. 1. **SEVEN** Seals (A B). 1. a Voice of Thunder, one (A B). 1. behold (B). 2. And, lo, a white Horse (B). 3. behold. And there. 4. it was given. 5. **THIRD SEAL** (A B). 5. behold. (B). 6. **BEASTS** say. 7. behold (B). 8. lo, a pale Horse, and **HE** that **SAT** (B). 9. of the **LAMB** which (B). 10. true (A B). 11. a white Robe was given unto them; and (B). 11. completed. And. See 14 (A B), 2 (B), 4 (B), 5 (B), 7 (B C), 8 (B). 11 (B), 12, 12 (B C).

fell unto the EARTH, even as a Fig-tree casteth her UNTIMELY-FIGS, when she is shaken of a Mighty Wind.

14 And the †Heaven departed †as a Scroll when it is rolled together; and Every Mountain and Island were moved out of their PLACES.

15 And the KINGS of the EARTH, and the GREAT-MEN, and †the RICH-MEN, and the CHIEF-CAPTAINS, and the MIGHTY-MEN, and Every Bondman, and [Every] Free-man, hid themselves in the DENS and in the ROCKS of the MOUNTAINS;

16 And said to the MOUNTAINS and ROCKS, Fall on us, and hide us from the Face of HIM that SITTETH on the THRONE, and from the WRATH of the LAMB.

17 For the GREAT DAY of his WRATH is come; and who shall be able to †stand?

CHAPTER VII.

§ III.

1 And after †these things I saw Four Angels standing on the FOUR Corners of the EARTH, holding the FOUR Winds of the EARTH, that the Wind should not blow on the EARTH, nor on the SEA, nor on Any Tree.

2 And I saw Another Angel ascending from the East, having the †Seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud Voice, to the FOUR Angels, to whom it was

given to hurt the EARTH and the SEA,

3 Saying, Hurt not the EARTH, neither the SEA, nor the TREES, till we have sealed the SERVANTS of our GOD in their †FOREHEADS.

4 And I heard the NUMBER of THEM which were SEALED: [*and there were sealed an Hundred-and-forty-and-four Thousand*] || of all the Tribes of the Children of Israel.

5 Of the Tribe of Juda *were* sealed Twelve Thousand. Of the Tribe of Reuben [*were sealed*] Twelve Thousand. Of the Tribe of Gad [*were sealed*] Twelve Thousand.

6 Of the Tribe of Aser [*were sealed*] Twelve Thousand. Of the Tribe of Nephthalim [*were sealed*] Twelve Thousand. Of the Tribe of Manasses [*were sealed*] Twelve Thousand.

7 Of the Tribe of Simeon [*were sealed*] Twelve Thousand. Of the Tribe of Levi [*were sealed*] Twelve Thousand. Of the Tribe of Issachar [*were sealed*] Twelve Thousand.

8 Of the Tribe of Zabulon [*were sealed*] Twelve Thousand. Of the Tribe of Joseph [*were sealed*] Twelve Thousand. Of the Tribe of Benjamin [*were sealed*] Twelve Thousand.

§ IV.

9 After this I beheld, and, lo, a great Multitude, which no man could number, of All Nations,

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—14. HEAVEN (A B). 14. rolled together as a Scroll; and every. 15. the CHIEF-CAPTAINS, and the RICH-MEN, and the MIGHTY-MEN (A B). 17. be saved? 1. this, I saw (A B). 2. Seals of the. 3. FOREHEAD. See 15 (A B), 4, 5—8. *The words, "were sealed," are omitted also in A B every time except the first and last.*

|| *The words "and there were sealed an Hundred-and-forty-four-Thousand," are found in the three earliest MSS., A, B, C.*

and Kindreds, and People, and Tongues, stood before the THRONE, and before the LAMB, clothed with white Robes and Palms in their HANDS;

10 And †cried with a loud Voice, saying, SALVATION to *our GOD which SITTETH upon the THRONE, and unto the LAMB.

11 And All the ANGELS stood round about the THRONE, and *about* the ELDERS and the FOUR Beasts, and fell before the THRONE on their †Faces, and worshipped GOD,

12 Saying, Amen: BLESSING, and GLORY, and WISDOM, and THANKSGIVING, and HONOUR, and POWER, and MIGHT, *be* unto our GOD for EVER and EVER. Amen.

13 And one of the ELDERS answered, saying unto me, What are These which are arrayed in WHITE ROBES? and whence came they?

14 And I said unto him, †Sir, *thou* knowest. And he said to me, These are THEY which CAME out of GREAT TRIBULATION, and have washed their ROBES, and made them white in the BLOOD of the LAMB.

15 Therefore are they before the THRONE of GOD, and serve him Day and Night in his TEMPLE: and HE that SITTETH on the THRONE shall dwell among them.

16 They shall hunger no more, neither thirst [any more]; neither shall the SUN light on them, nor Any Heat.

17 For *the LAMB which is in the Midst of the THRONE shall

feed them, and shall lead them unto Living Fountains of Waters: and GOD shall wipe away All Tears from their EYES.

CHAPTER VIII.

1 And when he had opened the SEVENTH SEAL, there was Silence in HEAVEN about the space of Half-an-Hour.

2 And I saw the SEVEN Angels which stood before GOD; and to them were given Seven Trumpets.

3 And Another Angel came and stood at the ALTAR, having a golden Censer; and there was given unto him much Incense, that he should offer *it* with the PRAYERS of all SAINTS upon *the GOLDEN ALTAR which was before the THRONE.

4 And the SMOKE of the INCENSE, *which came* with the PRAYERS of the SAINTS, ascended up before GOD out of the ANGEL'S Hand.

5 And the ANGEL took the CENSER, and filled it with FIRE of the ALTAR, and cast *it* into the EARTH: and there were †Voices, and Thunderings, and Lightnings, and an Earthquake.

6 And *the SEVEN Angels which HAD the SEVEN Trumpets prepared themselves to sound.

7 The FIRST [Angel] sounded, and there followed Hail and Fire mingled with Blood, and they were cast upon the †EARTH: and the THIRD part of TREES was burnt up, and All green Grass was burnt up.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—10. THAT GOD of ours who SITTETH. 17. THAT LAMB which is. 3. THAT GOLDEN ALTAR which was. 6. THOSE SEVEN Angels which HAD.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—10. they cried (A B). 11. FACES (A B). 14. My Lord, *thou* knowest (B C). 5. Thunderings and Voices, and (B). 7. EARTH, and the THIRD part of the EARTH was burnt up; and the THIRD part of TREES was (A B). See 16, 7 (A B).

8 And the SECOND Angel sounded, and as it were a great † Mountain burning with Fire was cast into the SEA: and the THIRD part of the SEA became Blood;

9 And the THIRD part of *the CREATURES which were in the SEA, and HAD Life, died; and the THIRD part of the SHIPS were destroyed.

10 And the THIRD Angel sounded, and there fell a great Star from HEAVEN, burning as it were a Lamp, and it fell upon the THIRD part of the RIVERS, and upon the FOUNTAINS of WATERS;

11 And the NAME of the STAR is called † Wormwood: and the THIRD part of the WATERS became Wormwood: and Many † Men died of the WATERS, Because they were made bitter.

12 And the FOURTH Angel sounded, and the THIRD part of the SUN was smitten, and the THIRD part of the MOON, and the THIRD part of the STARS; so as the THIRD part of them was darkened, † and the DAY shone not for a THIRD part of it, and the NIGHT likewise.

13 And I beheld, and heard an † Angel flying through the Midst-of-Heaven, saying with a loud Voice, Woe, Woe, Woe, to the INHABITERS of the EARTH by reason of the OTHER Voices of the TRUMPET of *the THREE Angels, which are YET to sound!

CHAPTER IX.

1 And the FIFTH Angel sounded, and I saw a Star fall from HEAVEN unto the EARTH: and to him was given the KEY of the BOTTOMLESS PIT.

2 [And he opened the BOTTOMLESS-pit]; and there arose a Smoke out of the PIT, as the Smoke of a great † Furnace; and the SUN and the AIR were darkened by reason of the SMOKE of the PIT.

3 And there came out of the SMOKE Locusts upon the EARTH: and unto them was given Power, as the SCORPIONS of the EARTH have [Power].

4 And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the GRASS of the EARTH, neither Any Green thing, neither Any Tree; but [only] *those* MEN which have not the SEAL of GOD in their FOREHEADS.

5 And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five Months: and their TORMENT *was* as the Torment of a Scorpion, when he striketh a Man.

6 And in those DAYS shall MEN seek DEATH, and shall † not find it; and shall desire to die, and DEATH shall flee from them.

7 And the SHAPES of the LOCUSTS *were* like unto Horses prepared unto Battle; and on their HEADS *were* as it were † Crowns

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—9. THOSE CREATURES which were in the SEA, THINGS having Life, died. 13. THOSE THREE Angels which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—8. burning Mountain was cast (B). 11. WORMWOOD (A B). 11. MEN (A B). 12. and the THIRD part of them appeared not: the DAY and the NIGHT likewise (B). And. 13. Eagle flying (A B). 2. burning Furnace; and (B). 6. by no means find it (A B). 7. golden Crowns (B); and their FACES *were* as the Face of Men. See 2 (B), 3, 4 (A B)

like Gold, and their FACES *were* as the Faces of Men.

8 And they had Hair as the Hair of Women, and their TEETH [were] as *the teeth* of Lions.

9 And they had Breastplates, [as it were Breastplates] of Iron; and the SOUND of their WINGS *was* as the Sound of † Chariots of many Horses running to Battle.

10 And they had Tails like unto Scorpions, † and there were Stings in their TAILS: and their POWER *was* to hurt MEN five Months.

11 And they had † a King over them, *which is* the ANGEL of the BOTTOMLESS-pit, whose Name in the Hebrew-tongue is Abaddon, but in the GREEK-tongue † hath his Name Apollyon.

12 ONE WOE is past; *and*, behold, there † come Two Woos more † hereafter.

13 And the SIXTH Angel sounded, and I heard a Voice from the FOUR Horns of *the GOLDEN ALTAR which is before GOD,

14 Saying to the SIXTH Angel which had the TRUMPET, Loose * the FOUR Angels which are BOUND in the GREAT RIVER Euphrates.

15 And * the FOUR Angels were loosed, which were PREPARED for an HOUR, and a Day, and a Month, and a Year, for to slay the THIRD part of MEN.

16 And the NUMBER of the † Ar-

my † of the HORSEMEN *were* † Two Hundred Thousand Thousand: and I heard the NUMBER of them.

17 And thus I saw the HORSES in the VISION, and THEM that SAT on them, having Breastplates of Fire, and of Jacinth, and Brimstone: and the HEADS of the HORSES *were* as the Heads of Lions; and out of their MOUTHS issued Fire and Smoke and Brimstone.

18 By these † THREE was the THIRD part of MEN killed, by * the FIRE, and [by] the SMOKE, and [by] the BRIMSTONE, which ISSUED-OUT of their MOUTHS.

19 For † their POWER is in their MOUTH, and in their TAILS: for their TAILS *were* like unto Serpents, and had Heads, and with them they do hurt.

20 And the REST of the MEN which were not killed by these PLAGUES [yet] repented not of the WORKS of their HANDS, that they should not worship DEVILS, and † Idols of GOLD, and SILVER, [and BRASS], and STONE, and of WOOD: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk:

21 Neither repented they of their MURDERS, nor of their SORCERIES, nor of their FORNICATION, nor of their THEFTS.

CHAPTER X.

1 And I saw [Another] mighty

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—13. THAT GOLDEN ALTAR which is. 14. THOSE FOUR Angels which are. 15. THOSE FOUR Angels. 18. THAT FIRE and by THAT SMOKE, and by THAT BRIMSTONE, which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—9. many Chariots running to battle. 10. and the Stings in their TAILS had Power to HURT MEN (B). 11. for King over them, an Angel of (B). 11. *it is* Apollyon. 12. cometh Two Woos more (A). And after these things, the SIXTH Angel also sounded (B). 16. Armies (A B). 16. of the HORSE. 16. Ten-thousand times Ten-thousand (B): I heard (A B). 18. THREE Plagues was the THIRD part of MEN killed, by THAT FIRE, and THAT SMOKE, and THAT BRIMSTONE (A B). 19. the POWER of the HORSES is in (B C). 20. IDOLS (A B). See 8, 9, 18 (A B), 18 (A B), 20 (C), 20, 1 (P).

Angel come down from HEAVEN, clothed with a Cloud: and a † Rainbow *was* upon his HEAD, and his FACE *was* as it were the SUN, and his FEET as Pillars of Fire:

2 And he had in his HAND a † Little-book open: and he set his RIGHT FOOT upon the SEA, and *his* LEFT foot on the EARTH,

3 And cried with a loud Voice, as *when* a Lion roareth: and when he had cried, SEVEN Thunders uttered THEIR Voices.

4 And when the SEVEN Thunders had uttered [their VOICES], I was about to write: and I heard a Voice from HEAVEN saying unto me, Seal up those things which the SEVEN Thunders uttered, and write Them not.

5 And the ANGEL which I saw stand upon the SEA and upon the EARTH lifted up his † HAND to HEAVEN,

6 And swore by HIM that LIVETH for EVER and EVER, who created HEAVEN, and the THINGS that therein are, and the EARTH, and the THINGS that therein are, [and the SEA, and the THINGS which are therein], That there should be Time no longer:

7 But in the DAYS of the VOICE of the SEVENTH Angel, when he shall begin to sound, the MYSTERY of GOD should be finished, as he hath declared to † HIS Servants the PROPHETS.

8 And the VOICE which I heard from HEAVEN spake unto

me again, and said, Go *and* take *the LITTLE-BOOK which is OPEN in the HAND † of * the Angel which STANDETH upon the SEA and upon the EARTH.

9 And I went unto the ANGEL, and said [unto him], Give me the LITTLE-BOOK. And he said unto me, Take *it*, and eat it up; and it shall make Thy BELLY bitter, but it shall be in thy MOUTH sweet as Honey.

10 And I took the † LITTLE-BOOK out of the ANGEL'S HAND, and ate it up; and it was in my MOUTH sweet as Honey: and as soon as I had eaten it my BELLY was bitter.

11 And † he said unto me, Thou must prophesy again before many Peoples, and † Nations, and Tongues, and Kings.

CHAPTER XI.

1 And there was given me a Reed like unto a Rod: and the Angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the TEMPLE of GOD, and the ALTAR, and THEM that WORSHIP therein.

2 But * the COURT which is † WITHOUT the TEMPLE leave out, and measure it not; For it is given unto the GENTILES: and the HOLY CITY shall they tread under foot forty *and* two Months.

3 And I will give *power* unto my TWO Witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred *and* threescore Days, clothed in Sackcloth.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. THAT LITTLE-BOOK which is OPEN. 8. THAT Angel which STANDETH. 2. THAT COURT which is WITHOUT.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—1. RAINBOW (B). 2. Scroll open (B). 5. RIGHT HAND to HEAVEN (B C). 7. his SERVANTS the PROPHETS (B). 8. of THAT ANGEL which (A B). 10. SCROLL out of (B). 11. they say unto me (A B). 11. before Nations (B). 2. WITHIN the TEMPLE. See 4 (A B), 6 (A), 9.

4 These are *the TWO Olive-trees, and †the Two Candlesticks STANDING before the †GOD of the EARTH.

5 And if any man will hurt Them, Fire proceedeth out of their MOUTH, and devoureth their ENEMIES: and if any man will hurt Them, he must in this manner be killed.

6 These have Power to shut HEAVEN, that it rain not in the Days of Their PROPHECY: and have Power over WATERS to turn them to Blood, and to smite the EARTH with All Plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they shall have finished their TESTIMONY, *the BEAST that ASCENDETH out of the BOTTOMLESS-pit shall make War against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.

8 And their †DEAD-BODIES shall lie in the STREET of the GREAT CITY, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also †our LORD was crucified.

9 And they of the PEOPLE and Kindreds and Tongues and Nations shall see their †DEAD-BODIES three Days and a half, and shall not suffer their DEAD-BODIES to be put in †Graves.

10 And THEY that DWELL upon the EARTH shall rejoice over them, and make merry, and shall †send Gifts one to another; Be-

cause These TWO Prophets tormented THEM that DWELT on the EARTH.

11 And after †THREE Days and an Half the Spirit †of Life from GOD entered into them, and they stood upon their FEET; and great Fear †fell upon THEM which SAW them.

12 And they heard a great Voice from HEAVEN saying unto them, Come up hither. And they ascended up to HEAVEN in a CLOUD; and their ENEMIES beheld them.

13 And †the Same HOUR was there a great Earthquake, and the TENTH part of the CITY fell, and in the EARTHQUAKE were slain of Men seven Thousand: and the REMNANT were affrighted, and gave Glory to the GOD of HEAVEN.

14 The SECOND WOE is past; and, behold, the THIRD WOE cometh quickly.

15 And the SEVENTH Angel sounded; and there were great Voices in HEAVEN, saying, The †KINGDOMS of *this* WORLD are become *the kingdoms* of our LORD, and of his CHRIST; and he shall reign for EVER and †EVER.

16 And the FOUR-AND-TWENTY Elders, *which †SAT before GOD on their SEATS, fell upon their FACES, and worshipped GOD,

17 Saying, We give thee thanks, O [Lord] GOD *ALMIGHTY, which ART, and WAST, [and art to

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—4. THOSE TWO Olive-trees and Two Candlesticks which STAND before. 7. THAT BEAST which ASCENDETH. 16. THEY which SAT. 17. the ALMIGHTY, THOU who ART, and THOU who WAST, and THOU who ART-TO-COME.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—4. THOSE TWO Candlesticks which STAND before the LORD of the EARTH (A B). 8. DEAD-BODY shall (A B). 8. their LORD (A B). 9. DEAD-BODY three Days and (A B). 9. the Grave. 10. give Gifts (B C). 11. Three Days and a Half. 11. of God from out of LIFE entered. 11. was upon. 13. in That DAY there was (B). 15. KINGDOM of the WORLD is become *the kingdom* of (A B). 15. EVER. Amen. And the. 16. sat on their SEATS before the THRONE of GOD, fell (B). See 17, 17 (A B).

COME]; Because thou hast taken to thee thy GREAT POWER, and hast reigned.

18 And the NATIONS were angry, and thy WRATH is come, and the TIME of the DEAD, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give REWARD unto thy SERVANTS the PROPHETS, and to the SAINTS, and THEM that FEAR thy NAME, SMALL and GREAT; and shouldest destroy THEM which DESTROY the EARTH.

19 And the TEMPLE of GOD was opened in HEAVEN, and there was seen †in his TEMPLE the ARK of his TESTAMENT: and there were Lightnings, and Voices, and Thunderings, [and an Earthquake], and great Hail.

CHAPTER XII.

1 And there appeared a great Wonder in HEAVEN; a Woman clothed with the SUN, and the MOON under her FEET, and upon her HEAD a Crown of Twelve Stars:

2 And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.

3 And there appeared Another Wonder in HEAVEN; and behold a great red Dragon, having seven Heads and ten Horns, and †seven Crowns upon his HEADS.

4 And his TAIL drew the THIRD part of the STARS of HEAVEN, and did cast them to the EARTH:

and the DRAGON stood before *the WOMAN which was READY to be delivered, for to devour her CHILD as soon as †it was born.

5 And she brought forth a man Child, who was to rule All NATIONS with a Rod of Iron: and her CHILD was caught up unto GOD, and †to his THRONE.

6 And the WOMAN fled into the WILDERNESS, where she hath a Place prepared of GOD, that they should †feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore Days.

7 And there was War in HEAVEN: MICHAEL and his ANGELS fought †against the DRAGON; and the DRAGON fought and his ANGELS,

8 And prevailed not; neither was †their Place found any more in HEAVEN.

9 And *the GREAT DRAGON was cast out, THAT OLD SERPENT, CALLED the Devil, †and SATAN, which DECEIVETH the whole WORLD: †he was cast out into the EARTH, and his ANGELS were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a loud Voice †saying in HEAVEN, Now is come SALVATION, and STRENGTH, and the KINGDOM of our GOD, and the POWER of his CHRIST: For *the ACCUSER of our BRETHREN is cast †down, which ACCUSED them before our GOD Day and Night.

11 And they overcame him by

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—4. THAT WOMAN which was. 9. THAT GREAT DRAGON was cast out, THAT OLD SERPENT which is CALLED the Devil; even THAT SATAN which DECEIVETH the whole WORLD was cast out. 10. THAT ACCUSER of.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—19. the ARK of (B) the TESTAMENT of the LORD in his TEMPLE; and there were (B). 3. Seven Crowns upon (A B). 4. she should bring forth. 5. unto his THRONE (A B). 6. nourish her there (B). 7. with the DRAGON (B). 8. Place found for him any more in. 9. even THAT Satan which DECEIVETH (B). 9. and he was cast out. 10. in HEAVEN, saying, Now is come (A B). 10. out, who ACCUSED them (A B). See 19 (B).

the BLOOD of the LAMB, and by the WORD of their TESTIMONY; and they loved not their LIVES unto the Death.

12 Therefore rejoice, *ye* †HEAVENS, and YE that DWELL in them. Woe to the INHABITERS of the EARTH, and of the SEA! For the DEVIL is come down unto you, having great Wrath, because he knoweth That he hath but a Short Time.

13 And when the DRAGON saw That he was cast unto the EARTH, he persecuted the WOMAN which brought forth the MAN *child*.

14 And to the WOMAN were given Two Wings of a GREAT EAGLE, that she might fly into the the WILDERNESS, into her PLACE, †where she is nourished for a Time, and Times, and half a Time, from the Face of the SERPENT.

15 And the SERPENT cast out of his MOUTH Water as a Flood after the WOMAN, that he might cause †her to be carried away of the flood.

16 And the EARTH helped the WOMAN, and [the EARTH] opened her MOUTH, and swallowed up the FLOOD which the DRAGON cast out of his MOUTH.

17 And the DRAGON was wroth with the WOMAN, and went to make War with *the REMNANT of her SEED, which KEEP the COMMANDMENTS of GOD, [and have] the TESTIMONY of JESUS Christ.

CHAPTER XIII.

1 And I stood upon the SAND

of the SEA, and saw a Beast rise up out of the SEA, having seven Heads and ten Horns, and upon his HORNS Ten Crowns, and upon his HEADS the †Name of Blasphemy.

2 And the BEAST which I saw was like unto a Leopard, and his FEET were as *the feet* of a Bear, and his MOUTH as the Mouth of a Lion: and the DRAGON gave him his POWER, and his SEAT, and great Authority.

3 And †I saw one of his HEADS †as it were wounded to Death; and his DEADLY WOUND was healed: and All the WORLD wondered after the BEAST.

4 And they worshipped †the DRAGON which gave Power unto the BEAST: and they worshipped the BEAST, saying, Who *is* like unto the BEAST? who is able to make war with him?

5 And there was given unto him a Mouth speaking great things and †Blasphemies; and Power was given unto him to continue forty *and* two Months.

6 And he opened his MOUTH in Blasphemy against GOD, to blaspheme his NAME, and his TABERNACLE, [and] THEM that DWELL in HEAVEN.

7 And it was given unto him to make War with the SAINTS, and to overcome them: and Power was given him over †All Kindreds, and Tongues, and Nations.

8 And ALL that DWELL upon the EARTH shall worship him,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. THAT REMNANT OF.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—12. Heavens (BC). 14. so that she should be nourished there for a Time. 15. Her to be (AB). 1. Names of (AB). 3. *I saw* one (AB). 3. as if it were (B). 4. THAT DRAGON which had GIVEN POWER (B). 5. Blasphemy; and (B). 7. Every Kindred and People and Tongue and Nation (AB). See 16, 17, 5 (AB).

Whose † NAMES are not written in the BOOK of LIFE † of *the LAMB SLAIN from the Foundation of the World.

9 If any man have an Ear, let him hear.

10 † He that leadeth into Captivity shall go into Captivity: he that killeth with the Sword must be killed with the Sword. Here is the PATIENCE and the FAITH of the SAINTS.

11 And I beheld Another Beast coming up out of the EARTH; and he had [two] Horns like a Lamb, and he spake as a Dragon.

12 And he exerciseth all the POWER of the FIRST Beast before him, and causeth the EARTH and THEM which DWELL therein to worship the FIRST BEAST, whose DEADLY WOUND was healed.

13 And he doeth great Wonders, † so that he maketh Fire come down from HEAVEN on the EARTH in the sight of MEN;

14 And deceiveth † THEM that DWELL on the EARTH by *the means of those* MIRACLES which he had power to do in the sight of the BEAST; saying to THEM that DWELL on the EARTH, that they should make an Image to the BEAST which had the † WOUND † by a SWORD, and did live.

15 And he had power to give Life unto the IMAGE of the BEAST, that the IMAGE of the BEAST

should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the IMAGE of the BEAST should be killed.

16 And he causeth all, both SMALL and GREAT, RICH and POOR, FREE and BOND, to receive † a Mark in their RIGHT HAND, or in their † FOREHEADS:

17 And that no man might buy or sell, save HE that HAD the MARK, [or the NAME of the BEAST] or the NUMBER of his NAME.

18 Here is WISDOM. Let HIM that HATH † UNDERSTANDING count the NUMBER of the BEAST: for † it is the Number of a Man; [and] his NUMBER is Six hundred threescore *and* six.

CHAPTER XIV.

1 And I looked, and, lo, a † Lamb stood on the MOUNT Sion, and with him an Hundred Forty-*and*-Four Thousand, having † his FATHER'S NAME written in their FOREHEADS.

2 And I heard a Voice from HEAVEN, as the Voice of many Waters, and as the Voice of a great Thunder: and † I heard the Voice of Harpers harping with their HARPS:

3 And they sung [as it were] a new Song before the THRONE, and before the FOUR Beasts, and the ELDERS: and no man could

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. the LAMB which was SLAIN from.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—8. NAME is not written in the SCROLL of LIFE (B) of THAT LAMB which was SLAIN (A B). 10. If any man hold in Captivity, he shall go away *into Captivity*: if any man *kill* with the Sword, he must also be killed *with the Sword*. 13. that even Fire from HEAVEN should come down on the EARTH in (B). 14. MINE that DWELL. 14. Wound. 14. from the SWORD, and did live (B). 16. Marks in (B). 16. FOREHEAD. 18. Understanding (A B). 18. his NUMBER, Six-hundred Threescore *and* Six, is the Number of a Man (B). 1. LAMB (A B). 1. his NAME and his FATHER'S NAME (A B). 2. the VOICE which I heard *was as the voice* of Harpers (A B). See 11, 17, 18 (B), 3 (B).

learn *that* SONG but the HUNDRED-*and-FORTY-and-FOUR* Thousand, *which were REDEEMED †from the EARTH.

4 [These are they which were not defiled with Women; for they are Virgins.] These are THEY which FOLLOW the LAMB whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed †from among MEN, *being* the Firstfruits unto GOD and to the LAMB.

5 And in their MOUTH was found no †Guile: for they are without fault [before the THRONE of GOD].

6 And I saw †Another Angel fly in the Midst-of-Heaven, having the everlasting Gospel to preach unto THEM that †DWELL on the EARTH, and to Every Nation, and Kindred, and Tongue, and People,

7 Saying with a loud Voice, Fear †GOD, and give Glory to him; For the HOUR of his JUDGMENT is come: and worship HIM that MADE HEAVEN, and EARTH, and the †Sea, and the Fountains of Waters.

8 And there followed Another †Angel, saying, †Babylon is fallen, [is fallen], *that* GREAT CITY, Because she made All Nations drink of the WINE of the WRATH of †her FORNICATION.

9 And †the Third Angel followed them, saying with a loud Voice, If any man worship the

BEAST and his IMAGE, and receive *his* Mark in his FOREHEAD, or in his HAND,

10 The same shall drink of *the WINE of the WRATH of GOD, which is Poured-out without mixture into the CUP of his INDIGNATION; and he shall be tormented with Fire and Brimstone in the presence of the HOLY Angels, and in the presence of the LAMB:

11 And the SMOKE of †their TORMENT ascendeth up for Ever and Ever: and THEY have no Rest Day nor Night, who WORSHIP the BEAST and his IMAGE, and whosoever receiveth the MARK of his NAME.

12 Here is the †Patience of the SAINTS: †[here *are*] THEY that KEEP the COMMANDMENTS of GOD, and the FAITH of Jesus.

13 And I heard a Voice from HEAVEN saying unto me, Write, Blessed *are* *the DEAD which DIE in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the SPIRIT, †that they may rest from their LABOURS; and their WORKS do follow them.

14 And I looked, and behold a white Cloud, and upon the CLOUD *one* †sat like unto the Son of Man, having on his HEAD a golden Crown, and in his HAND a [sharp] Sickle.

15 And Another Angel came out of the TEMPLE, crying with a Loud Voice to HIM that SAT on

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—3. THEY which were REDEEMED. 10. THAT WINE of. 13. THOSE DEAD which DIE.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—3. on the EARTH. 4. by Jesus from among (B). 5. Lie: for (B). 6. an Angel fly (B). 6. SIT on the EARTH (B C). 7. the LORD, and give (B). 7. SEA (A B). 8. Angel, the Second, saying (B C), Babylon the GREAT is fallen (A B). 8. her FORNICATION. 9. Another Angel, the Third, followed (A B). 11. the TORMENT (A B). 12. PATIENCE of (A B). 12. *they are* THEY that KEEP (A B). 13. even that they may. 14. sitting like unto a Man, having (A B). See 4, 5 (A B), 8 (B C), 12 (A B), 14.

the CLOUD, Thrust in thy SICKLE, and reap: For the TIME is come [for thee] to REAP; For the HARVEST of the EARTH is ripe.

16 And HE that SAT on the CLOUD thrust in his SICKLE on the EARTH; and the EARTH was reaped.

17 And Another Angel came †out of *the TEMPLE which is in HEAVEN, *h̄c* also having a sharp Sickle.

18 And Another Angel came out from the ALTAR, which had Power over FIRE; and cried with a loud Cry to HIM that HAD the SHARP SICKLE, saying, Thrust in Thy SHARP SICKLE, and gather the CLUSTERS-of-the-VINE of the EARTH; For †her GRAPES are fully ripe.

19 And the ANGEL thrust in his SICKLE into the EARTH, and gathered the VINE of the EARTH, and cast *it* into the GREAT WINEPRESS of the WRATH of GOD.

20 And the WINEPRESS was trodden †without the CITY, and Blood came out of the WINEPRESS, even unto the HORSE BRIDLES, by the space of a thousand *and* six hundred Furlongs.

CHAPTER XV.

1 And I saw Another Sign in HEAVEN, great and marvellous, seven Angels having the seven LAST Plagues; For in them is filled up the WRATH of GOD.

2 And I saw as it were a Sea

of Glass mingled with Fire: and THEM that had GOTTEN-THE-VICTORY over the †BEAST, and over his IMAGE, and [over his MARK, *and*] over the NUMBER of his NAME, stand on the SEA of GLASS, having the Harps of GOD.

3 And they sing the SONG of Moses the Servant of GOD, and of the SONG of the LAMB, saying, Great and marvellous *are* thy WORKS, Lord GOD ALMIGHTY; just and true *are* thy WAYS, thou KING of †SAINTS.

4 Who shall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy NAME? For *thou* only *art* holy: For †All NATIONS shall come and worship before thee; For thy JUDGMENTS are made manifest.

§ v.

5 [And] after *that* I looked, and, [behold], the TEMPLE of the TABERNACLE of the TESTIMONY in HEAVEN was opened:

6 And †the SEVEN Angels came out [of the TEMPLE], having the SEVEN Plagues, clothed in pure [and] white Linen, and having their BREASTS girded with golden Girdles.

7 And one of the FOUR Beasts gave unto the SEVEN Angels Seven golden Vials full of the WRATH *of GOD, who LIVETH for EVER and EVER.

8 And the TEMPLE was filled with †Smoke from the GLORY of GOD, and from his POWER; and no man was able to enter into the

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—17. THAT TEMPLE which is. 7. THAT GOD who LIVETH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—17. out of the TEMPLE in HEAVEN; and *h̄c* had. 18. the GRAPE of the EARTH is fully ripe (B). 20. outside the CITY. 2. IMAGE, and over his BEAST, and over the NUMBER (B). 3. NATIONS (A B). Who shall. 4. all *men* shall come (B). 6. THOSE SEVEN Angels which HAD the SEVEN Plagues, came out (A C), which were clothed (B). 8. the SMOKE (B). See 15 (A B), 2 (A B), 5, 5 (A B), 6 (B), 6 (A B).

TEMPLE, till the SEVEN Plagues of the SEVEN Angels were fulfilled.

CHAPTER XVI.

1 And I heard a great Voice out of the TEMPLE saying to the SEVEN Angels, Go your ways, and pour out the †VIALS of the WRATH of GOD upon the EARTH.

2 And the FIRST went, and poured out his VIAL †upon the EARTH; and there fell a noisome and grievous Sore upon *the MEN which HAD the MARK of the BEAST, and *upon* THEM which WORSHIPPED his IMAGE.

3 And the SECOND Angel poured out his VIAL upon the SEA; and it became as the Blood of a Dead *man*: and Every [living] Soul died in the SEA.

4 And the THIRD [Angel] poured out his VIAL upon the RIVERS and FOUNTAINS of WATERS; and they became Blood.

5 And I heard the ANGEL of the WATERS say, Thou †art righteous, [O Lord], *which ART, and WAST, and SHALT-BE, Because thou hast judged Thus.

6 *For they have shed the Blood of Saints and Prophets, [and] thou hast given them Blood to drink; [for] they are worthy.

7 And I heard †another out of the ALTAR say, Even so, Lord GOD ALMIGHTY, true and righteous *are* thy JUDGMENTS.

8 And the FOURTH [Angel] poured out his VIAL upon the SUN; and power was given unto him to scorch MEN with Fire.

9 And MEN were scorched with great Heat, and †blasphemed the NAME of *GOD, which HATH Power over these PLAGUES: and they repented not to give him Glory.

10 And the FIFTH [Angel] poured out his VIAL upon the SEAT of the BEAST; and his KINGDOM was full of darkness; and they gnawed their TONGUES for PAIN,

11 And blasphemed the GOD of HEAVEN because of their PAINS and their SORES, and repented not of their DEEDS.

12 And the SIXTH [Angel] poured out his VIAL upon the GREAT RIVER †EUPHRATES; and the WATER thereof was dried up, that the WAY †of *the KINGS of the East might be prepared.

13 And I saw three unclean Spirits †like Frogs *come* out of the MOUTH of the DRAGON, and out of the MOUTH of the BEAST, and out of the MOUTH of the FALSE-PROPHET.

14 For they are the Spirits of Devils working Miracles, *which* go forth unto the KINGS [of the EARTH and] of the whole WORLD, to gather them to the †Battle of that GREAT DAY of GOD ALMIGHTY.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—2. THOSE MEN which HAD. 5. THOU who ART, and THOU who WAST, and THOU who SHALT-BE. 6. Because they have. 9. THAT GOD who HATH. 12. THOSE KINGS *who are* from the RISINGS of the SUN might be prepared.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, NO. 1160.—1. SEVEN Vials (A B). 2. into the EARTH (A B). 5. wast righteous, THOU who ART, who also wast holy, Because thou (B). 7. *one* out of the ALTAR saying (A C). 9. MEN blasphemed (B). 12. Euphrates (B). 12. of THOSE KINGS *who are* from the Rising of the Sun (B C). 13. as Frogs *come* out of (B). 14. BATTLE (A B). See 3, 4 (A B), 5 (A B), 6, 6 (A B), 8 (A B), 10 (A B), 12 (A B), 14 (A B).

15 Behold, I come as a Thief. Blessed is HE that WATCHETH, and keepeth his GARMENTS, lest he walk naked, and they see his SHAME.

16 And he gathered them together into a *PLACE CALLED in the Hebrew-tongue †Armageddon.

17 And the SEVENTH [Angel] poured out his VIAL †into the AIR; and there came a great Voice out of the TEMPLE of HEAVEN, from the THRONE, saying, It is done.

18 And there were †Voices, and Thunders, and Lightnings; and [there was] a great Earthquake, such as was not since MEN were upon the EARTH, so Mighty an Earthquake, and so great.

19 And the GREAT CITY was divided into Three Parts, and the CITIES of the NATIONS fell: and *GREAT Babylon came in remembrance before GOD, to give unto her the CUP of the WINE of the FIERCENESS of his WRATH.

20 And Every Island fled away, and the Mountains were not found.

21 And there fell upon MEN a great Hail out of HEAVEN, every stone about the weight-of-a-talent: and MEN blasphemed GOD because of the PLAGUE of the HAIL; For the PLAGUE thereof was exceeding great.

CHAPTER XVII.

1 And there came one of *the SEVEN Angels which HAD the SEVEN Vials, and talked with me,

saying [unto me], Come hither; I will show unto thee the JUDGMENT of *the GREAT WHORE that SITTETH upon MANY WATERS:

2 With whom the KINGS of the EARTH have committed fornication, and the INHABITANTS of the EARTH have been made drunk [with the WINE of her FORNICATION].

3 So he carried me away in the Spirit into the Wilderness: and I saw a Woman sit upon a †scarlet-coloured Beast, full of Names of Blasphemy, having seven Heads and ten Horns.

4 And the WOMAN was arrayed in Purple and Scarlet-colour, [and] decked with Gold and Precious-stones and Pearls, having a †Golden Cup in her HAND full of Abominations and Filthiness of †her Fornication:

5 And upon her FOREHEAD was a Name written, Mystery, Babylon the GREAT, the MOTHER of HARLOTS and ABOMINATIONS of the EARTH.

6 And I saw the WOMAN drunken with the BLOOD of the SAINTS, and with the BLOOD of the MARTYRS of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great Admiration.

7 And the ANGEL said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the MYSTERY of the WOMAN, and of *the BEAST that CARRIETH her, which HATH the SEVEN Heads and TEN Horns.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—16. THAT PLACE which is CALLED. 19. Babylon the GREAT came. 1. THOSE SEVEN Angels which HAD. 1. THAT GREAT WHORE which SITTETH. 7. THAT BEAST which CARRIETH her, THAT which HATH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—16. Magedon (B). 17. upon the AIR (A B). 18. Lightnings and Voices and Thunders, and a great (A). 3. SCARLET-COLOURED BEAST. 4. golden (A B). 4. the FORNICATION of the EARTH (B). See 17 (A B), 18 (B), 1 (A B), 2. These words are not omitted in the earlier MSS., 4 (A B).

8 The †Beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the **BOTTOMLESS-pit**, and go into Perdition: and †THEY that DWELL on the **EARTH** shall wonder, whose †NAMES were not written in the ***BOOK of LIFE** from the Foundation of the World, when †they behold *the **BEAST** that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And here *is* *the **MIND** which HATH Wisdom. The **SEVEN** Heads are seven Mountains, on which the **WOMAN** sitteth.

10 And †there are seven Kings: **FIVE** are fallen, [and] **ONE** is, *and* the **OTHER** is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

11 And the **BEAST** that was, and is not, even *he* is the Eighth, and is of the **SEVEN**, and goeth into Perdition.

12 And the **TEN** Horns which thou sawest are Ten Kings, which have received no Kingdom as yet; but receive Power as Kings One Hour with the **BEAST**.

13 These have One Mind, and †shall give *their **POWER** and **STRENGTH** unto the **BEAST**.

14 These shall make war with the **LAMB**, and the **LAMB** shall overcome them: For he is Lord of Lords, and King of Kings: and **THEY** that are with him *are* CALLED, and chosen, and faithful.

15 And he saith unto me, The **WATERS** which thou sawest, where the **WHORE** sitteth, are Peoples,

and Multitudes, and Nations, and Tongues.

16 And the **TEN** Horns which thou sawest †upon the **BEAST**, these shall hate the **WHORE**, and shall make her desolate [and naked], and shall eat her **FLESH**, and burn Her with Fire.

17 For **GOD** hath put in their **HEARTS** to fulfil his †**WILL**, and to agree, and give their **KINGDOM** unto the **BEAST**, until the **WORDS** of **GOD** shall be fulfilled.

18 And the **WOMAN** which thou sawest is **THAT GREAT CITY**, which **REIGNETH** over the **KINGS** †of the **EARTH**.

CHAPTER XVIII.

§ VI.

1 [And] after these things I saw Another Angel come down from **HEAVEN**, having great Power; and the **EARTH** was lightened with his **GLORY**.

2 And he cried [mightily] with a strong Voice, saying, Babylon the **GREAT** is fallen, [is fallen], and is become the Habitation of Devils, and the Hold of †Every foul Spirit, and a Cage of Every unclean and hateful Bird.

3 For All **NATIONS** have drunk of the **WINE** of the **WRATH** of her **FORNICATION**, and the **KINGS** of the **EARTH** have committed fornication with her, and the **MERCHANTS** of the **EARTH** are waxed rich through the **ABUNDANCE** of her **DELICACIES**.

4 And I heard Another Voice

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. SCROLL of LIFE. and yet is. 9. THAT MIND which HATH.

8. the **BEAST**, That it was, and is not, 13. their-OWN POWER.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—8. **BEAST** which thou sawest (A B). 8. **THEY** who INHABIT the **EARTH** (B). 8. NAME was not written (A B). 8. they behold That the **BEAST** was, and is not (B), and shall be present (A B). And here *is*. 10. the Kings are seven (B): **FIVE**. 13. they give their-OWN **POWER** (A B). 16. and the **BEAST** (A B). 17. Will. 18. on the **EARTH** (B). 2. a foul Spirit. See 10 (A B), 16, 1 (A B), 2 (B), 2.

from HEAVEN, saying, Come out of her, my PEOPLE, that ye be not partakers of her SINS, and that ye receive not of her PLAGUES.

5 For her SINS have †reached unto HEAVEN, and GOD hath remembered her †INIQUITIES.

6 Reward her even as *she* rewarded [you], and double †unto her double according to her WORKS: in †the CUP which she hath filled fill to her double.

7 How-much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, So-much Torment and Sorrow give her: For she saith in her HEART, †I sit a queen, and am no Widow, and shall see no Sorrow.

8 Therefore shall her PLAGUES come in One Day, Death, [and] Mourning, and Famine; and she shall be utterly burned with Fire: For †strong *is* *the Lord GOD who JUDGEETH her.

9 And *the KINGS of the EARTH, who have COMMITTED-FORNICATION and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail [her], and lament for her, when they shall see the SMOKE of her BURNING,

10 Standing afar off for the FEAR of her TORMENT, saying, Alas, [alas] *that GREAT CITY Babylon, that MIGHTY CITY! For in One Hour is thy JUDGMENT come.

11 And the MERCHANTS of the EARTH shall weep and mourn

over her; For no man buyeth their MERCHANDISE any more:

12 The Merchandise of Gold, and Silver, and precious Stones, and of Pearls, and Fine-linen, and Purple, and Silk, and Scarlet; and All thyine Wood, and All manner Vessels of Ivory, and All manner Vessels of most precious Wood; and of Brass, and Iron, and Marble;

13 And Cinnamon, and Odours, and Ointments, and Frankincense, [and Wine], and Oil, and Fine-flour, and Wheat, and †Beasts, and Sheep; and Horses, and Chariots, and Slaves; and Souls of Men.

14 And the FRUITS that thy SOUL lusted after are departed from thee, and All THINGS which were DAINTY and *GOODLY are †departed from thee, and thou shalt find them no more at all.

15 *The MERCHANTS of these things, which were MADE-RICH by her, shall stand afar off for the FEAR of her TORMENT, †weeping and wailing,

16 [And] saying, Alas, [alas] THAT GREAT CITY, that was CLOTHED in Fine-linen, and Purple, and Scarlet, and decked with Gold, and Precious-stones, and Pearls!

17 For in One Hour SO-GREAT Riches is come to nought. And Every Shipmaster, and †All the COMPANY in SHIPS, and Sailors,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. the Lord THAT GOD who. 9. THOSE KINGS of. 10. *thou* GREAT CITY, Babylon, *thou* MIGHTY CITY. 14. THINGS which were GOODLY are. 15. THOSE MERCHANTS of these things which.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—5. cleaved unto (A B). 5. for her INIQUITIES. 6. *unto her* the DOUBLE as also *she hath doubled*; even according to her WORKS, in. 6. her CUP which (B). 7. I am as a queen, and no Widow (A B). 8. strong *is* THAT Lord who hath JUDGED her (A B). 13. Sheep and Beasts (B). 14. lost to thee (A B), and thou. 15. both weeping and wailing, saying. 17. ALL who SAIL to any place (A C), and Shipmen, and as many as. See 6 (A B), 8 (B), 9 (A B), 10, 13 (B), 16 (A B), 16 (B).

and as many as trade by SEA, stood afar off,

18 And cried when they saw the SMOKE of her BURNING, saying, [What city is like unto *this* GREAT CITY!

19 And they cast Dust on their HEADS, and cried weeping and wailing, saying], Alas, [alas] *that* GREAT CITY, wherein were made rich ALL that HAD † Ships in the SEA by reason of her COSTLINESS! For in One Hour is she made desolate.

20 Rejoice over her, *thou* Heaven, and *ye* † HOLY Apostles and PROPHETS; For GOD hath avenged you on her.

21 And † a mighty Angel took up a Stone, like a great Millstone, and cast *it* into the SEA, saying, Thus with Violence shall **that* GREAT City Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.

22 And the Voice of Harpers, and Musicians, and of Pipers, and Trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no Craftsman, of Whatsoever Craft *he be*, shall be found any more in thee; [and the Sound of a Millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee];

23 And the Light of a Candle shall shine no more at all in thee; [and the Voice of the Bridegroom and of the Bride shall be heard

no more at all in thee: For] thy MERCHANTS were the GREAT-MEN of the EARTH; For by thy SORCERIES were All NATIONS deceived.

24 And in her was found the Blood of Prophets, and of Saints, and of ALL that were SLAIN upon the EARTH.

CHAPTER XIX.

§ VII.

1 [And] after these things I heard a [great] Voice of much People in HEAVEN, saying, Alleluia; † SALVATION, and GLORY, and HONOUR, and POWER, unto the Lord our GOD:

2 For true and righteous *are* his JUDGMENTS: For he hath judged the GREAT WHORE, which did corrupt the EARTH with her FORNICATION, and hath avenged the BLOOD of his SERVANTS at her † HAND.

3 And again they said, Alleluia. And her SMOKE rose up for EVER and EVER.

4 And the FOUR-AND-TWENTY ELDERS and the FOUR Beasts fell down and worshipped *GOD that SAT on the THRONE, saying, Amen; Alleluia.

5 And a Voice came out † of the THRONE, saying, Praise our GOD, all *ye* his SERVANTS, and YE that FEAR him, [both] SMALL and GREAT.

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—21. Babylon, the GREAT City, be thrown down. 4. THAT GOD who SAT.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—19. SHIPS (A B). 20. SAINTS, and APOSTLES, and PROPHETS (A B). 21. an Angel took up a Mighty Stone like. 1. THE SALVATION, and the POWER, and the GLORY of our GOD (B). 2. Hand (A B). 5. from the THRONE (A B). See 18—19. *These words are considered by Dr. Birch as undoubtedly omitted by the Transcriber from want of care.* 19, 22. *As these words occur in the Greek between two similar phrases, εν σοι ετι, the probability is great that they also were omitted by oversight of the Transcriber.* 23. *The same words, εν σοι ετι, in the same position as in verse 22, have probably caught the eye of the Transcriber in this case also, and caused him to omit the intervening words.* 1 (A B), 1, 5 (A B).

6 And I heard as it were the Voice of a great Multitude, and as the Voice of many Waters, and as the Voice of mighty Thunderings, saying, Alleluia: For †the Lord GOD*OMNIPOTENT reigneth.

7 Let us be glad and rejoice, and give HONOUR to him: For the MARRIAGE of the LAMB is come, and his WIFE hath made herself ready.

8 And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in Fine-linen, †clean and white: for the FINE-LINEN is the RIGHTEOUSNESS of SAINTS.

9 And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed *are* THEY which are CALLED unto the MARRIAGE SUPPER of the LAMB. And he saith unto me, These are the true SAYINGS of GOD.

10 And I fell at his FEET to worship him. And he said unto me, See *thou do it* not: I am *thy Fellow-servant, and of thy BRETHREN that HAVE the TESTIMONY of JESUS: worship GOD: for the TESTIMONY of JESUS is the SPIRIT of PROPHECY.

11 And I saw HEAVEN opened, and behold a white Horse; and HE that SAT upon him *was* called Faithful and True, and in Righteousness he doth judge and make war.

12 His EYES *were* [as] a Flame of Fire, and on his HEAD *were* many Crowns; and he had †a Name written, that no man knew, but he himself.

13 And he *was* clothed with a Vesture dipped in Blood: and his NAME is called The WORD of GOD.

14 And *the ARMIES *which were* in HEAVEN followed him upon white Horses, clothed in †Fine-linen, white and clean.

15 And out of his MOUTH goeth a sharp †Sword, that with it he should smite the NATIONS: and *he* shall rule them with a Rod of Iron: and *he* treadeth the WINE-PRESS of the FIERCENESS and WRATH of ALMIGHTY GOD.

16 And he hath on *his* VESTURE and on his THIGH a †NAME written, King of Kings, and Lord of Lords.

17 And I saw an Angel standing in the SUN; and he cried with a loud Voice, saying to *All the FOWLS that FLY in the Midst-of-Heaven, Come, [and] gather yourselves together unto the †SUPPER of the GREAT God;

18 That ye may eat the Flesh of Kings, and the Flesh of Captains, and the Flesh of Mighty-men, and the Flesh of Horses, and of THEM that SIT on them, and the Flesh of All *men*, †both Free and Bond, both Small and Great.

19 And I saw the BEAST, and the KINGS of the EARTH, and their ARMIES, gathered together to make War against HIM that SAT on the HORSE, and against his ARMY.

20 And the BEAST was taken, and †with *him* *the FALSE-PRO-

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—6. ALMIGHTY reigneth. 10. a Fellow-servant of thine, and of those BRETHREN of thine which HAVE. 14. THOSE ARMIES which. 17. ALL THOSE FOWLS that FLY. 20. THAT FALSE-PROPHET which WROUGHT.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—6. our GOD, the ALMIGHTY, reigneth (B). 8. white and clean (B). 12. Names written, and a Name written (B). 14. clean, white, Fine-linen (A B). 15. two-edged Sword (B). 16. Name (A B). 17. GREAT SUPPER of GOD (A B). 18. Free as well as Bond (A B), Small as well as Great (B). 20. THAT FALSE-PROPHET with him which WROUGHT (B). See 12 (B), 17 (A B).

PHET that WROUGHT MIRACLES before him, with which he deceived THEM that had RECEIVED the MARK of the BEAST, and THEM that WORSHIPPED his IMAGE. These BOTH were cast alive into *a LAKE of FIRE BURNING with †BRIMSTONE.

21 And the REMNANT were slain with *the SWORD of HIM that SAT upon the HORSE, which sword †PROCEEDED out of his MOUTH: and All the FOWLS were filled with their FLESH.

CHAPTER XX.

1 And I saw an Angel come down from HEAVEN, having the KEY of the BOTTOMLESS-pit and a great Chain in his HAND.

2 And he laid hold on the DRAGON, *that* OLD SERPENT, which is the Devil, †and Satan, and bound him a Thousand Years,

3 And cast him into the BOTTOMLESS-pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should †deceive the NATIONS no more, till the THOUSAND Years should be fulfilled: [and] after that he must be loosed a Little Season.

4 And I saw Thrones, and they sat upon them, and Judgment was given unto them: and *I saw* the SOULS of THEM that were BEHEADED for the WITNESS of Jesus, [and] for the WORD of GOD, and

which had not worshipped the BEAST, neither his IMAGE, neither had received *his* MARK upon †their FOREHEADS, or in their HANDS; and they lived and reigned with Christ a Thousand Years.

5 [But the †REST of the DEAD lived not again until the THOUSAND Years were finished.] This is the FIRST RESURRECTION.

6 †Blessed and holy is HE that HATH Part in the FIRST RESURRECTION: on such the †SECOND DEATH hath no Power, but they shall be Priests of GOD and of CHRIST, and shall reign †with him a Thousand Years.

7 And †when the THOUSAND Years are expired, SATAN shall be loosed out of his PRISON,

8 And shall go out to deceive *the NATIONS which are in the FOUR Quarters of the EARTH, GOG and MAGOG, to gather them together to †Battle: the NUMBER of whom is as the SAND of the SEA.

9 And they went up on the BREADTH of the EARTH, and compassed the CAMP of the SAINTS about, and the BELOVED CITY: and Fire came down †from GOD out of HEAVEN, and devoured them.

10 And *the DEVIL that DECEIVED them was cast into the the LAKE of FIRE and Brimstone,

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—20. THAT LAKE of FIRE which BURNETH with. 21. THAT SWORD of HIM who SAT upon the HORSE, which PROCEEDED. 8. THOSE NATIONS which are. 10. THAT DEVIL who DECEIVED them.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—20. Brimstone (A B). 21. WENT-FORTH out of (A B). 2. even THAT Satan who DECEIVETH the whole EARTH, and bound him (B). 3. not deceive the NATIONS, till. 4. *their* (A B). 6. Both blessed and. 6. SECOND Death (A B). 6. after these things a Thousand Years. 7. after the THOUSAND Years. 8. the BATTLE (A B). 9. out of HEAVEN from GOD, and (B). See 3 (A B), 4, 5. *These words may have been omitted by oversight, caused by the similar endings (χίλια ετη) of this and the preceding sentence.* 5. "REST of the MEN lived" (B).

where † the BEAST and the FALSE-PROPHET *are*, and shall be tormented Day and Night for EVER and EVER.

11 And I saw a great white Throne, and HIM that SAT on it, from Whose Face the EARTH and the HEAVEN fled away; and there was found no Place for them.

12 And I saw the DEAD, small and great, stand before † GOD; and the Books were opened: and Another Book was opened, which is *the book* of LIFE: and the DEAD were judged out of *those* THINGS which were WRITTEN in the BOOKS, according to their WORKS.

13 And the SEA gave up † the DEAD which were in it; [and DEATH and HELL delivered up the DEAD which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their WORKS].

14 And DEATH and HELL were cast into the LAKE of FIRE. † This is the SECOND Death.

15 And whosoever was not found written in the BOOK of LIFE was cast into the LAKE of FIRE.

CHAPTER XXI.

1 And I saw a new Heaven and a new Earth: for the FIRST Heaven and the FIRST Earth † were passed away; and there was no more SEA.

2 And † I John saw the HOLY

CITY, new Jerusalem, coming down † from GOD out of HEAVEN, prepared as a Bride adorned for her HUSBAND.

3 And I heard a great Voice out of HEAVEN saying, Behold, the TABERNACLE of GOD is with MEN, and he will dwell with them, and *they* shall be his People, and GOD himself shall be with them, [*and be their God*].

4 And † GOD shall wipe away All Tears from their EYES; and there shall be no more DEATH, neither Sorrow, nor Crying, neither shall there be any more Pain: For the FORMER things are passed away.

5 [And] HE that SAT upon the THRONE said, Behold, I make All things new. And he said [unto me], Write, For These WORDS are † true and faithful.

6 And he said unto me, † It is done. I am ALPHA and OMEGA, the BEGINNING and the END. I will give unto HIM that is A-THIRST of the FOUNTAIN of the WATER of LIFE freely.

7 HE that OVERCOMETH † shall inherit all things; and I will be His God, and *he* shall be My SON.

8 But † the Fearful, and Unbelieving, and the Abominable, and Murderers, and Whoremongers, and Sorcerers, and Idolaters, and All LIARS, shall have their PART in *the LAKE which BURNETH

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. THAT LAKE which BURNETH.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—10. both the BEAST and (A B). 12. the THRONE; and the Books (A B). 13. THOSE DEAD which were in it (A B). 14. This LAKE of FIRE is the SECOND DEATH (A B). 1. went away (B); and. 2. I saw (A B). 2. out of HEAVEN from GOD, prepared (A B). 4. he shall wipe away from them All Tears from (B). 5. faithful and true (A B). 6. I am become ALPHA and OMEGA, both the BEGINNING (B). 7. I will give to him these things; and I will be (B). 8. the FEARFUL, and Unbelieving, and Sinners, and Abominable, and (B). See 13. Dr. Birch conjectures that these words are omitted by reason of the recurrence of the words *καὶ ὁ θάνατος καὶ ὁ ᾄδης*, at the beginning of this and of the next sentence. 3 (A B), 5, 5 (A B).

with Fire and Brinstone: which is the † Second Death.

9 And there came [unto me] one of *the SEVEN Angels which HAD the SEVEN Vials FULL of the SEVEN LAST Plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the † BRIDE, the LAMB'S WIFE.

10 And he carried me away in the Spirit to a great and high Mountain, and shewed me † *that* GREAT CITY, the HOLY Jerusalem, descending out of HEAVEN from GOD,

11 Having the GLORY of GOD: [and] her LIGHT *was* like unto a Stone the most precious, even like a jasper Stone, clear as crystal;

12 And † had a Wall great and high, *and* had twelve Gates, and at the GATES twelve Angels, and Names written thereon, which are † *the names* of the TWELVE Tribes of the † CHILDREN of Israel:

10 On the East three Gates; † on the North three Gates; on the South three Gates; and on the West three Gates.

14 And the WALL of the CITY had twelve Foundations, and † in them the Names of the TWELVE Apostles of the LAMB.

15 And HE that TALKED with me had † a golden Reed to measure the CITY, and the GATES thereof, [and the WALL thereof].

16 And the CITY lieth four-square, and the LENGTH is as large as the BREADTH: and he measured the CITY with the REED, twelve † thousand Furlongs. The LENGTH and the BREADTH and the HEIGHT of it are equal.

17 And † he measured the WALL thereof, an Hundred *and* Forty *and* Four Cubits, *according* to the Measure of a Man, that is, of the Angel.

18 And the BUILDING of the WALL [of it was *of* Jasper: and the CITY *was* pure Gold, like unto clear Glass.

19 And the FOUNDATIONS of the WALL] of the CITY *were* garnished with All manner of precious Stones. The FIRST FOUNDATION *was* Jasper; the SECOND, Sapphire; the THIRD, a Chalcedony; the FOURTH, an Emerald;

20 The FIFTH, Sardonyx; the SIXTH, Sardius; the SEVENTH, Chrysolite; the EIGHTH, Beryl; the NINTH, a Topaz; the TENTH, a † Chrysoprasus; the ELEVENTH, a Jacinth; the TWELFTH, an Amethyst.

21 And the TWELVE Gates *were* Twelve Pearls; Every several GATE was of One Pearl: and the STREET of the CITY *was* pure Gold, as it were transparent Glass.

22 And I saw no Temple therein:

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—9. THOSE SEVEN Angels which HAD THOSE SEVEN Vials which were FULL.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—8. SECOND DEATH (A B). 9. WOMAN, the LAMB'S BRIDE (B). 10. the HOLY CITY Jerusalem (A B). 11. And she had a Wall great and high; she had twelve Gates (A B). 12. the Names of (B). 13. Children of Israel (A B). 14. and on the West three Gates, and on the North three Gates, and on the South three Gates. 15. on them the Twelve Names of (A B). 16. for Measure a golden (A B). 17. *times* twelve thousand Furlongs. 18. the WALL thereof *is* an Hundred *and* (B). 19. Chrysopast. See 9 (A B), 11 (A B), 15 (B), 18. *These words are not found in the Vatican Manuscript, No. 1160. That they were left out by oversight of the Copyist appears probable from this, that the plural participle "garnished" agrees with "FOUNDATIONS," and not with "BUILDING." Here again the recurrence of the same words, του τευχους, at the end of this and of the preceding clause, probably caught the eye of the Transcriber and misled him.*

for the LORD GOD ALMIGHTY and the LAMB are the Temple of it.

23 And the CITY had no Need of the SUN, neither of the MOON, to shine [in it]: for the †GLORY of GOD did lighten it; and the LAMB is the LIGHT thereof.

24 And †the NATIONS of THEM which are SAVED shall walk in the LIGHT of it: and the KINGS of the EARTH do bring their GLORY and HONOUR into it.

25 And the GATES of it shall not be shut at all by Day: for there shall be no Night there.

26 And they shall bring the GLORY and HONOUR of the NATIONS †into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it anything that defileth, neither †*whatsoever* worketh Abomination, or *maketh* a Lie: but THEY which are WRITTEN in the LAMB'S BOOK of LIFE.

CHAPTER XXII.

1 And he shewed me a [Pure] River of Water of Life, [clear] as Crystal, proceeding out of the THRONE of GOD and of the LAMB.

2 In the Midst of the STREET of it, and on †either side of the RIVER, *was there* the Tree of Life, which bare twelve *manner of* Fruits, †*and* yielded her FRUIT

every Month: and the LEAVES of the TREE *were* for the Healing of the NATIONS.

3 And there shall be No more †Curse: but the THRONE of GOD and of the LAMB shall be in it; and his SERVANTS shall serve him:

4 And they shall see his FACE; and his NAME *shall be* in their FOREHEADS.

5 And there shall be no Night [there]; †and they need no Candle, neither Light of the Sun; For the Lord GOD giveth them light: and they shall reign for EVER and EVER.

6 And he †said unto me, These SAYINGS *are* faithful and true: and the Lord GOD of the †HOLY Prophets sent his ANGEL to shew unto his SERVANTS|| the things which must shortly be done.

7 Behold, I come quickly: blessed is HE that KEEPETH the SAYINGS of the PROPHECY of this BOOK.

8 And †‡ John *SAW these things, and heard *them*. †And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the FEET of *the ANGEL which SHEWED me these things.

9 Then saith he unto me, See *thou do it* not: [for] I am *thy Fellow-servant, and of thy BRE-

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—8. *am* HE who saw these things. 8. THAT ANGEL which SHEWED me. 9. a Fellow-servant of thine, and of.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—23. GLORY itself of GOD (B). 24. the NATIONS walk by the LIGHT of it (A B): and the KINGS of the EARTH bring for him the Glory and Honour of the NATIONS into it (B). 26. to enter into it (B). 27. HE that WORKETH Abomination or a Lie. 2. this side and that of the RIVER (A.). 2. each yielding its FRUIT Month by Month (B). 3. Any Accursed-thing; but (A B). 5. and no Need of Candle or Light; for the Lord GOD enlighteneth them: and they (B). 6. saith unto me (B). 6. SPIRITS of the PROPHETS sent (A B). 8. ‡ John *am* HE who HEARD and saw these things (A B). And when I had heard, and when I had seen, I fell down (B). See 23 (B), 1 (A B), 1, 5 (B), 9 (A B).

|| 6. *These words*, "to shew unto his SERVANTS," are not found in the Vatican Manuscript, No. 1160 But as the sense would be incomplete without them, we may presume that they were omitted by oversight, being the words occurring between *αυτου . . . αυτου*.

THREN the PROPHETS, and of THEM which KEEP the SAYINGS of this BOOK: worship GOD.

10 And he saith unto me, Seal not the SAYINGS of the PROPHECY of this BOOK: †For the TIME is at hand.

11 HE that is UNJUST, let him be unjust still: and HE which is FILTHY, let him be filthy still: and HE that is RIGHTEOUS, let him † be righteous still: and HE that is HOLY, let him be holy still.

12 [And,] behold, I come quickly; and my REWARD is with me, to give every man according as his WORK shall be.

13 I am ALPHA and OMEGA, † the Beginning and the End, the FIRST and the LAST.

14 Blessed are THEY that DO his COMMANDMENTS, that they may have RIGHT to the TREE of LIFE, and may enter in through the GATES into the CITY.

15 [For] without are DOGS, and SORCERERS, and WHOREMONGERS, and MURDERERS, and IDOLATERS, and WHOSOEVER LOVETH and maketh a Lie.

16 I Jesus have sent mine ANGEL

to testify unto you these things in the CHURCHES. I am the ROOT and the OFFSPRING of † DAVID, † and the BRIGHT and morning STAR.

17 And the SPIRIT and the BRIDE say, Come. And let HIM that HEARETH say, Come. And let HIM that is ATHIRST come. And WHOSOEVER WILL, let him take the WATER of Life freely.

18 [For] † I testify unto Every man that heareth the WORDS of the PROPHECY of this BOOK, If any man shall add unto these things, GOD shall add unto him * the PLAGUES that are WRITTEN in this † Book:

19 And if any man shall take away from † the WORDS of the Book of this PROPHECY, GOD shall take away his PART out of the Book of LIFE, and out of the HOLY CITY, and from the THINGS which are WRITTEN in this Book.

20 HE which TESTIFIETH these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus.

21 The GRACE of † our LORD Jesus Christ be with you all. [Amen.] †

* EMPHATIC TEXT.—18. THOSE PLAGUES which are WRITTEN.

† VATICAN MANUSCRIPT, No. 1160.—10. for the TIME (A B). 11. do Righteousness still (A B). 13. the FIRST and the LAST, the BEGINNING and the END (B). 15. WHOREMONGERS, and SORCERERS, and whosoever loveth and (A B). 16. David (A B), the BRIGHT MORNING STAR (B). And. 18. I testify unto EVERY-ONE that HEARETH (A B). 18. BOOK (A B). 19. THOSE WORDS of the BOOK of this PROPHECY which are WRITTEN in this BOOK, GOD shall take away his PART out of the TREE of LIFE, and out of the HOLY CITY. He who TESTIFIETH (A B). 21. the LORD Jesus Christ (A B) be with All the SAINTS (B). Amen (B). See 12 (A), 15 (A B), 18 (A B), 21 (A). Subscription: THE REVELATION OF JOHN (A).

THE END.

*

SAMUEL BAGSTER AND SONS,

15, PATERNOSTER ROW, LONDON.

POLYGLOT BIBLES AND BIBLICAL WORKS,

In Ancient and Modern Languages.

PRESENTATION COPIES, IN EVERY VARIETY OF SUITABLE BINDING.

CATALOGUES, BY POST, FREE.



Nearly ready.

The Twofold New Testament, being a New Translation accompanying a Revised Text, in parallel columns. By the Rev. THOMAS SHELDON GREEN, M.A. Small quarto.

Nearly ready.

The Holy Gospels arranged as a single Narrative. Foolscap octavo.

In the press.

The Old Testament Scriptures, Hebrew and English, in parallel columns. Small quarto.

In the press.

The New Testament Scriptures, Greek and English, in parallel columns, uniform with the Old Testament. Small quarto.

In the press.

An English-Greek Concordance to the New Testament Scriptures. Octavo.

Biblia Ecclesiæ Polyglotta. The Proper Lessons for Sundays; together with the whole of the Psalms, in Hebrew, Greek, Latin, and English. One Volume, Crown quarto, price £1. 12s. Large Paper copies, £2. 5s.

The Bible of Every Land. A History of the Sacred Scriptures in every Language and Dialect: illustrated by Specimen portions in native characters; Series of Alphabets; coloured Ethnographical Maps, Tables, Indexes, etc. Quarto, half-bound in Morocco, extra, price £2. 2s.

The Commentary Wholly Biblical: an Exposition of the Old and New Testaments in the very Words of Scripture: with subsidiary helps. Three Volumes, Quarto, price £3. 3s. Kept bound in various styles.

AS THE DIAMOND discovers its brilliancy only to the attrition of its own particles, so the light of THE WRITTEN WORD OF GOD is revealed by the collation of portions of its own Truth.

The English Hexapla: exhibiting the Six most important English Translations of the New Testament Scriptures, in parallel columns, with the Greek Text; preceded by a History of English Translations and Translators. Extra Demy quarto, price £2. 2s.

The Greek Student's Manual. Small octavo, half-bound,
price 15s.

Lexicon Syriacum: Ægidii Gutbirii omnes Novi Testamenti
Syriaci dictiones et particulas complectens. Foolscape octavo, price 4s.

Evangelia. Novi Testamenti Biblia Triglotta: sive, Græci
Textus Archetypi, versionis Syriacæ, et versionis Latinæ Vulgatæ, Synopsis: cui acce-
dunt subsidia critica varia. Quarto, price 14s.

Cruden's Concordance to the Bible, embracing every passage
of Scripture contained in the largest editions. Octavo, price 4s. 6d.; Foolscape octavo
and 32mo., price 4s.

A Collation of the Principal English Translations of the
Sacred Scriptures. Quarto, price 12s.

Textual Criticism of the New Testament for English Bible
Students: being a succinct Comparison of the Authorised Version with the Critical
Texts of Griesbach, Scholz, Lachmann, Tischendorf, Tregelles, and Alford, and the
Uncial MSS.; including the celebrated Codex Sinaiticus. By C. E. STUART. Octavo,
price 3s.

A Large-Print Paragraph Bible, with marginal Renderings,
Introductions, alphabetical Indexes, and numerous Maps. Each Book of Holy Scrip-
ture being also published separately.

The Blank Page Bible: an edition of the Scriptures printed
with alternate pages of ruled blank paper, on an entirely novel plan, for Manuscript notes.
Octavo, price £1. 5s.

Bagster's Comprehensive Bible; a Family, Pulpit, and Study
Bible, complete in one volume: which contains a copious body of Critical Notes;
500,000 selected Parallel Passages; Dissertations on the authority of the Scriptures;
explanations of Weights, Measures, MSS., Versions, Jewish Writings, etc., etc., etc.;
Introductions and concluding Remarks to each Book; Five various Indexes; a Family
Register; and a fully coloured series of new Maps. All the editions of the Comprehen-
sive Bible are kept ready, in various styles of thoroughly durable binding. Gilt and
Silver mounting, of every kind, and newest patterns. Covers, Cases, Presentation
Caskets, always ready.

The Miniature Quarto Bible. An Edition of the Scriptures
prepared especially for the use of those to whom lightness, large type, and superior finish
are recommendations. Handiness and legibility are the characteristics of this Bible.
It is printed upon the finest 'toned' paper, and contains copious Critical Notes,
Parallel References, coloured Maps, etc., etc. The volume measures about 7 inches by
9½, and is not more than 2¼ in thickness. The Miniature Quarto Bible is kept bound in
every variety of style, from plain morocco to "Bagster's flexible Turkey morocco." Also
in elaborate antique bindings. Silver and Gilt Mountings of the newest patterns.
Cases and presentation caskets always ready. Prices from £1. 1s.

The Pocket Treasury Bible: being a Treasury of parallel
references and notes interpagged with the English Version of the Polyglot Bible. Fools-
cap octavo, price £1.

Bibles with wide Margins for Manuscript Notes. Imperial
quarto, with four inches of clear margin, price £3. Royal quarto, with three inches of
margin, £2. 15s. Demy quarto, with two inches of margin, £1. 18s.

The Treasury Bible, with blank margins, on paper ruled
with water lines. Quarto, price £1. 10s.

The Holy Scriptures of the Olde and Newe Testamente; with the Apocripha: faithfully translated from the Hebrue and Greke by MYLES COVERDALE, sometime Lord Bishop of Exeter. M.D.XXXV. With a Portrait and facsimile title-page. Quarto, price £1. 10s. Large paper copies, £2. 18s.

Bagster's Polyglot Bibles. (Pocket Volumes.) The Miniature English Version, with references and maps. In every variety of plain and ornamental bindings, and with plain and ornamental silver and gilt mountings of the newest patterns. Prices from 9s.

** Combined with the Book of Common Prayer and Metrical Psalms; with an Alphabetical Index of Subjects; with the Psalms and Paraphrases of the Church of Scotland; with Wesley's Hymns; with Watts's Psalms and Hymns; with a Greek and English New Testament; or, with a Greek and English Lexicon.

Bagster's Polyglot Bibles. (Pocket Volumes.) The Middle-size English Version. Foolscap 8vo., with references and coloured maps. In every variety of binding and mounting. Prices from 12s.

** Combined with the Book of Common Prayer and Metrical Psalms; with an Alphabetical Index of Subjects; with Cruden's Concordances; with the Apocrypha; with the Scotch Psalms; with Watts's Psalms and Hymns; with a Greek and English Testament; with a Greek Lexicon; or, with a Greek Concordance.

Bagster's Polyglot Bibles.—The Facsimile Large-Print English Version, with references and coloured maps. In every variety of plain and ornamental bindings and mountings. Prices from 14s.

** Combined with the Book of Common Prayer and Metrical Psalms; with an Alphabetical Index of Subjects; with Cruden's Concordance; with the Apocrypha; with the Psalms of the Church of Scotland; or, with a Greek and English Testament.

** An edition of this Bible has been prepared on extra stout paper, with wider margins, for MS. notes.

Bible Pictorial Illustrations: a series of One hundred and Eight beautiful engravings of Bible events, from entirely new Designs. Each Picture is accompanied with suitable Scripture explanations. Small 8vo., half-bound in morocco, price 12s.

** This elegant volume is remarkably adapted for presentation to the young. It is a work in which the principal Lessons of the Old and New Testament Histories may be pleasantly and profitably studied.

Biblia Hebraica, versibus, capitibus, et sectionibus inter-
 distincta; Notisque Masoretarum Keri et Chetib, instructa. Ad editionem Hooghtianam accuratissime adornata. Adjiciuntur Variæ Lectiones Pentateuchi Hebræi et Hebræo-Samaritani. Foolscap octavo, price 18s.

The Hebrew, with the English Version. Foolscap octavo.

The Hebrew, with the Septuagint. Foolscap octavo.

The Hebrew, with the Latin Vulgate. Foolscap octavo.

The Hebrew, with the German Version. Foolscap octavo.

The Hebrew, with the French Version. Foolscap octavo.

The Hebrew, with the Italian Version. Foolscap octavo.

The Hebrew, with the Spanish Version. Foolscap octavo.

The Hebrew, with the Portuguese Version. Foolscap octavo.

The Greek Septuagint Version of the Old Testament, according to the Vatican Edition: together with the real Septuagint Version of Daniel and the Apocrypha, including the fourth Book of Maccabees, and an Historical Introduction. Octavo, price 18s.

Vetus Testamentum secundum Septuaginta seniorum interpretationem juxta exemplar Vaticanum; adjiciuntur editionis Grabianæ Variæ Lectiones. Foolscap octavo, price 12s.

The LXX. with the Hebrew Text. Foolscap octavo.

The LXX. with the English Version. Foolscap octavo.

The LXX. with the Latin Vulgate. Foolscap octavo.

The LXX. with the German Version. Foolscap octavo.

The LXX. with the French Version. Foolscap octavo.

The LXX. with the Italian Version. Foolscap octavo.

The LXX. with the Spanish Version. Foolscap octavo.

The LXX. with the Portuguese Version. Foolscap octavo.

Biblia Sacra Vulgatæ Editionis, Sixti V. et Clementis VIII.

Jussu recognita atque edita. Editio nova, versiculis distincta. Foolscap octavo, price 9s.

The Vulgate, with the Hebrew Text. Foolscap octavo.

The Vulgate, with the Septuagint Version. Foolscap octavo.

The Vulgate, with the English Version. Foolscap octavo.

The Vulgate, with the German Version. Foolscap octavo.

The Vulgate, with the French Version. Foolscap octavo.

The Vulgate, with the Italian Version. Foolscap octavo.

The Vulgate, with the Spanish Version. Foolscap octavo.

The Vulgate, with the Portuguese Version. Foolscap octavo.

Luther's German Bible. Foolscap octavo, price 9s.

The German, with the Hebrew Text. Foolscap octavo.

The German, with the Septuagint Version. Foolscap octavo.

The German, with the English Version. Foolscap octavo.

The German, with the Vulgate Version. Foolscap octavo.

The German, with the French Version. Foolscap octavo.

The German, with the Italian Version. Foolscap octavo.

The German, with the Spanish Version. Foolscap octavo.

The German, with the Portuguese Version. Foolscap octavo.

La Sainte Bible; contenant l'Ancien et le Nouveau Testa-

ment: accompagnée de nombreux renvois aux passages les plus importants et les plus remarquables, arrangés d'une manière toute nouvelle; pour servir à établir et expliquer les rapports qui existent entre eux. 16mo., price 9s.

La Sainte Bible, qui contient la Vieux et le Nouveau Testament. Foolscap octavo, price 9s.

- The French, with the Hebrew Text. Foolscap octavo.
- The French, with the Septuagint Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The French, with the English Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The French, with the Vulgate Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The French, with the German Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The French, with the Italian Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The French, with the Spanish Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The French, with the Portuguese Version. Foolscap octavo.
- La Sacra Bibbia, che contiene il Vecchio e il Nuovo Testamento: tradotta in lingua Italiana da Giovanni Diodati. Foolscap octavo, 9s.
- The Italian, with the Hebrew Text. Foolscap octavo.
- The Italian, with the Septuagint Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Italian, with the English Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Italian, with the Vulgate Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Italian, with the German Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Italian, with the French Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Italian, with the Spanish Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Italian, with the Portuguese Version. Foolscap octavo.
- La Biblia, traducidos en Espanol, ó el Antiguo y Nuevo Testamento, por el Rmo. P. Phelipe Scio. Foolscap octavo, price 9s.
- The Spanish, with the Hebrew Text. Foolscap octavo.
- The Spanish, with the Septuagint Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Spanish, with the English Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Spanish, with the Vulgate Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Spanish, with the German Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Spanish, with the French Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Spanish, with the Italian Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Spanish, with the Portuguese Version. Foolscap octavo.
- A Santa Biblia; contendo o Velho e o Novo Testamento, traduzido em Portuguez segundo a Vulgata. Foolscap octavo, price 9s.
- The Portuguese, with the Hebrew Text. Foolscap octavo.
- The Portuguese, with the Septuagint Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Portuguese, with the English Version. Foolscap octavo.
- The Portuguese, with the Vulgate Version. Foolscap octavo.

- The Portuguese, with the German Version. Foolscap octavo.
 The Portuguese, with the French Version. Foolscap octavo.
 The Portuguese, with the Italian Version. Foolscap octavo.
 The Portuguese, with the Spanish Version. Foolscap octavo.

The Greek New Testament, edited from Ancient Authorities, with the Various Readings of all the Ancient MSS., the Ancient Versions, and earlier Ecclesiastical Writers (to Eusebius inclusive), together with the Latin Version of Jerome, from the Codex Amiatinus of the sixth Century. By S. P. TREGELLES, LL.D. Quarto, price £3. 3s.

The Greek New Testament, with selected Various Readings from Griesbach, Scholz, Lachmann, and Tischendorf, and references to Parallel Passages. Octavo, price 12s. Very large type.

The Greek New Testament. Consisting of the Greek text of Scholz, with the Readings, both textual and marginal, of Griesbach; and the variations of the editions of Stephens, 1550; Beza, 1598; and the Elzevir, 1633: with the English Authorised Version, and its Marginal Renderings. 16mo., price 8s.

An Edition on Writing Paper, with ample margins for MS. notes. Small quarto, price 10s. 6d.

Novum Testamentum Græcum ad exemplar Millianum, cum emendationibus et lectionibus Griesbachii, præcipuis vocibus ellipticis, thematibus omnium vocum difficiliorum, atque locis Scripturæ parallelis. 32mo., price 5s.

Novum Testamentum Græcum; ad exemplar Millianum, cum emendationibus et variis lectionibus Griesbachii. Foolscap octavo, price 5s.

Ditto, interpaged with the English, or with the Latin, or German, or French, or Italian, or Spanish, or Portuguese, or Hebrew Version.

The Greek New Testament. "Narrow Edition." With Various Readings. 32mo., price 4s. 6d.

Jesu Christi Domini Nostri Novum Testamentum Latinum. Interprete THEODORO BEZA. 32mo., price 3s. 6d.

Novum Jesu Christi Testamentum Vulgatæ Editionis, Sixti V. et Clementis VIII. jussu recognita atque edita. Foolscap octavo, price 3s. 6d.

Ditto, interpaged with the Greek Text, or with the English, or German, or French, or Italian, or Spanish, or Portuguese, or Hebrew Version.

The New Testament in German. 32mo., and Foolscap octavo, price 3s. 6d.

Ditto, interpaged with the Greek Text, or with the English, or Latin, or French, or Italian, or Spanish, or Portuguese, or Hebrew Version.

Le Nouveau Testament de notre Seigneur Jésus Christ. Foolscap octavo, and 32mo., price 3s. 6d.

Ditto, interpaged with the Greek Text, or with the English, or Latin, or German, or Italian, or Spanish, or Portuguese, or Hebrew Version.

Il Nuovo Testamento del nostro Signore e Salvatore Gesu Cristo: tradotto in lingua Italiana da GIOVANNI DIODATI. Foolscape octavo, and 32mo., price 3s. 6d.

Ditto, interpaged with the Greek Text, or with the English, or Latin, or German, or French, or Spanish, or Portuguese, or Hebrew Version.

El Nuevo Testamento, traducido al Español. Por el Rmo. P. PHELIPPE SCIO. Foolscape octavo, and 32mo., price 3s. 6d.

Ditto, interpaged with the Greek Text, or with the English, or Latin, or French, or Italian, or Portuguese, or Hebrew Version.

The New Testament in Hebrew. Octavo, price 8s. Fcap. octavo, and 32mo., price 5s.

Ditto, interpaged with the Greek Text, or with the English, or German, or French, or Italian, or Spanish, or Portuguese Version.

Novo Testamento de Jesu Christo, traduzido em Portuguez segundo a Vulgata. Foolscape octavo, price 3s. 6d.

Ditto, interpaged with the Greek Text, or with the English, or German, or French, or Italian, or Spanish, or Hebrew Version.

Novum Testamentum Syriacum. Foolscape octavo, price 8s.

The New Testament of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, according to the Authorised Version, "Narrow Edition." 32mo., price 8s.

The New Testament, reprinted verbatim from Tyndale's first edition, 1526: with a Memoir and Portrait.

The New Testament of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, with short Explanatory Notes, and numerous references to illustrative and Parallel Passages. 32mo., price 4s. Ditto, with the Book of Psalms. Ditto, with Cruden's Concordance.

The Emphatic New Testament, with the Various Readings, in English, of the Vatican Manuscript. By JOHN TAYLOR. Octavo, price 12s. 6d.

The New Testament of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. A fac-simile reprint of the celebrated Genevan Testament, M.D.LVII., with the marginal Annotations and References, the initial and other woodcuts, Prefaces and Index. Foolscape octavo, half-morocco, price 8s.

A Revised Translation of the New Testament: with a notice of the principal various readings in the Greek Text. By Rev. H. HIGHTON, M.A. Octavo, price 10s. 6d.

The Book of Common Prayer, in Eight Languages; namely, English, French, Italian, German, Spanish, Greek, Ancient and Modern, Latin; with the occasional Services in Latin and English. Foolscape octavo, price 12s.

Liturgia Britannica: Liber Precum Communium, necnon administrationis Sacramentorum, aliorumque Rituum ac Cærimoniarum Ecclesiæ, juxta usum Ecclesiæ Britannicæ; una cum Psalterio, seu Psalmis Davidis: quibus accesserunt forma et modus faciendi, ordinandi, et consecrandi Episcopos, Presbyteros et Diaconos; cum XXXIX. Articulis Religionis. 32mo. and Foolscape octavo, price 3s. 6d.

Also, interpaged with English, or other languages.

- The Gospel of St. John, with Scripture Illustrations. 32mo.,
Roan, price 1s. 8d.
- The Gospels of the New Testament Scriptures, according to
the Authorised Version. "Narrow Edition." 32mo., Roan, price 2s. 6d.
- The Acts of the Apostles, in Greek and English, *with wide
margins for notes.* The Greek text is accompanied with Various Readings, and is
printed parallel with the English upon the same page. Small quarto, price 3s.
- The Epistles of the New Testament Scriptures, according to
the Authorised Version. "Narrow Edition." 32mo., Roan, price 2s. 6d.
- The Epistles and the Revelation, a translation from the
Greek; with critical Notes. By JOSEPH TURNBULL, Ph. Dr. Octavo, price 10s.
- The Epistle to the Romans, with Scripture Illustrations.
32mo., Roan, price 1s. 4d.
- Epistola di S. Paolo, L'Apostola A'Romani. 32mo., price
2d. Printed for distribution as a Tract.
- The Epistle to the Hebrews, with Scripture Illustrations.
32mo., Roan, price 1s. 4d.
- An Amended Translation of the Epistle to the Hebrews.
By HENRY CRAIK. Foolscep octavo, price 6d.
- The Epistle to the Hebrews, in Hebrew, as a Tract for
distribution. 32mo., price 3d.; or, £1. a hundred.
- The Book of Revelation, translated from the Ancient Greek
Text. With an Historical sketch of the printed Text of the Greek New Testament, etc.
With a notice of a Palimpsest MS. hitherto unused. By S. P. TREGELLES, LL.D.
Foolscep octavo, price 2s.
- "It is Written:" or, the Scriptures the Word of God. From
the French of Professor GAUSSEN. Foolscep octavo, price 3s.
- The Warrant of Faith: or, a Handbook to the Canon and
Inspiration of the Scriptures. By the Rev. ROBERT WHYTEHEAD, M.A. Post octavo
price 6s. 6d.
- Daily Light on the Daily Path: a Devotional Text Book for
every day in the Year; in the very words of Scripture.
The MORNING HOUR. 16mo., price 3s. 6d.; 32mo., 2s. 6d.
- Daily Light on the Daily Path: a Devotional Text Book for
every day in the Year; in the very words of Scripture.
The EVENING HOUR. 16mo., price 3s. 6d.; 32mo., 2s. 6d.
- An Ecclesiastical History to the twentieth year of the reign
of Constantine, being the 324th of the Christian Era. By EUSEBIUS PAMPHILUS,
Bishop of Cæsarea. To which is prefixed, the Life of Eusebius, by VALESIIUS. Octavo,
price 7s.
- Ecclesiastical History. The Life of the Blessed Emperor
Constantine, in four Books, from 306 to 337, A.D. By EUSEBIUS PAMPHILUS. Octavo,
price 7s.
- Ecclesiastical History. A History of the Church in six
Books, from A.D. 431 to A.D. 594. By EVAGRIUS. With an account of the Author and
his Writings. Octavo, price 7s.

- Ecclesiastical History.** A History of the Church in seven Books, from the accession of Constantine, A.D. 305, to the 38th year of Theodosius II., including a period of 140 years. By SOCRATES SCHOLASTICUS. With some account of the Life and Writings of the Author. Octavo, price 7s.
- Ecclesiastical History.** A History of the Church in nine Books, from A.D. 324 to A.D. 440. By SOZOMEN. With a Memoir of the Author. Octavo, price 7s.
- Ecclesiastical History.** A History of the Church in five Books, from A.D. 322, to the death of Theodore of Mopsuestia, A.D. 427. By THEODORETUS, Bishop of Cyrus. With a Memoir of the Author. Octavo, price 7s.
- Prolegomena in Biblia Polyglotta.** Auctore SAMUELE LEE, S.T.B. Quarto, price 7s. 6d.
- The Doctrine of Scriptural Predestination,** briefly stated and considered, in its tendency to promote unity, and in contrast with the theories which have been substituted for it. With some remarks on the Baptismal Question. By the Rev. ROBERT KNIGHT. Octavo, price 5s.
- The Plurality of Worlds,** the positive argument from Scripture. With answers to some late objections from analogy. By the Rev. ROBERT KNIGHT. Crown octavo, price 3s. 6d.
- The Chronological Scripture Atlas:** containing a complete series of Maps elucidatory of the Sacred History; illustrating also the principal Epochs of the Ecclesiastical History of Christendom, and the condition of the Holy Land from the earliest ages to the present day: an elaborate Chart of general History, and a comparative Index and Concordance of all the Scripture occurrences of the Places. Quarto, Half-morocco, price 10s. 6d.
- A Scripture Atlas:** comprising Thirty Maps: in which are exhibited not only the places of well-defined situation, but, according to the supposition of the best Authors, other localities of Historic interest mentioned throughout the Sacred Scriptures. Engraved by J. WYLD. Quarto, Half-morocco, price 10s. 6d.
- The Pocket Scripture Atlas,** with a Chart of Scripture History. Foolscap octavo, price 2s.
- Scriptural Coincidences; or, Traits of Truth.** By J. DUNCAN CRAIG, M.A. Foolscap octavo, price 3s.
- A Textual Commentary on the Book of Psalms.** An Expository and Devotional help, on a new plan, designed to facilitate and encourage the self-interpretation of Scripture generally. By H. N. CHAMPNEY. Price 3s.
- Rabbi Mosis Maimonidis liber More Nebuchim, sive Doctor perplexorum:** primum ab authore in lingua Arabica conscriptus, deinde a Rabbi Jehuda Alcharisi in linguam Hebræam translatus, nunc vero adnotationibus illustratus a Simone Scheyero, Ph. D., e vetere Codice Bibliothecæ nationalis Parisiis, primum edidit L. SCHLOSBERG. Octavo, price 7s. 6d.
- A Discourse on Church-Government:** wherein the rights of the Church, and the supremacy of Christian Princes, are vindicated and adjusted. By JOHN POTTER, D.D. Octavo, price 7s.
- Universal History.** The World's History from the Creation to the Accession of Queen Victoria. In Seven Volumes. Foolscap octavo, half-bound in Morocco, price £2. 2s.

- Institutes of Ecclesiastical History, Ancient and Modern,
by JOHN LAURENCE VON MOSHEIM, D.D. With copious additional Notes. Edited, and
brought down to the present time. In Three Volumes. Price £2. 5s.
- Antichrist, What, Where, and Who is He? By the Rev.
H. H. BEAMISH, M.A. Crown octavo, price 3s.
- Remarks on the Prophetic Visions in the Book of Daniel.
With Notes on prophetic interpretation in connection with Popery, and a Defence of
the authenticity of the Book of Daniel. By S. P. TREGELLES, LL.D. Post octavo,
price 5s.
- Defence of the Authenticity of the Book of Daniel. Post
octavo, price 1s. 6d.
- Sunday Afternoon, or, Questions, Pictures, and Poems, upon
the Old Testament Scriptures. For the use of Parents and Teachers. Illustrated
with Seventy-two Steel Engravings from new and original designs. Foolscap octavo,
Cloth, extra gilt, price 8s. 6d.
- Questions on the Old Testament Scriptures, arranged Chro-
nologically. Foolscap octavo, price 1s. 6d.
- The Jansenists: their rise, persecutions by the Jesuits, and
existing remnant. A chapter in Church History. By S. P. TREGELLES, LL.D. With
Portraits and Illustrations. Post octavo, price 3s. 6d.
- Memoirs of John Caspar Lavater, with a brief Memoir of his
Widow. To which is added Lavater's Correspondence with the Oberlins. By P. I.
HEISCH. With Portraits and Illustrations. 18mo., price 5s.
- Memorials of Myles Coverdale, sometime Lord Bishop of
Exeter; who first translated the whole Bible into English: together with divers matters
relating to the promulgation of the Bible, in the reign of Henry the Eighth. With a
Portrait. Octavo, price 4s. 6d.
- Memoir of John Frederic Oberlin, Pastor at Ban de la Roche;
with a Narrative of Louisa Schepler; with Illustrations. 18mo., price 4s.
- The Pilgrim's Progress. Illustrated by nearly three hundred
Engravings, and Memoir of Bunyan. Foolscap octavo, price 2s. 6d.
- Bunyan's Autobiography. Foolscap octavo, price 2s.
- The Pilgrim's Progress. With Engravings, from entirely
new designs. Octavo, price 7s. 6d.
- The Pilgrim's Progress. An Epic Poem. With numerous
Engravings. Foolscap octavo, price 3s. 6d.
- St. Augustine's Life and Labours. A Historical Sketch.
By PHILIP SCHAFF, D.D. Post octavo, price 3s. 6d.
- The Robin of Woodside Lodge. A True Tale. With
coloured Illustrations. 16mo., price 2s. 6d.
- Mamma's Absence; or, "The Written Rules." 16mo., price 1s.
- Leaves from Life. By L. N. R. Small quarto, extra gilt,
price 7s. 6d.

An Introduction to Perspective, Practical Geometry, Drawing and Painting; a new and perfect explanation of the mixture of Colours; with practical directions for Miniature, Crayon, and Oil Painting; in a series of familiar Dialogues between the Author's Children, and Letters addressed to his Pupils. Illustrated with numerous Wood Engravings, from Drawings by John Hayter, Esq., and Coloured Plates. Octavo, price 15s.

The Invalid's Hymn Book, with an Introductory Preface by the Rev. HUGH WHITE, A.M. Price 2s. 6d.

Church and Parochial Psalmody. Consisting of a collection of Psalms and Hymns, selected from Authorised Versions, and appropriate to the Festivals of the Church of England, and other occasions. 12mo., price 3s.

Who is God in China, Shin or Shang-te? Remarks on the etymology of Elohim and of Theos, and on the rendering of those Terms into Chinese. By the Rev. S. C. MALAN, M.A. Octavo, price 7s. 6d.

The History of the Great Reformation of the Sixteenth Century in Germany, Switzerland, France, etc. By J. H. MERLE D'AUBIGNE. Abridged from the complete French edition, chiefly by the original Translator. 18mo., price 4s. 6d.

CVIII Bible Pictures, from designs by Charles Bell Birch. With full descriptions from Scripture. Foolscap octavo, half-morocco, price 12s.

A Contribution towards an Argument for the plenary Inspiration of Scripture, derived from the minute Historical accuracy of the Scriptures of the Old Testament, as proved by certain Ancient Egyptian and Assyrian remains preserved in the British Museum. By ARACHNOPHILUS. Octavo, price 6d.

A Brief Memoir of the Life and Death of Thomas Henry Hull. With a Sketch of his Intellectual Character, and Two of his Sermons. Foolscap octavo, price 1s. 4d.

The Offices for the Sick: properly arranged, according to the use of the United Church of England and Ireland. Post octavo, price 2s.

The Way of Faith; or, the Abridged Bible; containing selections from all the Books of Holy Writ. By Dr. M. Büdinger; translated from the German, by DAVID ASHER. Specially sanctioned by the Rev. Dr. Adler, Chief Rabbi. Intended for the use of Jewish Schools and Families. Octavo, price 4s.

The Curate's Grave. 18mo., price 1s. 6d.

Rome, its Wonders, and its Worship: as seen and graphically delineated by the Rev. JOHN A. CLARK. 18mo., price 2s.

Stella. A Poem of the Day. In three Cantos. Post octavo, price 3s.

The Pentateuchal Narrative vindicated from the absurdities charged against it by the Bishop of Natal. By JOHN COLLYER KNIGHT. Octavo, price 8d.

The Original Language of St. Matthew's Gospel. By S. P. TREGELLES, LL.D. Octavo, price 6d.

The Book of the Unveiling: an Exposition with Notes. 12mo., price 2s. 6d.

- Gertrude and her Family. A Tale. Foolscap octavo,
price 2s. 6d.
- Reading Lessons in Irish. With an Irish Grammar. 12mo.,
price 2s. 6d.
- Hints and Suggestions on the proposed Revision of our
English Bible. By HENRY CRAIK. Small octavo, price 6d.
- The Distinguishing Characteristics and essential Relationships
of the leading Languages of Asia and Europe. By HENRY CRAIK. Foolscap octavo,
price 1s.
- Brief Reply to Certain Misrepresentations contained in
"Essays and Reviews." By HENRY CRAIK. Foolscap octavo, price 4d.
- The Tabernacle in the Wilderness: the Shadow of Heavenly
things. Four Engravings, coloured, and inlaid in Gold, Silver, and Brass, according to
the Texts of Scripture: with explanatory Notes. By W. G. RHIND. Price 15s.
- The High Priest of Israel, in his Robes of Glory and Beauty.
By W. G. RHIND. Price 16s. 6d.
- The Apocrypha. Foolscap octavo, price 2s.
- A Few Scripture Helps for the Solemn Day of Confirmation.
32mo., price 3d.
- Practical Lectures on the Church Catechism: and an Exer-
cise by way of Question and Answer, preparatory to Confirmation. By THOMAS ADAM.
12mo., price 2s.
- The Roman Census, Recorded by Luke, ii. 1—5, Explained,
and with reference to the Birth-day of our Lord, for the first time, independently of
the Gospel Testimony, established on Historical grounds. By JOHANNES VON
GUMPACH. Octavo, price 8d.
- The Incredibilities of Part II. of the Bishop of Natal's Work
upon the Pentateuch. A Lay Protest; by JOHN COLLYER KNIGHT. Octavo, price 8d.
- The Physical History of the Earth. Meditations by a
Student. Foolscap octavo, price 2s. 6d.
- The Manual Concordance of the New Testament, with Con-
texts, comprising nearly 30,000 References. Selected and arranged on a new principle.
18mo., Cloth, price 2s. 6d.
- Samuel Bagster and Sons' Catalogue (by post, free) of
Polyglot Bibles, and Aids to the Study of the Scriptures, in Ancient and Modern
Languages, Lexicons, Concordances, Grammars, Lesson Books, Manuscript-margin
Bibles, Commentaries, Indexes, etc., etc. The Common Prayer, in various Languages,
and Church Services of various forms, in every style of best flexible bindings and
mountings. Catalogues, by post, free.

SAMUEL BAGSTER AND SONS, 15, PATERNOSTER ROW, LONDON.



BS185.5 1854
The emphatic New Testament, according to
Princeton Theological Seminary-Speer Library



1 1012 00058 0573

